

C

LC

LECTURES

ON

COLONIZATION AND COLONIES

DELIVERED BEFORE THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

IN

1839, 1840, & 1841

BY

HERMAN MERIVALE, A.M.

PROFESSOR OF POLITICAL ECONOMY

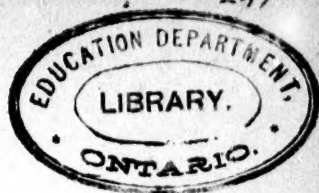
NEW EDITION

186934

LONDON

LONGMAN, GREEN, LONGMAN, AND ROBERTS

1861



72

~~#68~~
167

of
a
C
e
s
n
c
o
g
o
th
sy
w
w
it
al
as
h
st

of
th
su

P R E F A C E.

THESE Lectures were composed and originally published at a time when public attention had been rather suddenly and strongly directed to the subjects which they embrace. During the continental war, and for many subsequent years, our colonial empire had been administered after no very regular pattern, but in accordance with certain received usages. While most of our colonies had free legislatures, their executive government was jealously retained within the control of the mother country. Their trade was fettered by the highly artificial restrictions of the so-called colonial system. Slavery, though assailed with great pertinacity, was maintained in a large proportion of them; together with the peculiar condition of political society which it engendered. The penal colonies—the most remarkable modern accessions to that empire—were regarded as mere conveniences for the execution of justice at home, and excited no farther interest in the minds of statesmen.

The causes which put an end to this apathetic state of feeling, and directed so large a proportion of English thought and energy to colonial subjects, were partly such as arose out of the general progress of the com-

munity in the long peace; but in part also the result of fortuitous and unconnected events. Bad seasons and discouraging commercial prospects had rendered the theory of over-population a received article of belief; and our vast foreign possessions seemed to afford a prospect of relief from a danger then deemed imminent, now almost forgotten. The Canadian outbreak of 1837, the consequent mission of Lord Durham, the disclosures made and theories propounded by the very able men who accompanied him, raised in political thinkers a suspicion of the insecurity and injustice of colonial government by the mother country, or by local party in connection with the mother country; and directed the thoughts of the more speculative towards the renewal of the older and freer polity of our first American settlements. The domestic economy of the West Indies had been thoroughly revolutionized by the first results of emancipation. The progress of free-trade doctrines threatened the restrictive system of colonial trade with speedy abolition. The advance of new opinions respecting penal discipline was rapidly undermining the original and simple administration of the penal settlements. And, witnessing all these changes and foreseeing more, a school was arising of men disposed to question the advantages of colonial empire altogether. But, as if to meet this new generation of sceptics, there arose also the young and sanguine sect of colonial reformers. These contemplated a reconstruction and great extension of the British dominion beyond the seas, on principles of internal self-government and commercial freedom. But these were to be combined with the maintenance of a fixed system of disposal of colonial lands, and application

of the land fund to the purpose of procuring labouring emigrants from home. In this manner they believed that capital and labour might be imported into new colonies in the best proportions; and that communities might thus be founded which should possess at once some of the more valuable characteristics of advanced and well-regulated societies.

Such is a brief summary of the leading ideas entertained by the school in question, which are amply dilated on in these Lectures. They were bold and farseeing innovators, as far as concerned the end which they had in view. But they miscalculated the means to that end. They wished at once to give full municipal freedom to colonists, and to tie down the land system of colonies by strict regulation. The latter end of their commonwealth forgot the beginning. They did not apparently anticipate that, when they had prevailed on the home government to make their experiment, the first demand of each emancipated community would be to get rid of their favourite land system, and adopt methods of its own; or that the very fulness of that self-government, of which themselves had advocated the concession, would render it impossible for the mother country to resist this demand, had it been so inclined. The period, therefore, during which these doctrines were put into practical execution in some parts of the empire, had necessarily but a short duration; and the sect itself is already almost forgotten. But it has nevertheless left behind it great results. The extraordinary success which has on the whole attended the early colonization of our Australian empire is due, in a far greater degree than is commonly imagined, to the closet speculations of a few

students, and to the clauses of a few acts of parliament reducing these to practice.

Great part of these Lectures was devoted to the exposition and illustration of the views of the school in question; another portion, to controverting some errors which appeared to me involved in them. Much was also allotted to the discussions of the then pending conflict between protection and free trade. The interest of both controversies has for the present subsided. Yet I have thought on the whole that I might serve my readers better by retaining a large proportion of the original text of this work, than by rewriting it for adaptation to the present time; for the Lectures as originally delivered show the point which speculation on subjects of colonial policy had reached, at an epoch of no common importance in its history. But I have omitted from the present edition many details of merely temporary interest. And I have endeavoured to import into the volume, through considerable additions in the way of notes and appendix, such corrections as the enlarged experience of the last twenty years appeared to render necessary.

I must, however, apologise for some unavoidable awkwardness of expression, occasioned by this method of executing my work. I must request the reader to remember that when speaking in the first person and the present tense, I am addressing an audience of twenty years ago from a professorial chair at Oxford. The face of the world has changed since those days; and circumstances have also caused me to look on many of the questions then discussed from a very different and much closer point of view. And I have been forced to sig-

nalize, in this revision of former labour, not a few speculations which have turned out erroneous; to recant not a few opinions which have proved unsustainable; and to confess the disappointment of some cherished fancies. Similar palinodes may be due which I have omitted to make; unreconciled inconsistencies may perhaps be detected between past and present views; and I can only invite my readers to supply the former, and correct the latter. But the leading principles of administrative and commercial policy which are advocated in these Lectures are such as I have seen no occasion to abandon or to modify. And I reproduce this defence of them the more willingly because, in the midst of apparent success, there are signs of reaction visible, which may by and by render it necessary for their adherents to recur to old arguments in support of truths which may perhaps no longer pass, as of late they have, for axioms.

May, 1861.

s
t
j
a
s
n
c
P
l
a
i
P
f
t
c
e

INTRODUCTION

TO

THE FIRST EDITION.

THE Lectures now presented to the public form a course delivered at the University of Oxford in the years 1839, 1840, and 1841. They are published in compliance with the terms of the foundation of the Chair of Political Economy.

I have endeavoured to embrace in these Lectures a vast subject,—far too vast, indeed, for anything more than the slightest and most superficial investigation. My objects were, first, to convey information on a very popular and interesting topic, on which information in a condensed shape is not easily attainable: next, to lead the minds of my hearers to the consideration of some elementary principles in Political Economy which are illustrated by the phenomena of colonization and the growth of colonies: lastly, to call their attention also to the principles of the art of colonization, if I may so term it, particularly to the ingenious speculations of late years respecting the most profitable mode of applying capital and labour in the foundation and improvement of settlements;—speculations which have not only assumed something of scientific dignity, but have been partially subjected to the test of experiment in some of our Australian possessions.

Perhaps a reference to these objects will explain the order in which the subject is treated, which may at first sight appear a little anomalous. I have commenced, where in strict analytical arrangement I ought to have ended, by a brief sketch of the history of modern colonies, chiefly in respect of the progress of wealth and commerce ; taking care to touch in this rapid review on those phenomena which might appear to afford the most striking illustration of principles. And I may here mention that throughout these Lectures the term Colony is used in the ancient and proper sense, and not in that which has passed from official into general usage, in which it comprehends every species of foreign possession,—military stations, such as Gibraltar and Malta ; conquered districts, possessed by native inhabitants with a very slight admixture of the conquerors, such as Ceylon ; mercantile emporia, such as the factories of European powers on the coast of Africa. By a Colony I understand a territory of which the soil is entirely or principally owned by settlers from the mother country.

The remainder falls naturally into two portions. In the first of these, the economical effects of colonization on the wealth and industry of the mother country are treated of, as far as my narrow limits have permitted. I have confined my observations on this head to three particulars :—the effects of emigration, real or supposed, on the proportion between the supply and demand of labour at home ; the effects of the export of capital which accompanies emigration on national wealth ; and the character of the commerce which takes place between colonies and the mother country, with especial reference to the history and results of that series of protections

and restrictions which constitutes our so-called colonial system.

In the last division of these lectures, I have considered the progress of wealth and society in colonies themselves; the natural laws by which it is governed, the artificial regulations by which it may be promoted and guided. The first topic of interest to which I have adverted is that scarcity of available labour which is so severely felt in infant colonies; which has attracted so much attention of late years among practical economists, and has been attempted to be remedied by one of the most novel and remarkable experiments of our times, — the “South Australian” scheme of colonization; now put into practice more or less rigorously in all our possessions in that quarter of the world. But before entering on that much controverted topic, I have digressed so far as to advert to the history of the principal methods by which European colonists have hitherto endeavoured to obviate this scarcity; namely, the employment of subjugated native labourers, as in Spanish America, of slaves, and of convicts, — subjects which necessarily lead to the incidental discussion of some of the complicated problems which now agitate at once the minds of economists, philanthropists, and politicians.

The consideration of the scheme of Mr. Wakefield and his disciples for supplying the same deficiency, is necessarily connected with an investigation of the principles which have regulated, and those which ought to regulate the disposal of public lands; that important function of colonial authority which, in the view of Lord Durham, had been the “most full of good and evil consequences” in the government of that portion of the Empire which he was sent to administer. And in order to complete the

consideration of those measures which are preliminary to the establishment of young commonwealths, I have treated at some length of the policy of colonial governments towards the native races inhabiting their dominions.

To trace the progress of colonies in their second or adult stage, and up to the period when their independence, either virtual or actual, commences (for a community may continue under the central authority long after it has advanced, in an economical point of view, from the rank of a colony, properly so called, into that of a state), I have found almost too wide a field of inquiry for the limits of a course of lectures. The third part of these lectures, is, however, concluded with some observations on the growth of capital in new countries, and on taxation, considered with reference to it; on their civil and ecclesiastical government, and the chief political and social features of their condition.

CONTENTS.

PART I.

HISTORICAL ACCOUNT OF THE PROGRESS OF THE COLONIES OF MODERN EUROPE.

LECTURE I.

	Page
Account of the Colonies of Spain in Continental America, up to the Period of their Independence	3

LECTURE II.

Spanish Colonies in the West Indies; their History and present Condition in respect of Wealth and Commerce.—Portuguese, Dutch, and French Colonies; Account of their Government, Commerce, and general History	35
---	----

LECTURE III.

Brief historical Sketch of British Colonization.—British Colo- nies in the West Indies.—North American Colonies, down to the Period of their Independence	73
---	----

LECTURE IV.

Account of the present British Colonies in North America, South Africa, and Australia	103
--	-----

PART II.

ECONOMICAL EFFECTS OF COLONIZATION ON THE PARENT STATE.

LECTURE V.

	Page
Effects of Emigration on the Progress of Population and Wealth, and on the Relations between Capital and Labour in the Mother Country.—The Subject considered with Reference to the present Condition of Great Britain, and of Ireland . . .	137

LECTURE VI.

Effects of the Exportation of Capital, which takes place in the Process of colonizing, on the Wealth of the Mother Country . . .	167
--	-----

LECTURE VII.

On Colonial Trade and the Colonial System, as affecting the Wealth of the Mother Country.—Principal Features of that System.—Restrictions on the Exportation of Produce from the Colony elsewhere than to the Mother Country.—Restrictions on the Importation of Goods into the Colony from foreign Countries.—Restrictions on the Importation of Colonial Produce into the Mother Country from foreign Countries or Colonies	187
---	-----

LECTURE VIII.

The same Subject continued.—Restrictions on the Carriage of Merchandise to and from the Colonies in other Shipping than that of the Mother Country: Navigation Laws: Reciprocity Treaties.—Restrictions on the Manufacture of their own raw Produce by Colonies.—Comparison between Colonial and Foreign Trade.—On the Tribute furnished by some Colonies . . .	209
---	-----

PART III.

PROGRESS OF WEALTH AND SOCIETY IN COLONIES.

LECTURE IX.

TE.

Page

Page

187

Elements of Prosperity in new Colonies: Land, Capital, and Labour.—General Scarcity of Labour, during the first Period of their Growth.—Its Effects in two different Classes of Colonies: those which do not, and those which do, raise large Quantities of exportable Produce.—Principles of some late Writers on systematic Colonization considered, with Reference to this Distinction 253

LECTURE X.

167

Methods which have been adopted of securing a Supply of Labour in Colonies.—Labour of subjugated Native Races.—Treatment of the Indians in the old Colonies of Spain, and under the Government of the Spanish and Portuguese Missionaries.—Jesuit Republics of Paraguay 278

LECTURE XI.

187

The same Subject continued.—Slave Labour.—Present Condition and Prospects of Negro Slavery and the Slave Trade.—Effects of Emancipation in the British Colonies, according to their respective Circumstances; and remedial Measures now proposed.—French Plan of Emancipation 300
APPENDIX, 1860 336

LECTURE XII.

209

Employment of Convict Labour.—Reasons assigned for the New-Modelling, or Abolition, of the Punishment of Transportation, as far as they concern the Colonies.—Results of Measures taken by the British Government 349
APPENDIX, 1860 369

LECTURE XIII.

	Page
Methods of obtaining Labour in Colonies without Slaves or Convicts.— Indented Labourers.— Principles of the Writers on Systematic Colonization, or Mr. Wakefield and his Followers, respecting the procuring of Funds for the Purchase of Labour by the regulated Disposal of Land	374

LECTURE XIV.

Disposal of Land in New Colonies.— Examination of the Principles of the Writers on Systematic Colonization continued	394
--	-----

LECTURE XV.

Effects of the Disposal of Land in New Colonies by Free Grant, and by Sale at low Prices, examined, especially in North America	432
---	-----

LECTURE XVI.

Effects of the Disposal of Land in Colonies at high Prices.— Sketch of the History of South Australia	451
APPENDIX, 1861	470

LECTURE XVII.

Examination of some Subjects connected with the Disposal of Land in New Colonies.— Preparatory Expenses	478
---	-----

LECTURE XVIII.

Policy of Colonial Governments towards Native Tribes, as regards their Protection and their Civilization	487
APPENDIX, 1861	513

LECTURE XIX.

The same Subject continued.— Missionary Instruction.— Government Measures.— Amount of Civilization hitherto attained by Savage Tribes in modern European Colonies	524
APPENDIX, 1861	560

LECTURE XX.

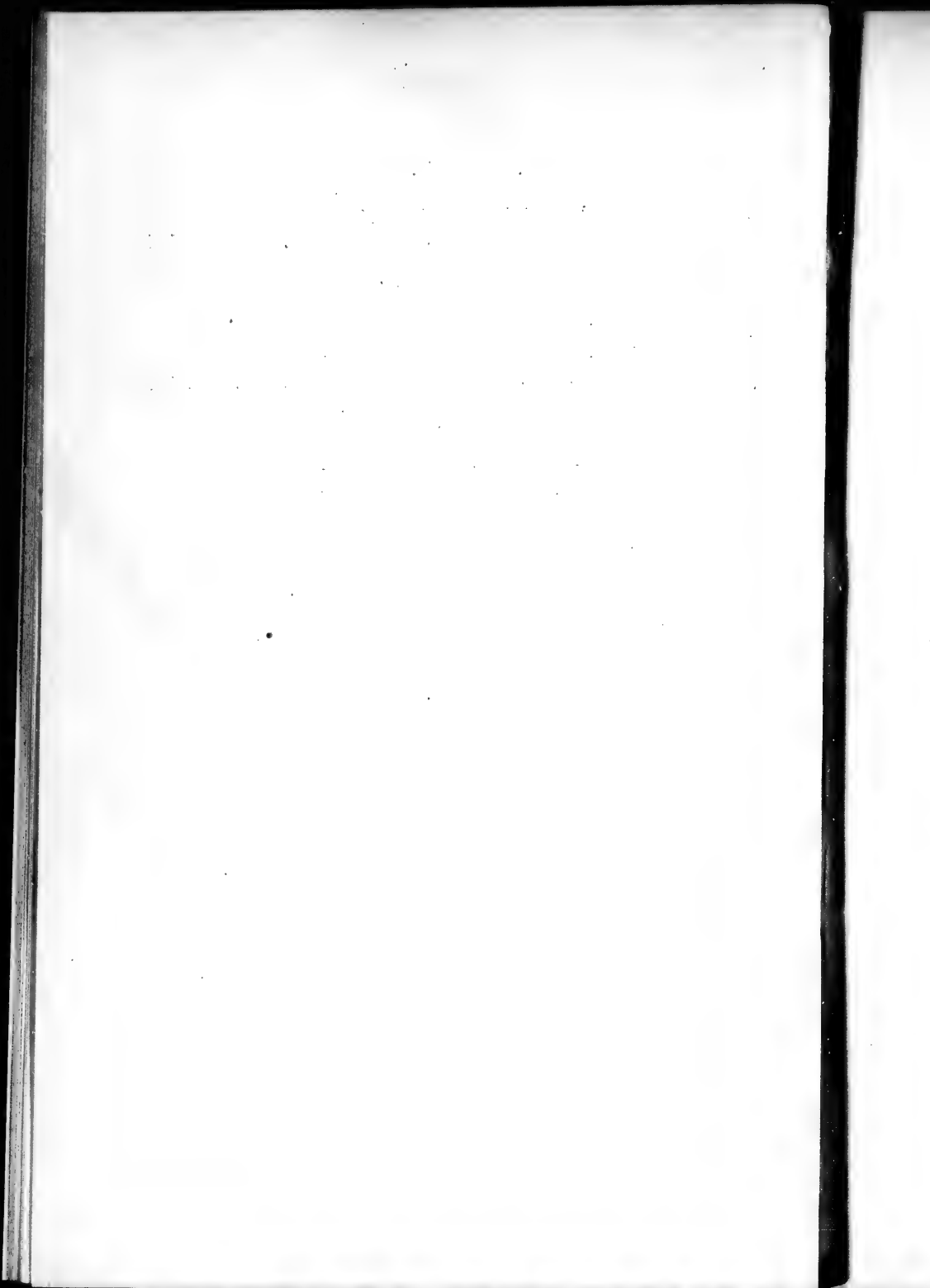
	Page
Progress of Wealth in Colonies. — Rate of Wages. — Rate of Profits. — Taxation	564

LECTURE XXI.

Expenditure of Colonial Revenues. — Modes of supporting Public Institutions. — Church Establishments in the British Colonies	585
--	-----

LECTURE XXII.

Social and Political Characteristics of Colonial Communities. — Political Relation of Colonies to the Mother Country. — Principles of Colonial Government	612
APPENDIX, 1861	636



PART I.

**HISTORICAL ACCOUNT OF THE
PROGRESS OF THE COLONIES OF MODERN EUROPE.**

acco

It
tail
me
if I
dan
poe
con
gol
rat
ma
firs
tra
col
hav
pro
Va
the
for

LECTURES ON COLONIZATION.

LECTURE I.

ACCOUNT OF THE COLONIES OF SPAIN IN CONTINENTAL AMERICA, UP TO
THE PERIOD OF THEIR INDEPENDENCE.

It is not my intention to occupy your time with the details of the military and political history of the establishment of the Spaniards in America. That romantic episode, if I may so call it, in modern annals, has furnished abundant materials to the philosopher, the historian, and the poet. But the peculiar virtues and vices of the Spanish conquerors, their enterprise, their devotion, their lust of gold, their cruelty, although they have impressed the narratives of the conquest with traits of unusual distinctness, may be said to have become rapidly obliterated after the first fury of success had subsided. They have left scanty traces, except in history. The development of the Spanish colonies, and of the great and numerous republics which have succeeded them, depended on other causes, and has proceeded under very different impulses. Cortes, Pizarro, Valdivia, and the other heroes of that period, passed over the surface of the earth as whirlwinds, clearing the way for other adventurers by the very devastation they created,

but leaving no memorial of themselves except in the awe and wonder of their contemporaries, which have coloured the traditions respecting them. After their era came that of the peaceful colonist, whose slow labours founded and consolidated the dominion of which they had only traced out the landmarks.

A few of the principal dates of the Conquest will illustrate the rapidity of its execution. In 1519 Cortes landed with a few adventurers at Vera Cruz; in 1521 he became master of Mexico; Peru, Quito, Chili, had been overrun by the year 1535; in 1532 Terra Firma (now the republic of Venezuela) was occupied; and New Granada in 1536. In seventeen years a handful of Spaniards had spread themselves over territories more than equal in extent to the whole of Europe, and inhabited in part by numerous nations under regular governments. The subsequent extension of Spanish colonisation to the North, over the regions adjacent to Mexico, afterwards called the "Internal Provinces," and to the South, over La Plata and Paraguay, was a work of greater time and more difficulty.

But although the labour of conquest was thus rapid, that of settlement was slow and interrupted. In the middle of the sixteenth century it was asserted (perhaps on no very sufficient grounds), that not more than 18,000 Spaniards were established all over the continent of America. This statement may be erroneous; but it must be remembered, that they came at first rather to garrison than to colonise; that few women accompanied the earlier adventurers; that they obtained their subsistence and their wealth not by their own labour, but by that of the Indians; and that wars, debaucheries, and the effects of climate caused a rapid mortality among them.

Their earliest enterprises, as is well known, were almost wholly directed to the acquisition of the precious metals. The supplies which they first discovered in Hispaniola were soon exhausted, although not before the greater

portion of the native inhabitants had perished in the labour of procuring them. It is one of the most singular of those apparently casual circumstances which have influenced the fortunes of the human race, that these slight sources of wealth, the insular mines, should have been disposed as a kind of lure to tempt the Spaniards on to the occupation of the neighbouring continent; and that just when the former were exhausted, the enormous riches of the latter should have been laid open. "Fortune," in the language of A. Smith, "did upon this what she did upon few other occasions: she realised, in some measure, the extravagant hopes of her votaries: and in the discovery and conquest of Mexico and Peru, she presented them with something not unlike the profusion of the precious metals which they sought for."

The miseries which that discovery entailed upon the defenceless inhabitants of America have been too often and too vividly described to need any recapitulation. Divided as slaves among the "conquerors" to each of whom whole districts were allotted for the exercise of his cupidity, they were driven in herds to the mines, forced to supply by their numbers the total want of skill and of capital under which their masters laboured, and their lives were wasted with the same reckless profusion with which the colonist of modern times wastes the powers and wealth of nature which are placed at *his* disposal—the wild animals of the forest, and the resources of a virgin soil. And in the districts in which mines did not exist, although the situation of the Indians was less wretched, and the depopulation less enormous, their treatment was no less iniquitous and disgraceful.

These excesses were partially checked by a series of legal provisions, beginning, indeed, as early as the year 1542. The Indians, at first slaves, were next subjected to the system of "repartimientos," that is, divided among masters, who had a property in their labour, not in their

persons: and, lastly, they were distributed in "encomiendas," paying to the "encomendero" or owner of the district a tribute, or produce-rent, in return for protection—a system in its turn abandoned, or considerably modified, in later times. It is truly said by Heeren, that "no European government did so much for the Aborigines as the Spanish;" and although most writers have coupled with the admission of this fact the general assertion, that the good laws established by the mother-country were set absolutely at nought by the rapacity of the colonists, yet the state of comparative ease and prosperity in which the Indians lived at the time when the recent revolutions commenced, most distinctly contradicts this position. It was long, no doubt, before the evil principles of the original conquerors were eradicated; but a course of wise and moderate legislation nearly succeeded, in most of the provinces, in removing them at last. The great principle of the Spanish law respecting the Indians, was that of preserving them in a state of *perpetual minority*. They were rendered incapable of legal contracts and liabilities, except to a very limited extent. They were under the protection of the king, to whom they paid the capitation tax; and of the clergy, to whom they paid the dues of the church: and minor justice was administered to them frequently by officials of their own complexion. Such a system accords little with European notions of civil freedom: it is, perhaps, inconsistent with a fair development of industry, and of the mental faculties; yet, on the whole, it is difficult to say, whether a better has yet been devised to preserve the personal liberty of the inferior races, and at the same time prevent collision between them and the superior. At all events it must be admitted, that had the legislation of Spain in other respects been as well conceived as that respecting the Indians, the loss of her Western empire would have been an unmerited visitation.

The state of society in the American colonies early assumed the character of an oligarchy. The pure Spanish families were few in number. They were often possessed of considerable wealth, either from their agricultural possessions, or from successful mining operations. But this wealth was of little avail to procure the comforts or luxuries of life. The owner of whole provinces could command only a modicum of surplus agricultural produce, for which, under the commercial system which prevailed, it was often impossible to obtain a market. The miner was more certain of a vent for his commodities, which formed the great mass of the regular exports of the colonies to the mother-country. But his profits were from their nature most precarious and delusive; for one who was enriched, numbers were ruined. In fact, notwithstanding the gorgeous colours with which the imaginations of the other European nations invested the jealously guarded El Dorado of the Spaniards, there were only two periods during which it may reasonably be supposed, that the wealth of any portion of their American provinces was rapidly augmenting, through the increased production of the precious metals; the first half of the seventeenth century in Peru (the splendid age of Potosi), and the last half of the eighteenth in Mexico. At other times it may, perhaps, be pretty safely conjectured, that the funds invested in mining experiments were barely replaced on the whole, by the return; and that the total increase of the capital of the community took place in agriculture.

It was this oligarchical character of society, together with the system of restrictions under which they lived, which produced the custom among the Spanish Creoles, especially in the mining districts, of congregating in cities, contrary to what has been observed of the general spirit of modern colonists. Mutual defence against the multitude of subject Indians, was probably their object in early

times. The tendency was increased by the indolent habits of families, whose subsistence was amply provided for by the labour of others, and which had little temptation to accumulate wealth and embark in profitable undertakings, hemmed in and oppressed as they were by the jealous policy of their rulers. In this way the government may be said to have collected the people together artificially in towns, as Captain Basil Hall expresses it; but to suppose, with that author, that this was done by the state with deliberate intention, is perhaps to imagine too far-fetched a policy. The bulk of the population of these cities was made up of the mixed classes—those which grew up from the intermixture of Spaniards with Indians, and of both with the Negroes, who, in the course of time, were imported into the continent, although never in very large numbers, when the slavery of the Indians was abolished. The Indians themselves, where sufficiently numerous, tilled the soil or wrought the mines. Each capital city, for the most part, stood in a rich and well cultivated district, but of limited extent, and separated from the rest of the world by deserts of ice and snow; by ravines, compared with which the depth of our Alpine valleys is insignificant; by provinces of forest, or by hot and unhealthy plains. Thus each community dwelt apart, divided at once by natural and artificial barriers; and generation after generation remained as utterly ignorant and reckless of the fortunes of the neighbouring settlements, as of those of the most distant countries of Europe.

The commercial policy of the Spanish government towards its continental colonies has been often described, and, with some exceptions presently to be noticed, exhibits as perfect a monument of systematic tyranny as any age has produced. The traffic of the mother-country was confined, at first, to the single port of Seville; afterwards to that of Cadiz. It was under the control of a board, termed the "Casa de Contratacion," which was subjected to the direct

government of the crown. Two squadrons were annually despatched; the "galleons," usually about twelve in number, to the port of Carthagena in South America; the "flota," of about fifteen, to Vera Cruz in Mexico. It was the great amount of business, relatively speaking, carried on by those few vessels, and the sudden activity communicated to commerce during the brief transactions which supplied the wants of a whole continent—all the trade of the empire collected as it were in one focus,—which dazzled the eyes of European observers, and occasioned the most fallacious ideas respecting the amount of annual exchanges actually made. The Spaniards, it is observed by A. Smith and by Robertson, while they tried almost every other nostrum of colonial policy, never adopted the system of confining their trade to an exclusive company. But, as Heeren remarks in answer, the effect of these restrictions was to confer a real monopoly on a few rich houses at Seville; a virtual company, though not so designated by law, was thus produced; and Humboldt bears witness that a similar monopoly was practically established in Mexico by a few commercial houses, which bought up and retailed the imports.* Thus, while the Americans had to buy the goods of the mother-country, or those which the importers had purchased from abroad, at a price far exceeding their values, the benefit of this monopoly was reserved to a small and privileged class alone. But, in fact, the trade of the flota and galleons was so utterly inadequate to supply the wants of so vast a population, that, until the operations of the smuggler began to redress the evil, it was almost destitute of European commodities.†

* *Nouv. Espagne*, iv. 288.

† "That the monopoly of the trade of populous and thriving colonies is not alone sufficient to establish, or even to maintain, manufactures in any country, the examples of Spain and Portugal sufficiently demonstrate. Spain and Portugal were manufacturing

In connection with these restrictions on foreign trade, not only the settlement but the visits of all foreigners were prohibited more strictly than in China or Japan. The punishment of strangers who were found in the colonies was at first death—in later times, perpetual imprisonment. Spaniards themselves might not visit them without royal license, and this was usually only granted for a limited time, unless in the case of those who went out to hold government offices. Even as late as the middle of the eighteenth century, the landing of a Boston vessel on the desolate island of Juan Fernandez to refit, and the appearance of an English whaler in the South Sea, were occurrences of sufficient importance to require a long report from the viceroy of Peru, and the reprimand or cashiering of several officers.

Internal commerce between the provinces, to complete the picture, was prohibited almost as effectually as foreign trade.

With all these severe regulations in repression of the freedom of commerce, it is remarkable that some other restrictions, which have been commonly adopted by other European nations in their colonies, never prevailed in those of Spain, and were esteemed inconsistent with the principles of the government. In this, as in other instances, there was a singular contrast between its liberal maxims in some points and its timid and miserable policy in others. Thus the "kings of Spain" (to use the words of Humboldt), "in taking the title of kings of the Indies, considered these distant possessions rather as integral parts of their monarchy, as provinces depending on the crown of Castile, than as colonies in the sense attached to that word, since the sixteenth century, by the commercial nations of Europe." The corollary of this doc-

"countries before they had any considerable colonies. Since they had the richest and most fertile in the world, they have ceased to be so."

—*Adam Smith*, book 4, ch. vii.

trine was, according to the same writer, that the people were not systematically prohibited, as they have been in most colonies, from manufacturing for themselves. The mother-country supplied them exclusively with European manufactured commodities, but they were not compelled to take those commodities in preference to the produce of their own industry. Thus sugar refining was permitted in Spanish America; and considerable manufactures of the coarser goods existed at Quito and elsewhere, although sometimes discouraged by European governors. But Humboldt has omitted to explain, how this principle was consistent with the arbitrary edicts which prevented the Americans from raising various articles of raw produce grown in the mother-country. The culture of saffron, hemp, tobacco, olives, and vineyards, was thus at different times prohibited; and even as late as 1803, when Humboldt was at Mexico, an order was despatched from Madrid for the rooting up of the vines in the northern dependencies of that province.

The political treatment of the Spanish colonies was quite in keeping with their commercial administration. To enter into details respecting it would be foreign to my present purpose. Suffice it to say, that the system of government by viceroys, captains-general, audiencias, and councils, with their various relations to each other, has been truly described as a complicated contrivance to render every part of the government a check on every other. The best governors found it impossible to carry into effect any scheme for the amelioration of society; the worst found it easy enough to enrich themselves, and aggrandise their favourites. Power was exclusively in the hands of Spaniards, and most colonial offices were sold in Madrid. "Of 170 viceroys," say the revolutionists of Buenos Ayres in their first manifesto, "who have governed the provinces of America, four only have been Americans; of 610 captains-general and

“governors, only fourteen.” Even the very clerks of the government offices were almost exclusively European. Such a system, at least with regard to the higher offices, has been pursued by most European nations in their colonies; including our own. But it must be remembered that society in our settlements is nearly democratic, and that it may be a necessary policy not to violate the existing equality of ranks, as it would be violated should the governors be taken from the body of the people. In Spanish America there existed an aristocracy; for there were very large estates enjoyed by American families, under a strict system of mayorazgos or entails*: many had been raised to nobility; some decorated with titles by the crown; and it is one of the worst features of the policy of Spain, that having under its hand these elements of orderly and national institutions, it systematically refused to employ them, and degraded and irritated the possessors of rank and wealth by excluding them from every public trust. It sought for security against the deep discontent of the Creoles by cultivating the spirit of mutual jealousy between them and the inferior or mixed races. The place of a man in society was made to depend on his colour, even to the minutest shades. The different degrees of departure from the white standard of purity by intermixture with Negro or Indian blood, were marked out with the utmost minuteness, not only by the usages of society but by the laws. When there was only a sixth of Indian or Negro blood in the composition of the citizen, that is, when after one intermixture the progeny had, for two generations, married with pure whites, caste was recovered: “Que se tengan por blancos;” let them pass for white, was the

* These mayorazgos are represented by A. Smith and others, as a cause of the slow progress of industry; but it seems that only $\frac{1}{3}$ of the property could be thus entailed.

cautious sentence of the law.* On the other hand, the progeny of one of mixed race intermarrying with another in whom the mixture was darker, was termed "salta-atras," or retrograde. "Is it possible that you consider "yourself whiter than me?" was often the question of a barefooted Creole labourer, when he esteemed himself affronted by a grandee of Mexico. The pride of caste is a common feature of society in all slave colonies; but there it naturally arises out of the degradation in which slaves are held. In continental Spanish America slavery was very little extended, and these unhappy distinctions, not necessarily proceeding from the constitution of society, were deliberately cherished by the policy of the mother-country.

The state of the church was perhaps the worst feature of all in the condition of these colonies. It was early emancipated from the direct control of the Vatican. By the bulls of Alexander II. and Julius II. (1501 and 1508), the perception of all tithes and collation to all benefices were absolutely relinquished to the crown. Ferdinand V.'s arrangement was as follows: "The tithe was divided into "nine parts: of these the king took one; two were appropriated to the bishops, two to the cathedral dignities. "The remaining four were redivided into nine; of these "last one went to the king, four to the curates, two to the "keeping up of cathedral churches, two to the foundation "of new benefices and hospitals in the towns and cities."† But this exemption from foreign superintendence, instead of a blessing, proved the worst of all curses to the unfortunate Americans. They were thereby deprived of a pro-

* According to Tschudi, the following was the scale:—

White and Negro	produced	Mulatto.
White and Mulatto	„	Quarteron.
White and Quarteron	„	Quintero.
White and Quintero	„	White.

† Foreign and Colonial Review, vol. ii. p. 448.

lector who, from one motive or another, would frequently have stood between them and their temporal rulers, whose only object was to make the church an engine of their political system. The clergy, both regular and secular, were notoriously lazy and corrupt to a degree unknown in the mother-country. The frontier missionaries, the only active class, came chiefly from Europe; those who remained in the inhabited parts were sunk in the utmost sloth and profligacy. The Inquisition, with all its appurtenances, was transferred across the Atlantic; and if its activity was not so great as in Europe*, this appears to have been really owing rather to the general languor which pervaded all things in those regions of indolence, than to any superior tolerance. Education was, for the most part, sedulously discouraged. "Learn to read, write, and say your prayers," said the viceroy, Gil de Lemos, to a deputation from the collegians of Lima, who sought for some extension of their privileges, "for this is as much as any American ought to know."

The degeneracy of the Creole race under such institutions as these, and in the climate of the tropics, was rapid to an unprecedented degree. Even the courage of the Castilian disappeared; the descendants of the Conquistadores, in three or four generations, had forgotten the use of arms. The adventurers of other European countries, who came occasionally in contact with these sequestered people, found them almost as powerless and as terrified as the Indians themselves had been at the arrival of the Spaniards. When the Buccaneers of the seventeenth century crossed the Isthmus of Darien and

* It may be doubted whether the Inquisition was not even more active in Spanish America than in Spain, though its records have nearly perished. Its worst abuses certainly lasted longer. Tschudi, the Swiss traveller, a very credible witness, knew, in the republic of Peru, a Spaniard whose limbs were distorted, from the effects of torture undergone in his youth in the Inquisition. (Kottenkamp, i. 516)

ravaged the coasts of the South Sea, they met with a population absolutely defenceless, which fled in herds to the churches at the first moment of alarm. And the same scenes were renewed eighty years afterwards, when the expedition of Anson threatened Chili and Peru. These great possessions appear to have furnished one of many instances of the difficulty of maintaining, in serviceable order, a local colonial army, in a climate unsuited to European energy. Regular troops seem to have been first stationed in them about the end of the 18th century. They became a local force, seldom moved from its respective garrisons, in which battalions of Europeans, Creoles, and coloured people served together. In Mexico, shortly before the Revolution, 9500 regular, and 22,000 militia, were maintained—at least on paper; in New Grenada 3800 regular, 9000 militia; and so forth.*

The kings of the house of Bourbon deserve the credit of having begun the gradual removal of those complicated fetters with which the Austrian sovereigns had bound both the commerce and the spirit of America. It should, however, rather be said, that the measures which they adopted were forced upon them by the progress of events, over which even the most absolute monarchs have no effectual control. The lightening of commercial restrictions, as usual, preceded and introduced every other improvement. This was the work of the smuggler. The contraband trade to the Spanish colonies became, in the early part of the last century, the most regular and organised system of that kind which the world has ever witnessed. The English led the way in it, and their progress was much facilitated by their obtaining, at the peace of Utrecht, what was termed the *Assiento* contract; that is, the privilege of supplying Spanish America with a limited number of Negro

* Kottenkamp, *Gesch. der Colonisation Amerika's*, i. 520.

slaves: for the vessels licensed for this traffic were much more profitably employed in smuggling. The Dutch, French, and other nations, seized on their share of the spoil. Jamaica and St. Domingo became complete entrepôts for smuggled commodities, whence they were transported with ease to the continent; just as the Danish and Swedish islands, in later times, have served in the same capacity for Jamaica itself. Buenos Ayres rose from an insignificant station to a considerable city, merely from being the centre of the contraband traffic between Europe and Peru. The Spaniards guarded their coasts with an expensive maritime force, while they resorted, in the interior, to the strange measure of making smuggling an offence cognisable by the Inquisition. But all such efforts were utterly fruitless to check what Sir J. Child so aptly termed "the force and violence of the ordinary course of trade." The flotas and galleons sank to insignificance, and their owners were glad to make these licensed squadrons serve for introducing the contraband commodities furnished by other nations.

The war of 1737, into which Sir Robert Walpole was forced by the clamour of the English people, was neither more nor less than a war for the protection of smuggling. The Spaniards, however, saw in some degree their error, and in 1748 the system of flotas and galleons was changed for that of licensed or "registered" ships, which sailed singly from Europe. These vessels opened the commercial passage round Cape Horn; and in this way a stop seems to have been put, in great measure, to the illegal trade by way of Buenos Ayres. But, as a general remedy, the change was wholly ineffectual. Smuggling continued to increase with the increasing wants of communities now more rapidly advancing in wealth; and Adam Smith, Ulloa, and Raynal, give ample information as to its manner and extent.

War only made the matter worse for the Spanish cruisers were then driven from the sea, and the trade conveniently carried on under neutral flags so that, as Humboldt has shown*, the commerce of Mexico was always most flourishing in times of hostilities. The steps taken by the court of Spain, though in the right direction, followed very slowly the rapid increase of the evil. In 1765, the trade between the islands and the continent was thrown open; in 1774, the obstacles to internal commerce were removed; and in 1778, a new and more liberal scale of duties adopted; and the trade with Spain, which had hitherto been confined first to Seville and then to Cadiz, was extended to fourteen ports of the mother-country. Finally, it is stated in Lord Brougham's early work on Colonial Policy, that the contraband trade was almost entirely destroyed: a position of rather doubtful accuracy.†

In the mean time, and simultaneously with these changes, the industry and social condition of the colonies had made a sudden and almost unparalleled advance. The indestructible advantages of abundant soil and vast facilities of production triumphed in the end over every obstacle which legislation could throw in their way. In 1778 their exports to Spain amounted to 74,500,000 reals; in 1788, to 804,500,000. Mexico, from the astonishing increase in the productiveness of its mines; Guatemala, Venezuela, La Plata, and Chili, from their agricultural improvement; were the provinces in which this progress was most strikingly manifested. And, by way of termination to this lecture, we will take a brief review of the general state of development at which the resources of Spanish America had arrived at the close of the last century.

* *Nouv. Espagne*, iv. 484.

† *Col. Policy*, i. 445. "The dangers of separation from the parent state," he adds, "are not to be considered, so distant have they been rendered by wise measures of general policy!"—*Ib.* 451.

There is no region, says Humboldt, in which the circumstances of society are so much regulated by climate and by the disposition of the soil as Spanish America. A slight sketch of its physical geography may therefore not be out of place on the present occasion. The chief peculiarities of its climate are accounted for in a remarkably simple manner by reference to the prevailing winds and the comparative elevation of the land in different parts of it. The whole theory (if such it may be termed) is beautifully developed under the head "America" in the last supplement to the *Encyclopædia Britannica*, from which I have borrowed these details.

In the map attached to that article the different shades of dark colour indicate the quantity of moisture of the climate, increasing in depth as that is greater. On this moisture, in warm countries, the cultivation of the soil almost wholly depends. The broken line represents the range of the Andes. The arrows indicate the prevailing winds. From the equator as far as lat. 30° S. or thereabouts, east winds almost continually blow; varying, indeed, several points to the north or south of east, but maintaining that general direction. These winds arrive charged with the vapours of the Atlantic on the coasts of Brazil, where these vapours are precipitated in rain. They blow with unintermitting regularity against the current of the great river Amazon; and, in the same direction, across the plains of Brazil and the interior. In all that vast region there is no chain of mountains, scarcely any single groupe, of sufficient height to arrest them, until they arrive at the great Cordillera of the Andes along the western coast. They consequently carry rain with them (in most parts, more or less in every season of the year) as far as that range; but in somewhat diminishing quantity as they pass farther over the land. The whole of this tract, with slight exceptions, is therefore covered with luxuriant forests. The last

clouds are broken against the lofty wall presented by the Andes, and fall on their summits in occasional showers of snow and rain. The coast of the Pacific, sheltered by the Andes, scarcely receives a single drop. The wind there blows continually from or along the land; hence the name of the sea, which in that part is always free from storms. On the coast of Peru, from near the equator to the frontier of Chili, rain never falls; cultivation is only possible here and there, on the banks of scanty streams descending from the snow of the Cordillera. This is the general aspect of the country between the equator and lat. 35° south.

South of lat. 35°, this state of things is reversed. The prevailing winds blow from the west; and, consequently, the high range of the Andes continuing to intercept the clouds, the western coast is covered with forests; the whole country to the east of the mountains being bare, and subject to drought. To the north of the equator again, somewhat different results are produced by the different structure of the continent. The trade wind blowing from the east in the Gulf of Mexico, brings moisture to all the coasts of that extensive inland sea. Before reaching the isthmus of Darien from the south, the Cordilleras sink into hills of moderate size, and cease to obstruct the passage of the wind. Its fertilising vapours are consequently carried across to the Pacific, and spread southward as far as the equator, north and westward along the coast of Mexico, covering all those regions with tropical forests.* But in central Mexico the Cordillera, rising again, acts as a barrier against the wind, and the table land of its summit has a somewhat arid climate.

* The change from the extreme of dryness to that of moisture in neighbouring places is singularly abrupt. At Guayaquil, nearly under the equator, the rains are excessive; at Tumbez, only half a degree to the southward, a shower sometimes does not fall for years. The general propositions of the text may be seen confirmed by more recent authority in Mühry's "Klimatologische Untersuchungen." 1858. Chap. I.

As we proceed northward, this tendency continues to predominate; the wide plains of the "internal provinces" of Mexico are less and less visited by showers, according to their distance from the Atlantic; and in Lower California, as in Peru, rain scarcely falls. North of lat. 30° , the variable western winds again prevail. From the Gulf of Mexico, however, two currents of warm vapour appear to proceed in a northerly direction: one up the valley of the Mississippi, while the other is carried by the gulf stream along the eastern coast of the United States; which account for the woody character of that country.

These physical details explain at once the different proportions in which the fourteen or fifteen millions of inhabitants who occupied these regions under the dominion of Spain were spread over their surface, and the varieties of social condition which prevailed among them. In the extreme northern and southern districts, the internal provinces of Mexico and the Pampas of La Plata, wide dry plains, with a temperate climate, became the abodes of a pastoral population. The tame animals of Europe multiplied amazingly in their pastures, and constituted the chief wealth of their settlers. These were principally of pure Spanish descent: the Indians were few and warlike; and poverty rendered the importation of slaves impossible. Here the tendency to insulation, so common to European settlers in similar circumstances, had ample room to exert itself. The great object of every colonist was to obtain free space, and constant removal, for his flocks and herds, as is now the case with the boers of the Cape of Good Hope. Hence unremitting warfare with the bordering Indians*, armed and mounted like himself, rendered him as hardy and active, as savage

* At both the extremities of the Spanish empire, in New Mexico, and in Chili and La Plata, the Indians have learnt the use of the horse, and in both these distant quarters they have pressed hard on the whites since the revolutionary period began.



and remorseless as they: the few cities scattered over the wilderness served not so much for purposes of trade as for a refuge to the Spaniards when over-matched or surprised by their vigilant enemies. In this state of things civilization rapidly retrograded, and the white settlers had almost forgotten the arts and the knowledge of those from whom they were descended.

In the warm and fertile regions which possessed an easy access to the sea, such as Guatemala and Venezuela, the great wealth of the settlers consisted in the staple products of tropical climates — coffee, cotton, sugar, and cacao. Here a state of society, somewhat resembling that of our West India islands, naturally prevailed. The whites were rich in the abundant produce of their plantations, which increased greatly during the last half of the eighteenth century. Labour was chiefly performed by negroes; by Indians, where these were numerous; and by the mixed races, which had multiplied rapidly under the indulgent government of the Spaniards, so as to form, in some of the provinces, more than half the population. The mines of these districts were few and unimportant.

But the mass of the population and wealth of the Spanish colonies was concentrated on the small table lands and lofty valleys of the great Cordillera. Here the first adventurers found agricultural Indian nations established, exhibiting, in the middle of barbarous tribes or uninhabited deserts, the wonders of their mysterious civilization; and here the children of the conquerors took up their abode, built magnificent cities on the site of those which their fathers had destroyed, and gave to their towns and provinces the still cherished names of the mother country. Here, too, they found in reality that vast mineral wealth*, of which the prospect had deluded the first ad-

* The accounts of the enormous money prices of the commonest articles during the conquest and first colonization of these countries, furnish proof which goes even beyond the hyperboles of historians.

venturers. The most remarkable of these plateaux (to use a word employed by modern geographers) are those of Mexico, New Granada, Quito, and Upper Peru. These narrow spaces of table land, elevated at an enormous height above the adjoining ocean, were the only regions in the wide continent of Spanish America in which a concentrated and numerous population was actually to be found. To the traveller, who reached one of these happy valleys after traversing hot and unhealthy forests, and crossing the regions of eternal frost which encircle them, it is no wonder that the contrast which he had witnessed heightened its attractions; and that in beholding its fertile fields, its skies almost always serene, its numerous and flourishing cities, the fruits of a temperate climate in close proximity to those of the burning equatorial regions, and the magnificent pinnacles of the Andes surrounding it, he should have been tempted to describe it as a sequestered Paradise.*

By far the finest of these oases is the table land of Mexico: out of 5,000,000 people who inhabited the whole viceroyalty at the time of Humboldt's visit in 1800, full three were collected in this central region. The progress of Mexico, during the fifty or sixty years before that time, had been most surprising. Population was doubling (it is said) in about thirty years, and the tithes (which may serve as an index to the gross produce of agricul-

"After Christopher de Ayala was slain, his goods were publicly sold at prodigious rates. They gave 1600 pieces of eight for a sow and one pig; small pigs yielded 500 pieces of eight, and a sheep of Pene 280 pieces of eight, which I saw paid. . . . I saw that same sow eaten one day at an entertainment made presently after we came to the city Cali, with Verdillo. Knives were sold for 15 pieces of eight each. I heard Jerome Lewis Texelo say that when he went with Capt. Michael Munnoz upon the expedition they call Dela Vieja, he gave 30 pieces of eight for a packing needle to make a pair of packthread buskins."—*Seventeen Years' Travels of Peter de la Cieza*. p. 68.

* "If you wish to live in the Indies," says a rhyming Spanish proverb, "let it be within sight of the volcanoes."

ture) in about twenty-five; but manufacturing and mining wealth were increasing with at least equal rapidity. The revenue of Mexico had risen within the century from about four to twenty millions of dollars, or 4,000,000*l*. It has been said by an able, but somewhat dogmatical writer, that it is, "if not an absolute, at least a moral, impossibility that a colony should ever benefit a mother-country " by yielding it a permanent tribute." * The example of Mexico is a direct authority against the position. It furnished annually, in Humboldt's time, 6,000,000 dollars over and above all expenses of government and defence. But the greater part of this surplus was again absorbed in assisting the exchequer of other and poorer colonies, so that very little reached Spain itself. So far was Mexico advanced beyond the rest, that Humboldt estimates that two-thirds of the whole currency of Spanish America was used in that province alone.

This flourishing revenue was nearly all owing either directly or indirectly to the extraordinary advance of the Mexican silver mines. These produced, at the end of the last century, 24,000,000 dollars annually, far more than all the rest of Spanish America. The writer whom I have just quoted asserts, that the dominion over a colony for the sake of precious metals can only be desirable when it has a monopoly of the supply of those metals, "by " having the richest mines, and underselling the rest of " the world." The difference in the cost of production between those mines and the most barren which are anywhere wrought, becomes then a monopoly profit or rent, and a legitimate subject of taxation. This axiom seems somewhat loosely expressed, because it is clear that in any mining country, whether or not its mines were the richest in the world, the difference between the richest and the poorest which could be wrought with a profit would form a species of rent, and be taxable in the same

* Ency. Brit. art. "Colony."

manner. But the condition of Mexico for a few years of the eighteenth century certainly affords an instance of the great revenue which may thus be realized. Its mines were more productive than those of any other region, not so much from superior fertility as because they were easily accessible, and the supply of labour practically unlimited; whereas in the great Peruvian mines, as we shall presently see, the obstacles to working with a profit were far greater. Consequently Mexico could, in fact, undersell Peru, or any other country in the market of the world, and this monopoly afforded an abundant source of rent and imposts.

The latter were not heavy. It is an error to assert, as many have done, that the productiveness of the American mines was checked by the exactions of government. The crown held no mines of its own. They were all the property of adventurers or landlords. The whole of the duties levied on silver amounted before the revolution to about $11\frac{1}{2}$ per cent., a tax which those of Mexico at least were well able to bear. It is an equally erroneous supposition, that mining in America was unfavourable to the progress of agriculture. This notion appears to have arisen merely from the fact, that many of the most celebrated American mines were situated in districts naturally so barren as to be incapable of profitable cultivation. Those of Mexico were not thus unfavourably circumstanced; and the mining wealth of that country served, as was naturally to be expected, as a stimulus to agricultural industry. The district near Guanaxuato, the neighbourhood of the richest of all the mines, reminded Humboldt by its appearance of the luxuriant plains of Lombardy. So in Chili, streams abounding in gold, it is said, run through the richest corn-fields, and the farmer and miner hold converse on their banks.

The enormous mass of surplus wealth thus created was lodged in a very few hands. Humboldt has preserved some data which, if reported with any degree of accuracy,

will show the great amount of monopoly profit or rent which may be obtained under so rare a combination of circumstances as that of great fertility of soil with an ample supply of labour. According to that writer, the return to seed in the cultivation of wheat in Mexico might be estimated at 24 to 1; in France, at 6 to 1. The labourer in the temperate country of Mexico received wages amounting to about 30 sous French per day; the French labourer received about 35; but as corn was somewhat dearer in France than Mexico, the real wages of the two were about equal. Supposing, therefore, that the labour of the two were equally effective, the Mexican labourer, for the same amount of wages, would produce four times as much as the Frenchman: in other words, rent and profit together would be more than four times as high in Mexico as in France; and rating the effectiveness of the American's labour at only one half that of the Frenchman, rent and profit in the former country would still be more than double what they were in the latter. Estates at the same time were very large; they are so still, notwithstanding the revolutions of the last thirty years and the decay of great properties. The large grants into which the soil of Mexico was divided contained about 22,000 acres; and there have been in our own time individuals who have owned eighteen of these.

The wealth of the higher classes in Mexico was, accordingly, very great. According to Humboldt, there were fortunes of 15,000*l.* or 20,000*l.* sterling per annum, in Cuba; the highest in Venezuela might be 6,000*l.* or 7,000*l.*; in Lima, few amounted to 3,000*l.* or 4,000*l.* These sums sink to nothing in comparison with the riches of the Mexican grandees.

"In New Spain," says the same writer, "there are individuals who possess no mines, and yet whose annual income amounts to a million of francs (40,000*l.*). The family of the Count de la Valenciana, for example, pos-

"sesses alone, on the ridge of the Cordillera, estates of the value of more than 25 millions (6,000,000*l.*), without including the mine of Valenciana, near Guanaxuato, which in common years brings a net income of a million and a half (50,000*l.*). The late Count of Valenciana has sometimes received from his single mine 6 millions (240,000*l.*) in a single year. A single vein, possessed by the family of the Marquis de Fagoaga, in the district of Sombrerete, has produced in six months, all expenses deducted, a clear income of 20,000,000."

And yet, it is observed by the same author, nothing was more rare than the accumulation of wealth by these great proprietors, although in the amount of their gross revenue they rivalled the richest subjects of Russia or of England. This was owing partly to the spirit of speculation in mining, which made them the constant prey of needy adventurers: partly to the habit of extravagant and ill-regulated establishments, with little of real splendour or comfort; partly to the prevalence of gambling. And all these degrading characteristics together might be ascribed, originally, to the wretched policy of the government, which kept the American nobility without education, employment, or importance in their native country. Hence, when the day of revolution arrived, the natural aristocracy of the country either joined in the revolt, or was utterly incapable of offering any resistance to it.*

The Spanish and Creole inhabitants of the table land of Mexico amounted to about 20 per cent. of the whole; the mixed races and Negroes (the latter extremely few)

* In fact, the neglect and ill-usage of the Creoles by the Spaniards, and the monopoly of office and power by the latter, produced the revolution almost as a matter of course, as soon as the central authority was weakened by the French wars. They were abounding in wealth, and possessed a numerous nobility of their own; in Lima, one-third of the whites called themselves noble, including 45 marquises and counts, at a time when they were almost excluded from any share in the government of their country.

to 30; the Indians to 50; and the same proportions, with some variation, prevailed in the mountain regions of South America. The Indians, who formed the great bulk of the labourers, were by no means unhappily circumstanced in Mexico. Their legal disabilities have been already noticed. But they were subject to no compulsory service whatever. Their labour was entirely free. They worked in the mines on their own account, and for very high wages. The only labour to which they were naturally disinclined seems to have been that of manufactures; but the accounts which are given of the frauds practised by the manufacturers in getting these ignorant people into debt by supplying them with intoxicating liquor, and then forcing them to work out their liabilities, seem to show not so much that they were oppressed, as that their condition was so good that the capitalist resorted to these tricks and artifices through the difficulty of procuring the needful supply of labour.

The condition of Peru, the other great mining colony of Spain, was less favourable. The mines of that country had poured forth their treasures with astonishing fertility during the first century and half after the conquest. But their richest veins were early exhausted, and they were, besides, situated for the most part high on the ridge of the Andes, where wood and provisions were wanting, and communications extremely difficult. These disadvantages were only overcome by the profuse application of Indian labour. The unhappy natives were transported from their own valleys to a scene of incessant toil, in an air almost too attenuated for human life, at 12 or 14,000 feet above the level of the sea. Their numbers rapidly diminished, and the mines became unproductive from the increased cost of working them. Hence they could not maintain the competition with the mines of Mexico; and, even in their decay, they were still wrought by means of the "mita" or conscription of Indians, to serve by rota-

tion for a limited period. Hence these poor people, in Mexico contented and industrious though apathetic, cherished in Peru a deep-rooted hatred of their masters. In 1782 they nearly threw off the yoke in a sanguinary rebellion under a leader who claimed descent from their ancient Incas. The general industry of Peru partook of the languor of its mining operations: the famous City of the Kings, Lima, had long sunk from its ancient and somewhat fabulous splendour to the level of a dull provincial capital. The countries of Quito and New Granada, less rich in the precious metals, presented a greater appearance of wealth and industry. Lastly, along the border of these vast possessions, in California, on the Orinoco and Amazon with their branches, and in Paraguay, were established the Reductions or missions of religious bodies, chiefly the Jesuits. The peculiar usages and constitution of these singular settlements will deserve some attention when we come to inquire into the different methods of policy which have been pursued by colonizing governments towards native races.

This scanty outline may serve to convey some notion of the general condition of the Spanish continental colonies just before their emancipation—a condition far more prosperous and advanced than was commonly supposed in Europe, where the old traditions of their wealth and splendour had been succeeded by equally erroneous impressions respecting their decay. Had the rulers of the mother-country possessed sufficient forethought to adapt their policy in time to the altered state of things, it is, perhaps, not too wild a conjecture that they might at this day have preserved some political connection between the new and old dominion. For in Spanish America, as we have seen, there existed both the elements of a nobility and an established church, from want of which England found so little support in the day of revolution in her ancient colonies, and finds so little of substantial attach-

ment in those which she still possesses. By ceasing to make over the official patronage of America as a prey to needy Spaniards; by giving the powerful and wealthy Americans and the municipalities an interest in the government of their country; by sending princes of the house of Spain to govern those provinces as viceroys, and erecting them into dependent kingdoms; above all, by abolishing the ancient system of restriction and adopting a comprehensive and liberal scheme of commercial government, Spain might have given another turn to the destinies of the new world, and laid the foundations of an order of things essentially different from any which has yet existed. Such at least are the speculations in which political philosophy may indulge. Historically speaking, this was impossible. Providence had marked out, as it were, a different channel for the course of events, by denying to the statesmen of that day the will, the knowledge, and the power necessary for the accomplishment of such changes. They persisted, amidst the rapidly increasing discontent of their American subjects, incited as these were by the example of the United States, in their old system of government by coercion and division. They fomented mutual jealousies between colours and ranks: they set the clergy as spies over the laity, the poor over the rich: they multiplied, in every possible way, the numbers of Spanish officials, on whom they relied for support; they watched and punished with equal severity every effort for the extension of unlicensed trade, and the expression of liberal sentiments.* Yet it is doubtful how long revolu-

* It must not be forgotten, however, that the commercial tie between Spain and her old colonies was a very slight one. Spain was not a manufacturing country. The Hispano-Americans, for a century before the disruption, consumed hardly any Spanish produce. The Spaniards had to purchase such colonial articles as they consumed (cacao, sugar, &c.) with the goods of other European nations. In 1854 it was estimated that the imports into Peru from Spain, her ancient metropolis, amounted to 2,000,000 of francs; from France, 5,000,000;

tion might have been delayed, from the want of union and of intelligence among the discontented, had it not been for the troubles of Spain itself, and its invasion by Napoleon. Spanish America then fell into confusion. At that moment, when the provincial governors and the military commanders were disarmed by their own uncertainty, hesitating whom to obey, their power seemed about to pass peacefully at once into the hands of the self-constituted authorities of the patriot party. It would have done so, had these known how to govern, and had they not permitted and encouraged the popular fury to vent itself against the Spanish inhabitants. But the Spaniards were a body formidable from their numbers alone; they were not fewer, it is said, than 300,000 in all Spanish America: and much more so from their comparative wealth and intelligence. They soon armed in their behalf a portion of the community; they incited the mother-country to repeated efforts for the reconquest of the colonies, and raised in self-defence the most wasteful and sanguinary struggle of modern times. Independence was finally achieved, at the cost of the temporary ruin of wealth and commerce, and the destruction, in some provinces, of one half the population.

For some time after that event the affairs of the new states wore an aspect very discouraging, even to those who had been the foremost to exult in their liberation; and appeared still more gloomy to minds more disposed to dwell on the evils of revolution. "In South America, "we see no termination to the contest that we can contemplate without pain. Whether the communities of "Spanish origin in that division of America shall be reduced to the savage condition of the settlements of "Paraguay since the abolition of the Jesuits, or to that of

from England, 18,000,000. — *Journal des Économistes*, May, 1854, cited by Roscher, "Kolonien," p. 205.

"the Negro population of St. Domingo ; or whether, after "still further exhaustion and depression, they may be induced in despair to throw themselves again at the feet "of Spain ; in any case we see nothing to console humanity for the tremendous evils to which the conflict has "given birth." So prophesied an eminent writer in 1825. He had not, perhaps, sufficiently calculated on what may be termed the elastic power of society even under the most unfavourable circumstances, when its energies are not controlled by oppressive restrictions. Much deplorable weakness, much corruption, little fitness for the practical duties of government, have been hitherto exhibited in the emancipated republics ; and the traces of the recent conflict still remain uneffaced. Yet, on the whole, it is impossible to doubt that they are making progress in many essential particulars. Slavery has been abolished ; and thus one deep though latent source of permanent evil effectually removed. A better and more natural tone of feeling seems to exist between the various races which compose the motley population ; the union in arms and in sufferings has doubtless softened their mutual antipathy.* Education, so long proscribed, is sought after by the rising generation, with a zeal proportioned to their awakened sense of its importance. Men have arisen more fitted for government than their predecessors, because, instructed by the experience of their own times, they have learnt to take a better measure of the wants and capacities of their countrymen, and have got rid of the first illusions

* At least, in some parts. The recent revolutions of Central America have exhibited, for the first time, the triumph of the inferior caste, the Indians, over the more civilized races, attended with all the worst symptoms of this species of conflict.

Unmeaning as the intestine divisions of these Republics appear to us, it will commonly be found that a fundamental party difference — between Federalists trying to establish independent governments by local civilian aristocracies, and Centralists, endeavouring to maintain military dictatorships on a large scale — lies at the bottom.

of independence. Although some of the ancient branches of industry requiring extensive capital, such as mining and the cultivation of sugar, have suffered enormously, yet the condition of the mass of the population seems on the whole to have improved, except in Mexico. This is mainly owing to free trade — the want of which was the great stimulus of the contest, and which is perhaps the most substantial reward they have hitherto acquired by it. “My opinion of “the revolution is this,” said a peasant of the Mexican Cordillera to Captain Hall: “formerly I paid nine dollars for the piece of the cloth of which this shirt was made; “now I pay only two.” This was the feeling which recruited the armies of the patriots, and made their cause popular with the community in general, even when stained by the greatest excesses and devastations — a most pregnant warning to governments. Tyranny, in the ordinary sense of the word, falls heavily only on the few, and is often endured for a long time through the acquiescence of the many. But the species of oppression which is produced by the spirit of monopoly, and affects the comforts and subsistence of the multitude, fosters that deep-seated discontent which needs but occasion and incitement to overthrow the strongest institutions.*

* Although from a variety of causes their advance may appear slow, and their present state fall far short of what has been expected of them, the truth is, that they have made immense progress compared with their old condition under the colonial yoke of Spain. — *Sir Woodbine Parish, Buenos Ayres and La Plata*, p. 11.

The French financier, Ouvrard, relates in his *Memoirs*, that at a late period of the Spanish colonial domination, a sort of commercial partnership was formed between himself and the king of Spain, in pursuance of which the latter agreed to furnish him with the licences necessary to introduce all manner of goods free of duty into Spanish America. Such exemptions, as M. Say truly remarks when mentioning the fact, are a real fraud on unprivileged industry. It is difficult to conceive a measure likely to produce greater or juster irritation. — *Say, Cours*. iii. 372.

APPENDIX TO LECTURE I.

SPANISH CONTINENTAL COLONIES, BEFORE AND SINCE THEIR
INDEPENDENCE.I. *Population.*

1. Total, as estimated before independence :—

Whites, European	.	.	.	.	300,000
Whites, Creole	.	.	.	.	3,000,000
Indians, mixed, Negroes	.	.	.	.	11,100,000
					<hr/> 14,400,000

2. MEXICO :—

1804. 5,900,000 (*Humboldt, Nouv. Esp.*).
 1830. 7,000,000 (*Ibid. conjectural estimate*).
 1858. 7,859,664 (*Census, doubtful, after cessions to U. States*).

3. GUATEMALA OR CENTRAL AMERICA :—

1778. 797,000 (*Humboldt*).
 1804. 1,204,000 (*Ibid.*).
 1860. About 2,500,000.

4. PROVINCES OF TERRA FIRMA, at one time Republic of
Colombia :—

1775. { Venezuela }
 { New Granada . . . 747,000 }
 { Quito (now Ecuador) 531,000 }
1804. { Venezuela . . . 900,000 }
 { New Granada . . . 1,800,000 } 2,700,000 (*Humboldt*).
 { Quito }

1825.	New Granada	.	1,228,259	(<i>Census</i>).	
1835.	{ New Granada	.	1,686,038	(<i>Census</i>)	} 2,986,000
	{ Venezuela	.	800,000	} (<i>Estimate</i>)	
	{ Ecuador	.	500,000		
1858.	{ New Granada	.	2,243,837	(<i>Alm. de Gotha</i>)	} 4,795,320
	{ Venezuela	.	1,564,483	(<i>Ibid.</i>)	
	{ Ecuador	.	487,000	(<i>Ibid.</i>)	

5. PERU :—

1803.	{ Lower	1,076,000	(<i>Census</i>)	} 2,789,000
	{ Upper	1,713,000 ?	(<i>Brackenridge</i>)	
1838.	{ Peru	1,800,000	(<i>Penny Cycl.</i>)	} 2,830,000
	{ Bolivia,	1,030,000	(<i>M^r Cul. Geog. Dict.</i>)	
1860.	Peru,	2,500,000	supposed.	
1853.	Bolivia,	1,447,000,	without 700,000 Indians.	

6. CHILI :—

1813.	980,000	(<i>Humboldt</i>).
About 1825.	600,000 ?	(<i>Caldcleugh, conjectural estimate</i>).
1838.	1,200,000	(<i>M^r Cul. Geog. Dict.</i>).
1858.	1,558,319	(<i>Census</i>).

7. LA PLATA :—

1804.	1,100,000	(<i>Humboldt</i>).
1860.	Buenos Ayres	350,000
1855.	Argentine Conf.	1,100,000
1859.	Uruguay	. 214,000
1859.	Paraguay	. 800,000
	Total	. 2,464,000

II. *Exports.*

Whole Spanish Colonies	{ 1748 to 1755.	£4,960,000	(<i>Humboldt</i>).
	1784.	13,470,000	(<i>Ibid.</i>).
	1788.	8,550,000	(<i>Ibid.</i>).
(Exclusive of the Islands)	1804.	12,643,000	(<i>Ibid.</i>).

LECTURE II.

SPANISH COLONIES IN THE WEST INDIES — THEIR HISTORY AND PRESENT CONDITION IN RESPECT TO WEALTH AND COMMERCE ; PORTUGUESE, DUTCH, AND FRENCH COLONIES — ACCOUNT OF THEIR GOVERNMENT, COMMERCE, AND GENERAL HISTORY.

I. THE principal relics which Spain still possesses of her dismembered colonial empire, are the Philippine Islands in Asia, and Cuba and Portorico in the Gulf of Mexico. The Philippines are inhabited by a numerous and half-civilized Malay population, governed rather than colonized by a handful of Europeans; and, like our own possessions in the East Indies, hardly fall within the strict definition of a colony.

Towards the close of the last century, when our West India islands were rapidly advancing to the height of their prosperity, Cuba was comparatively of small importance. Its inhabitants were chiefly small landowners, cultivating the soil without the aid of slaves; for out of a population of 300,000, only a third belonged to the latter class. At the period of the emancipation of British slaves, it exported upwards of 80,000 tons of sugar, or a rather greater quantity than Jamaica: at present (1840) the export from Cuba is greater still, and that from Jamaica smaller; while the superiority of the former island in the production of other colonial articles is far more decided. No less than forty new sugar estates were lately said to have been opened in Cuba in the single year 1838. It is now, beyond contradiction, the wealthiest and most flourishing colony possessed by any European power.

The causes of this extraordinary increase in prosperity are easily assignable:—

1. The opening of the commerce of Cuba in 1809; from which period the turn in its affairs may be said to have begun.

2. Its natural advantages, which are of the very highest order, but which had been of the least possible avail during the long period of commercial restriction which it underwent. The geographical position of the island, and its shape, by which scarcely any productive part of it is distant above thirty or forty miles from the sea, are highly favourable. But a far more important element of wealth is to be found in its great extent of fertile soil, of which the first fecundity has not yet been exhausted. The high prices which sugar attained during the French war, while our West India islands had the exclusive supply of this country, and produced a very large proportion of the whole amount consumed in Europe, induced our planters to extend their cultivation on inferior soils, which yielded gradually less and less return, or required a continually increasing outlay of capital. At the peace, the virgin soils of other tropical colonies and states came suddenly into competition with theirs. The same change then took place, of which, as we shall see, several instances had already occurred in colonial history. Neither the accumulated capital of prosperous years, nor agricultural skill, nor comparative abundance of slave labour, such as were then enjoyed by the British planters of the old colonies, availed to counterbalance the free gifts of nature enjoyed by these younger rivals. The British market was secured by our prohibitive duties to our own colonists; but the rest of the world became speedily dependent on the produce of other and newer regions; among which the Spanish islands have been by far the most successful in the race. In the present state of Cuba, old plantations, after a considerable number of years, are for the most part deserted by the sugar producer; new land is

brought gradually into cultivation for his purpose, while the abandoned estates are devoted to raising Indian corn, and the other staple articles consumed within the island. Thus the visitor from the Havannah has many miles to go before he reaches a sugar plantation; those earliest cultivated, near the city, having been long abandoned to other purposes. But the construction of railroads has brought the new ones, practically, as near to the place of disposal for their produce as the old ones had been. And if it be true, that only seven-hundredths of the soil of Cuba have as yet been brought under cultivation, there appears no assignable limit, for many future years, to the increase of production.*

3. But a still more important stimulus was given to the progress of the Spanish islands in the wealth of commerce, by the abolition of the slave trade in our colonies. In another part of this course, I shall endeavour to explain in what manner that great and just measure acted for the time unfavourably upon the economical condition of our settlements; and how the maintenance of slavery, without the slave trade, caused a continual drain and impoverishment to take place, while the colonies of other nations were reaping the profit of our sacrifice. For the present I will content myself with pointing out a few facts. Between the years 1800 and 1835, the population of Cuba increased from 300,000 to 800,000: her

* "Luxuriant fields of sugar-cane in Cuba are managed by a new process of ratoonning, without the insertion of new plants, for twenty or even thirty years in succession. Ratoonning is the annual raising of fresh canes from the same plant; and the number of years during which it can be carried on is an index of the strength and richness of the soil. While this process can be carried on in Cuba for so great a length of years, the virgin soil is so rich, that a mere touch of the hoe is sufficient to prepare it for the reception of the cane. In most of the British colonies the ratoonning lasts only three or four years, and the ground requires the laborious process of *holing*, or some adequate substitute, as a preparation for planting."—*Gurney, Winter in the West Indies*, p. 265.

slaves, from 100,000 to 300,000: her exports, from the value of £600,000 to £4,000,000: while the population of the old British West India colonies was very little augmented during that period, and their number of slaves and amount of production remained stationary or diminished. In 1830 Cuba furnished between one-fifth and one-sixth of all the sugar consumed in Europe.*

Unhappily, or rather, I ought to say, by a just and striking retribution, the moral and social condition of this thriving island seem to have declined, under the influence of slavery and its consequences, with the same rapidity with which its wealth has advanced. At the beginning of this century, the Spaniards of the West Indies were accused with justice of indolence, and enjoyed in some respects an inferior civilization to that of their neighbours. But on the other hand, the steadier habits and greater repose of the old Castilian genius contrasted favourably with the eager, jealous, money-making character of the motley adventurers who constituted too large a proportion of the West Indian population subject to England, France, and Holland. These were a people whom no ties seemed to bind to the land of their adoption; the home of whose recollections was in their native countries; whose only object was the rapid attainment of wealth, their favourite project that of return. The Spaniards were permanent inhabitants; they maintained, in each colony, the habits of a fixed, social, and organized population, with distinction of ranks and regular institutions. There are even now thirty *grandees* of Spain among the resident proprietors of Cuba.

* Ramon de la Sagra, *Historia Económico-Política y Estadística de la Isla de Cuba*. In 1857, nearly one-third of all the cane sugar grown in the world (M'Culloch, *Com. Dic.*). If the Census is to be trusted, the population of Cuba since 1840 has been nearly stationary (1,100,000 in 1857). From 1841 to 1853 the same authorities show a very great (and unexplained) decrease in the number of slaves (430,000 to 330,000). But it is suggested that these documents are not to be trusted.

As there was little profit to be obtained out of the labour of the slave, so his condition was generally easy, and the conduct of his master towards him humane and considerate. The laws of Spain encouraged this tendency, beyond those of all other nations. Instead of being an outcast from the benefits of law and religion, he was peculiarly under the protection of both. The four rights of the slave, as they are emphatically termed in Spanish legislation, have been uniformly respected in theory and generally in practice:—these are, the right of marriage; the right to compel a master guilty of illegal severity towards a slave to sell him to another; the right to purchase his own emancipation, and to acquire property. The sentiments of the Spaniards towards their enslaved dependants were much modified, in the course of centuries, by the wholesome spirit of their laws; and it may perhaps be added, that if the Spanish character, under the excitement of the spirit of revenge, fanaticism, or avarice, be capable of atrocities from which the civilized mind shrinks with abhorrence, there is about it in the commonalty as well as the higher orders, when uninflamed by passion, a sense of dignity, an habitual self-respect, evincing itself in courtesy to equals and forbearance towards inferiors, of which nations of more practical but more vulgar habits of mind afford but rare examples.

But the progress of wealth and of the slave trade have rapidly changed the moral aspect of these communities. From being the most humane among all European slave owners, the Spanish colonists have become the most barbarous and demoralized. This is a painful fact, of which the evidence is too abundant and too notorious to admit even of a suspicion of exaggeration. The sugar plantations of Cuba are now almost entirely wrought by means of the slave trade; that is, as we shall see when we come to examine this part of the subject more closely, they are wrought at an enormous profit, purchased by an enormous

expenditure of life, replaced by perpetual recruits; and that the humane provisions of the law itself are turned against the imported slave. For as the trade is illegal, the Bozals, as the African Negroes are called, are considered in the light of contraband articles, of which the possession and use is winked at, not recognized, by the authorities. They are thus entirely without protection, which they stand more in need of than any other class of the slaves. Nothing can be more horrible than the condition of these wretches in the inland plantations of the island, where the average duration of the life of a slave is said not to exceed ten years: in Barbadoes, in the worst period of English slavery, it was rated at sixteen. The boasted humanity of the Spanish planter has scarcely left any traces, except, it is said, in the treatment of domestic slaves. But even this is far worse than formerly; and the whites of Cuba have occasionally resorted to the expedient of arming the Bozals as a kind of mameluke guard, to defend themselves against the dreaded hostility of the native coloured population.

The vices engendered by the increase of slave cultivation extend, as may be supposed, through all classes of society. Wealth is now as exclusively and sordidly pursued by the Spanish planter as ever it was by the Dutchman or Englishman. The words of Lord Brougham, in his early work on *Colonial Policy**, written before the era of the prosperity of the Spanish islands had commenced, are becoming fully verified. "The great distinction in this respect arises from the indolence of their character. While they were led over the seas and mountains of the New World by the spirit of plunder, they certainly did not fall short of other adventurers in the cruel treatment of their slaves. Now that an indifference about gain has succeeded to their former eagerness after all sorts

* Vol. i. p. 75.

"of booty, we find them no longer the same insatiable "masters either to the Indians or Negroes." The tropical colonies of Spain were commonwealths at an epoch when those of most other nations were mere factories ; they are now rapidly acquiring the degrading characteristics of factories, while ours, we may hope, are advancing towards the dignity of commonwealths.

It must be added, that since Cuba has been opened to the trade of the world, a very small portion of that trade remains to the Spaniard. Out of imports to the value of 16,000,000 dollars, Cuba received in 1830 only to the amount of 2,500,000 from the mother country. But, on the other hand, its revenue is so flourishing, that while in Humboldt's time its necessities were supplied out of the exchequer of Mexico, it has now for many years furnished important aid to the dilapidated finances of Spain.

One other flourishing colony of the Spaniards deserves particular notice, the island of Portorico. So excellent an account of it was published some years ago by a gallant officer in the Spanish service, Lieutenant-general Flinter, that we really possess a far more accurate knowledge of its economical and social condition, than of those of other countries much better known and more frequently visited. And the phenomena which it presents merit our particular attention : they show a state of things very different from that which is exhibited in modern times by any other West Indian community : they will throw light on several of the great problems in colonial economy with which we shall hereafter concern ourselves.

While Spain possessed her continental empire, Portorico, like most of her other insular possessions, was altogether neglected by the mother state. It was a penal settlement, to which criminals were transported, raising no surplus produce, and unknown by name in the commercial world. But it had the advantage of being well situated for the contraband trade with Mexico ; and this

circumstance, joined to the fertility of its soil, seems to have collected on its surface, even at the beginning of this century, a considerable population, *almost entirely of white origin*. In 1815, its trade was subjected by the Spanish government to a new code of regulations of the most liberal description. Lands were granted to settlers gratis; their extent to bear a proportion to the number of slaves imported. Slaves were rendered liable to a low and fixed poll-tax. Produce was freed from export duties. Tithes were remitted for fifteen years, and fixed after that time at a low commutation. The alcavala, a duty on the sale of commodities peculiar to Spain, was remitted for a like period. Foreign goods were admitted, subject to an *ad valorem* duty of 17 per cent. Under these regulations, the face of the island was transformed as if by enchantment. In twenty years its population doubled, and in 1840 exceeded 400,000 on a space of 4000 square miles; it is the best peopled spot of any extent in the whole of America. In the same twenty years, the exports were more than quadrupled. The export of sugar from Portorico, in 1830, was more than half of that from Jamaica.

But the singular part of the history of Portorico is that this extraordinary progress took place with scarcely any increase in the relative amount of the slave population, always smaller in its proportion to the free than in any other West Indian colony. In 1810 it had about 165,000 free and 17,000 slave inhabitants; in 1830, 300,000 free and 34,000 slaves; and the mass of the free population, as may be supposed, was white, and of pure Spanish descent. "The planter of Portorico," says Lieutenant-general Flint, "differs essentially from the same class in the British islands. In the latter, the proprietors of large estates generally reside in Europe, leaving the management of their property to resident agents. Even those who possess small estates, seldom establish them-

"selves permanently in the country, but hoard up their earnings for the purpose of returning to Europe. In Portorico the inhabitants of old Spain, who establish themselves either in commerce or agriculture, in general become heads of families, whose branches extend in every direction. The estates are not fitted up on the grand and expensive scale in which they are seen in the English and French islands; but the planter residing on his land with his family becomes a fixed and permanent part of the population, and of white society."

But besides the planters properly so called, Portorico contained a very numerous class of small white proprietors. Nearly a third of the whole population were freemen, with their families, leading a pastoral life, and principally white: these Xivaros, as they are called, were a frank, robust, hearty race, neither very industrious nor over refined, and utterly wanting in education, but well disposed and well conducted in essentials, and living with the coloured people on terms of remarkable forbearance. I have myself heard a visitor to that colony, who was familiar with the habits of the West Indian islanders, remark, that it was difficult in Portorico to distinguish the master from the slave. All these circumstances indicated a state of society not very favourable, perhaps, either to the accumulation of enormous fortunes, or to civilization; but incomparably better, in essential respects, than that of the communities in which slaves constituted the mass of the inhabitants.*

* These "Xivaros" have been cited as instances to prove:—1. That an European population will become acclimatized in the Antilles. 2. That West Indian produce may be raised by free labour. But it seems that their blood has a considerable tinge of the Indian: while their habits are those of the most complete and unparalleled indolence. M. Schoelcher, in his work on the Antilles (Iles Espagnoles, p. 324), enters into some calculations which seem to show that little or nothing of the exportable produce of Portorico was ever raised by white labour.

But I have spoken in the past tense, because there seems reason to fear that the extraordinary tide of prosperity which has set in of late on the Spanish islands has at length materially altered for the worse the social condition of this flourishing colony.* So long as the fertility of its lands remains unexhausted, it is probable that the slovenly labour of small proprietors with few slaves may continue to raise a considerable quantity of exportable produce; but it cannot be doubted that much of its surface is no longer in this condition. The island, therefore, is reaching that second stage of which I shall speak more at length when we touch on the situation of the British colonies. It is becoming less practicable to cultivate the soil successfully, except in large estates, by the aid of much capital, and with numerous gangs of slaves. We have no account of its state more recent than that of General Flint, who seems to have been struck, even then, with indications of the approaching change. Since the appearance of his work, the enormous importation of slaves into Portorico, in proportion to the extent of the island, seems too clearly to point out that it is proceeding in the same direction. If so, its destinies, like those of Cuba, are fixed; and nothing can save them both eventually from accomplishing the unfortunate career which the other great West Indian colonies have each in its turn gone through.

In the mean time, by comparing the state of the Spanish islands with that of the British, immediately before emancipation in the latter, it will appear that the former contained, in round numbers, 700,000 free white inhabitants, the latter barely 80,000; the former 250,000 free coloured, the latter 60 or 70,000; the former less than 450,000 slaves, the latter more than 800,000. Notwithstanding this inferiority in slave labour, the former pro-

* In 1850, Portorico was reported to contain 380,000 inhabitants. So slow an increase would seem to verify the prediction of the text.

duced about two-thirds of the quantity of sugar raised in the latter, and a much greater proportion of other tropical commodities. To what causes are we to attribute this difference, unfortunate in an economical no less than a social point of view? Whence arises it that we, with all our boasted wisdom and civilization, have entered on a career which has led to such deplorable results with regard to the political well-being of our own colonies, while it has led us astray even in the pursuit of that lucre to which we had sacrificed justice and mercy? These are questions which it will be hereafter our task to consider. But it may be once more observed in passing, that the Spanish colonies have over ours the great advantage of an unexhausted soil, owing to the recent date of their cultivation. If General Flintner is to be believed, the average produce of sugar in Jamaica is about 10 cwt. per acre; in St. Vincent, the most fertile of the Caribbean islands, 25; in Portorico, 30. Now it is possible that a cultivation like that of sugar, while the soil requires little manure and the return is pretty certain, may be pursued on a small scale by proprietors possessing little command of labour. Such may be the case in Portorico, and to a certain extent in Cuba. But when fertility diminishes, and crops can only be secured by a great outlay of capital and labour, the small planter must give way to the capitalist; plantations will be considerable; and the numerous free population of little proprietors, of which General Flintner boasts, must, it should seem, either cease to exist or abandon that branch of agriculture. These speculations, however, must not be relied on too confidently in the absence of better statistical data than we possess.

II. "No nation," says Southey, "has ever accomplished such great things in proportion to its means as the Portuguese." Its early maritime history does indeed present a striking picture of enterprise and restless energy; but the annals of Europe afford no similar in-

stance of rapid degeneracy. To the lover of romantic narrative, the account of the establishment of the Portuguese in the Indies should be more interesting even than the traditions of Cortes and Pizarro; since with means as feeble they had much longer and more serious conflicts to maintain. There was an age when less than 40,000 armed Portuguese kept the whole coasts of the ocean in awe, from Morocco to China; when 150 sovereign princes paid tribute to the treasury of Lisbon. But in all their enterprises they aimed at conquest, and not at colonization. The government at home exercised little control over the arms of its piratical warriors; the mother-country derived no benefit from their achievements. To the age of conquest succeeded one of effeminacy and corruption. "The principal defects in the Portuguese administration of India," says Heeren, "seem to have been the following: 1. The very frequent changes of viceroys (at least triennial), which were usually attended with a change of most of the other officers; the offices were therefore triennial benefices. 2. The restrictions, which gradually became greater, on the power of the viceroys. 3. The state of commerce, which, left open to the civil and military officers, degenerated into very oppressive monopolies. 4. The defective administration of justice. 5. The overpowering influence of the clergy, who by their wealth made themselves masters of everything, and their tyranny." The Portuguese have long been expelled from Asia, except a few insulated settlements, such as Goa and Macao. In Africa they possess several establishments, of the condition of which little is known in Europe, but which appear to be maintained chiefly for the purpose of protecting their slave trade. But in America they have been the founders of a great and flourishing monarchy. It has been often repeated, that the empire of Brazil fell to the Portuguese through the consequences of a geographical error. The bull of Pope

Alexander, of which mention has already been made, assigned to this power all new discovered lands, east of a line drawn one hundred leagues west of the Azores. Much ridicule has been very unnecessarily thrown upon this bold decree of the pontiff, by which he disposed of unknown regions as their absolute proprietor; but Alexander was an able statesman, whose object was, by this act of arbitration, to prevent quarrels between two powers, whose union was essential to his views. He evidently intended by it to restrain the Portuguese to the eastern hemisphere, leaving the Spaniards to pursue, without interruption, their conquests in the other. But, either through ignorance or intentionally, the first discoverers of Brazil placed its longitude to the east of the prescribed line. Its coast was consequently seized on by the crown of Portugal, and its limits have been gradually extended by treaties, until it comprehends the greatest and by far the most valuable portion of tropical America south of the equator. For a long time, indeed, its possession was little coveted by Europeans. Having searched the shores of every accessible inlet for the precious metals, and disappointed of their expectations, the Portuguese almost abandoned it. Asia was then the road to fortune and fame, which drew off all the more energetic spirits of the time. Brazil was used only as a place of transportation for convicts; the earliest instance, I believe, of the adoption of such a system by any modern people. To ordinary malefactors were afterwards joined the victims of the Inquisition; and the unfortunate Jews who were sent thither by that tribunal, first introduced the cultivation of sugar. Free emigrants were thus attracted in the course of time by the increasing wealth of the country; and when Thomas de Souza was sent out as governor in 1558, and reduced it for the first time to an orderly and peaceful state, it had already made considerable progress.

The colonization of the Portuguese in America was, as has been seen, of a far less ambitious character than that of the Spaniards; no large feudal grants were made of land and Indians; no ground-plans of magnificent cities traced in the soil of the wilderness to invite inhabitants; no regular and complicated system of administration adopted. The organization of the colony followed instead of preceding its advance, and grew up by degrees as necessity required. Thus the foundation of this empire more nearly resembled that of our own American colonies; and its fortune, if less brilliant, was more solid than that of any of the Spanish provinces, Mexico itself not excepted. The Portuguese began, like the Spaniards, by reducing the natives to slavery. But these were far less advanced in civilization and less numerous than those of Peru and Mexico; their labour consequently contributed less to the improvement of the colony. In 1570 the influence of the clergy over the government at Lisbon procured a decree that no Indians should be made slaves, except those taken in war; but even this modified prohibition was wholly disregarded by the colonists. Some feeble attempts were occasionally made to enforce it; but the conquest of the greater part of Brazil by the Dutch West India Company, between 1626 and 1640, interrupted for a time all legislation in this direction. After the reconquest in 1640, the great work was accomplished: 200,000 Indians living within the territory occupied by the planters, were settled in villages, and placed under the direction of Jesuit missionaries. It was in this manner that the power of that famous society in America had its origin; its operations afterwards extended, as is well known, far over the interior of the continent; and it became in Paraguay the founder and the ruler of one of the most singular republics which ever existed upon the earth. But the treatment of the native Americans by the Spanish and Portuguese missionaries will, as I have said,

furnish matter for separate consideration. The Portuguese, like the Spaniards, replaced Indian labour to a great extent by that of Negroes. But several circumstances contributed to give a much greater extension to the Portuguese slave trade than the Spanish, at least until recent times. The principal of these were the proximity of Brazil to the coast of Africa; an advantage of no small consequence in a traffic in which so large a proportion of the living cargo usually perishes on the voyage; and the superior fertility and extent of that portion of the Portuguese colony which is suited for the cultivation of tropical produce. No country in the world has so great a breadth of highly productive soil as Brazil.

The treatment of Negro slaves in Brazil, at least up to the present century, is said to have been in general good. Education and marriage, so long and disgracefully denied them by other masters, were promoted among them by the Portuguese. The Roman Catholic Church has always proved a protector and a friend to these unfortunates; and even its superstitions reached them in a favourable light, since they served to reconcile them to their condition. The slaves of the Franciscan community in Bahia were wont to esteem themselves the property of the blessed Saint Francis himself, and prided themselves on this glorious servitude above the free men of their colour. But I fear that the pictures which have been drawn of their general condition in Brazil, if true at any time, are not so at the present day. The rapid increase of wealth, and slavery along with it, has rendered the Brazilian more timid, more cruel, more avaricious than formerly. Southey was so misled by his partiality for the Portuguese as to prophesy that "Brazil would probably be the first country where the benefit of that great measure, the "peculiar glory of England" (the abolition of the slave trade) "would be experienced: for," adds he, "its tendency will be assisted by the principles of the govern-

"ment, the influence of the clergy, and the general spirit
"of the laws." * Such were the anticipations of 1824 ;
and, in 1838, 35,000 Negroes were imported into Brazil.

Raynal, in language perhaps too highly coloured to be accurate, draws a very unfavourable picture of the higher classes of Bahia at the time of the greatest splendour of that city. "Hypocrisy in some, superstition in others, avarice within and ostentation abroad, an extreme effeminacy which borders on extreme cruelty, in a climate where all sensations are quick and impetuous ; the suspicions which accompany weakness ; an indolence which rests entirely on slaves for the care both of their affairs and their pleasure." The prosperity of the northern provinces of Brazil, for a long time the most important, underwent a serious interruption in the middle of the last century, from the commercial measures of a minister who was regarded as one of the most liberal statesmen of his time. The trade of Brazil had previously been conducted on a system similar to that of the Spanish colonies, but somewhat less oppressive. The vessels which carried it on sailed in fleets once a year, and the number was limited ; but the fleets were greater than those employed in the Spanish American trade, and visited a larger number of ports. This was the state of things when Pombal, in 1775, created the exclusive companies of Maranhão and Pernambuco, and placed in their hands all the trade of Northern Brazil : thus adopting a vicious system, which Portugal, up to that time, had never encouraged, at a period when all other nations had nearly abandoned it. The bad effects of this measure in Brazil are said to have been felt immediately in diminished

* History of Brazil, ii. 817. This prediction has however been since verified, though slowly, by the final abolition of the slave trade through the united will of the government and people of Brazil. In 1849, 54,000 slaves were landed there ; in 1852, 700 ; in 1853, none. "Quarterly Review," October, 1860.

production; but as the manufactures with which that country were supplied in exchange for her produce came not from the mother country, but from other European nations through the vessels of the mother country, the loss was not so directly felt in Portugal. Of the other great measure of Pombal's Brazilian administration, his emancipation of the Indians from the control of the Jesuits, I shall find another occasion to speak.

The more modern importance of the southern provinces of Brazil was owing, at least in part, to different causes. If there was any justice in the strong expression of the historian Herrera, that mines were a lure disposed by the Evil Principle to draw the Spaniards on to destruction, the Portuguese were fortunate in the circumstance that the precious metals were not discovered in their American empire until a late period of its colonization, when agriculture and commerce had already taken root in the soil. It was not until about the year 1700 that the first gold mines began to be wrought in the arid Serras of the interior. The first successful miners seem to have been the Paulistas, a singular race, of semi-republican habits, sprung for the most part from runaway convicts and Indian women. These people established themselves in the town and district of St. Paul in South Brazil, where they maintained themselves, in substantial independence of the crown of Portugal, for more than a century. Their history forms one of the most curious episodes in that of America. They overran the whole interior of Brazil, from the Paraná to the tributaries of the Amazons, carrying on perpetual warfare with the Indians, and reducing such as they could master to slavery. The Paulistas were not induced to submit to the government of Brazil until 1730; and long since, indeed even to the present day, they have remained distinguished from their neighbours by their dress and customs, and a sort of piratical spirit of independence.

The gold mines have proved but a temporary source of wealth to Brazil. "Villa Rica, the capital of the mining district, was," says Southey, "at one time the richest place in the world, if mines alone were riches." But the trade of the gold searcher appears to be still more precarious than that of the silver miner. Gold is distributed in still more uncertain proportions on the surface, than silver in the body, of the metalliferous strata. Great fortunes were occasionally made, and much impulse given to commerce; but the mining district of Brazil has never exhibited the general wealth and splendour of Mexico. The mines of gold were left perfectly free to adventurers by the government, on payment of a tax of one-fifth. It is a remarkable fact, that the anticipations of those who predicted a nearer approximation of the value of gold and silver, from the great increase in the supply of the former metal after the discovery of the Brazilian mines, proved futile. It may be doubted whether this was owing to the cause to which Raynal attributes it, namely, the increased use of gold for ornamental purposes, or to the augmented productiveness of the Mexican silver mines. The search for diamonds, another precious commodity, not discovered in Brazil until 1730, was subjected to much severer regulations. It was placed entirely in the hands of an exclusive company, of which the government itself was the agent; which was restricted to the employment of a limited number of slaves, doubtless with the same views which actuated the Dutch in fixing the number of spice trees cultivated in the Malay islands, namely, to enhance the value of the article. The regulation in the latter case was as cruel as it was erroneous in an economical point of view; for spices being an agreeable and useful, yet not necessary commodity, their consumption would probably have extended if the production had been free, so as to overbalance any diminution of price. But as the value of precious stones is purely

imaginary, and is so enhanced by rarity, that it appears to increase in much more than an inverse proportion to their abundance, there may be some reason, in economical policy, why a government should exercise a control over their production. But the terrible methods by which that of Portugal endeavoured to repress contraband practices in a branch of industry, if such it may be called, peculiarly liable to them, rendered it a nuisance to the colony. The penalty of death having been found insufficient to check such practices, the whole country around, in a circumference of 100 leagues, was reduced to a desert, in which not a house was permitted to be raised, except the single village in which the labourers on the mines resided. The more recent history of the diamond mines is given by M. de St. Hilaire up to 1817. In that year, when his visit was made, they had dwindled into comparative insignificance; but the system of restriction still continued.*

It was the trade of the mining districts, with some other favourable circumstances, which elevated Rio Janeiro to the first rank among the cities of Brazil. In the latter part of the last century it superseded the old capital Bahia, and, in 1807, became the residence of the royal family of Portugal, when driven from their European dominions by the French invasion.

This great political change having been brought about through the intervention of England, the latter power, for her own purposes, procured freedom of trade to be established in Brazil—a singular instance of a great internal benefit resulting to a nation through the temporary interference of a foreign country in her affairs. It was followed by the immediate removal of all the re-

* According to M. Eschwege, about 20,000 Negroes were still employed by it in 1823. He estimates the total value of the diamond workings in eighty years at a sum hardly exceeding eighteen months' produce of sugar or coffee in Brazil!

strictions which had formed a part of the ancient colonial system. The ports of Brazil were thrown open to foreign goods in foreign vessels, on payment of an *ad valorem* duty, for purposes of revenue only; and then England became, in a commercial sense, the metropolis of Brazil. Perfect freedom was given to internal industry; and a country in which, up to that time, not a single book had ever been printed, became the seat of a court, a representative government, and what are called national institutions.

The suddenness of the change was attended with many political inconveniences; but, economically speaking, the progress of Brazil has been enormous, notwithstanding the decay in the produce of her mines, which fell off in the beginning of this century. The war between England and America, by raising the price of cotton, gave a stimulus to the cultivation of that staple commodity; and the rich soils of Brazil now compete, at a great advantage, with the exhausted fields of the islands, in the production of sugar and other tropical merchandise. But her prospects, in a more comprehensive sense, are sufficiently gloomy. The rapid increase of wealth has unfortunately silenced the voice of policy and humanity, which in the last century were nowhere more willingly listened to than in Portugal; and the extension of the slave trade has more than kept pace with the progress of wealth. Hence cruelty and licentiousness, and the other vices of slavery, once confined to the great seaports, seem to be corrupting the Brazilian character even in the remotest districts. The slaves are everywhere outnumbering the free cultivators; the coloured freemen increasing more rapidly than the whites; and this latter class of mixed population, no less, it is said, than 600,000 in number out of five or six millions in all, endowed with physical strength and mental energy far more abundantly than the degenerate Creole race, seems to threaten the present frame of society with

more immediate danger than awaits it from the slaves themselves.*

The Dutch, says Heeren, have not been great colonists, for there were no causes in operation in their own country which could drive them in any considerable numbers beyond sea. Thickly peopled as their country is, its industrious and contented inhabitants have shown little disposition to emigrate, having always found employment and support at home; consequently their foreign establishments, although interesting in many points of view to the commercial historian, need not detain us long.† Their first settlements in the Indies were wrested in war from the Portuguese, by a company of merchant adventurers, who obtained from the mother-country exclusive rights of dominion and commerce in them. The Dutch East India Company was the type and model of that of England; and "although," to use the words of the same writer, "it sank at last under the evils of monopolies, it nevertheless remains, less on account of the extent than the pre-eminence of its prosperity, an unparalleled phenomenon, which could nowhere exist except among a people who could become exceedingly rich without becoming luxurious." Batavia and the Cape of Good Hope were the only colonies, properly so called, of the company; and that body allowed and encouraged the people engaged in the carrying trade, both Europeans and Indians, to make as much use as possible of both; to which the prosperity of these admirably situated settle-

* (1860.) Predictions happily falsified by subsequent history. The career of Brazil, instead of being one of decadence, has been steadily, though not rapidly, progressive. And the abolition of the slave trade has been already noticed.

† The Boers of the Cape are said to be for the most part not of Dutch extraction, but descended from mercenary soldiers who had been established on grants of land there; principally Westphalians and other North Germans.

ments, particularly the former, is in great measure to be attributed. Over the remainder of its possessions, which were conquests and not colonies, the company watched with a jealousy equal to that of the Spaniards and Portuguese. It is well known that it obtained possession of the islands in which alone some kinds of spices (especially cloves) were cultivated, and limited the number of plantations and of trees, and the annual supply of the European market, in order to keep up the price. We have seen that the immediate effect of such a monopoly is, sometimes, to raise the price of the article in more than an inverse ratio to the diminution of supply; its ultimate effect is to narrow the market, to diminish the desire for an article of which the quantity is so limited as to render it unattainable except to a few, and to encourage competition to find out substitutes of inferior value. Similar maxims pervaded the whole administration of the Dutch East India Company. Its good points were, the severe watchfulness exercised over inferior functionaries by the governor and council established at Batavia, which rendered their conduct widely different from the license and rapine of the Portuguese; the prohibition enforced against them of trading on their own account, and making profit of the subjects of the company in any way; the regularity, and in some respects the economy, of its administration. It declined partly through the natural unsoundness of monopoly, partly through the consequences of its own wealth and prosperity. That prosperity led it to form expensive establishments, which involved it in debt; and, thus burdened, it was ill able to withstand the competition of the English, either in commerce or in war, while these were as yet free from similar impediments. This is an advantage which the new comer always has over the established possessor in the rivalry of conquest and commerce in distant regions: the Dutch had it over the Portuguese, whose prosperity

declined as soon as they substituted empire for trade; the English had it in their turn over the Dutch; and in some branches of commerce the Americans seem now to be attaining it over ourselves. The Dutch East India Company may be said to have died a natural death, having become virtually bankrupt some time before its dissolution in 1792. Java, the principal relic of its dominions, is now a royal colony, and apparently a flourishing one*; although the Dutch have been involved in serious wars with the natives, whom they are said to have exasperated by abandoning the liberal principles imported into its administration during its short possession by the English.

In America the Dutch, in early times, enjoyed almost exclusively the carrying trade of the colonies of other nations, and long afterwards were largely engaged in furnishing contraband supplies to those of England and France, as well as of Spain and Portugal. Their two islands, Curaçoa and Saint Eustatius, were rendered free ports, contrary to the usual policy of the nation, on purpose to enable them to afford shelter and security to

* (1860.) Since the date of these lectures, Java has grown into one of the finest commercial possessions owned by any European country. But, with a population of 12,000,000 of natives, and a few thousand whites only, it rather resembles in character our East Indian dominions than a colony properly so called. Its trade is to a certain extent still engrossed by the "Netherlands Commercial Company," established in 1819, on the ruins of the old Dutch East India Company; but "of late years the private traders have been gaining on the company." In 1854 Java exported 60,000 tons of coffee and 106,000 tons of sugar. "The produce for exportation is chiefly raised on account of Government, partly by contributions in kind from the cultivators, and partly by a system of *corvée*, or compulsory labour, established on one-fifth part of the lands applicable to the culture of rice, of which Government has resumed the possession. And, provided these contributions and *corvées* be not carried to excess, we incline to think that they are at once the least onerous mode in which the natives can be made to pay their taxes, and the most profitable to the Government."—*M'Culloch, Commercial Dictionary.*

this traffic. Under these circumstances, and with the advantage of Dutch perseverance, the prosperity and wealth of these little spots has always been remarkable. Dutch Guiana was long under the government of the West India or Surinam Company; but this body permitted its access to all Dutch vessels on payment of $2\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. for a license; which relaxation, as Adam Smith thought, was the principal cause of the degree of prosperity enjoyed by that colony in his time. One of the continental colonies (Berbice) was for a short time under the exclusive government of a mercantile house, that of Van Peere, which had bought its absolute sovereignty of the state—an unique instance, I believe, in colonial history.

Of the Swedish and Danish colonies, limited to three or four of the smaller Antilles, nothing more need be said than that their actual value is very small; but that they have occasionally been raised to great importance as seats of the contraband trade, especially in time of war.

The history of the colonies of the French in America is interesting on many accounts; but as war and revolutions have reduced their transatlantic empire, once so vast, to three comparatively insignificant islands, and a single spot on the continent, it must not be allowed to occupy much of our limited space. It is hardly remembered at the present day, that this nation once claimed, and had begun to colonize, the whole region which lies at the back of the thirteen original United States, from the mouth of the St. Lawrence to that of the Mississippi; comprising both the Canadas, and the vast and fertile valley of the Ohio; and had actually occupied the two natural outlets of this whole region by its posts at Quebec and New Orleans. Canada, the oldest French colony, and the only one on the continent to which that nation has sent any considerable number of settlers, was under the management of an exclusive company from 1663 to the

downfall of what was called the Mississippi scheme in 1720 : and this circumstance, still more perhaps than the vicious system of granting the land to non-resident proprietors, to be held by seignorial tenure, checked its progress.* Louisiana, with more sources of surplus wealth from climate and soil, was never a very thriving colony, and was surrendered to Spain with little reluctance ; from which last power its dominion passed to the United States. But that propensity to little peddling traffic, requiring more of activity and enterprise than industry, which Burke has remarked on as so characteristic of the French, stimulated their adventurers to disperse themselves in the fur trade and the chase, over the whole interior of North America. No other Europeans have ever displayed equal talents for conciliating savages ; or, it must be added, for approximating to their usages and modes of life. The French traders and hunters intermarried and mixed with the Indians at the back of our settlements, and extended their scattered posts along the whole course of the two vast rivers of that continent. Even at this day, far away on the upper waters of these mighty streams, and beyond the utmost limits reached by the backwoodsman, the traveller discovers villages in which the aspect and social usages of the people, their festivities and their solemnities, in which the white and the red man mingle on equal

* Besides the impediments to free action which were necessarily incident to seignorial tenure, the Home Government and the intendants appear to have subjected the industry of the poor Censitaires to the minutest and most unintelligible restrictions. In 1709 a M. Raudet limited the number of horses to be kept by the "habitans" around Montreal, in order to favour the breed of horned cattle. In 1745 a royal ordonnance forbade the building of houses throughout the colony except on plots of land of specified extent. These are specimens only of a curiously vexatious legislation. See it analysed in "Debates and addresses on the Seignory question," printed in Canada in 1853.

terms, strangely contrast with the habits of the Anglo-Americans, and announce to him on his first approach their Gallic origin.*

In the Antilles the French first established themselves as interlopers, sometimes uniting with ourselves in piratical hostilities against the Spaniards and the Carib natives, and sometimes disputing with us the possession of the conquests thus obtained. After the long conflict between

* Sismondi, *Etudes sur l'Ec. Politique*, vol. ii. p. 200. Latrobe.

(1860.) It is almost a received idea among ourselves that the French Canadians are a diminishing race, if not positively, at least relatively to those of British origin, and that they are doomed in the natural course of events to a period of decline and ultimate amalgamation with the prevailing race; but this is a view which requires to be a good deal qualified. The Franco-Canadians (to whom must be added the remnants of the Acadians in the Lower Provinces) are not indeed an enterprising people, but they are enduring and industrious, moral in their habits, and consequently prolific and long-lived, and intensely national. While the Americans and British Canadians are following the usual migratory bent which carries them annually by swarms from the east to the west, the overflow of the French population seems to have a tendency to fill up the vacancy nearer home left by these emigrants. Accordingly, they are beginning to form not only isolated settlements, but communities, in New Brunswick, on the Ottawa, in Vermont, and even in the northern counties of New York. M. Rameau, a recent French writer (*La France aux colonies, études sur le développement de la race française hors de l'Europe*, 1859) estimates that in 1861 there will be in North America a population of French origin of the following amount and composition:—

Acadians of Nova Scotia, Prince Edward's Island, and Cape Breton	60,000
Acadians and French of Newfoundland, St. Pierre, and Miquelon	20,000
Acadians in New Brunswick	32,000
Franco-Canadians of Lower Canada and Labrador .	980,000
Ditto on the frontier of Vermont and New York .	40,000
Ditto on the frontier of Upper Canada	25,000
	<hr/>
	1,157,000

Without counting the descendants of Frenchmen in the western States, around the Great Lakes, in Louisiana, &c.

the two nations at the beginning of the last century, the French remained in possession of the best share of the Windward Islands—Guadaloupe, Martinique, St. Lucia, Tobago, &c., and of a settlement on the main land of Guiana. Adam Smith is probably right in attributing the great prosperity of the French sugar islands, at this period, to the circumstance of their irregular and almost piratical foundation. As the colonists had no very close ties with their mother-country, and were always disposed, as Raynal says, to welcome the strongest masters as the safest protectors, the government was afraid to irritate them by any very oppressive restrictions on their industry; and afterwards, when a more regular authority was established, the colonial system of government adopted by France in the last century was at least better in theory than that of any other European people. Their administration at home was entrusted to the Council of Commerce, composed of twelve officers of the Crown, and twelve delegates of the chief commercial towns. Each colony was ruled by a governor; an intendant, to take charge of the fiscal and other rights of the Crown; and a royal council, composed of distinguished planters. All functionaries were paid by salaries only; while in our colonies fees, leading to all manner of extortion, formed the principal income of the officers. It was an established regulation that captains of ships, on their return home from a colonial port, should be subjected to a strict inquiry as to the treatment which they had received in the transaction of their business there, the state of the markets, and the conduct of the government agents. Land in all French colonies was pretty uniformly disposed of by free grant; a system which was then thought highly liberal, but which subsequent experience has shown to be of very questionable policy. Taxation was extremely light; a capitation on slaves, and a slight export duty, amounting, it is said, to scarcely two per

cent. on the value of any article of produce, was all that the planter had to pay to government. An easy and summary process was established for levying debts due to merchants in the mother-country: one of the greatest practical difficulties in the management of colonies. The slaves were protected, as far as law could protect them, by the regulations of the Code Noir, though the French masters did not bear a high character for humanity. In order to encourage European colonization, every planter was obliged by law to keep a certain number of white indentured servants; it must not, however, be supposed that this law was really enforced. In a country where Negro slavery prevails extensively, no white is industrious; and the planters evaded by every possible means a regulation which only tended to burden them with the maintenance of lazy emigrants.

It was the fashion in England, during the period of the great prosperity of the French settlements, to extol their colonial administration as far superior to our own*; and not unjustly in some respects. The colonies certainly could not complain of it; for its policy systematically tended to burden the mother-country at their expense. The cost of their government was almost wholly defrayed by the latter. The prohibition of foreign sugar in the French markets, according to Arthur Young, amounted to a tribute paid by France to her colonies of nearly two millions sterling annually, upon principles which we shall have hereafter to study, when considering the colonial system of trade; and the advantage of this tribute was not counterbalanced, as in ours, by taxes and restrictions weighing heavily on the colonial producer. In fact, the French government of the eighteenth century seems to have fallen into the double error of taxing the resources of the mother-country in order to support colonies which

* See especially Burke's *European Settlements in America*.

were not integral parts of its strength, and neglecting that maritime force by which alone the colonies could be preserved.

But the vices of administration incidental to a government so corrupt as that of old France were sensibly felt in her foreign dependencies, notwithstanding the partiality with which they were treated by her legislators. Court favour was the only source which supplied them with governors and other executive officers—a source even more tainted than that of parliamentary interest among ourselves. Men without fortunes or character, ruined in their own country, eagerly sought and obtained these appointments, which were commonly regarded as the last resource of a spendthrift.* Much ignorance, as well as

* (1860.) The ordinary French method of colonial government was by a Governor and Intendant, at once aided and controlled by a Council of Commerce, composed of members paid by Government. The most rigorous principles of the colonial system of trade have been usually in force; but, as a consequence of this system, the colonies paid little import duty on the goods brought from the mother-country. In 1854 an organic law for the old colonies was made by *Senatus-Consulte*, and its provisions deserve attention, as being founded on a very thorough investigation of the subject by competent authorities. The form of government thus constituted nearly resembles that of the English so-called "Crown Colonies." The Governor is assisted by a *Conseil Privé*, answering to our Executive Councils. The legislature of each colony consists of an equal number of office-holders and unofficial members, all named by the Emperor. A more peculiar feature is the establishment at Paris of a "*Comité Consultatif*," or Board, attached to the department of the Minister of Marine and Colonies, consisting of four members named by the Emperor, and a delegate apiece from Martinique, Guadeloupe, and Réunion. The mother-country defrays the expenses of government, justice, "general administration;" the rest is a charge on the colonial revenue. "But if that revenue affords a surplus, this is paid over to the home treasury; if, on the contrary, the colonial revenue falls short of the expenditure charged on it, the home treasury comes in aid. I find the total of this aid, or "*dépenses mises à la charge de l'Etat pour le service colonial*" (omitting Algeria), to amount, for 1859, to 21,700,000 francs, military and marine included.

much corruption, prevailed in all the details of office. A singular proof at once of the zeal for colonization which animated the French Government, and the extreme mismanagement of the national resources, occurred after the peace of Paris in 1763. In accordance with the theory of the day, it was determined to raise at once a full-grown colony on the continent of America. No less than twelve thousand unfortunates were embarked from France, and landed in Cayenne, without an attempt towards preparing the tropical wilderness for their reception. They were amply supplied with two years' provisions at an enormous expense; but it had never occurred to the managers of the expedition, that provisions would not keep in such a climate, and before cultivation had commenced they were starving. Famine and fevers in a few months almost destroyed them; of the few survivors about 1500 were removed to an alluvial spot on the coast; a sudden rise of one of the rivers of the interior took place, and all were swept away in a single night.*

However, the French sugar colonies increased so greatly in general prosperity, that about the time of the American war, they were supposed to contain no less than 700,000 inhabitants, of whom four-fifths were slaves, without including the flourishing isles of France and Bourbon in the Indian ocean. Their produce at the same time was considerably greater than that of the English possessions. At the head of them all was the splendid colony of St. Domingo. It arose out of the settlement of a few French buccaneers and adventurers on the coast of that island, which was owned by the Spaniards, who had reduced it to a desert, having extirpated the Indian inhabitants. The Spaniards made no use of their possession except for

* This story is somewhat differently told in the *Notices Statistiques sur les Colonies Françaises*, vol. ii. published by authority in 1837.

breeding cattle: the French were agricultural and enterprising. They soon outnumbered their neighbours, and obtained at last by treaty a division of the island for themselves. After the soil of the smaller Antilles had been in good measure exhausted, as we have seen, St. Domingo became for a time the greatest sugar country in the world. Its exports increased from the value of 11,000,000 livres in 1711, to 193,000,000, or about 8,000,000*l.* sterling, in 1788.* Its trade employed 1000 ships, and 15,000 French seamen, and was said to comprise two-thirds of the whole foreign commerce of France. The planters of St. Domingo had been for a long time content to live on their own estates; but the island presented in the end a remarkable instance of that striking fact in the history of slave colonies, that with the increase of wealth, men of the higher order are almost sure to become absentees, and the middle, thus elevated into the highest rank, to increase in profligacy and cruelty. "The "spectacle presented by the cities," says an observer, writing at the time of their highest prosperity, "is dismal "and monotonous. There are neither nobles, nor citizens, "nor fundholders. They offer nothing but establishments "for the various commodities produced by the soil, and "for the various kinds of labour which these require. "The only society is that of agents, publicans, and adventurous, bustling in search of some situation which "may maintain them, and accepting the first which presents itself. Every man hurries to become rich, in order "to escape for ever from an abode where men live without "distinction, without honours, and without any excite-

* According to Barclay ("Past and Present State of the West Indies," 1826), every inhabitant of St. Domingo, in 1791, raised on the average 692 lbs. of produce; every inhabitant of Jamaica, at the beginning of this century, 775 lbs. But I am not sure that his calculation is sufficiently favourable to the former colony.

"ment but that of interest."* It is curious to compare this description with that given by a recent traveller of the aspect of the towns in the modern French islands of Martinique and Guadeloupe, flourishing islands, but which have escaped what I may justly call the curse of the enormous and rapid wealth of St. Domingo. Mr. Henry Coleridge† was struck with the tokens of the residence of the better classes, evinced in the outward aspect of things, the shops, libraries, and places of public amusement; and contrasted it with the dulness of the English West Indian cities, wealthier, but with less social and civilized enjoyment.‡

Such was St. Domingo when the French Revolution broke out, the loveliest, and the wealthiest, island of the tropical oceans—an object of jealousy to England, of admiration to the rest of Europe. Sarcasm and indignation have been profusely lavished on those who first preached equality of rights to its free coloured population, armed one class against another, and produced that dreadful struggle which ended in the expulsion of the French, and establishment of the Black Republic amidst the smoking ashes of cities and plantations. Rash and presumptuous they were, beyond a doubt; yet, on the whole, posterity has learned to judge them less harshly, as men who, notwithstanding the precipitancy of all their actions, and the injustice of some, yet erred in the means rather than the end; who saw and judged rightly the incurable malady which preyed on the vitals of a community so apparently prosperous; who failed from over confidence

* Ency. Méthodique. *art.* St. Domingue.

† Visit to the West Indies, 1825. And see Trollope's "West Indies and Spanish Main," 1859, p. 158.

‡ The old colonial proverb characterised the inhabitants of the respective islands as "Nos seigneurs de St. Domingue, Messieurs de la Martinique, Bourgeois de Guadeloupe." Martinique was the place of the famous bankruptcy (for 3,000,000 francs), which was the commencement of the ruin of the Jesuits in 1762.

in a good cause, and had none of the advantages of that experience which they have left as a legacy to ourselves.

France now retains only the islands of Martinique and Guadeloupe, already mentioned; the continental colony of Cayenne, or French Guiana; the Isle Bourbon, now called Réunion, in the Indian ocean, and one or two ports on the coast of Africa; besides her recent acquisition of Algiers, which can scarcely be termed a colony. According to Say, the price of sugar produced in the French Antilles was, when he wrote, in comparison with that exported from the Havana, as fifty to thirty-five; the difference, therefore, was paid by the French people, who were restricted to the use of the former as a tribute to the colonists. Since that period, the extended cultivation of beet-root for sugar, under the marked protection of the government, gave for some time a severe blow to their prosperity.* According to the same writer, the revenue

* According to the report of the Commission of 1839, for examining the proposition of M. Tracy on slavery (prepared by M. de Tocqueville, and highly worthy of examination), the mortgages contracted in ten years in Guadeloupe and Martinique amounted to 130,000,000 francs, or about one quarter of the whole agricultural property of the islands.

(1861.) The history of the beet-root sugar industry affords a curious running commentary on that of the conflicting principles of free trade and protection during the last twenty years. It began in France during the exclusion of colonial sugar in the great war. It was reduced to distress by the peace, and consequent admission of colonial sugar. Then the cry of national industry prevailed, and heavy duties were placed on French colonial sugar (1820—22) in the interest of the beet cultivator. Then the complaints of the colonists produced a reaction, and duties were placed on beet sugar (1838—1840), though still differential in favour of the beet. Then both parties complained. The colonists, that the beet growers were not taxed enough; the beet growers, that they were taxed at all. At last the measure of fairly equalizing the duties was tried (1848), and it now appears that in the last twenty years the proportion of beet-root sugar has increased fourfold (from 39,000,000 to 151,000,000 kilogrammes).—*M'Culloch's Commercial Dictionary*. A singular instance of a manufacture, artificially created, which has suc-

raised in these colonies in 1820 amounted to 6,000,000 francs, their expenses to twelve; six, therefore, were so much additional tribute.*

ceeded in maintaining itself without aid (except such as the French discriminating duties on foreign sugar afford it).

* Cours d'Économie Politique, vol. iii.

(1860.) It appears to be admitted that the European colonization of Algeria has hitherto proved a failure. About 180,000 civil European inhabitants (of whom scarcely half French) are precariously maintained by the Government expenditure on an army of 70,000. But it must in justice be added that the problem was one of extreme difficulty. There is nothing exactly like it in English colonization. The Cape, or New Zealand, might present a somewhat similar aspect if occupied by twenty or thirty times their present number of warlike and hostile natives, possessing, moreover, an ancient, though very imperfect, civilization, and usages of landed property.

Singularly enough, however, the most salient difficulty in Algerian colonization seems to be precisely the same with that which we experience, on an infinitely smaller scale, in part of New Zealand. Individual claims of natives to landed property in Algeria are not very considerable. Tribunal claims are very large; that is to say, a native tribe claims a large tract of land for its nomade occupation by flocks and herds and wandering villages, in common right. To get rid of this class of claims in New Zealand has been the cautious and gradual work of many years, and as yet very far from completed. The French authorities have done as yet no more than look at the problem; but it seems agreed that its solution is indispensable before the work of real colonization can begin.

Such land as was accessible had been disposed of by free grant until 1857, when a system of auction was commenced in the parts near Algiers.—*Annuaire des Deux Mondes*, 1857–8. But there seems little probability of European purchase and settlement extending in the interior. The native population have become reconciled to the French Government, which they find in the main a strong and just protector; but not to personal contact with Europeans. The two races live apart, like the English and natives of India.

"J'ai toujours remarqué," says De Tocqueville, "que partout où l'on introduisait, non des chefs Européens, mais une population Européenne, au sein des populations imparfaitement civilisées du reste du monde, la supériorité réelle et prétendue de la première se faisait sentir d'une façon si blessante pour les intérêts individuels, et si mortifiante pour l'amour propre des indigènes, qu'il en résultait plus de colère que d'aucune oppression politique."—*Œuvres inédites*, vol. i. p. 428.

" Si cela est vrai," he adds, " pour presque toutes les races Européennes, à combien plus forte raison cela est-il vrai de la race Anglaise, la plus habile à exploiter à son profit les avantages de chaque pays, le moins liante, la plus disposée à se tenir à part, et (on peut le dire parceque ce défaut s'unit intimement à de grandes qualités) la plus altière de toutes." But Algeria furnishes, in truth, almost as striking a commentary on his general axiom as India.

APPENDIX TO LECTURE II.

No. I.

Population.

CUBA :—

	1841.	1858.
Whites	418,291	564,698
Free, Coloured	88,054	216,176
Free, Negro.	64,784	
Slaves, Coloured	10,974	662,587
Slaves, Negro	425,521	
	<hr/> 1,007,624	<hr/> 1,343,462

Observations, &c., sur le Mouvement de la Population de la Havane, 1843.

Almanac de Gotha, 1860.

No. II.

Population.

BRAZIL :—

1798.	More than 3,000,000 (<i>Humboldt</i>).
1810.	4,000,000 (<i>Correa da Serra, Humboldt</i>).
1830.	{ <i>(Matte Brun)</i> 5,735,502 (<i>Cannabich</i>).
1840.	6,500,000 to 7,000,000 (<i>McCulloch</i>).
1858.	7,680,000 (<i>Report to the Chambers</i>).

	<i>Exports.</i>	<i>Imports</i>
1844—5.	5,200,000 <i>l</i> .	6,500,000 <i>l</i>
1854—5.	10,000,000 <i>l</i> .	9,500,000 <i>l</i> .

Revenue.

1837.	1,500,000 <i>l</i> .	1858.	5,500,000 <i>l</i> .
-------	----------------------	-------	----------------------

No. III.

SAINT DOMINGO :—

	<i>Slave Population.</i>	<i>Exports.</i>
1715.	.	11,000,000 livres.
1721.	.	21,000,000 (sugar only).
1764.	{ <i>Jeffrey's West India Atlas</i> }	206,000
1774.	.	109,400,000 (<i>Malouet</i>).
1775.	{ (<i>Malouet</i>) (<i>Official Returns</i>) }	300,000 } 94,162,000 (sugar and 240,000 } coffee only).
1779.*	(<i>Neckar</i>)	249,098
1781.	(<i>Official Returns</i>)	297,079
1788.	.	193,000,000
1789.	(<i>Same, improved</i>)	434,429
1790.	.	455,000 155,000,000

No. IV.

Population of French Colonies, exclusive of Algeria, in 1854.

Martinique	134,095	} Whites about 25,000.
Guadaloupe	129,220	
Guiana	16,741	
Réunion (Bourbon)	129,128	(30,000 Coolies).
Senegal	14,354	
East Indian Possessions	206,229	
Mayotte (Madagascar)	27,527	
St. Pierre and Miquelon	1,863	

 659,297

Annuaire des Deux Mondes.

To these must be added the scattered settlements in the Marquesas and New Caledonia.

* After this year, the great importation of Negroes began. The average importation from 1775 to 1780 was 15,000; from 1780 to 1790, 26,000. According to M. Malouet, 4,000 or 5,000 births, and 18,000 imported, were required annually to keep up the stock.

Production of Sugar in the Principal Colonies, in tons, nearly:—

	1835.	1855.
Martinique	31,000	21,000
Guadaloupe	37,000	28,000
Réunion	23,000	52,000

No. V.

Progress of Population and Revenue of Algeria.

European Inhabitants (Civil).	Revenue in Francs.	Army.
1831. 3,228	929,709·67	17,190
1835. 11,221	2,180,335·93	29,485
1840. 28,736	4,405,317·55	61,231
1842. 40,000	3,315,407·88	78,474
1857. 180,172	20,000,000	69,000 effective.

Imports.

1848. 86,214,619.	1850. 108,917,296.
Total Population in 1847, estimated at 2,640,000. (Gen. Bugeaud, M'Carthy, &c.)	

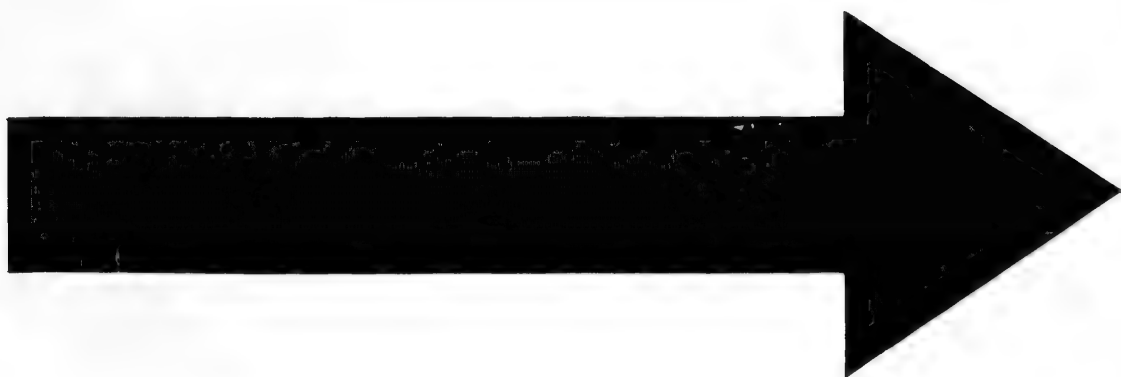
Expenditure (Civil) 1857 . . . 27,505,562 francs.

LECTURE III.

BRIEF HISTORICAL SKETCH OF BRITISH COLONIZATION. — WEST INDIES. —
AMERICAN COLONIES, DOWN TO THE PERIOD OF THE AMERICAN

THE history of Britain presents a prospect so wide and so diversified ; it is so rich in great enterprises and strange events ; so abundant in economical lessons, and carries our attention from point to point over so vast a portion of the surface of the earth, that selection and compression appear almost equally difficult. A mere catalogue of the provinces inhabited by British colonists, with a geographical description of each, would completely exhaust the time of my hearers without much advantage ; and therefore, in order to impress a few prominent features of the subject on your attention, I must solicit your indulgence for much unavoidable omission. My object will chiefly be to indicate those facts which will be of value as examples, which may serve as tests of doctrines hereafter to be considered, as indications of a policy to be recommended or to be avoided. Wherever, therefore, we pause for a few moments in our rapid course, we shall probably on some future occasion find it necessary to return.

The general policy of England towards her colonies, down to the period of American independence, is nowhere so ably developed as in the masterly sketch contained in the seventh chapter of the fourth book of Adam Smith's *Wealth of Nations*. True, he wrote against a theory, and his facts are collected and arranged with a view to his argument ; and since that theory was supported by the popular opinion of his times, Adam Smith, although in



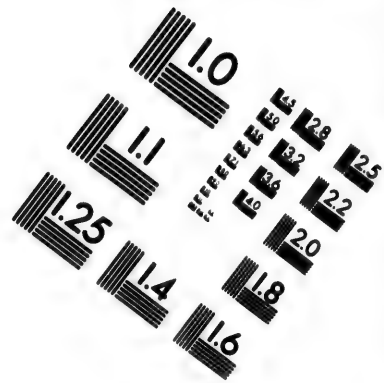
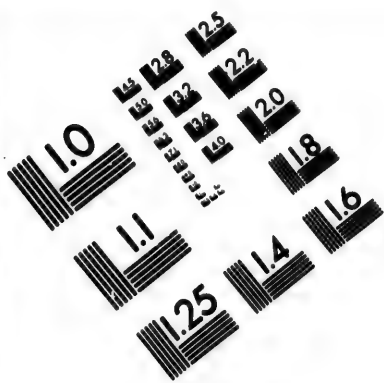
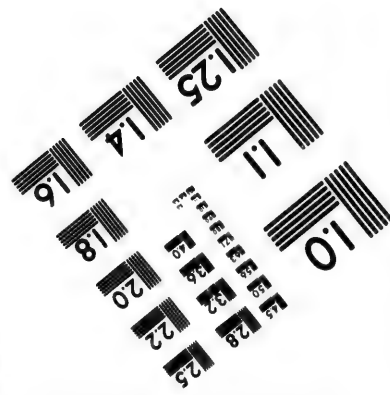
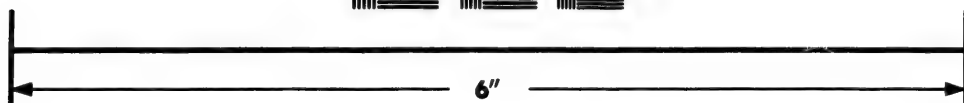
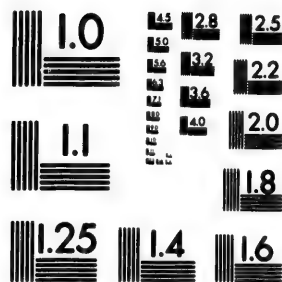


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

**23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503**



point of fact he did not carry out his refutation so far as he might have done, was regarded as an ingenious but dangerous speculator. But now that almost every proposition he has stated, and every prediction he has hazarded, have been borne out by abundant experience — that he can be shown to have been wrong only where he hesitated to push his own views far enough, and borrowed something from the logic of his antagonists — his very wisdom wears a common-place aspect, and is sometimes neglected as too trivial for the present day. I know not, however, where the student can turn in order to find the same clearness of statement and judicious application of instances, united with the same vigour of reasoning.

Generally speaking, the oldest colonies of England were founded by private adventurers at their own expense and risk. The soil was commonly vested in proprietors, that is, it was granted by wholesale, provinces on the continent, islands in the ocean, to powerful individuals or to companies of "undertakers," and by them regranted to emigrants, usually on payment of a quit-rent. Where, however, emigrants had established themselves before the grant, or where they contrived to set aside or disregard the grant, they divided the land among themselves pretty much at their own pleasure. And such settlements increased more rapidly than those in which the proprietors contrived to establish their rights. The right of government, as well as the soil, was usually conceded to the proprietors in the first instance; they were connected by little more than a nominal recognition of sovereignty with the crown of Great Britain. But the disputes between the colonists and the proprietors caused, except in a very few cases, the dissolution of the proprietary government, and threw the colonies one by one into the hands of the crown. They were then usually administered by a governor sent from England; with a mimic parliament, consisting of an upper house or council, nominated gene-

rally by the governor, and a house of assembly elected by the people, in which originated all taxation. But laws enacted in these assemblies required, besides the assent of the governor, the ratification of the king in council. The governor's council acted likewise as a species of senate, to assist him in his executive, and sometimes in his judicial duties. Such has been the outline of the colonial system of government in almost all our numerous dependencies, except those acquired by conquest, which have usually been governed, at least for a time, in a more absolute manner, and except the chartered colonies of North America, of which I shall have occasion to speak at a future time. Thus the early colonists from England grew up from the beginning in a spirit of independence and self-reliance; and instead of parting with a portion of his rights when he settled in a distant dependency, the emigrant felt that he breathed a freer air than that of the land he had relinquished. The trade of all the older settlements was perfectly free at the outset, and in the seventeenth century it fell almost wholly into the hands of the Dutch, at that time the great carriers of Europe. This occasioned the acts of navigation, the basis of our commercial policy towards our colonies, the first of which was passed under the Commonwealth in 1651. No commodities of the growth of Asia, Africa, or America were thenceforth to be imported into England, or her colonies, except in English vessels; and such as were the growth of Europe, only in English vessels or vessels of the country from whence they were imported.

The principles of these Acts were twofold: as regards the mother-country generally, the main object was to monopolise the carrying trade for our own shipowners. Their consequences in this point of view will only fall incidentally under our notice. As regards the colonies, their immediate effect, aided as they were by other regulations, on which I have not time now to dilate, was to

restrict the market for their exportable produce. Such commodities as were termed "enumerated," could only be carried from the colonies to England or her dependencies. However, this restriction was, in process of time, much modified. Grain, lumber, and fish, the produce of North America, were never among the "enumerated articles;" rum and sugar were omitted from the list in 1731, and could afterwards be exported to all parts of the world, provided it were in English vessels. England next imposed high protecting duties, amounting in some important instances to absolute exclusion, on the productions of foreign colonies, in favour of those of her own; some of which were also encouraged by bounties. Lastly, to complete her colonial system, she prohibited the colonies from carrying on various branches of manufacture for themselves, and placed foreign manufactured goods, imported into the colonies, under the same duties to which they were liable in the mother-country; which last restriction was not carried into effect until the year 1763.

It was thus by slow degrees only that the colonies were brought, both as to their commerce and their internal affairs, under regular government and subordination, in which they continued until the attempt to reduce those of North America to more complete subjection, by taxing them without their own consent, occasioned their separation from the mother-country. This event, and the results of the great French war, which placed under our government a great number of the dependencies of other countries, materially changed the character of our colonial relations. For the few colonies of British origin which remained to us on the continent, such as Nova Scotia, controlled in their very origin by government superintendence, had at first no constitutions of their own. And the numerous conquered countries were wholly under absolute government, a thing quite contrary to the genius of our old

colonial system, as well as to the spirit of British institutions. Such a contrast could not long continue. Constitutions were soon granted to Canada, Nova Scotia, Newfoundland, similar to those under which our older colonies had flourished. But the contrast between the working of institutions coeval with a people and rooted in their original habits, and institutions granted to societies brought up on a different system, was never more strongly exemplified than in some of those instances. With regard to commercial affairs, a singular change took place. Great Britain gradually engrossed (whether through or in spite of the navigation laws, it is not now necessary to consider) the greatest share of the carrying trade of the world. She likewise became by far the greatest of manufacturing nations. Consequently mutual restrictions, such as those imposed by the ancient system on the producers of the mother-country and the colony, for the supposed benefit of each other, became ultimately very little more than restrictions on one of the contracting parties only. We might draw many articles of raw produce cheaper and better from other countries than from our own colonies; therefore, so long as their produce is protected, we are taxed for their benefit. But it may be questioned whether any of the commodities they require from Europe, except some few articles which we do not and cannot produce, could be obtained by them cheaper or better from any other source than from "ourselves." Consequently they are no longer taxed for ours, except in one or two unimportant particulars. When the navigation laws, as far as regards the colonies, were greatly modified in 1824, no great change or disturbance of the colony trade ensued. Things had found of themselves that level, which those laws were intended to maintain artificially. It is impossible to conceive a more direct contrast than that which exists between the British colonial policy of late years and that of our ancestors.

They cared for the most part little or nothing about the internal government of their colonies, and kept them in subjection in order to derive certain supposed commercial advantages from them. We give *them* commercial advantages, and tax ourselves for their benefit, in order to give them an interest in remaining under our supremacy, that we may have the pleasure of governing them.

The West Indian colonies of England, the oldest transatlantic possessions of her crown, deserve our first attention. "These possessions," (says a writer in the *Quarterly Review* for 1822,) "are the most important instance of the national monopoly prescribed by the colonial policy, and as this has been adhered to with steady perseverance, they present a fair contrast with opposite modes of government. If the tests of facts and experience might be appealed to for the influence of these different systems of administration upon public wealth, the instance of these colonies might be triumphantly brought forward by the advocates of a restricted intercourse." The advocates of that system in the present day would, I suspect, strongly object to having it tested by the result of the experiment in the West Indies. But we will endeavour to let facts speak for themselves, and reserve theories for a separate discussion. The oldest colony founded by the English in the West Indies is Barbadoes, which was first settled in 1624, but granted by patent to the Earl of Carlisle as sole proprietor in 1627. Its early prosperity arose from the emigration of men of the better classes, chiefly royalists, during the civil wars. The claims of the proprietor were soon forgotten; the governors appointed by him granted land to whom they pleased on receiving a gratuity for themselves; and the rights of the proprietor and his heirs became obsolete through the impossibility of enforcing them, although they furnished the crown after the Restoration with a pretext for obtaining

from the assembly of the island the famous duty of 4½ per cent. on exported sugars, which was afterwards extended to various other islands. The extraordinary prosperity to which Barbadoes attained in a few years after its first occupation has been often described, and, doubtless, with some features of exaggeration. This little island, no larger than the Isle of Wight, is said to have contained, in 1650, 50,000 white and 100,000 black inhabitants, and to have given employment to 400 sail of 60,000 tons, and this before the commencement of the cultivation of sugar, which was not introduced until 1670.* It is said also that Charles II. after his restoration conferred baronetcies on thirteen of the principal royalists of Barbadoes, some of whom were worth even in those times more than 10,000*l.* a year, and none less than 1000*l.* The great sources of this prosperity were, the freedom of the legitimate trade, then chiefly carried on in Dutch vessels, and the extension of the privateering or contraband trade with the Spanish settlements. The first of these was effectually checked by the Navigation Acts; intended, as Blackstone has observed, to punish the royalist planters, and clip the wings of the Dutch. But a more powerful cause of decline was doubtless to be found in the exhaustion of the soil after the first years of its cultivation.

Antigua was colonized from Barbadoes about 1670. The

* "I have been informed by a gentleman of Barbadoes that the extraordinary populousness of that island some years ago was effected chiefly by granting out lots of ten acres each to poor settlers and white servants who had fulfilled the term of their indentures. These persons found ten acres sufficient to provide them with the necessaries of life. . . . Most of these lots were afterwards bought up by richer men, and turned into sugar works, . . . and the late occupiers left the island to establish themselves in other places, where land was to be had in greater plenty and at a cheaper rate."—*Long's History of Jamaica*, vol. i. p. 409. The writer adds, sensibly enough: "It is difficult, as I conceive, wholly to prevent, by any law, this kind of land monopoly, without admitting a much greater mischief in the room of it."

great island of Jamaica was wrested from the Spaniards under the commonwealth; and, after some difficulties at the outset, soon shot rapidly ahead of the other British colonies, and, until the rise of St. Domingo, of all the European possessions in the Gulf of Mexico. The other islands were conquered at different periods from the French and other nations.

The early settlers who occupied in such numbers the soil of the Antilles, seem to have been chiefly small proprietors, who lived on the produce of their estates. When the cultivation of sugar was introduced about 1670, the free white population rapidly diminished, and continued to do so for a century afterwards. Thus the whites in Barbadoes are said to have increased until they amounted about 1670 to 70,000; but these early calculations must be received with doubt: from that period their numbers fell off, until in 1724 there were only 18,000; there are now 16,000. Antigua contained 5000 in the reign of Charles II., now only 2500. The history of the other Windward Islands* is precisely similar. Jamaica, from its extent of surface, and fitness for a variety of productions, did not present the same diminution; yet even there the number of whites remained stationary at about 8000 from 1670 to 1720. This declining condition of the white population, showing how unsuited these islands were to become, what their first occupiers imagined they would, the scenes of extensive colonization from Europe, chiefly proceeded from the monopoly of

* I here use the term, "Windward Islands," in the sense given to it by Spanish rather than English navigators. As it is often very loosely employed, a short explanation may be useful.

The Spanish call Cuba, Jamaica, St. Domingo, Porto Rico, and their immediate dependencies, "Sotovento" or Leeward; the remainder "Barlovento" or Windward, as more nearly exposed to the Atlantic current of air, which generally sets from the eastward. But in English and nautical language, the "Windward Islands" are only those from the Spanish main northward to Martinico inclusive; the remainder are called "Leeward."—*Arrowsmith's Map of the West Indies.*

land, consequent on the cultivation of sugar. As I mentioned in a former lecture, it was found that the small proprietor could not compete with the large one, in raising this staple product. Coffee, and still more sugar, require a number of hands, and the simultaneous application of much labour at particular seasons. Thus this species of agriculture resembles in some respects a manufacture; and, as in manufactures, the large capitalists have great advantages. "To make ten hogsheads of "sugar," says the author of a report on the state of the French sugar islands, in the Statistical Journal of Paris*, "needs nearly the same expenditure in beasts of burthen, mills, utensils, &c. as to make a hundred. A "property of less than fifty arpens cannot be used as a "sugar plantation." This tendency of things was increased when, by the improvidence of the early cultivators, particularly in Barbadoes, the soil was exhausted, and greater expense and labour became necessary to raise the same amount of produce. Hence all accounts of our West Indian colonies, in the first half of the last century, teem with complaints of the decay of small proprietors, and the consolidation of all the classes of society into two, the wealthy planters and the slaves. "The "great stocks, and the running into a staple which required them," says Burke in 1758, "have by degrees "devoured the island (Jamaica). It is the nature of vast "stocks to create a kind of monopoly; and it is the "nature of monopoly to aim at great profits from a comparatively little produce. Indigo was once very greatly "produced in Jamaica, and it enriched the island to such "a degree, that in the parish of Vere, where this drug "was cultivated, they are said to have had no less than 300 "gentlemen's coaches — a number I do not imagine even "the whole island exceeds at this day; and there is great "reason to believe that there were many more persons of

* Vol. ii. p. 123.

"property in Jamaica formerly than there are now, though perhaps they had not those vast fortunes which dazzle us in a manner at present." To this unwholesome state of society succeeded one in some respects still worse; the wealthier planters themselves began to abandon our islands, and fix their residence at home. They were soon regarded by the other classes of whites as factories, where a man was to make his fortune in order to leave them as soon as he could afford it. This change from residence to absenteeism in slave colonies is partly a consequence of the progress of opulence, as has been already observed; but in those of England it has been carried to excess by causes peculiar to the nation; and I am certain that those causes rather do credit than disgrace to the English character, however unnatural such a system may appear. Notwithstanding the instances to the contrary, which the Spanish islands are said to exhibit, it may be doubted whether the slaves of small proprietors are not on the whole liable to be harder worked and worse treated than the members of numerous gangs under the regular discipline of a plantation. And the distaste which Englishmen began to evince, as civilization and right feeling made progress among them, to the mode of life of slave colonies, its deep-rooted hard-heartedness and profligacy, is a trait of which we ought to be rather proud than ashamed.* Other Europeans live and multiply in slave colonies, because they have no high value for civilization and no turn for enterprise; the white man, secured by his privileges of caste, cares little whether in outward circumstances he approximates to the condition

* This passage may appear at first sight inconsistent with the fact that English residents remained and multiplied in the slave-holding provinces (now States) of North America. But the language of the text was meant to apply to slave Colonies in the restricted sense, in which the whites form a very small fraction of the population. There are in 1860 only two States of the Union in which the slaves exceed the free in numbers.

of the coloured classes among whom he dwells. The French, industrious and civilized, have perhaps less of that moral sense of aversion to the habits, both of barbarism and slavery, which our people appear to exhibit; and live more contentedly in the midst of them; they are repugnant to every taste and cherished feeling of the Englishman. If it be asked, what is to be thought of the morality of those whose fastidiousness shrank from contact with such a state of society, and yet who had no objection to enjoy the wealth derived from so impure a source, I fear that we can only shelter ourselves under the general apology of the inconsistency of human nature. But the fact remains the same; and it is not therefore altogether to be regretted that the race of Englishmen has not thriven and multiplied in our West Indian colonies. In Barbadoes, where the whites, although so much diminished, still form a numerous body, the condition of the lowest class of them is described by observers just before emancipation as very degraded; without property, and raised by their colour above the debasement of labour, they were said to subsist in a great measure on charity, administered not unfrequently by the negroes themselves.*

However, while our smaller islands increased their production but slowly, Jamaica, under this system of cultivation in large plantations, became in the eighteenth century the greatest sugar-growing country in the world. Its prosperity during a great part of it was surprising, although seriously interrupted at various times by natural and political vicissitudes; by hurricanes, scarcities, and slave rebellions, of which no less than twenty are enumerated before the year 1795; so utterly unfounded is the notion

* The Government and Legislature of Barbadoes have had within the last few years (1859—60) several schemes for the removal and settlement elsewhere of the "Poor Whites," under their consideration. The so-called "petits blancs" form a similar class in the French Antilles and at Réunion. (See, as to the last, *Schoelcher*, vol. ii. p. 330.)

that the Negroes were first stimulated to discontent by the proceedings of philanthropists in England. During all this time our sugar islands had the monopoly of the English market; and so large was that market, and so high the English prices, that when they were permitted to export direct to foreign countries, it was found that very little such exportation took place, Britain and her colonies absorbing nearly all that the islands could raise at a profit. But the monopoly did not secure them from feeling severely the effects of the extraordinary progress of the French sugar colonies already adverted to, and of the American revolution, which deprived them of their American customers, who, having achieved their independence, resorted to the cheapest market. The complaints of the West Indians cannot be said to have commenced from this period—they had been inherited by one generation of planters from another, along with their estates, ever since the plantations began; but after the American war, the evils complained of became more inveterate, and from that time to this the notes of distress have been continually poured forth by men conscious of the uneasiness and loss which was inevitably entailed on them by the forced nature of their trade, but never attributing it to the right cause, and crying out for more monopoly, in order to redress those evils which monopoly itself inflicted.

In some points, indeed, they have really felt themselves aggrieved; for they have been placed at times under injurious restrictions, as if to counterbalance the protection given them in our markets. Such have been the restrictions on the importation of provisions and lumber from any other quarter than Britain and her colonies—at first absolute, modified in 1796, and again in 1825 and 1831.* The economical effect of these regulations will be considered elsewhere: but one remarkable fact in

* Removed in 1846.

West Indian history may be briefly noticed as we pass. When the United States became independent, government resolved on transferring this branch of trade, then enjoyed by them, to our remaining colonies — Canada, Nova Scotia, and Newfoundland; but these were at that time utterly unable to supply the quantity of necessaries required by the West Indies. In vain did the planters press this circumstance on the consideration of Parliament and the Privy Council. In vain did they state most truly, that this was a question *de vitâ et sanguine*, and not of mere commercial expediency; that the very subsistence of their Negroes depended upon their commerce with the United States. Selfish principles of policy, and a paltry desire of vengeance upon our revolted subjects, prevailed over every better counsel. It so happened that for many years together, from 1780 to 1786, the islands were visited with an unusual succession of those terrible hurricanes to which they are subject. Their provision crops, to the cultivation of which the planters had begun to resort in the crippled state of their import trade, were destroyed. A frightful scarcity ensued. According to a statement in the work of Bryan Edwards*, 15,000 Negroes perished in seven years in Jamaica alone, in consequence of the restrictions on the supply from America. You have probably often heard of the hard-heartedness of political economists, and advocates of free trade; I wish that those who are in the habit of employing this current phrase would study the history of the sufferings which the spirit of commercial jealousy has brought upon mankind, and honestly determine where the charge of hard-heartedness most properly applies.

This prohibition, as I have said, was modified in 1796. The destruction of St. Domingo about the same time, rid our West India islands of their most formidable rival. The

* Book vii. c. 4.

events of the revolutionary war still farther strengthened their monopoly. One by one the tropical colonies of other nations fell into our hands; and as their productions were excluded from continental markets by the blockade, and from ours by the protecting duties, they fell into a state of great distress. Never, in short, was monopoly maintained under such advantageous circumstances. It is true that the British government, pressed by the necessities of the war, continued to impose higher and higher duties on West Indian produce; but the consumption increased notwithstanding. Although the English consumers had to pay at least double the price to the producer, which they would have had to pay under a natural system of trade; and, in addition, a duty to government nearly equal to the original price; yet the use of the commodities thus enormously enhanced in the market continued to augment—one of the most astonishing proofs of the high prosperity of the empire, during the greater part of that protracted contest.

If therefore any period can be selected more peculiarly favourable to the West Indies, under the system of protection which we have adopted towards them, it is that of the late war; and yet, strange to say, not only did the grievances of the planters continue to be put forward almost through the whole of it, but facts were occasionally brought before the public which seemed to prove the fallacious nature of the prosperity which they were supposed to enjoy. The report of the West India Committee for 1801 stated, that a return of 10 per cent. on capital was necessary to give the planter a "living" profit; and yet, that the returns had not averaged one third of that amount per annum. Surely these circumstances (and many more might be adduced) go some way towards establishing by evidence the inevitable unsoundness of a trade created and defended by prohibitions.*

* In Lord Grey's "Colonial Policy," vol. i. Appendix D, there is a

In 1812 the slave-trade was abolished by Great Britain. It cannot be denied that this measure of justice and humanity had in one respect the result which its enemies predicted, and its friends refused to anticipate; it rendered the cost of production in slave countries greater. It must be remembered that our tropical colonies were at this time, and still are, divided in an economical view into two classes: the smaller islands, fully peopled, long cultivated, and in which the soil required for the most part expensive treatment; the larger islands and continental settlements, possessing a considerable proportion of virgin land: a distinction which it is important to bear in mind, as many of our future speculations will have reference to it. Now in the former class of colonies it was found that the supply of labour might indeed be maintained without importation; but then in these the limits of production, under the existing system of slave cultivation, were already reached, and the land was becoming less valuable. And in the other class, those which possessed an abundance of fertile soil, and were chiefly of recent acquisition, those to which economists looked for fresh and abundant supplies, the abolition of the trade rendered it impossible to extend cultivation; for the slave population, taken generally, was found unable to maintain its own number, still more to increase. This melancholy fact is undeniable. In the

collection of these ancient "Groans of the West Indians," which more than establishes the proposition of the text. In 1807 a committee of the House of Commons report that "since the year 1799 there has taken place a progressive deterioration in the situation of the planters, resulting from a progressive diminution of the price of sugar," and that immediate ruin is threatened. In 1811 the House of Assembly of Jamaica declared that "the ruin of the original possessors has been gradually completed. . . . It is not to be concealed, and cannot be denied, that a crisis has at length arrived when nothing but the immediate and powerful interposition of the supreme authority of the empire can prevent the utter destruction of a part not altogether unworthy of attention from its former value." This was the year before the abolition of the slave-trade.

middle of the last century it was computed, that out of 80,000 Negroes in Barbadoes, 5000 perished annually. The mortality of later times has not been so great; but the deaths in most of the islands have regularly exceeded the births. Bryan Edwards stated the decrease at $2\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. per annum. Jamaica had, in 1817, 346,000 slaves; in 1829, 322,000: Trinidad, in 1816, 26,000; in 1831, 21,000; Dominico, in 1817, 18,000; in 1826, 15,000; and so on of the rest: in Barbadoes alone there has been in this century a slight increase. Manumissions, never very numerous in our colonies, went but a little way towards accounting for the difference. Nor was there in later years any of that disproportion between the sexes to which it was at first attributed; and yet the decrease steadily continued. Climate and treatment, and neglect of marriage, and various other causes, have been assigned for it with more or less probability. But the effect undoubtedly was, as I before mentioned, to lay our settlements at a disadvantage as compared with those countries which still enjoyed the miserable superiority of the slave-trade.

But the check thus given to West Indian enterprise was felt much less by the planters than by the public of Great Britain. When the slave-trade was abolished, the cost of producing sugar in Jamaica was already, perhaps, twice as great as in Cuba. Therefore, even with the slave-trade, our planters could not have maintained a competition with the growers of other countries in any market where they were not defended by prohibitions. As I have already had occasion to mention, a virgin soil, in almost all agriculture, but especially that of the tropics, is an advantage which no accumulation of capital and no improvement in science and skill seem able to counterbalance; and the necessary decline of our West India islands has been long foreseen by foreign observers, though not always readily admitted by ourselves. "A concurrence of circumstances," says Heeren, "has made these

“houses prosper : those, however, have changed ; and “those happy times have gone by, probably for ever.” “It is easy to foresee,” * said the most sagacious of observers, Humboldt, forty years ago, “that the small Antilles, notwithstanding their favourable commercial position, will not be able to maintain competition with the continental colonies, if these last continue to apply themselves with the same ardour as at present to the cultivation of sugar, coffee, and cotton. In the physical as in the moral world, everything eventually falls into the order prescribed by nature ; and if a few little spots, of which the aboriginal inhabitants were exterminated, have carried on up to this time a more active trade in their productions than the neighbouring continent, it is only because the inhabitants of Cumana, Caraccas, New Grenada, and Mexico have begun very late to profit by the immense advantages which nature has given them.” The immediate realization of these views was prevented by the revolution in those countries—another stroke of good fortune for the West Indians ; but other regions, possessed of equal advantages, have taken their places in the race.

There remained, therefore, for our planters only the home market, and that was secured to them by prohibition. The British consumer thus took upon himself the loss, whatever it was, consequent on the increased difficulty of production occasioned by the abolition of the slave-trade. The price of sugar might rise ; but he alone would suffer directly by it ; and without a doubt the price of sugar would have risen, perhaps to an intolerable amount, had it not been for the new competition of the East Indies, Demerara, the Mauritius, and other conquered colonies, placed after the peace on the footing of the old English possessions. To this new rivalry, therefore, far more than to the abolition, the planter of Jamaica or Barbadoes might be justified in attributing his own diminished prosperity.

* *Nouv. Espagne*, vol. iii. p. 177.

In the twenty-two years which elapsed between the abolition of the slave-trade and the abolition of slavery, the decline of production in most of the older West India islands was constant and serious. The sugar exported from Jamaica in 1805, the year of the largest crop known, was 137,906 hogsheads; in 1811, 127,751; in 1833, 78,375. In these islands the cost of production was continually increasing, although slowly, from the exhaustion of land and the dearness of negro labour without importation; in those in which the soil was newer, the latter cause, as we have seen, restricted the spread of cultivation, and prevented any extensive increase. The consequence was, that while the population of the British empire was rapidly increasing, the total produce of her western sugar colonies, which have fertile soil enough to supply the world, remained stationary. In 1814 our import from our West Indian plantations was 3,581,516 cwt.; in 1835, 3,524,000 cwt.*; and a constant diminution went on in the consumption of this most agreeable and nutritious article by the British people. We were still the greatest consumers of sugar in the world; but the quantity used by each individual among us, on the average, was scarcely more in 1840 than half what it was in 1800.† Mr. M'Gregor was of opinion, that while the average consumption of sugar in England was greater than on the continent, it was much less among the poorer classes, owing to the high price.‡

* M'Culloch, Dict. of Commerce, p. 1091. See Appendix.

† According to the estimate of Mr. Montgomery Martin, in his evidence before a Committee of Free Trade with India, every inhabitant of Great Britain (including Ireland) consumed, in 1801, 440 ounces of sugar annually; in 1811, 429; in 1821, 333; in 1831, 358; about 1840 only 256. From 1844 to 1859, after the reduction of duties, it doubled.

‡ Evidence before Committee on Import Duties, 1840. Now, in 1860, we are informed that consumption by the higher classes has been scarcely affected by free trade; while that by the poorer has augmented from 50 to 200 per cent. (*M'Cul. Com. Dict.*)

Under these circumstances the great measure of the abolition of slavery took place. Nothing can be farther from my thoughts than to detract from the merit of that crowning measure, almost a solitary instance, in the history of many centuries, of a national act of disinterested self-denial. To be the citizen of the state which has accomplished it, may be a higher title of distinction than to be the countryman of the conquerors of the East, or of the commercial sovereigns of the West. But now that both the violent prejudices and the sanguine hopes which obscured the view of the ablest politicians at the time when that act was performed have passed in some measure away, we may, I think, perceive, with a little attention, that emancipation, although of the highest importance in a moral and political point of view, will not, and cannot in the nature of things produce any very great revolution in the economical progress of events, unless, indeed, by laying the seeds of some great future changes, of which no eye as yet sees even the beginning. It is evident that the real blow was struck, I will not say at the prosperity of our sugar colonies, but at the system under which they had grown up, when the slave-trade was abolished. It was the confident hope of the advocates of that measure, that it would improve the economical prospects of the colonies: they were unfortunately deceived, as we have seen. With a free trade in slaves, our planters might have struggled on; under a vicious and wretched system, no doubt; but still their monopoly might have been maintained. Without it, that monopoly must have come to ruin: sooner or later this country must have gone elsewhere for the supply of those increasing wants which their cramped energies could not meet. Emancipation, taken at the worst, can only have brought this inevitable result a little nearer; taken at the best, it may have laid the foundation of a new and more solid edifice of colonial prosperity; it may have given a turn to the course of

events, and opened for our magnificent tropical empire of the West a new cycle of destiny.

These prospects, and the state of our colonies under the operation of the recent change, will form the subject of future discussion. But before we pass onwards, let us pause for a moment to reflect on the remarkable uniformity with which events have succeeded each other in the economical history of the West Indies in general. At each epoch in that history we see the same causes producing almost identical effects. The opening of a fresh soil, with freedom of trade, gives a sudden stimulus to settlement and industry; the soil is covered with free proprietors, and a general but rude prosperity prevails. Then follows a period of more careful cultivation, during which estates are consolidated, gangs of slaves succeed to communities of freemen, the rough commonwealth is formed into a most productive factory. But fertility diminishes; the cost of production augments: slave labour, always dear, becomes dearer through the increased difficulty of supporting it: new settlements are occupied, new sources of production opened: the older colonies, unable to maintain a ruinous competition, even with the aid of prohibitions, descend after a period of suffering and difficulty into a secondary state, in which capital, economy, and increased skill, make up, to a certain extent only, for the invaluable advantages which they have lost. Thus we have seen the Windward Islands maintaining at one period a numerous white population; afterwards, importing numerous slaves, and supplying almost all the then limited consumption of Europe. We have seen Jamaica rise on their decay, and go through precisely the same stages of existence. We have seen how St. Domingo, in its turn, greatly eclipsed Jamaica; but St. Domingo was cut off by a sudden tempest, and never attained to the period of decline. Lastly, we have seen the Spanish colonies of Cuba and Porto Rico, after so many centuries of comparative neglect and rude

productiveness, start all at once into the first rank among exporting countries, and flourish like the exuberant crops of their own virgin soil, while our islands, still rich in capital, but for the most part exhausted in fertility and deficient in labour, were struggling by the aid of their accumulated wealth against the encroaching principle of decay. The life of artificial and anti-social communities may be brilliant for a time; but it is necessarily a brief one, and terminates either by rapid decline, or still more rapid revolution, when the laboriously-constructed props of their wealth give way, as they sometimes do, in sudden ruin.

It is gratifying to turn from the history of these territories, impressed from the beginning with the curse of vicious and unnatural institutions, to that of our continental possessions in America, where slavery was long unknown, and never became, except in one or two districts, a prevailing feature in society until after their emancipation. But the history of the foundation of those colonies is rendered so complicated by the conflicting claims of proprietors and merchant adventurers, the separation of provinces, the abandonment of old settlements and establishment of new ones, that it is impossible to do more than refer to a few of its leading incidents. The forms of government under which these settlements were originally placed, are reducible under three heads:—1. Royal governments; in which there was a legislative assembly, consisting of a lower house of representatives and an upper house or council, nominated by the governor, as already mentioned, which prevailed in Virginia and the southern provinces, and is now the only kind of free constitution known in our foreign possessions. 2. Proprietary governments; in which the proprietor, or company of proprietors, enjoyed the right, exercised in the former sort by the king, of nominating a council, and sometimes the governor also. Pennsylvania, Delaware, and Maryland long remained under this species of con-

stitution. 3. Charter governments; in which the sovereign had parted with his rights, wholly or partially, to the colonist; in which both houses were elective, and sometimes the governor also; in short, democracies. These were established in New England. Virginia and Massachusetts' Bay were the two original foundations from which the other colonies branched off by degrees. The first Virginian constitution was granted in 1606, a period when notions of prerogative ran high in England; it was consequently favourable to arbitrary power. The property in the soil was vested in a company of merchant adventurers; the government in two councils, a superior in England, and an inferior in the colony. This settlement was very slow in laying the foundation of its prosperity. It was twice ravaged by the Indians, and much distracted by intestine commotions. In 1612 the authorities appear to have thrown up the task of government, and martial law was proclaimed. In 1619 a representative assembly was first established, not in pursuance of any powers given in the charter, but by the free act of the colonists themselves; and in 1624 the company was dissolved. After that time its circumstances improved; but the navigation laws, by cutting off the export of tobacco to Holland, nearly ruined Virginia, and produced an insurrection in 1663. The cavalier governor, Sir W. Berkeley, was defeated; and the first example of the separation of a colony from the mother-country would probably have been given to the world, had it not been for the opportune death of the chief conspirator, Bacon. The subsequent political history of Virginia presents little that is remarkable; Maryland and the Carolinas were formed out of it, by grants to different proprietors.

The Massachusetts' Bay colony, the mother of all the New England states, had a very different development. The adventurers who obtained the first charter from Charles I. were schemers of a bold and designing character. He

gave them the usual proprietary powers ; and so little do his advisers appear to have understood the nature of the intended settlement, that it is remarkable that by the first patent the oath of supremacy was required to be administered to every settler. Armed with this patent, the proprietors rendered the colony a refuge for all the discontented spirits whom religious differences drove from the shores of England. Surmounting with extraordinary perseverance all the difficulties which attended the first occupation of their new home, these emigrants, in 1621, according to some authorities, in violation of their patent, framed a constitution for themselves ; according to others, the patent had never been enforced, and the settlers had been wholly left to their own devices. I do not know whether Washington Irving has any positive authority for the assertion that the Plymouth fathers, on their first arrival, passed a resolution to abide by the laws of God until they had time to make new ones ; but it is substantially true that they endeavoured to supply, by their strange notions of the polity of the Old Testament, the want of regular institutions, until these were framed according to circumstances. There is every reason to suppose that these proceedings took place with the consent and connivance of the proprietors in England. The advisers of Charles I. took the alarm rather late as to the character of the republic, which was thus establishing itself beyond the Atlantic. He proceeded against the company by *quo warranto*. Their manifold breaches of their written engagements undoubtedly afforded sufficient legal ground for the proceeding ; still it was, under the circumstances, arbitrary, and added to the unpopularity of the unfortunate monarch. During the civil wars the New England colonies so completely established their democracy, that Charles II. was obliged to recognize it by his charters soon after the Restoration.

The principles of Penn's celebrated settlement are

too well known to need explanation. His constitution resembled that of the other proprietary colonies : some of the later of these exhibited, however, curious attempts at Utopian legislation. Such was the constitution framed for Carolina by Locke, an aristocracy of ranks, with the romantic titles of landgraves, caciques, &c. ; and a house of assembly, consisting of a single chamber, divided into estates after the German fashion. It is remarkable, that the philosopher's colony seems to have been the only one founded before the eighteenth century, except Virginia, in which the Church of England was expressly established ; but this clause is said to have been introduced against his will. Similar was that framed by Oglethorpe for Georgia, with a contrivance for the descent of estates to male heirs, under feudal liabilities of defence. None of these complicated schemes answered. Plain and practical institutions seem peculiarly necessary for new settlements. It is a remark, not without truth in some of its applications, that the foundation of a colony is like the foundation of a house : you may throw in at first loose stones, and any kind of rubbish ; the finished elevation must follow afterwards.

The disposal of lands was never under any systematic regulation in our early colonies. The first settlers cultivated the cleared ground about their villages in common, not so much from any religious opinions, as from their circumstances, the danger from Indians, and the influence of habits not then wholly extinct in England itself ; for we find this custom prevailing up to 1619 in Virginia, where no Puritans were established. When the soil was vested in proprietaries, it was more commonly granted at a quit-rent, as has been already observed, than sold ; and the occupant generally acquired the freehold in time by sale or abandonment on the part of the proprietary.

The difficulty of procuring labour was severely felt.

It was gradually obviated in the southern colonies by the introduction of slaves. The transportation of convicts to the plantations, although it continued for many years, was never large, and seems to have had little or no effect on the general habits of the people. The idea of penal colonies is more modern. But the favourite resource, especially where slavery was repugnant to the morals of the people and to the habits of the climate, was the labour of indented servants. These were bound in England to masters in the colonies, whom they served for a limited period. The plan was a bad one in many respects. In the first place it led to an odious system of misrepresentation, and even of kidnapping, practised by the managers of the trade in England. In the next place, it was almost impossible to hold an indented servant to his bond. When a planter had been at much expense in procuring servants of this description, his neighbour would often entice them away by higher wages, which he was the better enabled to give through the very circumstance that he had not shared in the expense of importing them. Few therefore obtained any command of free labour; and, except in the slave colonies, estates were almost uniformly scattered and small; and towns increased so slowly, that the largest in British America, Boston, had not more than 25,000 inhabitants when the revolutionary war broke out, 150 years after its foundation.

The trade of the North American colonies was not, perhaps, much affected in the long run by the navigation acts. The prohibition to manufacture for themselves, was a prohibition to do that which, on a large scale, nature itself had forbidden them to do, by calling them to the more profitable occupation of agriculture. The restriction to the use of English manufactures could not, except in a few articles, subject them to much extra expense. They were at last free to export their own

grain, fish, and lumber, to foreign countries in general; although some difficulties had, as we have seen, been originally thrown in the way of their foreign commerce.

Thus, with rapid and unobserved progress, they had grown into an empire, when the British government, by insisting on the right of taxation, lost the supremacy over them. It used to be a common opinion among those attached to British institutions, that it would have been better for the Americans to have retained their connection with the mother-country, and thus avoided the evils of democracy. But what was their condition before the Revolution? They had no aristocracy, and, except in one inconsiderable province, no established church, for the branch once planted in Virginia had fallen into decay. Granting, therefore, all the importance of these elements of social life, it is difficult to see what the provincials lost by the separation. It must be contended, to establish this point, that England must and would have retraced her steps, and forced her own institutions on her subject continent by the bayonet. It is not worth while to waste a thought on speculations resting on so chimerical a basis. Sufficient for reasonable politicians to rejoice that the struggle was, after all, attended with so little of permanent loss or injury to either party; that the institutions of the mother-country emerged uninjured from the strife of opinion which then accompanied the shock of arms; and that the republic herself, dubious and lowering as her prospects are judged by some, has shown sufficient vigour to encounter those varieties of untried being which she may probably experience.

Pr

Y

18
18
18
18
18
18

Yea

180
181
181
182
183
183

Year

1815
1820
1825
1830
1835

*** T
and Mo
general

APPENDIX TO LECTURE III.

No. I.

PROGRESS of the principal Sugar-growing Colonies of the West Indies, from the beginning of this century to the period of Emancipation.

Years.	Cuba.			Portorico.		
	Free.	Slaves.	Exports in Pounds Sterling.	Free.	Slaves.	Exports in Pounds Sterling.
1800	250,000?	120,000?	1,000,000	150,000	13,000	15,000
1810	-	-	1,758,000	165,000	17,000	46,000
1815	340,000	190,000	2,000,000	180,000	19,000	111,000
1825	380,000	270,000	1,818,000	250,000	30,000	
1830	420,000	300,000	3,555,000	300,000	34,000	760,000
1835	450,000	350,000		315,000	42,000	850,000

Years.	Jamaica.			Barbadoes.		
	Free.	Slaves.	Exports in Pounds Sterling. Off. Val.	Free.	Slaves.	Exports in Pounds Sterling. Off. Val.
1800	40,000?	300,000		18,000	70,000	400,000?
1810	-	313,000	4,303,337	21,000	62,000	
1815	-	315,000		-	77,000	
1825	-	330,000	3,700,000	19,000	80,000	859,452
1830	-	320,000	3,450,000	19,000	81,000	776,695
1835	70,000?	Apprentices. 312,000	Decl. Val. 3,094,513	21,000	Apprentices. 83,000	Decl. Val. 578,739

Years.	Trinidad.			British Guiana.		
	Free.	Slaves.	Exports in Pounds Sterling.	Free.	Slaves.	Exports in Pounds Sterling.
1815	12,800	25,000	-	-	102,000	
1820	17,700	23,000	350,000	-	100,000	1,700,000
1825	18,300	24,000	400,000	7,500	92,000	1,530,000
1830	19,600	21,000	199,000	11,200	86,000	2,130,000
1835	22,300	Apprentices. 20,000	370,363	-	Apprentices. 86,000	1,771,167

. This table is compiled from various data given by Ramon de la Sagra, Turnbull, Flinter, and Montgomery Martin, and from the official tables. The sums given in round numbers are in general only approximative estimates.

No. III.

WEST INDIES (British).*

	Supposed Population, 1835.		1835.	
	White.	Coloured.	Exports.	Imports.
Antigua	2,000	33,000	£226,860	£201,339
Jamaica	35,000	380,000	3,094,513	2,018,965
Barbadoes	16,000	88,000	578,739	505,028
Dominica	840	20,000	45,625	60,056
Grenada	800	27,000	204,796	114,129
Montserrat	320	7,000	19,249	12,715
Nevis	700	10,000	33,574	39,094
St. Kitt's	1,600	21,000	120,141	110,337
St. Lucia	1,070	17,000	79,872	51,807
Anguilla	360	3,000		
St. Vincent	1,300	25,000	326,677	130,559
Tobago	450	14,000	104,274	58,705
Tortola, &c.	500	7,000	23,214	9,338
Trinidad	3,320	39,000	370,363	315,851
Bahamas	4,150	12,000	108,925	125,425
Bermuda	4,000	4,800	31,353	100,783
Honduras	330	4,800		
Guiana	3,500	100,000	1,771,167	711,139
Total	76,240	902,600	£7,139,342	£4,555,270

No. IV.

TRADE of the BRITISH WEST INDIES before Emancipation.

Years.	Official Value.		Declared Value.
	Imports from, to Great Britain.	Exports to, from Great Britain.	British Exports.
	£	£	£
1700	829,178	334,194	
1725	1,364,011	363,756	
1750	1,515,824	546,545	
1775	3,627,881	1,717,229	
1800	7,369,287	4,087,112	
1810	8,258,173	4,790,143	
1820	8,353,606	4,561,350	4,197,761
1830	8,599,100	4,040,677	2,838,448

* From Mr. M. Martin's British Colonies, with some alterations.

The Returns as to the British Possessions comprise the Exportation to Great Britain only.

No. IV. — *continued.*

Imports and Exports of 1837.—Declared Value.		
	Imports.	Exports.
	£	£
Jamaica	1,956,540	2,827,833
Barbadoes	627,147	787,344
Imports and Exports of 1839.—Declared Value.		
	Imports.	Exports.
	£	£
Trinidad	397,920	424,343
Guiana	1,303,900	1,300,430

LECTURE IV.

PRESENT COLONIES OF GREAT BRITAIN IN NORTH AMERICA, THE CAPE,
AND AUSTRALIA.

I SHALL, on a future occasion, call your attention more particularly to the political lessons to be derived from the history of our North American colonies and their great revolution, so far at least as I may do so without overstepping the limits of our province. At present we are concerned with that history only as an introduction to a general view of the condition of our existing colonies; and, without expressing any general opinion as to the merits of the older or newer British colonial policy, let us see in what the distinction between them really lies.

The fundamental idea of the older British colonial policy appears to have been, that wherever a man went he carried with him the rights of an Englishman, whatever these were supposed to be. In the reign of James I. the state doctrine was, that most popular rights were usurpations; and the colonists of Virginia, sent out under the protection of government, were therefore placed under that degree of control which the state believed itself authorised to exercise at home. The Puritans exalted civil franchise to a republican pitch; their colonies were therefore republican; there was no such notion as that of an intermediate state of tutelage, or semi-liberty. Hence the entire absence of solicitude, on the part of the mother-country, to interfere with the internal government of the colonies, arose not altogether from neglect, but partly from principle. This is remarkably proved by the fact, that representative government was seldom expressly granted in the early charters; *it was assumed by the*

colonists as a matter of right. Thus, to use the odd expression of the historian of Massachusetts, "a house of burgesses broke out in Virginia" in 1619*, almost immediately after its second settlement; and although the constitution of James contained no such element, it was at once acceded to by the mother-country as a thing of course. No thought was ever seriously entertained of supplying the colonies with the elements of an aristocracy. Virginia was the only province of old foundation in which the Church of England was established; and there it was abandoned, with very little help, to the caprice or prejudices of the colonists, under which it speedily decayed. The Puritans enjoyed, undisturbed, their peculiar notions of ecclesiastical government. "It concerneth New England always to remember that "they were originally a plantation religious, not a plantation of trade. And if any man among us make religion "as twelve, and the world as thirteen, such an one hath "not the spirit of a true New Englandman." And when they chose to illustrate this noble principle by decimating their own numbers by persecution, and expelling from their limits all dissenters from their own establishment, the mother-country never exerted herself to protect or prohibit. The only ambition of the state was to regulate the trade of its colonies; in this respect, and this only, they were fenced round with restrictions, and watched with the most vigilant jealousy. They had a right to self-government and self-taxation; a right to religious freedom in the sense which they chose themselves to put upon the word; a right to construct their municipal polity as they pleased; but no right to control or amend the slightest fiscal regulation of the imperial authority, however oppressively it might bear upon them.

Such, I say, were the general notions prevailing in England on the subject of colonial government, during the

* Hutchinson's History of Massachusetts, p. 94.

period of the foundation and early development of our Transatlantic colonies—the notions by which the practice of government was regulated, although I do not assert that they were framed into a consistent and logical theory. Perhaps we shall not be far wrong in regarding Lord Chatham as the last distinguished assertor of these principles, in an age when they had begun to be partially superseded by newer speculations.

ὁ δ' ἀρὰ ὧ παιδὶ ἔδωκε
γῆρας, ἀλλ' οὐχ υἱὸς ἐν ἔντεσι πατρὸς ἐγῆρα.

The policy of Mr. Pitt's administration, and those of his successors, towards the colonies, was not only rendered materially different from those of former times by the effect of circumstances, but it was also influenced by a general change in the sentiments of statesmen and the public in this country. Higher doctrines with respect to the colonial supremacy of the mother-country had begun to prevail before the American war, and had contributed towards the origin and maintenance of that unhappy conflict; such, for example, as are developed in the famous pamphlet of Dr. Johnson, and in the speeches of parliamentary orators of the Grenville party. The American Revolution itself, and yet more the French, had the effect of casting a still deeper shade of unpopularity on democratic opinions; and it is curious to observe how notions, which were really as old as the constitution, and had been practically followed out for ages in our colonial administration, became dreaded and stigmatised as dangerous novelties, when they were advanced in the broad form of theories by French and American reformers.

And in later times, the great modern change in political speculation, which has brought us in some respects far on the road towards democracy, in others led by an obvious course to less liberal sentiments (in

the vulgar sense of the word), than formerly prevailed. While the franchises of Englishmen were regarded under the vague notion of rights (for, long after logicians such as Hobbes, had tested that notion, and shown its insufficiency, it retained its hold on the public mind), they were attached to his person, and travelled abroad with him to his new home. When all rights were made to rest on public utility, it became easy to contend, that what was expedient here might not be expedient there; those who were most attached to constitutional doctrines in the abstract, were able to hold that constitutions might be refused, or delayed, or modified, to suit the social character of different communities and their state of advancement—doctrines altogether repugnant, as I have said, to the very first premises of our early jurists and constitution-makers.

After the separation of the thirteen old provinces, England remained in possession of Nova Scotia, which had a constitution already, and of Canada and its dependencies; provinces which had been conquered from France, and possessed no constitutions of their own. Representative forms were gradually conceded to them; to Canada by Mr. Pitt's government in 1791, the immediate object of the measure being to attach the Canadians to the British government, in order to secure their aid against the people of the States, and also to exempt the inhabitants of British descent from the burden of French laws, under which they were subjected to some oppressions; to Upper Canada at the same time, on its separation from the lower province; to New Brunswick when separated from Nova Scotia in 1785; to Newfoundland in 1832. In all these the frame and government is similar in the main to that of the old crown colonies, which has been already described. But the greater degree of control which the mother-country has exercised, both in the formation of these constitutions and in the internal arrangements of the colonies,

may be estimated from various circumstances. The reservation of land by the authority of the mother state for the church establishment; the control exercised by the mother state over the sale of all other waste lands, perhaps the most important function of government in new countries: are altogether inconsistent with the principles of the founders of most of our old North American colonies. In some of these the people elected the governor himself; in some, many of the executive functionaries; in some, neither the crown nor the governor had any negative on the laws passed by the assemblies.* "In the charter colonies, notwithstanding the cautious reference in the charters to the laws of England, the assemblies actually exercised the authority to abrogate every part of the common law, except that which united the colonies to the parent state by the general ties of allegiance and dependency, and every part of the statute law, except those acts of parliament which expressly prescribed rules for the colonies, and necessarily bound them, as integral parts of the empire, in a general system framed for all, and for the interest of all."†

Still more striking is the difference, when we regard the spread of our establishments in other parts of the world. The penal colonies afforded the first instance (a very necessary one, no doubt) of settlements founded by Englishmen without any constitution whatever. Since that time, the example has fructified. We have of late years seen the foundation of colonies in which convicts are not admitted, and yet governed, for the present, directly by the crown, with only a prospective provision for the future establishment of a constitutional system. This is a remarkable novelty in British policy.‡

* In Connecticut and Rhode Island, which were to all intents democracies, united to the empire by allegiance only.

† Story on the Constitutions of the United States, i. 148.

‡ (1860.) South Australia and New Zealand were of this class; but both received Constitutions within these few years.

Our North American empire occupies on the map an enormous extent of country, from the Bay of Fundy, the St. Lawrence, the Great Lakes, the Stony Mountains, and Vancouver's Island, to the distant shores of the Frozen Ocean. But the colonies established or conquered by us spread over a region forming only a small portion of these possessions: a portion not geographically compact in shape, but nearly uniform in climate and produce. Although the population of these provinces (Canada, Nova Scotia, Prince Edward's Island, and Newfoundland) is very small in proportion to their surface, it must be remembered that it is in reality concentrated, for the most part, on a small portion of that surface.* The settlements lie in general pretty thickly together, but along vast lines of communication, fronted by the sea, or the noble rivers and lakes of these countries, and with the wilderness behind them. So little have the colonists explored the country at their backs, that the most remarkable mountain in Lower Canada, situated within twenty-four miles of Quebec, had never been visited, according to M. Bouchette, until the year 1826, when it was ascended by himself. This is peculiarly the case in Lower Canada, where the feudal seigniories extend along the St. Lawrence and other rivers in a very narrow

* The following Table may throw some light on a subject which has scarcely received sufficient attention—the relative density of population to *occupied* land in regions differently circumstanced, economically, but raising similar produce:—

	Population.	Acres cultivated.	Per Inhabitant.
England and Wales (1841).	16,000,000	28,700,000	1·8
Northamptonshire . . .	180,000	580,000	3·3
Yorkshire	1,600,000	2,500,000	1·6
Devonshire	500,000	1,200,000	2·4
Canada (1851)	1,840,000	7,300,000	4·0
Ohio	1,980,000	9,850,000	5·0
United States	23,620,000	118,450,000	5·1
France	36,000,000	100,000,000	2·9

strip of land. In all the thickly settled parts, land is in general much divided; the cities are small, each having a slender neighbourhood to support it; in fact, there are but three places deserving the name—Quebec, Montreal, and Halifax—in all British America.* On the other hand, this disposition of the occupied country along the great natural lines of communication is highly favourable to commerce, as they bring the objects required by every man easily into his immediate neighbourhood.

Our North American colonies present such general features of resemblance, that the economical history and statistics of one are nearly applicable to all. Canada is by far the most important, possessing in some parts as rich a soil as any region of America, and every where enjoying great facilities for commerce and communication. Politically speaking, the province has the great disadvantage of want of compactness: it stretches across the map of America, to use Voltaire's expression respecting the dominions of the king of Prussia, like a pair of garters: from Gaspé to our settlements on Lake St. Clair, it has a length of 1500 miles, while the breadth, between the frontier of the United States to the south and the frozen forests, roamed over only by Indians and fur-traders, to the north, rarely exceeds 200. New Brunswick is a magnificently timbered country, with a soil also very rich in some parts, but very thinly inhabited by a poor population. Nova Scotia is an older colony, and rather more wealthy; but the soil, generally speaking, is thought to be less productive. Prince Edward's Island, a very well peopled little spot, is chiefly remarkable as exhibiting the last remnant of the old proprietary system. When its survey was completed in

* (1860.) In 1852 the town population of Canada was 170,000; the rural, 1,670,000.

1766, the Earl of Egmont, then a lord of the admiralty, proposed to have its proprietorship settled on himself, on a feudal plan, with power to erect a certain number of baronies, each baron to build a castle, to employ so many men-at-arms, and to do feudal suit and service. This ingenious scheme was not adopted; but the island was sold by lottery to proprietors in England, in sixty-seven shares. These became subsequently consolidated in a few hands; and the principal portion belongs now, I believe, to eight proprietors, of whom the lands are held by the occupiers, nominally, on payment of a quit-rent. The effects of this as well as other systems of land granting will fall hereafter more properly under our consideration. Lastly, Newfoundland is a colony of which the prosperity and the very existence depend on the fisheries carried on along her shores, the most valuable in the world. It is only within these few years that this island appears to have possessed any thing like a fixed population; and agriculture is as yet in a very backward state.

The chief products of our North American colonies are agricultural; but the surplus of this class of commodities, which the settler has to exchange for the luxuries and conveniences of life, is as yet inconsiderable. This will appear from a short analysis of the export trade of these important provinces.

In 1832, out of exports to the value of 2,450,000*l.*, the produce of land was only 276,000*l.*; in 1835 the whole amount of exports was 2,706,000*l.*, and the produce of land had fallen to 121,000*l.* But in order to estimate the whole amount of surplus agricultural produce, there must be added to this quantity that which the North American grower supplies to the lumberer, the timber merchant, and the persons engaged in the fisheries; in return for which he obtains British manufactures and other foreign commodities, through the intervention of traders. Pro-

bably, this quantity may amount in ordinary years to double or treble that which is exported; but I have no data whereon to form such an estimate.

But the staple articles of export are the produce of the forests and the fisheries. The export of timber, ashes, &c., amounted in 1835 to 1,478,000*l.*, or considerably more than half the whole exports of the colonies. This branch of commerce is well known to exhibit the principal remnant, next to the sugar trade, of our old colonial system, the duty on colonial timber being in 1840 10*s.* a load, that on foreign timber 55*s.* a load. Its effects on the wealth and industry of the mother-country will be more fully considered hereafter. Its results in the colonies have been matter of much debate. By some it is contended, that the lumber business (that of the wood-cutter), besides the amount of wealth which it furnishes, is of use to agriculture, by clearing the forests for the emigrant. But this is certainly not the case: the lumberers select only a few trees for their operations, leaving the rest of the forest untouched; and what they do serves rather to encumber than to clear the soil, as the loppings are left on the ground. It is contended, also, with what justice I do not know, that the lumberers are in themselves a bad and troublesome part of the population. At present (and it is impossible to legislate with a view to a contingent futurity), the trade is certainly the source of great wealth to these provinces; and, probably, would continue to flourish to a great extent, even were the protection withdrawn. But it is not of a very durable character. The proportion of North American timber fit for the purpose of exportation seems to be singularly small, considering the vast extent of soil covered by forests. It may seem a visionary speculation to contemplate the possibility of a scarcity of timber in the great wooded zone of the earth which stretches along the eastern coast of America, where the dense shade is as yet only pierced

at intervals for the habitations of men ; and yet it is a fact, that of late years a considerable export trade in this article has arisen from Canada to the neighbouring states of the Union, the forests of New York, Vermont, and Maine, being already thinned of their most valuable produce. New Brunswick is now the richest timber country in North America — a few years will probably bring complaints of scarcity from that quarter also.

The fisheries form a more durable branch of commerce. Along the coasts of our colonies “ the nations of Europe “ have for several centuries laboured indefatigably with “ nets, lines, and every process that can be contrived or “ imagined ; and yet, not the slightest diminution of fruit- “ fulness has ever been observed.”* Newfoundland and Nova Scotia, with its dependency Cape Breton, are the great seats of it. A curious change has taken place of late years in its localities, and the manner in which it is carried on. For centuries the great ambition of colonizing nations was to encourage the fishery by ships, on the great bank of Newfoundland, at a distance from all shores. The importance attached to this pursuit may be estimated from the numerous treaties in which it is made the subject of mutual arrangement, but it is still more evinced in the systematic efforts which were made for centuries to put down the coast fishery, and prevent the establishment of resident fishermen on the coasts of Newfoundland and its neighbourhood. All these efforts seem at last to have been abandoned ; and the coast-fishery seems now to be much more important than the bank-fishery, to the great advantage of our colonies. The exports of the fisheries amounted in 1832 to the value of 792,000*l.* ; in 1835 to 952,000*l.* : nevertheless, it is doubtful whether this branch of trade is progressively increasing ; and there is certainly little prospect of its again attaining the height it had reached during our monopoly in the late war, when its

* Murray's British America, ii. 277.

produce, in one year, reached the enormous value of 2,800,000l.*

The trade of these colonies is chiefly carried on with England, the United States, and the West Indies. It has been subjected† to the principle of the old navigation laws, namely, that foreign goods can only be imported into the colonies in vessels of the countries which produce them; which practically excludes the vessels of all foreign countries except the United States from their ports. But it may be doubted, whether these restrictions have in reality much effect in controlling the channels of commerce, or whether much alteration would be made in the carrying trade by their removal—a subject which will be more properly discussed hereafter.

It will be evident from this brief outline, that our North American colonies offer no great temptations for the employment of large capital, or facilities for the accumulation of great fortunes. The agricultural wealth of individuals cannot be great, where there is so small an amount of foreign export, and so small a non-agricultural population to supply; and were the facilities for disposing of surplus produce greater, still no landlord could expect to become rich by letting his land in a country where any one may become a freeholder on the easiest possible terms. Capital is invested in considerable quantities in the timber trade and the fisheries; but a great part of it is British, and has no local abode in the provinces. It is, I believe, only since 1830 that mercantile houses of consequence, having Canadian partners, have been established in Quebec and Montreal. Nor, again, do these provinces afford that paradise to emigrants of the labouring class which has

* In 1856, the total value of the exported produce of the Newfoundland fisheries was 1,254,787l.

† Until their repeal, completed in 1854.

been sometimes held out in fallacious descriptions. Where there is not much capital invested in productive industry on a great scale, the demand for hired labourers must be precarious; the emigrant cannot establish himself in the wilderness without a fund to subsist upon, and means to clear and prepare the place of his occupation; and clearing alone in Canada costs from 3*l.* to 4*l.* per acre. The only mode in which the land can be rendered available for the reception of settlers of the poorest order, is through the agency of land companies or other speculators, who are willing to undertake the expense of clearing with a view to attract emigrants, from whom they may obtain repayment at a future time. But the class of settlers to whom these regions appear to afford the greatest temptation is that of small farmers, and others, possessed of some means, however slight, and at the same time able and willing to maintain themselves by the labour of their hands. To them it is not too much to say, that with good conduct from their own parts, and exemption from extraordinary casualties, North America offers, after four or five years of probation, a certainty of a happy competence, a probability of acquiring moderate wealth. These form the core, the most useful and most healthy part, of the great mass of settlers whom this country annually sends across the Atlantic, destined to augment the increasing myriads of small yeomanry who constitute the body of the people in our colonies, and in the Northern States of the Union. Emigrants have very rarely professed themselves disappointed in the soil of any part of our possessions. The climate is a more questionable attribute. The fierceness of its extremes tries some constitutions; the severity of its winter is felt as a drawback by all except the thoroughly acclimatised: its monotony is wearisome, and has the disadvantage of encouraging the favourite vice of the region, intemperance; seven months being spent, for the most part, in forced idleness, and all the labours of the

yea
adv
ness
can
rem
in t
Can
in h
how
fogs
seem
with
most

TH
and
chara
neces
and a
lande
witho
out t
Britis
them
vail;
sentin

Our
tracts
Euro
rema
there
to the
shall
is one
exten

Colum

year crowded into five. These are its drawbacks: its advantages are, its general salubrity, its serenity, its steadiness, and the comparative certainty with which the farmer can calculate on its periodical vicissitudes. It must be remembered that it varies, though not very considerably, in the different provinces; it is most severe in Lower Canada and New Brunswick; more humid, and less intense in heat and cold, in Nova Scotia and the islands; these, however, are subject to the serious drawback of heavy fogs, with the exception of Prince Edward's Island, which seems to enjoy all the advantages of an insular climate, with few of its inconveniences; mildest, and on the whole most favourable, in Upper Canada.

The state of society in provinces thus circumstanced is and must be essentially republican, whatever may be the character of their institutions. It must be that which necessarily results from the general diffusion of well-being, and among a people of whom the great bulk are small landed proprietors, with very few wealthy individuals, without an established aristocracy or hierarchy, and without the elements for constructing either. A love for British principles and institutions may prevail among them: we have had the strongest proofs that it does prevail; but with them it must of necessity be rather a sentiment than a principle.

Our American empire extends, as I have said, over vast tracts of the Western continent, as yet unoccupied by Europeans. The greater proportion will probably always remain so, or only see a population accumulate here and there in its most favoured spots, when the fertile regions to the southward, as yet scarcely marked by cultivation, shall begin to disgorge their overflow of people. But there is one tract which seems to invite colonization; that which extends along the Pacific, in the neighbourhood of the Columbia river. It possesses a climate very superior to

that of Eastern America in the same parallels, and a soil shaded by the noblest forests to be found under the temperate zone.*

The Cape Colony, or South Africa, is a region possessed of some great natural advantages, which seem to ensure it eventual prosperity; but these advantages are so balanced by its deficiencies, that it has not hitherto afforded great temptations to the British settler. Its situation is highly commodious, lying in the middle of one of the great high-ways of maritime communication. It enjoys a climate which may, perhaps, be called, without exaggeration, the most salubrious known, that is, the most adapted to the human constitution in general without distinction of race, and one of the most delightful.† This climate is moreover particularly suited for variety of production; the wines, silk, fruit, and corn of Southern Europe flourish

* (1860.) The British portion of this region lies N. of lat 49°, and comprises the now celebrated gold-producing region of British Columbia. Its climate has proved much better, and in particular much drier, than hitherto supposed; its soil not generally attractive, but very various. Whatever use Britain may ultimately make of her portion of North-Western America, it is a region of no small interest to observers of our times, as affording the last open field for European emigration. The remainder of the extra-tropical world is now filled up. No other site is left for the foundation of future empires. Its occupiers will be the latest adventurers in that vast work of European colonization which began scarcely four centuries ago. The duty left for future time will be only to fill up the outlines already traced in days of more romantic adventure.

νῦν δ' ὅτε πάντα δέδωσται . . .
ὑστεροι ὥστε δρόμον καταλειπόμεθ', οὐδὲ πῇ ἔστι
παντῇ παπταίνοντα νεόζυγες ἄρμα πελάσσαι.

† "In 1830, at Hottentots' Holland, out of a population of 1500 persons there died only five, among whom two old persons and one by accident."—*Martin's Statistics of the Colonies*, p. 477. But a more remarkable testimony to its healthiness is to be found in a comparative statement of the mortality of British troops at different colonial stations

there in perfection, together with some of the produce of tropical countries. But, on the other hand, few habitable countries seem to have a larger proportion of useless land. Long ranges of dreary sandstone or granite mountains are divided by flat high plateaux of red clay, on which nothing can be made to grow; and the physiologist is puzzled to account for the manner in which subsistence is procured by the amazing herds of wild animals which swarm, at particular seasons of the year, from the unknown north into these inhospitable plains. There are in parts fine tracts of land, abounding in picturesque scenery and rich in produce: but the difficulty of communication between these oases is great; there are no navigable rivers; probably there is not a stream in the colony, extending as it does over 120,000 square miles, which brings down in summer so large a body of water as the Thames. The aridity of the climate, which seems to belong more or less to the whole southern temperate zone, is here peculiarly felt. Yet, all things considered, it is not easy to account for the comparative slowness of advance of this colony—

and at home. The following are some of the most remarkable examples:—

European Soldiers.	Annual Deaths per thousand
United Kingdom	14·0
Cape of Good Hope	15·5
Nova Scotia and New Brunswick	18·0
Malta	18·7
Canada	20·0
Ionian Islands	28·3
Mauritius	30·5
Bermuda	32·3
Madras Presidency	52·0
Bombay Presidency	55·0
Ceylon	57·2
Bengal Presidency	63·0
Windward and Leeward Command	85·0
Jamaica	143·0
Sierra Leone	483·0

—(*Statistical Society's Journal*.)

comparative only, for it has doubled its population in the last thirty years. Something is owing to the long prevalence of the usages of the Dutch, who systematically discouraged the establishment of a dense population, by granting away their land in insulated tracts, or in circles touching each other and having unoccupied spaces in the interstices.* But the small amount of British immigration seems to prove that the soil has been found on the whole indifferently adapted to those species of industry to which the British are accustomed. This was certainly the case in former years, while the chief trade of the colony consisted in the supply of shipping with agricultural produce, and in raising wine for exportation. The cultivation of the vine was introduced by French refugee Protestants. In the time of the French war, government thought it desirable to protect this branch of industry by discriminating duties. In 1813 these wines were admitted at the payment of one third the duty then charged on the produce of Spain and Portugal. Cape wine, *eo nomine*, was then a common article of consumption, and certainly bore no favourable reputation. In 1825, when the duties on other wines underwent an alteration, this protection was reduced from 28*l.* to 11*l.* a pipe. The complaints of the colonists at the change were lamentable. But since it appears that the amount of wine exported, which in 1824, before the revolution, was 16,000 *leaguers*, had

* The following is an outline of the primitive system on which the original Dutch grants of land were made:—"It was the practice to allow the settlers to select their own location, but no title deed was issued to them, nor anything but a mere written permission to use the land. The extent allowed to each was 3,000 morgen (about 6,000 acres), and from its being merely held on loan or sufferance, these locations obtained the name of 'loan places.' A central mark or beacon was assumed, and called the 'ordonnantie,' and a man's walk of half an hour (or 750 roods) diverging in every direction from the ordonnantie, was thought sufficient at that time to define, without the expense of survey, the limits of each of these circular 'places.'"

rise
real
the
form
too
reach
more
later
able
in 1

T
living
other
and
the
cums
retain

Pa
Fren
porta
soil b
be sa
nizat
arrive
grant
out o
coast
Cook

* A
see abo
in 185
† In
‡ (1
(Natal
(the O
being f
into an

risen to 20,000 in 1828, it cannot be thought that they really suffered much by the alteration. Since that time, the import has been pretty stationary; but under what form it comes into the market, we must not inquire too anxiously; for the name of "Cape wine" no longer reaches the ear of the consumer.* But another and more important species of production has been very lately introduced. Wool is now exported in considerable quantities. In 1830 the export was only 33,000 lbs., in 1836 it had risen to 373,203. †

The Dutch boers form still the mass of the people, living in single families, at a wide distance from each other, occupied in the pasture of their numerous herds, and in the most animating and dangerous exercises of the chase; they are strangely changed in outward circumstances from their Batavian ancestors, yet are said to retain much of the same national character.‡

Passing by Mauritius, a flourishing island, formerly a French possession, on which an experiment of much importance is just now in progress, the cultivation of the soil by imported labourers from India, of which more will be said on a future occasion; and Ceylon, in which colonization, properly so called, has scarcely commenced; we arrive at Australia, the land of promise to modern emigrants, and the most remarkable field of British industry, out of the limits of Britain, at the present day. After the coast of New South Wales had been discovered by Captain Cook, it was made a penal settlement, with a view to rid

* According to M'Culloch and other authorities, 698,000 gallons of see above Cape wine were imported in 1827, 423,000 in 1844, 242,000 in 1852.

† In 1845 to 3,250,532, in 1858 to 16,500,000.

‡ (1861.) Since this was written, a rich and flourishing dependency (Natal) has been added to the Cape; and a country as large as England (the Orange River Free State) occupied by a few thousand Boers, after being for a few years annexed to the British territory, has been formed into an independent republic.

our gaols of the number of prisoners who were accumulating there after the American war. In 1787 the *Sirius* frigate landed 800 convicts at Botany Bay. The coast of that inlet, which had appeared so tempting to Captain Cook, was soon found to afford nothing but swamps and sand; an instance, among several, of the ease with which government has allowed itself to be misled by the reports of naval discoverers, to many of whom all land is much alike, and who, even when better qualified to judge, see the tract they have explored only at one season of the year, and are almost certain to be unreasonable either in their praises or their disapprobation. On the 26th January, 1788, the little colony removed to Sydney.

In the period which has since elapsed, the progress of New South Wales has been so astonishing, as far as regards the production and accumulation of wealth, as to afford the most remarkable phenomena of colonial history. In 1789 the first harvest was reaped; in 1790 the first permanent settler (a convict) took possession of the plot of land allotted to him. In 1793 the first purchase of colonial grain (1200 bushels) was made by government. The first newspaper was printed in 1802. In 1803 Mr. Macarthur exhibited in London the first sample of Merino wool from the sheep of the colony. In 1807, 245 lbs. of that wool were exported from the colony; in 1820, 100,000 lbs.; in 1830, 3,564,532 lbs.; in 1844, nearly 14,000,000. Sydney is now a fine city, with all the appurtenances of a great provincial town, and exhibiting much greater signs of wealth than one of similar size would display in England. In fact, notwithstanding the check which the prospects of this colony received in 1842, on which, and its causes, much remains to be said elsewhere, no communities have probably ever advanced so rapidly in economical progress as our Australian settlements for the last fifteen years. Not, indeed, in the mere increase of numbers: in this, various American states of

recent origin, such as Ohio, has far outstripped them. But the exports of Ohio are trifling in comparison. It is the relative increase of trade and surplus wealth in proportion to population which gives to these settlements their distinctive character. Our exports to New South Wales alone, in the year 1842, amounted to the value of 600,000*l.*; so that each individual of the population (about 130,000) consumed the value of more than 50*s.* per head; and as this was a great fall from the amounts of the years immediately preceding, so it may be taken as a pretty fair estimate of the actual demand, irrespectively of those various causes which often swell the apparent consumption of colonies beyond the reality. It may serve to illustrate the great wealth of the colony to compare this with the consumption of some other parts of the world, in which British manufactures are pretty extensively used. Each inhabitant of the United States consumed in 1840 British manufactures to the value of about 10*s.* per annum; each Portuguese, about 6*s.*; each German, 5*s.* And, in return for these manufactured goods, we derive from Australia one of the most valuable raw materials in the commercial world. The wool of that region is now exclusively used in some kinds of manufacture; it may be anticipated, that it will compete more and more effectively with that of the wool-growing countries of Europe, where heavy rents enter into the costs of production, and the limited extent of soil restricts the supply; in fact, as it has been truly observed, Australia possesses, in regard to this important article, something approaching to the kind of monopoly which Mexico enjoyed, in the days of her prosperity, in the production of the precious metals.

This advantage is partly owing to peculiarities of soil and climate. The former is, generally speaking, little attractive to the agricultural labourer. Australia, as far as it has yet been explored, has been quaintly termed a

region imperfectly formed, in which the deposits have not been sufficiently upheaved by volcanic action, so as to produce that variety of surface, and prepare the strata to furnish that perennial supply of water, which are found in most habitable parts of the earth. In the only parts over which discovery has as yet extended, there is a great proportion of arid plains, alternately swamp and sand, and of barren rocky tracts of horizontal sandstone. "The amount of surface," says Major Mitchell, "comprised in European kingdoms, affords no criterion of what may be necessary for the growth of a new people in Australia."* Elsewhere the same writer says, speaking of the old colony of New South Wales, "Sandstone predominates so much, as to cover about six-sevenths of the surface. In the regions of sandstone the territory is, in short, good for nothing, and is, besides, very generally inaccessible, thus presenting a formidable obstruction to any communication between isolated spots of a better description." The very ease with which the soil is cleared from the thin sprinkling of the heavier timber, would suffice to prove to a North American that it was not worth the trouble of cultivation. This, however, would be an erroneous conclusion. A few tracts have been found extremely productive, although wanting in the recognised American token of fertility. And if New South Wales has never yet raised sufficient corn for its own consumption, this seems in reality more attributable to the existence of much more profitable employment for labour, than to the deficiencies of the soil itself. While the inhabitants can afford to purchase flour from the distant markets of America with their own surplus commodities, they are probably turning the advantages of their situation, to far better account by persevering in the industry which has hitherto proved

* Vol. ii. p. 526.

so su
dryn
retur
two
hard
nearl
betw
of w
deed
Mour
whic
be lo
less
lakes
of an
disco
from
direct
after

* I
contro
Descr
is very
corn o
cent.,
† (C
ledge
been c
Grego
miles
Sturt,
he des
Stuart
and re
This l
the in
perma
Queen
now h

so successful.* The climate is remarkable for its singular dryness. The great droughts, it is said, are supposed to return about once in every ten or twelve years, and last two or three that of 1826—29 was peculiarly severe; hardly any rain fell, and the cultivation of the earth was nearly suspended. Even in ordinary years, there are only between forty and fifty days of rain. This vast continent, of which scarcely one sixth has been explored, seems indeed to promise a very small extent of habitable land. Mountains rise at a small distance from the east coast, which give out streams to the westward; these appear to be lost in interminable plains, covered with sand or hopeless "scrub," and sometimes converted into marshes and lakes by a few days of rain. The once favourite theories of an inland sea in the interior, or of high ranges of undiscovered mountains, seem now to be nearly abandoned, from observation of the hot winds which proceed in all directions from thence towards the sea; and all search after the outlets of large rivers has proved unsuccessful.†

* I am not sure whether any subsequent observer has confirmed or controverted the very curious remark of Count Strzelecki (*Physical Description of New South Wales*, 1845) that the wheat of these colonies is very deficient in gluten. While the average of this element in the corn of most other parts of the world varies only from 20 to 22 per cent., in Australia it was found on some farms not to exceed 4 per cent.

† (1860.) Except the Murray. In the last twenty years our knowledge of the interior has not increased to the amount which might have been expected. Three principal expeditions may be noticed. 1. That of Gregory, from the northern coast, who crossed three or four hundred miles of tolerable country, and then struck the desert. 2. That of Sturt, from South Australia nearly to the centre, over ground which he describes as almost as hopeless as the Great Sahara. 3. That of Stuart (1860) a little west of Sturt's line, but nearly parallel with it, and reaching much farther north; in fact nearly joining that of Gregory. This latest explorer reports much more favourably of the capabilities of the interior; but it remains to be proved whether owing to any more permanent cause than a difference of season. The new district of Queensland, scarcely known when these lectures were composed, must now be separately noticed, as enjoying a climate adapted to a great

This character of drought appears common to all the Australian colonies ; greatest, perhaps, in the old counties of New South Wales and in South Australia ; rather less severe in Port Philip ; slightest in Western Australia, and in the island of Van Diemen's Land ; but here I am entering on debatable ground, for no subject can be more fiercely contested than the comparative excellence of their climate between the citizens of these rival commonwealths.

But notwithstanding its agricultural disadvantages, a better climate on the whole for the health and comfort of man and beast than that of Sydney is not easily found. In this respect, New South Wales ranks only second, if at all, to the Cape of Good Hope. It is free from the pests of malaria, deleterious dews, musquitos, and the other mischiefs, both of hot and cold regions. It is admirably suited, in all probability, to the vine, the olive, the mulberry, and other productions of dry and temperate countries, which as yet have scarcely been tried there ; while observation has shown its peculiar adaptation for the growth of its staple commodity, wool. There is some quality in the climate, say observers, not hitherto ascertained, which improves the fleece of the animal after its transportation from Europe. And the multiplication of flocks, particularly on the grassy plains which extend westward from the Blue Mountains, in South Australia, and round Port Philip, is already great, and may be extended beyond calculation.

But these advantages could hardly have been turned to account as they have been, without that abundant supply of labour which New South Wales in its early progress furnished to immigrant capitalists. By transporting thither on the average 3000 convicts per annum, the

variety of produce, from its situation on the limit of the tropics, and from its terrace-like ranges of different height above the sea. A settler on the highlands above Moreton Bay tells me that his estate grows both the banana and the apple.

government in fact presented the settlers with labour to that extent, free of the expense of importing it; just as if it had taken upon itself to furnish a plantation with so many slaves or indented labourers. And the nature of its staple requiring rather attention than the labour of many hands, enabled the colonists to use this advantage to the utmost extent.

It has lately been thought expedient, with a view to the moral state of the colony, to limit this supply; apparently with the view of causing it, at some future time, to cease altogether. The reasons for this change, and its probable effects, will form the subject of separate discussion.* The colonists have now to look to the influx of free labour to supply the deficiency. This it is necessary that government, or capitalists, should supply; few emigrants of the poorer classes are likely to undertake so distant a voyage on their own means. And the stream of emigration has in fact been turned of late years so abundantly towards these shores, that the population of New South Wales alone is now increased by the arrival of 8000 or 10,000 new comers annually. But this supply can only be kept up by systematic measures; and the nature of those which are now adopted will also be considered by us hereafter with some minuteness.

It is scarcely necessary to dwell on the peculiarities of our other Australian colonies, for there is a striking general similarity in point of natural features. The insular position of Van Diemen's Land modifies its climate to a certain extent: it appears, in fact, to be singularly variable in respect of temperature. This also has been a convict colony from the beginning, and more exclusively so than even New South Wales. In 1821 free emigration commenced, and for some time its progress was very rapid; but the settlers having been allowed, in the usual

* See Lecture on Convict Labour, and Appendices.

inconsiderate manner, to spread themselves at random on the soil, it is alleged that this island, as large as Ireland, and peopled by only 50,000 inhabitants, has already arrived at that first point of retardation in the history of colonies, when the best land in available situations is already occupied or taken out of the market. This seems hardly credible; yet there are some circumstances in its economical condition not very accountable. Its own inhabitants speak in magnificent terms of its capabilities and prospects: it was confidently foretold, that it would become the granary of the pastoral settlements of the Australian continent; yet, of late years, comparatively little capital has found its way there; and it is said that the re-emigration to Port Philip* and New Zealand has fully equalled the immigration. But notwithstanding this temporary depression, there can be little doubt of its resources and eventual prosperity. It has a great advantage in its favourable situation for the command of the whale fisheries.

The recent advance of Port Philip has been more striking than that of any other Australian colony. South Australia is remarkable from the peculiar circumstances attending its foundation. Authority was given by Act of Parliament to commissioners to manage the disposal of its public lands, on the express condition that the purchase money was to be applied, without distinction, to the conveyance of emigrants from the mother-country. The price has been uniform, and fixed for some years at 1*l.* per acre. This was the practical application of a principle then recently promulgated, and will form one of the most important subjects of consideration in my present lectures. It is perhaps to be wished, that the experiment had first been tried in a region of greater natural capa-

* The "district" of Port Philip, formerly part of New South Wales, became the separate "colony" of Victoria in 1850, and is, in 1860, the second in population and first in wealth of the colonies of Great Britain.

biliti
the c
enco
altho
from
gerat
throu
new
capit
histo
some
sheep
besid
a litt
the m
"pre
"are

Th
was f
gover
numb
emigr
appro
about
impos
pitalis
profus
selves
were

* (1
water
Austra
energet
contine
the wh

† W
† Ro

bilities; for the accounts of recent explorers respecting the extent of useful land in South Australia are not very encouraging.* Still much remains to be explored; and although the colony has suffered a little in public opinion from the disappointment which has followed on exaggerated expectations, a community which has passed through the first years of existence, usually so trying to a new settlement, almost without a struggle; into which capital has poured with a profusion unequalled in colonial history; which, in five years from its foundation, counted some 12,000 or 15,000 inhabitants, possessed of 100,000 sheep, and has now under cultivation 1000 acres of land, besides its great pastoral wealth; can afford to submit to a little detraction, and point to the evidence of facts as the most conclusive answer to it. "There is not at the present time one of the Australian colonies where wages are so high as in and round Adelaide."†

The colony of the Swan River, or Western Australia, was founded, on very opposite principles, in 1829. The government made over the soil at a very low rate to a number of great undertakers, who engaged to carry out emigrants. An enormous quantity of land was speedily appropriated; according to Sir J. Stirling, at the rate of about 2000 acres to every man in the colony.‡ It proved impossible to keep the labourers in the service of the capitalists in a country where land was squandered with such profusion. The labourers were unable to support themselves on the soil without assistance: great hardships were experienced, and serious difficulties incurred, from

* (1860.) At the time when this was written, the great region watered by the Murray was as yet unknown. Since that time the South Australian government and people have bestirred themselves more energetically than those of any other colony in the exploration of the continent, perhaps for the very reason mentioned in the text—that on the whole their own resources are inferior.

† Westminster Review, Jan. 1841.

‡ Report of the Land and Emigration Board, 1840, p. 22.

which the colony is only beginning to recover. Its population scarcely exceeded 3000 by the latest accounts. But its natural capabilities are great; superior, perhaps, on the whole, to those of any other region of Australia.

I have last to mention the new settlement of New Zealand; and to mention it only; for though we may be disposed to prognosticate the best success to a colony founded under such good auspices, and in a spirit of enthusiasm unequalled in modern colonial enterprise—which carries the mind back to the days of Raleigh and his adventurous contemporaries—no accounts have as yet reached this country on which we can safely build our speculations. The situation for trade is admirable, the climate appears highly favourable for agricultural purposes, and there is doubtless no deficiency of fertile soil. The energetic and comparatively industrious natives contrast very advantageously with the degraded tribes of Australia, and even with the American Indians; but whether this superiority shall form a blessing or a curse to the settlement, depends mainly on the settlers themselves. But they will find the process of colonization a far more laborious work, in a country so mountainous in surface and so abundantly clad with vegetation, than in those Australian regions from which many of the adventurers proceed; requiring rather the dogged and solitary perseverance of the American backwoodsman, than the lighter qualities of enterprise and readiness which lead to success in the savannas of New South Wales.

CAN

1859.

1855. 1

"

"

"

"

Ye

17

18

18

18

18

18

18

18

18

APPENDIX TO LECTURE IV.

STATISTICS OF THE PRINCIPAL BRITISH COLONIES.

No. I.

CANADA :—

	<i>Imports.</i>	<i>Exports.</i>
1859.	£1,400,000 . .	£950,000
1855. From Great Britain . .	3,325,865 . .	1,684,610
" " North American Colonies .	216,496 . .	255,861
" " British West Indies .	3,533 . .	937
" " United States . .	5,206,358 . .	5,000,572
" " other foreign countries .	269,288 . .	105,133
	£9,021,540	£7,047,113

Population.

<i>Year.</i>	<i>Lower.</i>	<i>Upper.</i>	<i>Total.</i>
1763 . . .	70,000 . .	12,000 . .	82,000
1814 . . .	335,000 . .	95,000 . .	430,000
1823 . . .	427,000 . .	150,000 . .	577,000
1831 . . .	512,000 . .	260,000 . .	772,000
1844 . . .	699,000 . .	500,000 . .	1,199,000
1848 . . .	770,000 . .	721,000 . .	1,491,000
1851 . . .	890,261 . .	952,004 . .	1,842,265
1855 (estimate)	1,040,000 . .	1,250,000 . .	2,300,000

No. II.

LOWER NORTH AMERICAN PROVINCES.

1. NEW BRUNSWICK.				
	1824.	1834.	1840.	1851.
Population	74,136	119,457	156,000	193,800
	1822.	1828.	1831.	1835.
Imports	£276,528	£266,528	£603,871	£621,599
Exports	272,177	457,138	427,318	577,211
				810,779
2. NOVA SCOTIA AND CAPE BRETON.				
	1817.	1827.	1840. (Supposed.)	1854.
Population	98,913	153,878	200,000	276,117
	1822.	1830.	1835.	
Imports	£481,453	£1,405,153	£1,035,660	
Exports	246,862	714,865	887,367	
3. PRINCE EDWARD'S ISLAND.				
	1827.	1841.	1854.	
Population	23,266	47,033	71,496	
	1823.	1833.	1858.	
Imports	£28,813	£70,066	£186,229	
Exports	28,747	31,738	153,071	

4. NEWFOUNDLAND.			
	1825.	1836.	1857.
Population	55,719	75,094	122,638
	1835.	1836.	1858.
Imports	£576,796	£579,799	£1,172,862
Exports	737,022 (Fish.) 437,306 (Oil.) 236,301	787,099	1,318,836

No. III.

CAPE OF GOOD HOPE.

	1797.	1815.	1823.	1836.	1856.
Population	61,947	82,363	116,205	150,110	267,096
	1835.	1839.	1854.	1856.	
Exports	£362,280	£534,750	£662,936	£1,210,625 Revenue. £348,362	

No. IV.

MAURITIUS.

		1767.	1807.	1827.	1835.	1856.
Population {	Whites . . .	3,163	6,489	8,111	} 29,612	
	Free coloured	587	5,919	15,444		
	Slaves . . .	18,777	65,367	69,076	Appren- tices. 61,045	241,847
Total		22,537	77,768	92,631	90,657	241,847
	1835.	1858.			Revenue.	£395,103
Imports	£660,518	2,785,353				
Exports	699,000	2,209,076				

No. V.

NEW SOUTH WALES.									
	1788.	1810.	1821.	1828.	1833.	1836.	1840.	1845.	Last return before 1860.
Population . . .	1,600	8,298	29,783	36,598	71,070	77,096	110,000	181,550	342,062
		1828.		1832.		1835.		1845.	
Exports . . .		£90,650		£384,844		£602,316		£1,092,392	
		Revenue, 1857				£1,185,558			

TASMANIA.						
	1822.	1830.	1835.	1836.	1843.	Last return before 1860.
Population . . .	4,996	24,504	40,283	43,895	48,963	84,080
	1824.		1835.		1836.	
Imports	£62,000		£583,646		£332,548	
Exports	14,500		320,679		258,609	
Revenue, 1857					£423,973	

SOUTH AUSTRALIA.						
Population, 1843					15,020	
Last return before 1860					118,215	
Revenue, 1857					£748,291	

VICTORIA.

SINCE ITS SEPARATION FROM NEW SOUTH WALES.

Population (end of 1858.)

Males .	323,576	Females .	180,943	=	504,519
Total Immigration before 1851	.	.	.	.	69,673
"	"	since 1851	.	.	539,467
					<hr/>
					609,230
					<hr/>

Excess of Immigration over Emigration . . . 366,529

Revenue, 1857 . £3,308,589

Gold Exported	.	.	1851	.	.	145,146 oz.
"	.	.	1856	.	.	2,985,695
"	.	.	1859	.	.	2,280,675

*(Archer's Statistical Tables.)**Population.*

Western Australia .	.	.	1843	.	.	3,274
"	"	last return before	1860	.	.	14,837
New Zealand, European .	.	.	1843	.	.	12,664
"	"	.	1858	.	.	59,326
"	Native	.	1858	.	.	87,766

		<i>Imports.</i>		<i>Exports.</i>	
New Zealand :—	1853	.	£597,827	.	£303,282
"	1859	.	1,551,030	.	551,484

PROGRESS OF THE AUSTRALIAN COLONIES.

	1825.	1835.	1845.	1850.	1855.	1859-59.
1. New South Wales.						
Population . . .	34,000	75,000	181,000	Without Victoria. 180,900	260,000	340,000
Exports . . .	-	£602,000	-	£1,347,000	£1,928,735	
2. Victoria.						
Population . . .	-	-	-	77,000	3·9,000	504,000
Exports . . .	-	-	-	£1,042,000	£13,493,338	
3. South Australia.						
Population . . .	-	-	-	84,000	85,000	118,000
Exports . . .	-	-	£131,000	£570,000	£988,215	
4. Tasmania.						
Population . . .	20,000?	40,000	-	70,000	-	80,000
Exports . . .	-	£320,000	-	£613,000	-	

PART II.

ECONOMICAL EFFECTS OF COLONIZATION ON THE PARENT STATE.

LECT.

EFFECT

THE

to c

colo

terc

It is

thos

to th

selv

brou

new

mon

char

old

to tr

pect

affor

and

hom

a co

the

ene

tion

of e

a no

scar

LECTURE V.

EFFECTS OF EMIGRATION ON THE PROGRESS OF POPULATION AND WEALTH
IN THE MOTHER COUNTRY.

THE portion of my subject to which I am anxious next to call your attention relates to the effects produced by colonization, and by the maintenance of colonies and intercourse with them, on the wealth of the mother country. It is not, perhaps, a topic of so much general interest as those of which we have treated on a former occasion, or to those of which we shall at a future time direct ourselves, when the development of colonies *themselves* is brought in its turn under our view. The fortunes of the new shoot, when separated from its parent stem, afford a more pleasing object of contemplation than the slight changes which may be produced in the condition of the old familiar tree. The mere effort of directing the mind to travel abroad to those new regions of romance and expectation, where all is life, and hope, and active energy, affords a relief to the spirits, which again feel wearied and fettered when it is called back to fix its attention at home. This yearning after the distant and the unseen is a common propensity of our nature; and how much is the force of that "secret impulse" cherished and strengthened, in the minds of us Englishmen, by all the associations in the midst of which we are educated! Masters of every sea, and colonists of every shore, there is scarcely a nook which our industry has not rendered accessible, scarcely a region to which the eye can wander in the map,

in which we have not some object of national interest—some factory for our trade, some settlement of our citizens. It is a sort of instinctive feeling to us all, that the destiny of our name and nation is not here, in this narrow island which we occupy ; that the spirit of England is volatile, not fixed ; that it lives in our language, our commerce, our industry, in all those channels of inter-communication by which we embrace and connect the vast multitude of states, both civilised and uncivilised, throughout the world. No circumstance, in my view, affords at once such a proof of our vocation to this great end, and such an augury of our success in the pursuit of it, as the peculiar and (in a certain sense of the word) unselfish interest with which schemes of colonization are regarded by almost all classes of society ; the sanguine hopes we are apt to entertain of their success, the sacrifices we are willing to make for their promotion, even with little or no regard to the manner in which they may affect our economical prosperity at home.

Nor, indeed, would any reasoning, however subtle, readily convince the mass of mankind, that any evils can attend on a process which seems to be dictated by nature itself. When labourers are starving for want of employment, when capitalists are vainly stretching their ingenuity to devise some profitable investment for their wealth, or ruining each other by overstrained competition, he must be a most ingenious sophist, who should succeed in persuading the community that its interest was to forbid the first to emigrate, or the latter to employ their capital abroad. "It is as natural," to use the language of Burke, "for people to flock into a busy and wealthy country, that by any accident may be thin of people, as it is for the dense air to rush into those parts which are rarefied." It is by the migration of barbarous tribes that the whole earth has been peopled ; by the colonizing genius of some more refined nations, that its civilisation,

as far as that has hitherto proceeded, has been effected. Every recorded fact in the history of man seems to indicate these as the appointed means through which his social development takes place. Nor has there ever yet been an instance in which a colonizing nation can be shown to have deteriorated, in population or in wealth, by reason of her efforts in that direction, however lavish and long-continued. It might seem therefore almost unnecessary, with the whole weight of experience inclining us in one direction, to enter into any examination of principles on a subject apparently so clear and elementary. Still there are theories on the subject, to which, although practically considered they are little more than the leisure speculations of ingenious men, it behoves us as students to direct our attention.

With regard to the *exportation of capital*, there is a school of political economists who regard it as necessarily injurious to the community in its immediate effects. Their opinion will require a detailed investigation. With regard to *emigration*, I am not indeed aware that any writers, whose views are at all worth examining, regard it as economically mischievous. I mean, of course, emigration carried to any probable amount; for it is a question of degree. It is clear that the emigration of labourers to some indefinite extent, would injuriously derange the market for labour: the only real question is, whether there is any substantial apprehension of that extent being reached.

Such a result was indeed, as we all know, one of the favourite bugbears of political economists in former times. But in point of fact there never were wanting, long before the subject had been scientifically investigated, observers of a more vigorous cast of mind, to whom the tendency of population to become redundant, and the obvious remedy for such redundancy, were well known, and who altogether discarded the imaginary terrors which pre-

vailed upon the subject. Among many such authorities to which I might easily refer you, I will content myself with citing a state paper of Lord Bacon, adduced by Sir Wilmot Horton in his third letter on emigration. It was delivered to James I. in 1606, by way of exhortation to pursue vigorous measures for the colonising of Ireland. "An effect of peace in fruitful kingdoms," said he, "where the stock of people, receiving no consumption nor diminution by war, doth continually multiply and increase, must in the end be a surcharge or overflow of people, more than the territories can well maintain, which many times insinuating a general necessity and want of means into all estates, doth turn external peace into external troubles and seditions. Now, what an excellent diversion of this inconvenience is ministered, by God's providence, to your Majesty in this plantation of Ireland, wherein so many families may receive sustentation and fortune, and the discharge of them out of England and Scotland may prevent many seeds of future perturbation; so that it is as if a man were troubled for the avoidance of water from the places where he hath built his house, and afterwards should advise with himself to cast those floods, pools, or streams, for pleasure, provision, or use. So shall your Majesty on this work have a double commodity, in the avoidance of people here, and in making use of them there." *

Such has been the general language of the better class of political philosophers, and such, in general, the encouragement given by enlightened statesmen to schemes of emigration. And it is, I think, hardly necessary for me to notice, even in passing, the strange doctrines which it has been attempted in our own day to set up in some quarters, in opposition to these dictates of ordinary reason and experience. Those tenets have, indeed, themselves

* See Quarterly Review, No. lxxiv. 575.

fallen into the contempt and oblivion which they merited. There was one writer, celebrated for a short time, and, I do believe, sincerely honest in his views, however unjustifiable the means to which he resorted in support of them, whose fate ought to serve as a warning to all who embark in these controversies, from any other motive than a pure love of truth. Addressing himself to the prejudices of the vulgar, great and small, by misrepresenting doctrines which they could not, and by attacking the authors of them with slanderous abuse which they could, understand : appealing to the religious sensibilities of a better class of minds by misquoted and misinterpreted texts, and by unwarranted, not to say blasphemous, assumptions, respecting the course of the providential government of the world ; declaiming against what he called theory, and setting up, in opposition to the views of others the most unfounded and gratuitous speculations which ever were seriously committed to writing, he succeeded for a time by means of party patronage, in raising for himself a name among supporters as credulous and as prejudiced as himself. He has met, no doubt, with the usual fate of such pretenders : his works, quoted not ten years ago as high authorities in society and in the senate, have altogether disappeared from circulation. But the spirit which produced these works, and ensured them a reception, still survives ; the readiness to embrace any imaginary hypothesis, by which the cogency of philosophical argument from known premises may be evaded : the readiness to believe and circulate any ill of the supporters of tenets which we suspect and dread to be true.*

* "There are supposed to be now upwards of one million English souls in North America" (said Franklin in 1751) "though it is thought scarce 80,000 have been brought over sea : and yet perhaps there is not one the fewer in Britain, but rather many more, on account of the employment the colonies afford to manufacturers at home. This million doubling, suppose but once in twenty-five years, will in another

The tendency of opinion of late years has run so strongly in favour of emigration, and such a variety of schemes have been pressed on government and on public notice for relieving the market for labour of a part of what is termed our surplus population by encouraging it, that we shall find ourselves called upon to guard against exaggerated expectations of good, rather than fears of evil, when we come to consider the subject more attentively.

"The different progress of population in different countries and periods is not a consequence of any variation in the principle or instinct which prompts man to multiply his species, but depends chiefly on the facility with which food, and the various articles necessary for his subsistence and accommodation, may be procured under different circumstances."* The ordinary rate of wages in any country depends on the magnitude of that portion of its capital which is appropriated to the payment of wages compared with the number of labourers. Their condition, consequently, improves or deteriorates, according as either that portion of capital or their number increases fastest. But the tendency of numbers to increase, considered by itself, is nearly a *constant quantity*. The tendency of the fund for the support of labour to increase depends on many and variable causes: first and foremost, on the relative fertility of soils. It increases at a certain ratio while the most fertile soil only is cultivated. As soon as an inferior soil is resorted to, its rate of increase diminishes. And as the next soils resorted to for the purpose of obtaining food become more and more barren, so its rate of increase, generally speaking, di-

century be more than the people of England, and the greatest number of Englishmen will be on this side the water."—Tracts reprinted by Lord Overstone, 1859, p. 171. The population of Great Britain (without Ireland) was in 1851, in round numbers, 21 millions: of the United States, in 1850, omitting slaves, 20 millions.

* M'Culloch's edition of Adam Smith, p. 30, n.

mini
duri
ther
tion
unti
But
strai
of p
dow
pow
cont
vidu
vaili
rema
natu
have

B
of d
supe
resto
and
must
some
ther
redu
bye)
on v
dimi
not,
for l
sent
labo
agai
strai
emig
a ve

minishes more and more. If the population continues, during this process, to increase at the same rate as before, there is gradually less and less food to divide in proportion to the number of mouths which are to consume it, until at last its further progress is checked by famine. But the rate of increase of the population can only be restrained (extraordinary contingencies apart) by an exercise of power and will on the part of the labourers in keeping down their own numbers. Supposing that they have the power, it is obvious that their destiny is under their own control; that is, as far as the exercise of each individual will can operate. According to the habits prevailing among them, the rate of real wages will fall or remain stationary, or for a time even rise, while that natural retardation of the increase of capital, of which I have already spoken, is actually going on.

But let us suppose, that the rate of wages is in a course of diminution. By the removal of a certain number of superfluous hands, it is obvious that the balance can be restored without the necessity of any increase of prudence and self-restraint on the part of the labourers. But it must be remembered, that this cannot be effected without some sacrifice of capital in transporting them. Of course, therefore (unless we suppose both capital and population redundant, a supposition of which I shall speak by and bye), the economical success of that experiment depends on whether the abstraction of capital, and consequent diminution of employment for labour, overbalances, or not, the relief which the emigration gives to the market for labour. Leaving, however, this difficulty for the present out of the question, it is plain that when the surplus labourers are removed, those who remain at home will again be called upon to exercise prudence and self-restraint, or their rate of wages must again diminish, or the emigration must in a short time be again repeated. Let a very short period elapse, and the population will again

require a similar drain. There is only one other alternative; namely, that in the interval between the emigration and the filling up of the vacuum thus created, some circumstances should occur to give a sudden impulse to the productiveness of labour. Such is the direct effect of great improvements in agriculture: such is also the result produced, indirectly, by the extended use of machinery in manufactures, and the discovery of new markets for exportable commodities. These circumstances may undoubtedly, for the time, raise again the rate of wages, and render that exercise of self-restraint, of which I have spoken, unnecessary.

The truth then appears to be this, that in a natural state of things, and leaving wholly out of view any excess of population above the means of employment which bad laws or political circumstances may produce, emigration is no remedy for over population unless it be continually repeated; which, on a really great scale, is scarcely likely to happen in any country. Any single emigration, however large, can have no permanent effect in checking the undue increase of numbers unless it be followed either by increased forethought, or by an increase in the productiveness of labour; and either the one or the other of these causes must infallibly have produced the same effect on the progress of population, only in a somewhat longer time, if there had been no emigration at all.

And thus much, I think, is pretty generally admitted even by the most zealous advocates of systematic emigration. But it is commonly said on the other hand, that there are various circumstances in the actual condition of this and other communities, diseases as they may be termed in the body politic, which produce, from time to time, a great temporary redundancy of population; and that before economical or moral remedies can be applied at home, room must be made for their operation by the removal of the large surplus created by these evils. "Colon-

" iza
this
" of
" wit
" sid
" of t
" from
" the
" labo
" it is
" par
" con
In
bility
stance
redun
in the
our sp
and in
tribes
tried.
getting
its pec
respec
duced
soften
human
All th
founde
and th
" so fa
" num
" If it
apt to
produc

"ization abroad," says Sir W. Horton, whose efforts in this cause are well known, "as a remedy for the evils of a relatively redundant population, is, and has been with me only a subordinate subject of inquiry. I consider it only as the best and cheapest mode of disposing of that abstraction of superfluous labouring population from the general labour-market, which I contend to be the main remedy for the distressed condition of the labouring classes of the United Kingdom, inasmuch as it is that superfluous labour which is not wanted by any party as a means of production, which deteriorates the condition of the whole labouring classes collectively."

In considering the question thus raised, of the applicability of emigration on a large scale to a country circumstanced like our own, with a view to relieving its supposed redundancy of labouring people, it must be remembered, in the first place, that we are utterly unable to submit our speculations to any test of experience. At no time, and in no country, since the migration of the barbarous tribes in Europe and Asia, has the experiment ever been tried. We have no instance on record of a country getting rid, by voluntary sacrifice, of a large portion of its people. We have no very authentic data to reason on respecting the effect of such an abstraction when produced by violent means—by famine or pestilence—so softened in their character have these scourges of the human race become in the civilised parts of the world. All the great empires which European energy has founded, have been raised by voluntary emigration; and this, as it has been truly said, "is never carried so far as to occasion any sensible diminution of the numbers of a people, or to raise the rate of wages. If it did this, it would immediately stop."* We are apt to forget how small the seed has been which has produced the great crop we see before us. The largest

* M'Culloch's edition of A. Smith, p. 457.

number of emigrants which has ever left the shores of the United Kingdom in a single year, has little exceeded 100,000, something more than one fourth of the estimated annual increase of our people; the ordinary proportion is much smaller; and even were it to continue at the highest point, it is obviously far too small to make any sensible alteration in the balance of the labour market. And as with ourselves, so elsewhere, few of those who leave their native country are pressed by absolute necessity; the greater number are persons above the average in point of energy, who are driven abroad less by the fear of worse, than the desire of better.

Spain and Portugal have been, after England, the countries which have sent forth by far the largest number of emigrants in a series of centuries; and it has been supposed by many writers, that the emigration has been such as to be sensibly felt, and that its effects have been pernicious. Social laws of a mischievous economical tendency, strict entails, large quantities of land held by the church and corporations, narrow municipal regulations, oppressive fiscal enactments, and, far worse than all these, a political system destroying the national spirit, have in these countries for many ages produced precisely the same effect on public wealth as if the soil were more barren and capital less productive than elsewhere. It was not an unnatural supposition, that, under such a state of things, large masses, both of population and of capital, were continually leaving the country for America. Yet it appears that such was not the fact. By far the larger proportion of Spanish emigrants to America was furnished by the most populous and industrious, and least oppressed, provinces, Biscay, Catalonia, Galicia, the Canaries. And it is clearly proved, that whatever may have been the case in the rest of the monarchy, the population and wealth of those districts has been slowly but steadily increasing all the while. Emigration there,

as wi
almo
natio
the p
Ch
the g
domi
peopl
where
and
count
appea
ation
while
the ar

* TH
Popula
bility in
" which
" land i
" the g
" made
ters on
establis
since it
especial

It is
always
the mos
3000 an
In the y
on *Pop*
creased
Ireland.

Suabi
the pres
reign to
to Penn
nearly
German

as with ourselves, was in reality nothing more than the almost imperceptible overflow of a minute portion of the national strength and substance.* Its direct effects on the progress of population may pass for nothing.

China is another of the great colonizing countries of the globe; for although colonization, with a view to dominion, is not a part of its policy, yet its industrious people swarm into every part of the Eastern Ocean, where there appears to be an opening for their exertions, and settle there under foreign governments. It is a country in a great part of which the increase of capital appears to have reached almost its last point of retardation; the soil in some provinces is nearly all occupied, while the stationary condition of the people, in regard to the arts of life, presents no prospect of improvement in

* The mode in which Mr. Sadler accounts for this phenomenon (*On Population*, i. 471), is clearly inconclusive. Nor is there any probability in his supposition, "that the pauses, not to say the retrogression, which evidently occurred in the movements of the population of England in the earlier part of the last century, was mainly attributable to the great drains which the plantations, as well as other causes, had made upon the inhabitants during the preceding one." But his chapters on emigration contain a valuable collection of facts, tending to establish his position, that the amount of emigration to North America, since its first settlement, has been very generally underrated, and especially by Mr. Malthus.

It is remarkable that the province of Ulster in Ireland, which has always been the great source of emigration from that country, is also the most populous part of it. In 1729 it was estimated that it sent 3000 annually to America; which number afterwards greatly increased. In the years 1771, 1772, 1773, it averaged 9500 per annum.—*Sadler on Population*, b. ii. c. 5, 6. Yet the population of Ulster has increased for a century at a greater rate than that of any other part of Ireland.

Suabia, with the old Palatinate, has also contributed very largely to the present population of America. From the end of Queen Anne's reign to 1755, it is said that from 4000 to 8000 Palatines went annually to Pennsylvania alone.—*Sadler*, b. iv. ch. 5. Yet it was, and is still nearly the thickest peopled part of Germany. See Appendix, on German Emigration.

their condition by increased productiveness of labour. Population is therefore continually pressing on the means of subsistence; but such an amount of emigration as actually takes place, consisting also, entirely of persons who are able to emigrate at their own expense, can have no more effect in regulating the increase of that vast multitude, whether of 150 or 300 millions of human beings, than the water which is let into or out of the London docks on the tide of the ocean. Infanticide, famine, and early mortality, are, it is to be feared, the real checks which keep it down to the necessary level.

We are reduced, therefore, to discuss this question on theoretical grounds only, by speculating on the effects which an extensive abstraction of people would produce on the relation between that portion of capital which is destined for the maintenance of labour, and the supply of labour, such as they are in our own country. With us, the natural retardation of the increase of capital, of which I have already spoken, has long commenced. We are continually applying fresh portions of it to less and less productive portions of the soil, while, at the same time, the importations of those necessities on which the labourer subsists from foreign countries is greatly impeded by commercial restrictions. These causes tend to make the cost of the production of necessities continually rise. On the other hand, they are, to a great extent, counteracted by improvements in agriculture, which tend to depress that cost of production; and the extensive foreign market for our products creates a demand for labour which tends to raise wages, and enable the labourer to command a greater proportion of necessities. Such has been the operation of these conflicting causes, that, on the whole, the real wages of labour have probably rather advanced than diminished during the last half century, while population has increased more rapidly than in any European country. "The great increase of population of late years

" in
wor
" cla
" tel
" inc
" and
" par
" par
" tur
Bu

is pe
chang
crises
affect
violence
the r
overs
The u
their
that,
nation
emigr
arms,
first
deficie
takes
the lo
facture
the pr
compe
is slac
corama
must
to inc

"in England and Scotland," says Mr. Malthus in his last work*, "has been owing to the power of the labouring classes to obtain a greater quantity of food, partly by temporary high wages in manufactures, partly by the increased use of potatoes, partly by increased task-work and the increased employment of women and children, partly by increased parish allowances to families, and partly by the increased relative cheapness of manufactures and foreign commodities."

But the demand for labour, in a great part of England, is peculiarly inconstant. Variations in foreign demand, changes of fashion, not to speak of the great commercial crises which, in the present state of the civilised world, affect many nations at once, but the wealthiest most violently, are continually occurring to such an extent that the market for manufacturing labour is almost always overstocked somewhere, sometimes almost everywhere. The unemployed labourers must be supported, either on their own savings or the charity of others. But suppose that, on the occasion of some one of these crises, the nation were to rouse itself to the effort of getting rid by emigration of some hundreds of thousands of superfluous arms, what would be the consequence? That, at the first returning demand for labour, there would be a deficiency. However rapid reproduction may be, it takes at all events the space of a generation to replace the loss of adult labour. Now the profits of our manufacturers depend mainly on the power of making use of the prosperous moment when demand is brisk, and thus compensating themselves for the interval during which it is slack. This power is secured to them only by the command of machinery and of manual labour. They must have hands ready by them; they must be able to increase the activity of their operations when re-

* Political Economy, p. 235.

quired, and to slacken it again according to the state of the market; or they cannot possibly maintain that pre-eminence in the race of competition on which the wealth of the country is founded. I am not discussing the question, whether or no a state of things which renders the employment of large masses of the people so precarious as this (although more so, perhaps, in appearance than in reality) is politically or morally desirable. But unless we are prepared to face the national revolution which must follow any violent blow to our manufacturing interest, any large abstraction from that part of our population would be a suicidal measure.

But with respect to another great division of our people—our agricultural labourers—it is thought by many that a permanent redundancy has been produced by artificial means; by the bounty on population afforded by our poor laws, as they were at one time administered. That they did afford such a bounty cannot reasonably be doubted. They diverted a portion of the national capital which would otherwise have been used for some other purpose, to the production of necessaries for idle or half-employed paupers, just in the same manner as if government were to tax productive industry in order to raise and feed additional regiments of soldiers. The bounty being withdrawn by the late enactment, the population thus created, so far as it was altogether in excess over the demand for labour, was of course redundant. And no one can doubt that emigration was the true remedy for such redundancy, provided only that the cost of such emigration did not exceed the cost of maintaining them at home until the surplus should become absorbed by some increase of employment. But the experience of a few years has shown us, that this excess, although to a certain extent real, has been greatly exaggerated. Aided, undoubtedly, by favourable circumstances, especially by the sudden demand for labour which our

great
to ha
the c
cases
to e
terms
avai
advan
show
emigr
sums
that p
far fr
it wor
Howe
exten
quenc
good
It is
with
in a
rates,
partic
the p
1821
kept o
the in
1832

* En
althoug
" at on
" him
" or re
" a chil
" conce
" thing
Law C

great public works have occasioned, the balance seems to have redressed itself, and along with the abuses of the old system the apparent redundancy has in most cases nearly disappeared. Parishes have been enabled to effect the emigration of labourers on favourable terms by the assistance of government; but they have availed themselves only to a very small extent of these advantages. The reports of the Poor Law Commissioners show that in seven years, from 1835 to 1842, only 10,000 emigrants were sent out by their assistance, and that the sums authorised by them to be raised or borrowed for that purpose amounted to no more than £60,000.* I am far from thinking that in this respect all is done which it would be desirable for the national welfare to effect. However sceptical we may be as to the results of an extended and general emigration, its beneñcial consequences in particular localities, when accompanied by good management in other respects, are evident enough. It is remarkable how small an amount of it, together with the adoption of good regulations, has been found in a few years to produce a material revolution in the rates, and improvement in the condition of the poor in particular places. In the parish of Ewhurst in Sussex, the population increased from 840 in 1801 to 1220 in 1821; in 1831 it amounted to 1200 only, having been kept down by the emigration of about 100 labourers in the interval. The rates in 1822 had been £3370; in 1832 they had fallen to £1630: this, be it observed, was

* English agricultural paupers generally make bad emigrants at first; although they improve. "Under the influence of the system which "at once confines the labourer to a narrow neighbourhood and relieves "him from the care of providing for his subsistence, he has acquired "or retained, with the moral helplessness, some of the peculiarities of "a child. He is often disgusted to a degree which other classes scarcely "conceive possible by slight difference of diet: and is annoyed by any "thing which appears to him strange and new."—*First Report of Poor Law Commissioners*, p. 158.

before the new act.* There were in the latter year no supernumerary labourers, of which the strongest proof is to be found in the fact, that the rector of the parish having offered small allotments of land to the labourers at a low rate, was able to let three acres only: the offer of nine had been rejected.† Such instances as this certainly appear to indicate that much might have been done before the new enactment, to restore a healthy state of the labour market in many localities by a spirited system of emigration; and, doubtless, there are still similar cases. But on the whole, the infinitely small extent to which parochial emigration has been carried, notwithstanding the present facilities for it, seems to indicate that there cannot be such a need of it as to call on government to take it in hand at the expense of the nation.

But there is another part of our kingdom of which the condition is said to call still more loudly for the relief of extensive and systematic emigration under government assistance. In my lectures on the subject of poor laws for Ireland, I had occasion to dwell at some length on this proposition. I then referred my hearers to the work of Colonel Torrens on the subject, and to the suggestion of the Commission of the Irish Poor Law Inquiry, and exposed, at some length, my reasons for hesitating to agree with those authorities, both as to the results and the practicability of such an expedient. It is impossible, within my present limits, to do more than very briefly to recapitulate my former reasoning.

In Ireland a far more stimulating and pernicious bounty on population, than that afforded by the English poor laws, has been for centuries applied—namely, the sub-

* Report of the Poor Law Commissioners for 1834.

† On the other hand I am informed, that the number of emigrants from the parishes of the Rye Union, of which the population is about 12,000, amounted in the last few years before 1840 to nearly 1000; and that no perceptible effect was produced on the progress of numbers.

division and subletting of land. By far the greatest proportion of the labour, and a very large part of the capital, of that country has thus been diverted from all other employments to that of raising necessities for small cultivators, each obtaining only the lowest quantity on which life can be sustained after payment of his rent. Two-fifths of the people, or nearly 3,000,000 souls, appear to consist of cottiers and their families, cultivating their own small holdings. Besides these, there is a proportion of landless labourers who subsist on wages and have constant employment, and another portion differently estimated by different calculators, but probably amounting to some hundred thousand, who are either destitute—that is, mainly supported by charity, or, at least, unable to support themselves throughout the whole year by their own exertions.

Now, in order to remedy the evils of the cottier system, almost all economists are agreed that it is desirable to introduce that mode of cultivation by combined capital and labour—that is, with larger holdings, greater skill, and fewer hands—with all practicable expedition. But it is evident, from the very nature of such a process, that it must be extremely gradual. Were it possible to remove whole bodies of the existing cultivators at once, it must take time to import capital, and still more to create skill. Suppose, then, that while the importation of capital is as yet in its infancy, a million of cottiers, or one-third of the whole, as Colonel Torrens would propose, were at once transferred to America. What would be the consequence? Merely that one-third of the land would remain uncultivated. That third would eventually be the most barren. The landlords of the more fertile soils, whenever these happened to be depopulated by the emigration, would be able to invite hands from the less fertile by the offer of a slight remission of rent. Things would remain, at the end of the experiment, precisely

where they were before, except that the number of cottiers would be smaller, and their condition a little better. That the natural progress of population would soon bring them back to the former number—there being no sufficient motive to any alteration of habits on their part—is most certain. In no class, perhaps, is the tendency to keep up or augment their number so strong as in that of small cultivators. It is said that, from the Isle of Skye, out of 11,000 inhabitants, 8000 were carried away by emigration in 1755 and a few following years; and yet, that, before the end of the next generation, the number had reached more than its first amount. Ireland, on the supposition which I have just made, would only exhibit the phenomenon of Skye on a larger scale.

With respect to the *destitute*, and to the *landless*, labourers of Ireland, the case is somewhat different. The removal of the former (supposing it possible, and leaving the expense out of the question) would of course leave things as they were, except that industry would be relieved from that tax which it now pays for their maintenance in the shape of charity or poor's rates. As to the *landless but not destitute* labourers, it seems undeniable that the removal of any large number of them must tend to raise the rate of wages in Ireland. With a somewhat higher rate of wages, cottiers would be enticed from the cultivation of their own small holdings to enter the class of labourers for hire in lieu of those thus removed. Thus far it would appear that the country would gain by the process. But here another difficulty presents itself. Although labourers receive but very low wages in Ireland, it does not appear that productive labour is ill-remunerated; that a less share of the produce of labour falls to the labourer than in other countries. The same amount of wages advanced will not, in most employments, secure a greater quantity of work done in Ireland than in England. The Irishman who receives

only one-third of the daily gains of the Englishman, does generally speaking, not more than one-third of the work. Supposing, therefore, that wages were suddenly raised in Ireland without any increase of the productive powers of labour, the capitalist would necessarily be placed at a disadvantage. It is true that the productiveness of labour would eventually be increased; better fed and better paid, the energies of the workman would be augmented: but what is to become of capital in the meantime? On the first rise of wages, it will immediately tend to disappear, and seek employment elsewhere; and the labourers will consequently be driven to underbid each other, and return to their former rate of wages again. *The rise of real wages, in any state of society, must be gradual to be permanent.*

Such are the objections, very briefly stated, which seem to suggest themselves to schemes of wholesale emigration. I have noticed these schemes, partly on account of the favour with which some high authorities have regarded them, partly on account of their being constantly put forward, in popular oratory and publications; among the many other economical nostrums for the grievances of society which are so glibly enumerated by those who have never spent an hour in endeavouring to examine their real worth and applicability. Were we dealing with what is practical only, our attention would have been thrown away. There is no reasonable probability of this country ever submitting—as no other country has ever yet submitted—to the enormous expense which would be required to carry any really great experiment of emigration into effect. And, as I have noticed on a former occasion, the cost of extensive emigration is by no means fairly estimated by merely multiplying the expense now incurred in conveying small parties by the proposed number of emigrants. The expense of shipping, of seamen, of location in the colony,

all these, and probably many other items, must, it would seem, of necessity augment in a greater ratio, in consequence of the greatly augmented demand.*

With its present means, government can do little; but that little may be employed to considerable ends. It has now a certain fund for this purpose, although as yet a small one; namely, that derived from the sale of lands in some of the Australian colonies. The statistics of this part of the subject will be considered elsewhere. Supposing the funds to admit of it, I cannot but think that good might be done in Ireland, and in some parts even of Great Britain, by loans on easy terms to proprietors who are anxious to assist their tenants to emigrate, with a view to what is called in Ireland clearing their estates—a process asso-

* (1861.)—Not many years after this work was first published, the question, how far emigration *en masse* could be practically effected from an old country across the ocean, received a most unexpected solution. The events of 1847 and the following years in Ireland disconcerted far more elaborate calculations and better founded conjectures than can be found in these lectures.

The emigration of 1846 from the United Kingdom was already somewhat greater than that of any previous year. But in 1847 it suddenly doubled. Of 260,000 emigrants of that year, probably 160,000 were Irish: although this amount can only be given, as a conjecture. From 1841 to 1850 inclusive the Irish emigration abroad may be probably estimated at about 1,000,000. But between 1841 and 1851 the population diminished by 1,600,000. And out of these years the first six were probably years of increase. After allowing for this increase, and also, *per contra*, for emigration to England, the residue represents the actual ravages of famine and disease. Nothing similar has occurred in Europe, at least since the decay of the French population at the end of the reign of Louis XIV., and of the German after the Thirty Years' War.

For the following decennium (1851-60) Irish emigration abroad may also be estimated at somewhat above a million. The effects of this farther drain on the progress of population must be matter of conjecture until the next census appears. As to the effects on the social economy of the country, I leave the speculations contained in the text unaltered; but it must be admitted that the theory of Colonel Torrens as to the probable results of a very large removal of the cottier class has been much more nearly justified than I anticipated.

ciated, unfortunately, in our minds with the notion of a cruel and reckless abuse of the rights of property; and yet one most essentially necessary to its prosperity, and which it should be the object both of the owner and the government to render a source of advantage instead of suffering to the poor tenants who are the first affected by it. It has been also proposed of late, that parishes in England should be presented with a certain quantity of waste land in the colonies, to be vested in the guardians of each parish, and used by them as a permanent site for the establishment of persons willing to emigrate from it. But there are various practical objections to a scheme which appears to have captivated some imaginations. It would increase the evil already existing to so great an extent in our colonies, of interposing unsettled lands in the hands of absentee proprietors between settled districts. And the mere location of parish paupers on waste land, as I shall again and again have occasion to show, is not relief. There is no part of our wide colonial empire in which small settlers without capital have a reasonable prospect of immediate success. It is far better for emigrants of this description to begin their course as labourers, and be absorbed gradually into the population.

While we are engaged on this part of our subject, it remains to inquire, very briefly, into the modes which have been proposed to remunerate the mother country for these first expenses of colonization. Mr. Wakefield, in his able pamphlet on colonization (1830), enumerates two different methods, as having been chiefly followed in the course of the experiments which we have made in this science in the last two hundred years. By the first of these, a free passage is provided for emigrants, who on their arrival are indented, as apprenticed labourers, to settlers, who are bound to pay for them a certain remuneration to the government. This is equivalent to

a tax on wages in the colony; and it has been proposed to raise a similar tax by direct levy from the labourers themselves, by attaching a part of their wages. The second is, the exaction of a rent from emigrants located on government land; which, in the first stage of society, amounts to a tax on profits. There appears in theory no objection to either of these modes, provided the tax were not sufficiently heavy to interfere with industry. But both have been found impracticable. In the earlier history of our American possessions, the difficulty of holding indented emigrants to their bonds was so great as to lead to the well known system of kidnapping in England for the plantations, which subsisted up to the American revolution. The attempt to draw a quit-rent from lands, only led to "squatting;" that is, unauthorised occupation; and the exhaustion and abandonment of farms. In fact, these and similar schemes are all too inconsistent with that "*mera libertas*," which seems the great prerogative of early settlements, to produce any beneficial results. A third mode of making colonisation pay for itself, as it is termed, has been within these few years put in practice: it is that of raising a fund for the purpose of emigration, by the sale of lands within the colony. I shall have occasion to recur more than once to this great experiment, both the theory and the results of which will demand our serious attention, when we come to investigate the progress of colonies. But with reference to that part of our subject on which we are now engaged, I can only observe in passing, that to term this scheme a mode of replacing the capital expended by the mother country on emigration is a fallacy. It is merely a mode of repaying government, or the party selling, at the expense of some one else. The greatest proportion of the land is bought in England. By far the greater part of it is bought on speculation, and with English capital; that is, by an advance of English capital,

to be
the c
pure
settle
orde
porti
more
devis
ment
" fina
" can
" fro
" oth
" by

But
speci
than
Whe
of cu
whic
fortu
profit
outca
empi
of he
as va
bran
be cr

to be repaid at some future period by the resources of the colony. The effect of the whole transaction, in nine purchases out of ten, amounts to this—that the English settler, who has to export a certain quantity of capital in order to commence operations, has also to transfer another portion to government by way of price. A fairer, or more unobjectionable, tax on speculation can hardly be devised; but it is a strange misnomer to term it a repayment of the national expenditure. “Unless a plan of finance is in the nature of a commercial undertaking, it cannot give government more than it takes away, either from individuals or from government itself, under some other form. Something cannot be made out of nothing by the mere stroke of a wand.”*

But the capital sunk in well directed emigration is speedily replaced with interest by a far surer process than the ingenuity of financiers or economists can invent. Wherever England plants a colony, she founds a nation of customers. Already, in return for the slight expense which has attended the removal of a few of her less fortunate inhabitants from her shores, she receives the profits of the trade of a vast confederacy, which these outcasts have raised to an equality with the proudest empires of the earth. And the extraordinary progress of her recent colonies justifies us in hoping that empires as vast and wealthy still remain to be founded, and new branches of commerce as extensive and as prosperous to be created.

* Ricardo, p. 317.

NOTE TO LECTURE V.—(1842)

I FIND that some statements in this Lecture have been considered adverse to the promotion of emigration to the colonies. Such certainly was not my intention. But I was anxious to lead my hearers to distinguish between the practical and useful objects of emigration, and those which appear to me visionary.

The principal object of the first description is, that of opening new sources of production, and new outlets for our trade. For this purpose, it would be difficult indeed to overrate the advantage of colonization. But the growth of new branches of trade must be gradual; and a bounty on emigration for such a purpose as this would be, at the best, a very expensive mode of purchasing a distant benefit. 20,000 or 30,000 emigrants are now sent out annually by government or parochial assistance: that number might be increased to a very considerable extent by the judicious employment of colonial funds, without burdening the mother country; and any measures ensuring such a result would be equally beneficial to herself and her colonies.

In the next place, emigration is generally advantageous to the individual who emigrates: it often rescues him from a state of destitution. It not unfrequently relieves overburdened parishes and estates in which the consolidation of farms is going on: it may relieve to a still greater extent overpeopled corners of the empire, such as the western islands: it may possibly (I wish this could be stated with more confidence) relieve the working classes in particular trades and places in times of great pressure. And these individual or local reasons are quite sufficient to induce any reasonable politician or philanthropist to encourage emigration, without thinking it necessary to require proof of national benefits to be obtained by it.

But the popular mode of representing emigration is as a cure for national evils; a remedy for the distress so perpetually recurring in a country dependent on trade and manufactures for the support of one third of its population. And it is against

the sa
to me
tion in
reflect
tion ca
tions b
at acco
sion.
altoget
benefit
relief;
attende

In fa
flected
crimin
increas
out of
might
emigra
numbe
able ag
if it we
rate an
market

Mr.
the pop
annual
by rem
be depo

" Bu
" small
" who
" reckon
" in the
" then,
" assum
" the ag
" depop

* (186
catastroph

the sanguine adoption of such views as these that caution seems to me to be peculiarly requisite. Those who speak of emigration in language such as this, must mean (whether they have reflected on the extent of their own meaning or not) emigration carried to such an amount as to alter the existing proportions between capital and labour. If the project does not aim at accomplishing this, it aims at nothing, and is a mere delusion. Such a project I cannot but regard as chimerical; altogether unwarranted by past experience; of very doubtful benefit at home, and productive at best only of temporary relief; and, if found practicable in its details, certain to be attended with enormous evils in the execution.

In fact, it seems pretty well admitted by all who have reflected on the subject, that to effect any such change by *indiscriminate* emigration, in a kingdom of which the population increases nearly at the rate of 300,000 per annum, is altogether out of the question.* But then it is argued that a great effect might be produced with comparatively little difficulty, by *select* emigration: that is to say, by sending out, annually, a moderate number of persons of both sexes, just arriving at the marriageable age. In this way, it is said, population might be stopped, if it were desirable, from increasing altogether, by a very moderate amount of emigration; and, therefore, relief to the labour market might easily be afforded.

Mr. Wakefield's calculation on the subject is this. He takes the population of Great Britain (1833) at 14,000,000; the annual *marriages* at 105,000, or 1 in 134; and therefore that by removing 210,000 persons per annum, Britain would soon be depopulated.

"But this effect would occur through the removal of a much smaller number. It would occur by the yearly removal of all who in each year should attain the age of puberty. It is reckoned that *the yearly births are to the whole population in the proportion of about 1 to 31*. Taking the yearly births, then, to be 451,612, or, for round numbers, 450,000, and assuming that not above one third of these, or 150,000, reach the age of puberty, it appears that England might soon be depopulated by the yearly abstraction, for some years, of a

* (1861.) Written before the great lesson afforded to the country by the Irish catastrophe of 1847. But the proposition is generally true.

“number of persons not much greater than the number who
 “did actually emigrate last year. But there is a way by which,
 “with a still smaller yearly outlay, England might be depopu-
 “lated : by taking away every year a number of young couples
 “sufficient to reduce the whole number in after years ; so that the
 “whole number of young couples should be in time reduced to
 “one. Supposing that this might be effected, though not so
 “quickly as if all were removed by removing every year half of
 “the young couples who had in that year reached the age of
 “puberty, then might England be depopulated by the yearly
 “removal, for some years, of 75,000 persons,” &c.—*England
 and America.*

Now let us first consider the soundness of this argument with respect to the effect of emigration on the number of the people. I think it must strike every reader at once, that there is evidently some mistake in the first calculation. It is impossible that only 150,000 persons can reach the age of puberty in every year, and yet that 105,000 couple should be married in every year.

But, without examining into the causes of this oversight, let us examine the latter part of the calculation, which is the more practical. Mr. Wak field estimates the births at 1 in 31, and upon this datum assumes that the removal of 75,000 persons per annum would depopulate England, if they were to emigrate at the proper age, and in equal numbers of each sex. Now, both he and other writers who have taken the same view, seem to me, I must confess, to have fallen into the same fallacious reasoning which misled Sir Francis Divernois, and other calculators of the early part of this century, who foretold the decline of the French population from the enormous drafts which 20 years of war made on those who, in every year, attained the marriageable age ; drafts far greater than any which the boldest scheme of emigration could effect. *They have assumed the ratio of births to the population, of an age to have children, as something invariable.* The fact is, that if a certain number of marriageable couples were removed in every year, the ratio of births to the remaining population, of an age to have children, would immediately increase.

Suppose a gross population of 20,000,000, and births at the rate of 1 in 30 per annum. About two fifths, or 8,000,000,

may be
 births
 pose
 popul
 same,
 check
 from
 numbe
 tinue
 tional
 vigour
 would
 riages,
 might
 rate of
 exceed
 ordinan
 In the
 at 1 in
 anticip
 prevail
 the rise
 culation
 would
 as it w
 fertile

But
 the ren
 per an
 would
 check t
 present
 of youn
 of othe
 the mar
 effect i
 persons
 Mr. W
 effect n
 who wo

may be considered as persons of an age to have children. The births, compared with these are as 1 in 12 per annum. Suppose 1,000,000 of these removed: if the ratio of births to the population of an age to have children were to continue the same, of course the increase of population would receive a check; the ratio of births to the whole population would fall from 1 in 30 to nearly 1 in 34. But the ratio of births to the number of persons, of an age to have children, would *not* continue the same if the removal were effected without a proportional loss of capital. The removal of so many persons in the vigour of life, the amount of employment remaining the same, would raise the rate of wages, increase the number of marriages, and very speedily the number of births. The 7,000,000 might easily produce as many as 8,000,000 did before. The rate of both marriages and births might rise to a proportion far exceeding any thing that economists, judging merely from the ordinary circumstances of English society, could anticipate. In the State of Guanaxuato, in Mexico, marriages are estimated at 1 in 50 or 60, and births at 1 in 16, per annum. Without anticipating that such extraordinary proportions as these might prevail in England, it would, at all events, be easy to show that the rise would be so great as to disconcert altogether the calculations of Mr. Wakefield and his followers. A new bounty would be afforded to population, precisely in the same manner as it would be afforded by the sudden addition of a large and fertile tract to the surface of Britain.

But let us admit Mr. Wakefield's reasoning, and suppose that the removal of 50,000 or 70,000 persons, of a particular age, per annum, might prevent the increase of population: what would be the results? It is no advantage, in the abstract, to check the increase of population. What we seek to attain is *present* relief for the labour market. How would the removal of young couples effect this, more than the removal of people of other ages? The removal of 1000 persons just arrived at the marriageable age produces, in the first instance, no greater effect in the labour market than the removal of any 1000 other persons of an age to obtain employment. All that follows from Mr. Wakefield's supposition is, that 20 years hence another effect may begin to be perceptible, in the diminished number who would then attain the age of labour. But is it really pro-

posed, that government should legislate for present necessities, with a view to the condition of the labour market 20 years hence? Those who maintain such a proposition ought at least to state the grounds for it, and not to propose select emigration, as it is called, as a remedy for existing evils, which it obviously would not touch at all.

Under a well-regulated system of emigration, young persons, in equal numbers of both sexes, and unencumbered with many children, will always be preferred; less for the sake of the mother country than of the colony, or rather of the emigrants themselves, since such emigrants are rarely able at the outset to burden themselves with the support of great numbers of useless hands. But these are precisely the people whom it is most difficult to induce to emigrate. Nor is it desirable that it should be otherwise. We are not yet come to such a condition that the young, full of strength and hope, and with all the pleasures of an English home in prospect, should be driven to seek an eleemosynary passage to some distant region, as the greatest boon that can be offered them.

"The object of the promoters of this scheme," says Lord John Russell, speaking of a recent project for wholesale emigration, "is—to relieve the mother country of those whose labour is the least profitable, and who, at present, form the greatest burden on its resources. But the object of the colonies is naturally of a totally different nature. Their object is to obtain, not the worst, but the best, class of labourers. They want neither the old nor the very young,—but those who are so capable of working as to be sure of employment even in this country. Now, from the papers that have been laid upon the table of the house, it does not appear that there is any disposition on the part of good and efficient labourers to emigrate. There is no doubt that labourers who are burdened with large families, and those who have arrived at an age when much exertion cannot be expected from them, and who in this country find it difficult, from these causes, to obtain a livelihood, are willing enough to emigrate; but these are the very classes that the colonists do not want; the very classes whom they regard as an evil and an injury, whenever they are thrust upon them. If, on the other hand, it be said, 'We will confine ourselves to those young couples who are perfectly able to work, and to earn their subsistence in this

LECT.

" cou
" not
" enal
" pose
" and,
" that
" stran
" it is
" of th
" the c

Ret

N.B. P
native ori
who sailed
native ori
furnished

Year.

1854
1855
1856
1857
1858
1859

" 'country,' then it will be found (and I must say that I am not sorry that this is so) that the class of persons who are enabled to obtain sufficient employment at home are not disposed to separate themselves from their relatives and friends; and, consequently, in almost every instance, decline the boon that is offered to them in the shape of free passage to a strange and distant land. Therefore, if this bridge were made, it is not to be supposed that there would be at once a rush of the better and only valuable class of labourers over it to the colonies."—*Mirror of Parliament*, 1840, p. 3522.

APPENDIX I.

Return of the Emigration from the United Kingdom, from 1841 to 1859.

Year.	England.	Scotland.	Ireland.	Total.
1841	72,104	14,060	32,428	118,592
1842	74,683	13,108	40,553	128,344
1843	36,255	7,931	13,026	57,212
1844	50,257	4,504	15,925	70,686
1845	65,524	4,272	23,705	93,501
1846	87,611	3,427	38,813	129,851
1847	153,898	8,616	95,766	258,270
1848	176,883	11,505	59,701	248,089
1849	212,124	17,127	70,247	299,498
1850	211,612	15,154	51,083	280,849
1851	254,970	18,646	62,350	335,966
1852	306,279	21,044	41,441	368,764
1853	279,601	16,503	33,833	329,937

N.B. Previous to 1854, the Records in the Commissioners' Office do not show the native origin of the Emigrants. The above figures merely represent the numbers who sailed from each of the three Kingdoms. The following Table exhibits the native origin of the Emigrants so far as can be ascertained from the Passenger Lists furnished by the Custom House authorities.

Year.	English.	Scotch.	Irish.	Foreigners.	Not distinguished.	Total.
1854	90,966	25,872	150,209	37,704	18,678	323,429
1855	57,132	14,037	78,854	10,554	16,230	176,807
1856	64,527	12,033	71,724	9,474	18,796	176,554
1857	78,560	16,253	86,238	12,624	19,200	212,875
1858	39,971	11,815	43,281	4,560	14,345	113,972
1859	33,930	10,182	52,981	4,442	18,897	120,432

No. II.

Emigrants from the United Kingdom, in periods.

	To the British North American Colonies.	To the United States.	To Australia and New Zealand.
From 1815 to 1824 inc.	119,535	69,636	No returns.
1825 to 1834	283,446	208,495	18,604
1834 to 1840	129,211	189,774	55,685
1841 to 1845	170,532	239,394	47,696
1846 to 1850	258,312	855,154	79,428
1851 to 1855	171,727	1,038,982	306,360
1856 to 1859	53,772	368,761	176,140

Total Emigration from the United Kingdom to all parts of the World, 1815 to 1859 inclusive, 4,917,598.

No. III.

Emigration from Germany, from 1848 to 1857.

1848	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	81,895
1849	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	89,102
1850	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	82,404
1851	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	112,547
1852	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	162,301
1853	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	162,568
1854	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	203,537
1855	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	84,761
1856	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	88,983
1857	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	118,990
Total	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	1,187,088

In the same period, 1848-57, the emigration from the United Kingdom amounted to 2,742,668. In proportion to population, this would amount to about three times that from Germany. But it must be remembered that nearly half Germany (Austria, Bavaria, &c.) is supposed to furnish hardly any emigrants at all. From some of the Rhine Provinces, the emigration has been so large as to have produced (it is thought) an actual decrease of the population. Electoral Hesse had 736,392 inhabitants in 1855; 726,739 at the end of 1858. Dr. Wappäus (Deutsche Auswanderung) already estimated the German population of the United States in 1846 at 1,500,000, probably too high.

EFFECTS
PR

THE m
haps o
scient
amount
of cap
leave
condit
accum
parati
much
count
which
carryi
sively
receiv
or its
Wales
bound
gold a
the m
the pr
fore c
witho
her h
which
theref
Let

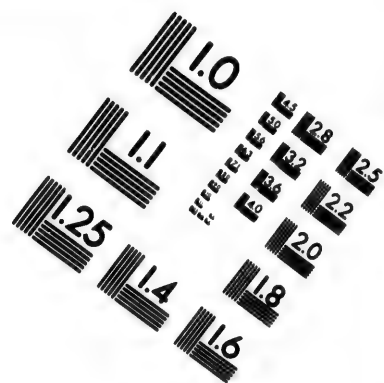
LECTURE VI.

EFFECTS OF THE EXPORTATION OF CAPITAL, WHICH TAKES PLACE IN THE
PROCESS OF COLONIZATION, ON THE WEALTH OF THE MOTHER COUNTRY.

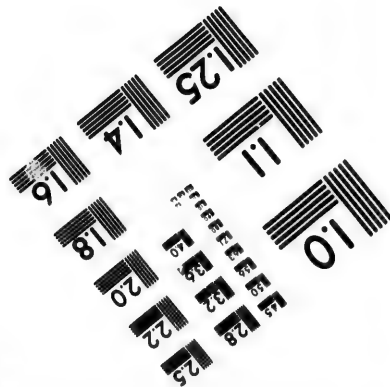
THE next subject which requires our attention is not perhaps of much practical importance, but interesting to the scientific inquirer, namely: the effects produced upon the amount and distribution of wealth at home by that export of capital which takes place in colonization. Few families leave the shores of their native country in so destitute a condition as to carry along with them no portion of the accumulated wealth of that country: many are in comparatively easy circumstances, and anxious to realise as much of their property as they can readily turn to account, in order to assist their industry in the new region which they are about to inhabit. This they partly do by carrying away with them valuable articles, more extensively by means of credit, that is, by reserving a title to receive on demand a certain quantity of English produce or its equivalent. A colonist in Canada or New South Wales draws a bill on England for 100*l.*; England is bound to send out that amount in gold and silver; but gold and silver are only procurable by England through the medium of her own exportable commodities, that is, the produce of her manufactures. The transaction therefore comes in effect to this,—that England has to export, without return, a hundred pounds' worth of her cottons, her hardware, or whatever may be the commodities for which she can command a market. So much capital, therefore, is taken out of the country by the transaction.

Let us now trace the result, supposing the drawer to





6"



Photographic Sciences Corporation

**23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503**



belong to what is commonly called the productive class in society. The small farmer or manufacturer has a stock consisting of accumulated savings, on which he trades, and by which he sets in motion a certain quantity of productive labour. He converts that stock into credit for the purpose of emigration, that is, he carries with him the power of giving orders, by means of which the equivalent of that stock in gold and silver, that is, in British manufactures, may be transferred at such times and in such portions as may suit him, to the spot of his new residence. But the same result follows equally, although not so directly, if the emigrant belong to what is commonly called the class of consumers. Suppose his fortune to be invested in government funds; he possesses, under the guarantee of the nation, a right to demand a certain quantity of the capital of the country—of that stock which, while it remains in the hands of the farmer and the manufacturer, serves to bring into existence the annual income of the country,—and receives by way of interest a fixed portion of that annual income. So long as he remains in the country, he spends his portion unproductively, as it is termed. Let us attend for a moment to the meaning of the phrase. A portion of the annual produce of the country is made over to the fund-holder in right of his claim on government, under the form of a sum of money. As has been stated before, money, in every country, may be fairly taken to represent the exportable commodities of that country by which alone money can be procured. Let us therefore regard the income of the fund-holder simply as so many bales of cotton. He exchanges a portion of that cotton for English agricultural produce, on which he feeds; gives some, in wages, to members of the English labouring class as menial servants; probably gives a portion, as rent, to the owner of the spot on which he resides; another portion, and perhaps by far the largest, he exchanges for articles

of
che
him
by
thes
we
mov
tinu
by
inco
for
whe
mod
duce
such
raise
The
lose
to p
whic
wage
nary
forei
in E
abro
whic
will
it at
expe
ditie
cally
const
Bu
porti
rent
this,

of luxury and convenience, which he procures at the cheapest market to which our fiscal regulations will allow him to go, regardless whether they have been produced by the Englishman or the foreigner. He procures all these by exchanging for them the bales of cotton of which we have supposed his income to consist. Now if, in removing to a foreign country or a colony, he were to continue to draw only his annual income, the loss sustained by England would merely amount to that portion of the income which, residing at home, he would have exchanged for labour or commodities produced at home, and which, when he resides abroad, is exchanged for labour or commodities produced abroad. He will consume food produced abroad instead of food produced at home; I mean such articles of food as it is cheaper in every country to raise than to import, leaving duties out of the question. The owner of the house which he rented in England will lose his rent, the amount of which the emigrant will have to pay to a foreign landlord. A certain amount of goods, which would have been given to English servants as wages, or to English workmen who serve to supply ordinary wants — carpenters, masons, &c. — will be given to foreigners. *The whole quantity of goods which he had while in England exchanged for these various services, will go abroad in the first instance.* That portion of his cotton which he exchanges for articles of luxury and convenience, will be used just as it was before, whether he consumes it at London, Paris, or Sydney, except so far only as the expense of carriage may affect the price of a few commodities, rendering the home made article, though intrinsically dearer than the foreign one, yet cheaper to the home consumer.

But how would the English landlord have spent that portion of the goods which he would have received as rent if the emigrant had remained at home? To answer this, we must go again through the analysis which has

been given of the consumption of the emigrant himself. So again of the servants, the retail dealers, the masons, plasterers, and carpenters. Each of them expends that portion of his customer's goods which he receives, in buying with them necessaries and comforts at the cheapest market. Whether they are Englishmen or Frenchmen, they will all alike, if exchequer laws allow them, spend a portion in English manufactures; a portion in agricultural produce, grown abroad or grown at home, as it comes cheapest; a portion in rewarding the services of other labourers, who again will expend their portion according to the same analysis. Therefore, in all cases, the encouragement given to the productive industry of any country by the expenditure of an income at home, will be found, on examination, to exist only in those few instances in which the difference of cost by reason of carriage induces the buyer to resort to the home instead of the foreign market. But the effect of taxes on goods imported from foreign countries will modify these results to a certain extent, and render absenteeism a little more injurious.

This I believe to be the true solution of that puzzling question concerning the effects of absenteeism which exercised the ingenuity of so many writers, and respecting which the disciples of the school of Smith and Ricardo have been accused of venting so much paradox and absurdity. When the question is asked, Whether a country loses by the absenteeism of a landed proprietor or fixed annuitant? I apprehend that it will be impossible to answer the question, unless the disputants are agreed upon the meaning of the word "loss." I place out of the argument all the effects of taxation, whether prohibitive or merely for the purpose of revenue, in order not to complicate the question. Suppose, then (all taxation apart), that all the gentry of England—or of any district of England—were to emigrate. If they, and the whole number

of servants and workmen of different classes, and retail dealers, and professional men, who must emigrate along with them or lose their custom here, were to resort abroad to the same markets respectively for almost all their articles of consumption, to which they would have resorted if they had continued to live at home (and by following out the analysis which I have briefly indicated, you will find that the course of trade would eventually compel them to do so, were it not for international restrictions), there would be very nearly the same quantity of capital productively employed, and the same quantity of annual produce as before. But if inhabitants dwelling and consuming their wealth in any country or district are themselves to be regarded as a portion of its substance, then the district would be so much the poorer. The enjoyment of riches, as well as their production, forms part of the national well-being. If Hyde Park were to be deserted by all its splendid array of equipages, it would hardly be a misnomer to say that the wealth of London was diminished. And yet, so far as productive industry is concerned, if a carriage is built in Long Acre, it matters nothing whether its owner display it in Hyde Park, or in the Bois de Boulogne, or on the Esplanade at Calcutta.*

But in considering this question, we are digressing from the subject before us; for, in point of fact, men do not emigrate to colonies in order to subsist there upon their income derived from capital in England. They carry their capital along with them. The fund-holder converts his claim on the state into ready money for exportation; and, in doing so, he does, in effect, subtract a portion of the capital stock of the country, just in the same way as the emigrant farmer or tradesman, whose capital was employed in production. For although he

* See Malthus's Political Economy, book ii. chap. 1. sec. 6.

(the fund-holder) did not employ his capital productively, it was, in point of fact, so employed by some one else to whom he had lent it, and from whom he must now withdraw it.

The question therefore is, Whether every subtraction from the fund for the maintenance of labour is necessarily injurious to the well-being of society?

The argument on the affirmative side seems to be fairly stated by Colonel Torrens*, although that writer embraces the contrary view:—

“ The power and wealth of every country is in proportion to the number of its people, and to the amount of the capital which affords them employment. When labour and capital are abstracted, for the purpose of establishing a new colony, the aggregate power and wealth of the mother country must be diminished in the same degree in which the prosperity of the new settlement is advanced; while the condition of the reduced population remaining in the mother country, instead of being improved, may be impaired. The well-being of the people, the amount of real wages which they can earn, depends upon the proportion between labour and capital. If, in the establishment of new colonies, we subtract labour and capital in equal proportions, the labourers who remain in the mother country will receive exactly the same wages as before. And if, as is most probable, the first establishment of a new colony should cause capital to be withdrawn in a greater proportion than labour, then, in the mother country, wages would not even remain stationary, but would be actually reduced. Colonisation, while it must, as a strictly necessary consequence, diminish the aggregate power and wealth of the parent state, may, as a highly probable consequence, reduce the demand for

* Colonisation of South Australia, part ii.

“labour in a greater proportion than it reduces the supply; and thus deteriorate, instead of improving, the condition of the industrious classes remaining in the mother country.”

Thus far Colonel Torrens, stating, as I have said, the argument to which he afterwards replies. It is obvious that this argument rests entirely on the position that there can be no redundancy of capital at any time in any country, and no general glut of commodities; a position, as some of my hearers may be aware, which is much debated among economists, and which has given rise to some of the profoundest reasonings in the science.

It was the opinion of Adam Smith, that the fall of profits which generally takes place in the progress of society, and as countries increase in wealth and civilisation, was a consequence of the accumulation of capital, and of its competition in all the different trades and businesses carried on in the same community. This opinion was controverted by Mr. Ricardo and his followers. According to Ricardo, no permanent lowering of profits can take place, except through some cause which permanently raises wages. Using the words “lower” and “raise” as he always uses them, that is, in a relative sense, this is obvious enough. If the whole produce of industry be divided between profits and wages, nothing can lower the one without in the same proportion raising the other. And he denies that any accumulation of capital can produce this effect, except in certain cases which he afterwards mentions.* “If the funds for the maintenance of labour were doubled, trebled, or quadrupled, there would not long be any difficulty in procuring the requisite number of hands to be employed by those funds.... Demand is only limited by production. No man produces but with a view to consume or sell; and he never

* Principles of Political Economy.

“ sells but with an intention to purchase some other commodity, which may be immediately useful to him, or which may contribute to future production. By producing, then, he necessarily becomes either the consumer of his own goods, or the purchaser and consumer of the goods of some other person. It is not to be supposed that he should, for any length of time, be ill-informed of the commodities which he can most advantageously produce, to attain the object which he has in view, namely, the possession of other goods; and therefore it is not probable that he will continually produce a commodity for which there is no demand. There cannot then be accumulated in a country any amount of capital which cannot be employed productively, until wages rise so high in consequence of the rise of necessaries, and so little consequently remains for the profits of stock, that the motive for accumulation ceases.”

In other words, as Mr. Ricardo's principle has been briefly expressed, the increase of capital is, in itself, sufficient to increase the field of employment, and the demand for labour. And it obviously follows, that competition between capitalists, which Adam Smith considered as the chief cause of a low rate of profits, can have no effect in lowering profits at all. It cannot in any way affect the productiveness of industry. In the words of Mr. McCulloch*, “ All that competition can do, and all that it ever does, is to reduce the profit obtained in different businesses and employments to the same common level, to prevent particular individuals realising greater or lesser profits than their neighbours. Farther than this, competition cannot go. The common and average rate of profit depends not on it, but on the excess of the produce obtained by employing capital,

* Note to A. Smith's “Wealth of Nations,” p. 477.

" after it is replaced along with every contingent expense.
" Competition cannot affect the productiveness of industry:
" neither can it, speaking generally, affect the rate of
" wages; for, such as the ordinary demand for labour is,
" such will be its supply, and it has no influence over
" taxation. It is plain, therefore, that it has nothing to
" do with the determination of the common and average
" rate of profit. It prevents individuals from getting
" more or less than this common rate; but it has no
" farther effect."

It might, perhaps, not be difficult to reconcile these conflicting authorities, were it not for the opposite practical consequences which have been deduced from their doctrines. Let it be conceded, upon Mr. Ricardo's principle, that no other cause being given for the lowering of profits and raising of wages, mere competition among the capitalists cannot have that effect. But the question is, whether under the actual circumstances of society, there being always a natural limit, close at hand, to the employment of capital at that rate of profit which now prevails, competition has not the effect of forcing capital to pass that limit, and inducing its possessor to be content with a continually lower and lower rate of profit, until the boundary is reached at which, in Mr. Ricardo's language, " so little is left for the profits of stock, that the motive for accumulation altogether ceases."

Now, in every country raising raw produce, the limit in question to the employment of capital at the existing rate of profit is, as Mr. Ricardo himself has most conclusively shown, the extent of the worst soil at present in cultivation. Let us, therefore, suppose that the increase of population has so far increased the value of raw produce, that is to say, its exchangeable value as compared with other commodities, that the same amount of value will be obtained by the capitalist, by applying

his capital to a fresh and inferior soil, which he now obtains from the better. This will, perhaps, be more clearly explained by an instance:—

Let the capital of a farmer amount to 100*l.*, with which he raises 55 quarters of wheat, at 40*s.* a quarter. The total return is 110*l.*; of this let 80*l.*, or the equivalent of 40 quarters, have been spent in wages, 15 quarters remain to the capitalist. Let 10 quarters, or 20*l.* replace capital expended in other ways; then 10*l.* equal to 5 quarters, or 10 per cent. on the capital advanced, is left as net profit. Rent is left for the present out of the question. Now, suppose the price of wheat to rise to 42*s.* the quarter. Let the next quality of land be such, that, to produce the same quantity of wheat, with the same advance of capital, will require the expenditure of an additional quarter of wheat in wages to additional labourers. The labourers now obtain 41 quarters, which, at the price of 42*s.* per quarter, amount to 86*l.* 2*s.* Fourteen quarters only are left to the capitalist: price 29*l.* 8*s.* Thus, supposing the cost of replacing stock to be the same as before, or 20*l.*, there remains 9*l.* 8*s.*, or within a fraction of 10 per cent. as profits. But 9*l.* 8*s.*, at 42*s.* a quarter, represents only 4 quarters and a little more than four-sevenths of a quarter. Thus, by the supposition, the *rate* of profit remains the same, or 10 per cent., although the *value* both of capital and profit, as estimated in corn, is diminished.

In order to simplify the calculation, I have supposed the rate of wages to remain unaltered. It is, however, the more probable supposition, under the circumstances stated, that it would fall. The same increase of population, which raises the price of corn, so as to occasion the resort to inferior soil, would be accompanied by competition among labourers for employment. Out of the diminished return to industry, they would obtain a di-

minished share. As, therefore, wages would be less than heretofore, we may suppose that the capitalist would find it possible to obtain the same rate of profit by the cultivation of such soil at a somewhat less increase of price than that which I have supposed; say 41s. instead of 42s.

But by what means is the capitalist enabled to extend his business, and bring fresh soil under cultivation? By the employment of capital previously idle; for, by the supposition, it could not have been employed at a less rate of profit than 10 per cent. Whence does he obtain that capital? By accumulation: by savings out of former profits. Suppose the capitalist, on the rise of the price of corn, were to refrain from cultivating fresh soil, and allow his savings to remain idle: what must be the consequence? Necessarily, a rise of profits. He would obtain, say 11, instead of 10, per cent. for his investment, wages falling, by reason of the supposed increase of population, or even remaining the same. What then induces him to undertake that cultivation? The desire to employ a larger amount of capital, although at a lower rate of profit. It is better for him to employ 200% at 10 per cent., than to employ 100% at 11 per cent., and spend 100% unproductively. But precisely the same motive will operate to induce him to employ his accumulations, even although instead of yielding, as in the example already adduced, the same rate of profit as heretofore, they should produce him a lower rate. Suppose the capitalist to have accumulated savings lying idle in his hands; the existing rate of profit is 10 per cent., but all the soil which will yield such a profit is occupied; it is practicable to obtain 9 per cent. by the cultivation of fresh soil; the very same motive which operated in the former case will operate in this: as soon as the capitalist feels it better to employ a larger capital at a smaller rate, than a smaller at a higher rate, he will do so; and consequently, by the necessary force of com-

petition, will bring down the average rate of profit in the cultivation of the soil to that amount with which he himself chooses to be satisfied.

This is one mode in which competition operates to lower profits. It does so, because industry is necessarily less and less productive, as population and wealth advance (temporary exceptions, arising out of improvements in productive industry, left out of the question); and because the tendency of men in a prosperous state of society, to accumulate and to employ their capital, is continually driving them to extend their business, although new undertakings must be carried on with less profit. It is this cause which produces that low rate of profit which all observers have remarked as characterizing communities far advanced in opulence, and which renders a continual lowering of profits compatible with a continued advance in national industry and activity, up to a certain point; that is, up to the point at which accumulation ceases to be profitable from the diminished return—a point which may be practically unattainable.

It is scarcely necessary to remind you, that the first cause, namely, the limited extent of productive soil, operates not only on the profits of capital used in agricultural production, but on the profits of all capital whatever. Profits cannot fall in one branch of industry, without the occurrence of a corresponding fall in all other branches, for no one will continue to be content with a lower rate of profit if he can obtain a higher. And thus it follows as a necessary consequence, that the increase of capital is not in itself sufficient to increase the field for its employment and the demand for labour. If the limit has been already reached at which that capital can be profitably employed, any further saving out of its returns must be spent unproductively or left idle.

But if these propositions, plain and elementary as they

app
ben
cap
arri
at v
cum
ther
the
or i
duce
cons
coun
fall
cont
is ig
indu
ing
creas
us th
of ca
the e

It
here
food.
inferi
deriv
ciple
mere

Su
remai
pose
branc
there
vestm
a bal
for te

appear, are once admitted, the question respecting the beneficial or mischievous nature of the exportation of capital seems to be answered. Suppose that society has arrived exactly at the point just now supposed; namely, at which the capitalist will be tempted to employ his accumulations at a reduced rate of profit, rather than allow them to remain idle. If at this moment another field for the employment of labour present itself—if in Australia or in Canada he can realize remuneration sufficient to induce him to remove it there—it is obvious that while he consults his own advantage by so removing it, the mother country is benefited by the warding off, for a time, of that fall in the rate of profit which must have ensued had he contented himself with employing it at home. And who is ignorant that this is the point towards which English industry is continually gravitating; that notwithstanding all that energy and ingenuity can do towards increasing the productiveness of labour, we have before us the prospect of a continually increasing accumulation of capital, with a continually diminishing rate of profit in the employment of it?

It is answered, however, that the result to which I here advert cannot follow in a country freely importing food. Competition cannot then drive capital to the inferior soils, because the supplies required can be derived from abroad. Here then, it is said, the principle of Mr. Ricardo applies; and it is impossible that mere competition can lower the rate of profit.

Supposing the proportion of capital and labour to remain unaltered, this may be the case. Let us suppose capital to have accumulated in any particular branch of trade supplying a foreign market, so that there is some of it unemployed and seeking for investment, say in the cotton trade. Let us suppose that a bale of cotton, of a given size, will now exchange for ten hogsheads of French wine; that out of these

one hogshhead goes to the capitalist, nine to pay wages; that the rate of profit (leaving for the present the replacing of capital out of the question) is 10 per cent. The owner of the accumulated capital must be content with a less return, if he seek to employ his additional capital in the same business; he must be content, that is, to obtain less wine for his cotton. Suppose this competition carried to such an excess that the cotton exported exchanges only against half the quantity of wine which it did before; or, in other words, its price falls to one-half its former amount in the French market, and the return is only five hogshheads for the bale of cotton which formerly sold for ten. But if the number of labourers has, at the same time, increased in such a proportion that their services can be commanded for one-half the wages which they cost before, then the *rate* of profit will remain unaltered. The capitalist now only gets half a hogshhead in lieu of a whole one; the labourers, four and a half in lieu of nine; but their respective proportions of the whole return are the same.

Now it admits of easy proof, that if the competition of capitalists could produce such an effect in a single branch of industry, supposing that to be the only one in which the community was engaged, it would produce the same in all its branches of industry taken collectively. The result would be, that English labour and skill would command less return in the foreign market: they would produce less exchangeable value: the mass of commodities, the amount of the comforts and conveniences of life enjoyed in England, would diminish; but the rate of profit would not fall. If the progress of population caused the competition among labourers to be greater than that among capitalists, it might even rise. Whether such a state of things as I have here described is probable, is another matter; but I cannot see that its theoretical possibility can be contested.

But
talist
man
a low
of co
must
the s
keep
to th
of pr
for 9
have
ing a
have
siders
arrea
capita
regar
pared
"hav
the q
admit
An
for w
given
articl
case,
openi
in ex
of En
profit
indust
Thi
guage
"In a
"imp

But let us put another case, and suppose that the capitalist who wishes to employ his savings in the cotton manufacture, does not find labourers willing to accept of a lower amount of wages. Suppose that, for every bale of cotton exported from England, nine hogsheads of wine must go to the labourers, because, in the existing state of the supply of labour, the competition among capitalists keeps wages up to that point. There remains no resource to the capitalist but to be content with a lower rate of profit. He may, for instance, sell his bale of cotton for $9\frac{1}{2}$ hogsheads instead of 10; in which case profits will have fallen from 10 per cent. to 8 per cent. This reasoning appears equally incontrovertible. Mr. Ricardo, as we have seen, regards the supposition as nugatory; he considers that the supply of labour could never be much in arrear of the increase of the funds for the employment of capital. Mr. Malthus differs from him so widely, that he regards the abundance or scantiness of capital, as compared with the labour which it employs, as a cause "having a powerful influence on profits." But however the question of fact may stand, thus much must be admitted at least in theory.

And a most important practical consequence follows; for whether the effect of increased competition, under given circumstances, be to lower the price of exported articles, or to lower the rate of profits, it must, in either case, be advantageous to relieve that competition by opening new fields of employment for the capital thus in excess. Whether its abstraction prevents the value of English products abroad from falling, or the rate of profits from falling, or both, it must be beneficial to industry.

This is the view expressed, in somewhat different language, by Colonel Torrens, in the work already cited. "In a manufacturing and commercial country," he says, "importing raw produce, the field of employment, and

“ the demand for labour, cannot be determined by the
 “ amount of capital ready to be invested in manufactures
 “ and commerce. In a country thus circumstanced, em-
 “ ployment and wages will depend not so much upon the
 “ amount of commercial and manufacturing capital, as
 “ upon the extent of the foreign market. If the foreign
 “ market does not extend, no increase of manufacturing
 “ capital can cause a beneficial increase of production, or
 “ a permanent advance of wages. Indeed, an increase of
 “ manufacturing and commercial capital, unaccompanied
 “ by a proportionate extension of the foreign market, in-
 “ stead of being beneficial, might have a necessary ten-
 “ dency to lower the profits of trade, and to reduce the
 “ wages of labour.”*

“ It is a fact, established by experience and universally
 “ admitted, that, in an industrious country, savings may
 “ be made from incomes, and that capital may be in-
 “ creased ; and it is also a fact, established by experience
 “ and universally admitted, that, in countries in different
 “ states of improvement, capital may increase in different
 “ ratios. When, in England, the capital employed in
 “ supplying cotton fabrics for the foreign market increases
 “ faster than the capital employed in foreign countries in
 “ raising the raw materials, by the expenditure of which
 “ cotton fabrics are prepared, then, as I have already
 “ stated, and as experience has too abundantly proved,
 “ the value of cotton fabrics, in relation to the elementary
 “ cost of production, will decline ; and, in the cotton
 “ trade, wages, or profits, or both must come down.
 “ Now causes similar to those which produce these effects
 “ in the cotton trade may at the same time be producing
 “ similar effects in the silk trade, the woollen trade, and
 “ all the other branches of industry in which goods are
 “ made for foreign markets. If the capital employed in
 “ preparing cotton goods for foreign markets increases

* Colonization of South Australia, p. 232.

"faster than the capital employed in foreign countries in raising the materials of cotton goods, the capital employed in preparing woollen goods may, at the same time, be increasing faster than the capital employed in the growing of foreign materials. The like may occur in all other trades. In all, manufacturing capital may increase faster than the foreign capital, which raises the materials of manufacture; and thus, in all the departments of industry supplying goods to the foreign markets, there may be contemporaneous overtrading, or a contemporaneous 'home competition,' occasioning a general fall of prices, of profits and wages, want of employment, and distress."*

In these reasonings I think we shall concur; and if this be so, then the abstraction of capital from productive industry may, under certain circumstances and for a certain time, be the most effectual mode of preventing a reduction of profit, and stimulating further accumulation. However paradoxical the doctrine may at first sight appear, it cannot but be thought that a change from saving to spending—from productive to unproductive expenditure—may sometimes operate to relieve national industry from temporary plethora or oppression. How far this can be the case, is one of the most difficult problems in political economy, and one of which, no doubt, no purely scientific solution can be given. Mr. Malthus has made this observation with respect to the enormous expenditure of British capital during the revolutionary war. † "One of the strongest instances," he says, "of the truth of this remark, and a further proof of a singular resemblance in the laws that regulate the increase of population and of capital, is to be found in the rapidity with which the loss of capital is recovered during a war

* Colonization of South Australia, pp. 242, 243.

† Political Economy, p. 329.

“which does not interrupt commerce. The loans to
 “government convert capital into revenue, and increase
 “demand at the same time that they at first diminish the
 “means of supply. The necessary consequence must be
 “an increase of profits. This naturally increases both
 “the power and the reward of accumulation; and if
 “only the same habits of saving prevail among the capi-
 “talists as before, the recovery of the lost stock must be
 “rapid, just for the same kind of reason that the recovery
 “of population is so rapid after some great mortality.”
 The analogy in this passage may be rather rhetorical than
 accurate; but the reasoning, I must confess, appears to me
 conclusive. The gross produce of the taxes, during
 twenty years of the war, exceeded 1300 millions; 600
 additional millions were added to the funded debt.
 To take a single item of that expenditure, which may
 bring its character more distinctly before our eyes, the
 expenses incurred by this country, on account of the
 armies in the Peninsula, in 1812 and 1813, amounted to
 31,767,000*l.*; of which 3,284,000*l.* was exported in
 bullion. If it were true, as some economists seem to
 imagine, that capital finds or makes the field for its own
 employment, then any abstraction of it from productive
 industry must diminish the resources of a country; and
 in that case it is inconceivable in what manner these pro-
 digious drains of her lifeblood could have been endured
 by the nation, not only without sinking under them, but
 with scarcely the slightest appearance of a diminution of
 her vital circulation and energy.

I have endeavoured, perhaps not very successfully,
 to give a succinct view of this important question; a
 question touching on some of the most recondite pro-
 vinces of economical inquiry, especially on the much
 debated argument respecting the possibility of a general
 glut or over-production. It is, however, as I have said,
 of little practical importance; and that for two reasons:

in
 pen
 on
 in p
 tion
 cum
 the
 min
 dev
 insi
 mos
 can
 her
 scho
 wer
 capi
 man
 reso
 fresh
 mor
 capi
 datic
 full
 of t
 Ame
 whic
 the

No
 ject
 emig
 Dé
 14,86
 franc
 in go
 chole
 to Ca

in the first place, when we reflect on the enormous expenditure which has been borne by this country in war—on the profuse manner in which her treasures are lavished in peace on objects of national interest—on the vast portions of her annual revenue which, instead of being accumulated to form fresh capital, are every year spent on the purposes of private luxury and magnificence—the minute fractions of her wealth which are, or can be, devoted to such an object as colonization, sink into utter insignificance in the sum of her transactions. The utmost that she ever has done, or in all probability ever can do, in this way, would have no perceptible effect on her prosperity, even if the arguments of the Ricardo school of economists, to which I have already adverted, were true to their fullest extent. In the next place, the capital spent on colonization by a country exporting manufactures, is not wasted unproductively, or lost to the resources of the parent state. It is spent in founding a fresh market for her goods, and in stimulating a new and more intense demand for them. Let the whole of the capital, which was expended by England in the foundation of the North American colonies, be estimated at its fullest amount; is it credible that the total annual increase of that capital, from their first settlement to the era of American independence, would amount to the income which England has derived in the last twenty years from the American cotton trade?

NOTE.—It is extremely difficult to form even an approximative conjecture of the quantity of capital withdrawn from an old country by emigrants. The following are a few scattered hints on the subject:—

Dégérando (*Bienf. Publique*, iv. 112) says, that from 1828 to 1837, 14,365 emigrants from the lower Rhine carried with them 8,200,000 francs of capital; that is, 630 francs or 25*l.* per head. 50,000 francs in gold were found on the person of an emigrant who died at Havre of cholera.—*Ibid.* 98. Mr. Buchanan thinks that the emigrants of 1834 to Canada carried out 1,000,000*l.* “The balance,” says Mr. Murray

(*British North America*, vol. ii. p. 39), "is liquidated by the funds brought into the colony by immigrants, by government expenditures, and by the transfer of capital from this country for investment in the colony." Probably a large part of the excess consisted of goods imported to be smuggled into the United States. But a similar calculation may be applied to other colonies. The same results will be observed in the statistics of the trade with all the colonies or foreign countries to which emigration takes place. The excess of imports into over exports from Canada, in the eleven years ending 1843, is estimated by Mr. Porter at 6,000,000*l.* (*Progress of the Nation*, 1846.) In 1855, it was 1,600,000*l.* But with reference to all comparisons of exports and imports, Mr. M'Culloch's remark must be attended to. "The value of an exported commodity is estimated at the moment of its being sent abroad, and *before* its cost is increased by the expense of transporting it to its place of destination: whereas the value of the commodity imported in its stead is estimated *after* its arrival at its destination, and consequently after its cost has been increased by the expense of freight, insurance, importer's profits, &c." The pecuniary amount of imports has, therefore, in general, in the statistical tables of every country, a tendency to apparent excess over that of exports. The statistical tables framed in New South Wales give for the five years, 1854-1859, imports to the amount of 29,000,000*l.*; exports only to that of 18,500,000*l.* Victoria, by her own returns, imported, in the two years, 1857, 1858, to the amount of 32,000,000*l.*; exported, to that of 29,000,000*l.*

THE
coun
open
of n
more
the
new
moth
tend
the
have
orde
yet,
the
own
in r
last;
obje
reaso
lonie
man

* (C
and t
this c
the su
witho
shorte

LECTURE VII.

ON COLONIAL TRADE AND THE "COLONIAL SYSTEM."*

THE chief advantages of colonization to the mother country (economically speaking) are twofold: the opening of new sources of production, whence articles of necessity, conveniences, and luxury may be obtained more cheaply or more abundantly than heretofore, from the unexhausted resources of a new soil; the opening new markets for the disposal of the commodities of the mother country, more profitable and more rapidly extending than those previously resorted to, by reason of the speedy growth of wealth in new communities. I have mentioned these two as separate advantages, in order to adopt, as far as possible, the popular language; yet, in point of fact, importation, not exportation, is the great interest of a country; not the disposal of her own commodities, but the obtaining other commodities in return. The first is only useful as a means to the last; and yet it is singular to observe how the latter object, that of importation, is overlooked in ordinary reasoning on the subject, as if the only benefit of colonies resulted to our producers—our merchants and manufacturers; and not to our consumers, that is, to

* (1861.) The so-called "colonial system" of trade, to which this and the following lecture relate, has been abolished piece by piece by this country, and is only partially maintained by foreign countries. But the subject, though practically out of date as regards ourselves, is not without its historical and philosophical interest. I have therefore only shortened them by the omission of some details.

the great bulk of the people. This strange omission is in reality the consequence of those very narrow views of commercial policy, which have become so inveterate by long indulgence, that even those who are convinced of their futility can scarcely shake off the prejudices produced by them. Thus we constantly underrate those commercial benefits which are common to us with all the world, or which we only enjoy in a superior degree, in so far as superior industry and manufacturing advantages fairly command it. To suit our contracted notions of economical gain to a particular country, the gain in question must be something exclusive and monopolized. Now the plan of monopolizing the *productions* of colonies, or the imports from them, although undoubtedly a part of the ancient colonial system, is so difficult of execution, that it can scarcely be said to have been ever seriously put into operation, except in the ruinous policy of Spain and Portugal with regard to the precious metals, and the management of the spice trade by the Dutch. Our own endeavours to control in this manner the exports of our North American colonies, in the earlier period of the navigation laws, were speedily abandoned as fruitless. Sugar, and coffee, and cotton, and tobacco, and the other staple products of colonial industry, have never been practically monopolized by any European power. Each has been able to obtain such a share of them as her own industry could procure, by offering articles in exchange for them; and hence these great accessions to our wealth and our comfort, because open to all, have never been rightly estimated by each as national benefits. On the other hand, since it has been found practicable to a certain extent, by fiscal regulations, to confine colonists to the use of the products of the mother country; and since, in all commercial history, we find that producers have ever been able to give to their own the semblance of the national voice, and make it appear that

their
great
has
subj
hear
empe
may
and s
articl
enjoy
mem
for th
indul
them
elega
great
and t
is to
ough
rived

Th
indus
more
our n
luxur
millic
it is
tea, s
receiv
take
great
entire
enjoy

* S
"Soph

their gain, and not the comfort of the consumers, was the great object of economical legislation; public attention has been almost exclusively directed to this part of the subject. Nothing is more common, even now, than to hear colonies spoken of as if they were only so many emporia, where certain quantities of cotton and hardware may be disposed of with advantage to the manufacturer and shipowner. That the poor man possesses additional articles of food and clothing, and many little comforts or enjoyments, which were unknown to his forefathers; that members of the richer and the middle classes, in return for the outlay of a similar proportion of their income, can indulge in many luxuries which were heretofore denied them—can surround themselves with a refinement and elegance heretofore unknown; these are, after all, the great primary benefits which the discovery of America and the spread of colonization have secured to us: and it is to a similar increase of our physical well-being that we ought to look as the chief economical advantage to be derived to us from its further extension.

The increase of the demand for products of national industry is a good, not because it enables us to part more readily with these products, but because it increases our means of acquiring articles of necessity, comfort, and luxury in exchange. It is not the export of so many millions' worth of cotton goods which benefits England*; it is the acquisition of the sugar and coffee, the wines, tea, silk, and other numberless objects of value, which we receive in return. Our best customers are, not those who take most of our produce, but those who give us the greatest amount of value in exchange for it. Under an entirely free system, the benefit of colonies, that is, the enjoyment of the articles which they produce, would

* See the witty illustration of this very plain proposition in Bastiat's "Sophismes Économiques"—"Balance du Commerce."

ultimately result, not to the mother country, but to that country which could supply the colonies on the cheapest terms with goods in exchange for those articles. A country producing only articles not wanted by her colony, could not of course find a market there, or have any direct trade with it. Russia may colonize, as it is termed, large tracts of desert country by drafts from the superabundant population of her central provinces; but the Russian producer can derive no direct advantage therefrom, because he can only send thither articles of raw produce, of which the colonists have probably enough and to spare. It is perhaps true, that even under a system of free competition, the mother country will long retain an advantage in the market of her colony from the durability of national tastes and habits.* Thus

* (1860.) This is certainly a prevalent opinion. The following forcible expression of it is extracted from a paper in the *Colonial Gazette* of December 12, 1846. "Our own colonies are in reality only an extension of the home market. The colonies of other nations are only an extension of the foreign market. The home market is always relatively more active, more secure, more remunerating than the foreign. The tastes and habits of the British colonists are the same with those of their fellow-countrymen in the old country; their mode of conducting business, their notions of obligations, are the same: the commodities of the old country suit its colonial market better than those of any other: trade is carried on between them with a more frank confidence and perfect understanding. The bond thus created to unite the colony to the mother country is found to survive political severance. The trade with Great Britain is still immeasurably the most important part of the commerce of the United States, although we parted in anger. The trade of Mauritius with France, and of the Cape with Holland, is still considerable, though these colonies have now been British, to all intents, for nearly half a century."

But I question whether either more accurate economical reasoning, or statistical inquiry, warrants these conclusions. Plainly expressed, the theory amounts to this: So long as British nationality prevails, and until an absolutely new community is created, so long there will be a tendency in the colony to buy a dearer article from England in preference to a cheaper article from elsewhere. And when thus expressed, it

it is s
gal ar
althou
the lig
and m
that i
to eac
difies
to the
It has
gover
confir
to the
legisle

seems
denied
such a
"ordin
is extr
by a f
(thoug
cutlery
kindre
hardly
subject
better
of fore
Spain
rico is
its imp
ninetee
the oth
imperf
arrive
"de l
"total
"s'est
"aug
"p. 5

it is said by travellers, that the wines of Spain and Portugal are even to this day in general use in South America although naturally less suited for its ardent climate than the lighter growths of Northern Europe. And a greater and more permanent advantage will result to her from that identity of language and customs which attracts to each other the traders of kindred nations, and modifies even the instinct of gain. But such exceptions to the general rule are comparatively slight and transitory. It has therefore been the favourite object of European governments, ever since modern colonization began, to confine the inhabitants of their colonies as far as possible to the use of articles produced in the mother country by legislative enactment.

seems to me almost to convey its own refutation. It is not to be denied, indeed, that such a tendency may exist; but that it can exist to such an extent as substantially to control "the force and violence of the ordinary course of trade," the simple preference for the cheapest market, is extremely difficult to believe. Such a position is not to be established by a few select instances of articles of taste and fancy. It may be (though I am unaware of the fact) that such commodities as English cutlery, Parisian jewellery, and the like, preserve for a time among kindred consumers a preference disproportioned to their real value; but hardly to such an extent as can deserve attention, in considering a subject of such magnitude as the present. The question is perhaps better illustrated by reference to the economical history of the colonies of foreign nations than to that of our own. Now we have seen that Spain preserves hardly any trade with her old dependencies. Portorico is a peculiarly Spanish island, with a large white population: of its imports (in 1851) only twenty-one per cent. came from Spain, against nineteen per cent. from the United States, and thirty-four per cent. from the other West Indies. From Java—though the Dutch colonies are but imperfectly emancipated from the colonial system of trade—complaints arrive of "l'accroissement assez constant de l'importation des articles de l'industrie anglaise. En général on estime que l'importation totale de l'Angleterre dans cette île, depuis les 30 dernières années, s'est accrue de sept fois, tandis que celle de la Néerlande ne s'est augmentée que du double." (*Annuaire des Deux Mondes*, 1857 8, p. 535.)

That such prohibitions, if unaccompanied by countervailing protection, are unjust and repugnant to ordinary notions of equity, needs no demonstration. Whatever treatment of a conquered country by a conqueror usage or popular feeling may sanction, the case of a mother country and colony is wholly distinct. The colonist who goes out with the sanction of the government at home retains all the rights to protection and equitable government which he could have possessed had he remained under its superintendence. And besides the solicitations of justice, states have generally, in no long time after the foundation of colonies, been withheld by motives of policy and fear from doing them wrong. They have feared to encourage their colonists to seek their independence, or to range themselves under the banner of hostile nations. Hence, as the producers of the mother country have never been willing to let go their own monopoly, it has been found necessary to make to the colonists a compensation at the expense of the consumers. The mother country has voluntarily bound herself to the use of colonial articles produced by her colonists only. This, then, will be found (not I think in theory only, but in historical truth also) to have been the ordinary course of the colonial system. First, the mother country has endeavoured to secure the monopoly of some precious commodities produced in the colony. Next, she has subjected the colonies to the necessity of consuming articles of her own production. Thirdly, she has granted the colonists the exclusive right of producing particular articles for her own consumption. And such has been the course of events, brought about far more by the exigencies of commerce than by any legislation, that I think we shall find that this last is the only substantial fragment of the old colonial system which now remains. It is my present object, leaving out of the question the economical effects of that system on the development of

colon
moth

Fiv
up th
nation
colon
her n

1.
colon

2.
colon

3.
duce
or col

4.
the co
count

5. 1
produ

1. v
it nec

mothe
have s
the Sp
or ratl

so abl
The D
respec

lowing
trade
branch

southe
of the

" TH
" shipp
" 700

colonies themselves, to consider it simply in relation to the mother country.

Five different classes of restrictions contribute to make up the entire commercial system, which most European nations have thought it advisable to adopt towards their colonies, and which England endeavoured to establish by her navigation acts :—

1. Restrictions on the exportation of produce from the colony, elsewhere than to the mother country.

2. Restrictions on the importation of goods into the colony from foreign countries.

3. Restrictions on the importation of colonial produce into the mother country from foreign countries or colonies.

4. Restrictions on the carriage of goods to and from the colonies in other shipping than that of the mother country.

5. Restrictions on the manufacture of their own raw produce by the colonists.

1. With regard to the first of these, I shall not think it necessary to discuss the question of their utility to the mother country on the present occasion ; because, as I have said, they are now nearly obsolete. The effects of the Spanish system of monopolizing the precious metals, or rather of the delusive attempt to do so, are no where so ably exposed as in the great work of Adam Smith. The Dutch persist to this day in a similar policy with respect to the spices of the eastern islands ; and the following estimates of the present condition of that famous trade by a recent writer, as compared with that of a branch of colonial commerce but of yesterday, the southern spermaceti whale fishery, may give us some idea of the success of the experiment :—

"The spermaceti whale fishery employs 32,100 tons of shipping, and 3210 seamen ; the vaunted spice trade, 700 tons and 80 seamen : the tonnage is thus forty-six

“times greater; the number of hands employed forty times greater. The value of the fishery is 1,070,000*l.*, that of the spices, at three times their natural price, 120,000*l.*, a little more than one-half of the value of the fishery. This amount from the fishery is obtained by the labour of 3210 men, among the boldest, most active, and most hardy that human institutions are capable of breeding. The spices are obtained through the enslaving of a population of 46,000; or with the labour of 11,500 persons, taking the labouring population at about one-fourth of the former number, with perhaps a million more, who are by means of it robbed of the most ordinary rights of human nature, and kept in slavery and barbarism to ensure an unworthy and contemptible object.”*

2. The next and more important branch of the system consists in restrictions on the importation of goods into the colony from foreign countries. It is, as has been shown, a contrivance for enabling the producers of the mother country to buy cheap and sell dear; to dispose of a portion of the produce of their capital and labour at a higher rate than they could have done, had they been subjected to the competition of foreign producers. In considering the principle of this contrivance, we must necessarily return to a certain extent over the ground which we traversed in our last lecture.

It was the opinion of Adam Smith, that this class of restrictions had the effect of raising the rate of profit in the mother country. Supposing a country to acquire, by conquest, a considerable extension of her dominion, whether colonial or foreign; and supposing her to restrict the consumers of that province or colony to the use of her own manufactures; foreign capitals employed

* Torrens' *Colonization of South Australia*, p. 190 (from Crawford's *Indian Archipelago*). Some recent changes have taken place in the mode of conducting the spice trade, of which I do not know the details.

before in supplying it with goods, would necessarily be withdrawn from the trade : the capital of the conquering country would supply its place. Competition being thus diminished, the remaining capitalists would be enabled to make large profits ; to buy cheap and to sell dear.*

" But in such an employment," says he, " the profit must have been very great, and much above the ordinary level of profit in other branches of trade. This superiority of profit in the colony trade could not fail to draw from other branches of trade a part of the capital which had before been employed in them. But this revulsion of capital, as it must have gradually increased the competition of capitals in the colony trade, so it must have gradually diminished that competition in all other branches of trade ; as it must have gradually lowered the profits of the one, so it must have gradually raised those of the other, till the profits of all came to a new level, different from, and somewhat higher than, that at which they had been before." And he imagined that this result had actually been produced to a certain extent by our navigation acts. Reasoning, therefore, upon his own peculiar theory, that high profits were injurious to a country, he employed this as one of his arguments against the colonial monopoly.

This, however, is well known, is a view in which he is singular ; and as, according to received doctrines, a comparatively high rate of profits, so far from being disadvantageous, is one of the very best tests of increasing prosperity, it is clear, that if the restricted colonial trade really did produce the effect here ascribed to it, it would be a blessing to the mother country, whatever it might be to the colony. But Ricardo and his followers contend, that the whole argument is without foundation. According to them, as I yesterday showed you, the rate

* Book iv. chap. 7.

of profit in every country depends not upon the extent of the field for the employment of capital, but upon the productiveness of capital and labour. No extension of the foreign trade would increase the productiveness of capital and labour; consequently, it would not raise the rate of profit. There would undoubtedly, as Adam Smith asserts, be high profits made at first by those who were in a position to avail themselves of it. But the competition between the capitalists of the mother country would speedily bring them down again to the average rate of profit. The result, therefore, of this forced extension of the foreign or colonial trade would merely be this—the goods of the favoured country would command in the market of the other a greater quantity of the goods of that other, than before the restriction was imposed. If England can force France to take her goods in exchange for wine, a smaller quantity of English goods will buy the same quantity of wine as before; the price of wine as estimated in English commodities will fall; the English consumer will have a greater mass of commodities to enjoy; English wealth will be increased; but the rate of profit in England, that is, the proportion of profit to the remaining parts of the produce of English capital and labour, will remain unaffected. The only exception to this law would be the case of an exclusive company. If any foreign trade were to be suddenly extended, and were to be committed to the hands of monopolists, who have the power of excluding home competition, they of course would continue to make high profits; profits limited, in theory, only by the intensity of demand in that foreign country for the articles which they might furnish.

It would be impossible for me, in such an incidental discussion as the present, to enter into that course of reasoning, so close and logical as to be almost incapable of abridgment, by which Ricardo supports these cele-

brated positions. I must refer you to his work, especially the sixth chapter, and to Mr. M'Culloch's notes to A. Smith on the Rate of Profit and Colonial Trade, to the review of Ricardo's work in the Edinburgh, and to the article "Colony" in the supplement to the Encyclopædia Britannica, as forming, perhaps, the most useful commentaries on it. On the other hand, as I also mentioned in my former lecture, Mr. Malthus's view of the causes which influence the rate of profit more nearly coincides with that of Adam Smith, and he considers the comparative abundance or scantiness of capital to be one of the most prominent among those causes.*

In one case, at all events, it is evident, that a rise in the price of manufactured articles in a foreign market, together with a great extension of that market, would raise the rate of profit in the manufacturing country. It would, of course, immediately attract a large additional amount of capital. Supposing the supply of labour to be such that wages did not rise, it is plain that the capital so employed would continue to realize high profits, until the competition of capital flowing in from all quarters reduced them to the original level. But that capital would flow in from other employments. Suppose it to flow in from agriculture. A portion of the fields of the country would be abandoned. But the price of food would not greatly rise; for food would be purchased (I am supposing a state of commercial freedom) with a part of the foreign produce imported in return for the manufactured goods. But in such a state of things it would immediately become profitable to the landlords to retain capital on their soil by a remission of part of the rent. This could only take place on soils yielding a rent: the worst soils yielding little or none must be abandoned. We have only then to suppose that the

* Political Economy, book i. chap. v. sect. 3.

extension of the foreign market is so sudden, and so great, that this necessary process, the abandonment of the worst soils, takes place before the vacuum in the foreign trade is filled up by competition. Then the balance will be adjusted in this way; an additional quantity of food will, no doubt, be imported from abroad: but a permanent, because natural, rise of profits will take place, the productiveness of industry being increased.

It seems impossible therefore to argue, that, supposing a country could secure the monopoly of the supply of a great foreign market, the effect would not be a real increase of wealth, whether by the rise of profits, or, in the language of Ricardo, by an increase of the mass of commodities. But it is obvious that such a supposition as I have here made, is quite inapplicable in its very nature to the colony trade. The growth of colonies, though comparatively rapid, is far less so, under ordinary circumstances, than that of the capital and labour applicable to manufactures in the country which is to supply them. Competition among the native manufacturers would therefore as surely bring down the price of their goods to the lowest rate at which they could afford to supply them, in the colonial market, as in the home market. Any such unnatural enhancement of profits, either in rate or in amount, as that of which I have spoken, might indeed take place if some vast and flourishing continent, some new Atlantis, were created for our benefit, and brought within reach of our ships and our orders in council; but assuredly not in the usual progress of sublunary affairs.

Let us look at the subject, then, in a more practical light. Suppose England to have the artificial monopoly of supplying Canada with silk, which France could supply cheaper. A certain quantity of English capital is then invested in the silk manufacture, which otherwise would not be so invested; inasmuch as, without the monopoly,

it could not be so employed at the ordinary rate of profit. Canada, of course, loses by this arrangement all the difference between the price of English and French silks; but we are not at present considering the interests of Canada. Suppose the trade thrown open to France; Canada would gain all that difference; England would have the whole of the capital, now, by the supposition, invested in the silk trade for this particular purpose, thrown out of employment. Now, it is undoubtedly a conceivable case, that there could be no other employment found for that capital—that it must perish; and it is the common fallacy which misleads the multitude of those who argue against free trade, to suppose that this conceivable case is the probable one. It is in fact scarcely possible, and for this reason: few countries, if any, certainly no great and colonizing countries, are without some advantages for the employment of their capital in particular branches of industry. If England, in hardware, in cottons, in woollens, has the natural monopoly of the supply of the world, it does not practically admit of a doubt, that should the artificial monopoly which we have supposed her to possess of the supply of Canada with silk be broken up, the capital thus engaged would speedily seek and find employment in those, her rightful and prerogative branches of production. We should buy Canadian timber and corn, as we bought them before; but we should buy them by exporting more woollen and cotton goods, more hardware, and less or no silk.

On this supposition, then, Canada would gain something by the removal of the monopoly; England would lose nothing. In point of fact, England would gain also. I have spoken of the artificial silk trade, as realizing, in common with other trades, the ordinary profits of stock; but in truth a forced trade seldom does so for any length of time; it is essentially subject to fluctuation, uncertainty, and disappointment, beyond all others. One reason of

this, among many, is very obvious. When the price of any article not absolutely necessary is enhanced by monopoly, the consumer submits for a while, because his acquired habits induce him to reduce his consumption of the article as little as possible. But in the course of time he either discovers substitutes for the high priced article, or, if that is impossible, he accommodates his taste to his circumstances, and learns to do without it, and the trade falls to the ground.

Again, when the price of an article in the consuming country is raised by monopoly very far above the cost of production, it follows that a comparatively slight fall of that price may occasion a total loss of profit to the producer. "The price of timber in Canada is trifling; but "in England, being augmented by high charges, it is five "times the original cost; so that a fluctuation of 20 per "cent. in the price in this country amounts either to a "total loss, or a profit of 100 per cent. Hence, a trifling "decline in our market is completely ruinous to the colo- "nial shipper." * According to another calculation, 5 per cent. fluctuation in England causes 30 per cent. in Canada.†

"In providing a forced market in the colonies for articles "that we should not otherwise be able to dispose of, we "really engage a portion of the capital and labour of the "country in a less advantageous direction than that into "which it would naturally have flowed. We impress "upon it an artificial direction; and withdraw it from "those secure and really beneficial businesses in which it "would have been employed, to engage it in businesses, "the existence of which depends only on the continuance "of oppressive regulations, and in which we are surpassed "by foreigners."‡

It will readily occur to those of my hearers, who are

* Murray's British America, vol. ii. p. 33.

† Debate in the House of Commons, July, 1839.

‡ M'Culloch, Dict. of Commerce, art. "Colony."

in any degree familiar with the subject now brought before their notice, that the arguments here adduced are precisely as applicable to the great question of free trade in regard to home or foreign as to colonial commerce. Let us suppose that the manufacturers of Spitalfields have the exclusive monopoly of supplying England with silk. The consumer loses all the difference between the price which the Spitalfields manufacturer charges him, and that which the French manufacturer would charge him. Let the monopoly be removed, and that whole difference is immediately saved to the consumer. But the capital of the Spitalfields manufacturer is lost. Not so: for some parts of it there is immediate and permanent employment, owing to the demand of the consumer, part of whose revenue is thus saved to him, for new articles of consumption. The remainder, we need not doubt, will by degrees be absorbed into the healthy system of the country. There will, indeed, be some exception for the fixed capital employed in the business, which must partly perish; nor is it denied, that a forced trade cannot be destroyed without more or less temporary, and some little permanent, loss: but this, although it may sometimes afford a reason against the hasty abolition of an established monopoly, raises a far stronger argument against the establishment of any new one. Let us now, if we cannot learn to regard the world as one country in regard to commercial intercourse, at least look on the British empire as a single body: let us view Canada in the light of Yorkshire or Wales; and the real effect of such restrictions will at once be apparent.

But were the case otherwise, governments, however powerful, are utterly unable to impose such restrictions as shall secure to their subjects the real monopoly of this or that species of manufacture. "Even were it conceded," says Mr. M'Culloch, "that the possession of an outlet in "the colonies for goods, that could not otherwise be

“disposed of, was an advantage, it is one that can exist
“in theory only. Practically, it can never be realised.
“The interests of the colonists, and the dexterity and
“devices of the smuggler, are too much for custom-house
“regulations. Cheap goods never fail of making their
“way through every obstacle. All the tyrannical laws
“and *guarda costas* of Old Spain, did not hinder her
“colonies from being glutted with prohibited commodities.
“And we may be assured, that the moment a competitor
“appears in the field, capable of supplying the Canadians
“and people of Jamaica with cottons, woollens, hard-
“ware, &c. cheaper than we can supply them, that moment
“will they cease to be our customers. All the revenue
“officers, and all the ships of England, supposing them
“to be employed for the purpose, would be unable to
“avert this result.” In point of fact, all the regulations
which legislative ingenuity can suggest, for the purpose
of excluding manufactured articles from a country, only
end in adding a small per centage to the price of them,
which goes in the nature of a premium or insurance to
the smuggler.

But these considerations are not at the present day of
much practical importance to ourselves. Our unrivalled
superiority in manufactures gives us the command of the
supply of our colonies without the necessity of having
recourse to artificial restrictions to maintain it. Importation
into them is, accordingly, very little affected by prohibitive
laws, with the exception of those which restrain the com-
merce of foreign countries with some of our dependencies in
grain, fish, and other articles of raw produce. These are
relics of our old navigation laws, not intended to benefit the
mother country, but in point of fact to favour the industry
of our North American settlements at the expense of
those of the West Indies, which were supposed to be
sufficiently encouraged by their exclusive supply of the
home market. Their effect on the depressed trade of

these colonies has been of late years extremely injurious, and measures for their alleviation are now actively in progress. But I fear the supposition that they, in any degree, counterbalance the effect of the protective duties on West Indian produce; that, in the words of the recent Committee on Imports, "the difficulties of modifying the "discriminating duties which favour the introduction of "British colonial articles would be very much abated, if "the colonies themselves were allowed the benefits of free "trade with all the world," is far too sanguine, and likely to lead to disappointment.

3. Such, therefore, has been the singular course which the fortunes of commerce have taken, and such the passion of our governments to favour and enrich distant colonies, that while we have no longer any need of those apparent advantages, which, according to the old mercantile theory, the monopoly of their supply with manufactures would have secured us, we still continue bound to take certain articles of raw produce exclusively from them. The purpose alleged for these mutual restrictions in the preamble to one of our old navigation acts, namely, "the maintaining a greater correspondence and kindness "between the subjects at home and those in the plantations," is now pursued by means of sacrifices on our part, made absolutely without any consideration from theirs. For, unless we admit the argument sometimes used in this discussion, that it is right to grant commercial privileges to our colonists, in order that they may the more rapidly become wealthy customers (which is nearly the same thing as asserting, that a tradesman will gain by giving a shilling to be laid out in his shop), it must be confessed that the colony trade, as now conducted, rests on prohibitions of which the burden falls almost exclusively on the mother country alone. Nor in this instance, as in that of manufactured goods, does the contraband trade render that burden little more than

nominal. Raw produce, from its greater bulk, can in general be effectually protected by prohibitions.

Besides the direct loss to the national income, occasioned by prohibitive duties on the importation of raw produce, enhancing its price above that which it bears in the free market of the world, two other effects are worthy of observation: the one is, the diminution of consumption which they occasion; the other is, the forcing into use inferior articles, and exclusion of better. All these are exemplified in the colonial trade at the present day.*

West India sugars are at present subjected in England to a duty of 24*s.* per cwt.; East India to a duty of 32*s.*; foreign sugars, of 63*s.* The price of West India sugar, exclusive of the duty, has averaged, in a series of years, about 30*s.* per cwt.; inclusive of the duty, 54*s.*, not equalling altogether the duty on foreign sugar; so that the latter is what is termed prohibitive, amounting, that is, to an entire prohibition of its use. It is probable that sugar might be supplied from Cuba, Brazil, and other countries, at less than 20*s.* per cwt.; supposing therefore the prohibitive duties to be repealed, and the 24*s.* duty to be retained, the price in England would fall to 44*s.* But with such an extension of consumption as this fall would produce, it would be practicable to lower the duty considerably, and thus produce again a farther increase of consumption to an almost incalculable amount. The duty on coffee was lowered in 1825 one-half; and by 1832 the consumption had risen from 8,000,000 lbs. to 32,000,000 lbs.† It is

* That is, in 1840.

† The following details on the subject of the consumption of coffee were presented by Mr. Porter to the Committee on Import Duties, 1840:—

Year.	Duty per lb.	Consumption, per head.	Duty paid, per head.
1801	1 <i>s.</i> 6 <i>d.</i>	1·09 <i>oz.</i>	1½ <i>d.</i>
1821	1 0	8·01	6
1831	0 6	21·13	8

scarcely possible to estimate the effect of a similar abatement on an article so extensively useful and agreeable as sugar. "Those who have not seen with their own eyes," says Humboldt, "what an immense quantity of sugar is consumed in Spanish America, even in the poorest families, must be astonished at finding that France requires for her supply not more than three or four times as much as the island of Cuba," which, when Humboldt visited it, had a population of only 340,000. It is a misfortune, that the necessity under which we are placed, of maintaining an enormously expensive machine of government, should thus narrowly limit and curtail the enjoyment by the great bulk of our people of the free bounties of nature. But for that sacrifice we receive an abundant reward in the preservation of those institutions, to which we owe the far greater blessings of security, order, and liberty. What return we obtain for that farther sacrifice, which is made exclusively for the sake of enriching the West Indians, it is not so easy to determine. As matters stand now, however, it is plain, that about two-fifths of the price of every pound of sugar which we consume are the natural cost of the article, two-fifths are paid to government, and one-fifth as a tribute to the planters of Jamaica and Demarara.

These considerations are suggested by the state of the colonial sugar trade, such as it has been for a long average of years. But the time for reflection is almost past: it is now menaced with a serious revolution. From causes not under our review in the present lecture, the cost of production in our colonies has increased within the last seven years to a perilous amount; or, to speak more accurately, production has been so cramped by the deficiency of labour, that it is utterly inadequate to meet the demand. The price of brown sugar rose from 39s. 6d. in 1839 to 57s. 6d. in 1840.

The total quantity of sugar supplied by the British West Indies fell from an average of 3,860,484 cwt. in 1830-34 to 3,354,833 cwt. in 1835-39. In November 1840 the stock of sugar in hand was less by one-half than in the corresponding month of 1839; nor is there any reasonable expectation that the productiveness of our colonies will be speedily increased. The monopoly, therefore, approaches its termination, for this country will not long endure the increasing price and diminishing quantity of an article so essential to the habits of the present day. Even those who see many and serious reasons for regretting the change, which may have so unfavourable an effect on the prospects of the African race, cannot but foresee its approach; while those who contemplate it with a view only to the economical progress of the country, regard it with unmixed satisfaction.

The colonial and foreign timber trade affords a remarkable instance of the other result of prohibitions on the importation of raw produce already alluded to; namely, the forced consumption of inferior in lieu of better commodities. The discriminating duties on timber are owing to commercial regulations of very modern origin, having been first adopted in 1808, in a time of war between ourselves and the Baltic nations, and not very materially altered since. The duty on timber from our North American colonies was 10s. a load, on Baltic timber 45s. until the tariff of 1842. It was stated, when a slight reduction of the duty on European timber, accompanied by the imposition of that on the colonial, took place in 1821, that the protection then continued was merely sufficient to counterbalance the difference of cost, chiefly in freight, between the two commodities, and enable the producers to meet on equal terms in the English market. But, as Mr. M'Culloch observes, the fact that vessels have been known to load timber in the Baltic, and carry it round by North America, in

Lect.
ord
see
Still
It v
ann
tion
fifth
dou
whi
stan
whi
deg
from
and
can
time
our
gain
buy
we
man
A
tecti
the
lated
and
the
being
of co
as t
men
on t
Havi

* T
in 180

order to import it as the produce of the latter country, seems conclusively to show, that this is not the case. Still, Baltic timber is supplied to a considerable extent. It was stated the other day in Parliament, that of the annual supply of timber requisite to meet our consumption, three-fifths were furnished by North America, one-fifth still by the Baltic. This may be partly owing, no doubt, to the lower cost of production of the latter article, which enables the seller of it to compete in some instances with his rival, notwithstanding the duty with which he is loaded; but it is owing in a much greater degree to its superior excellence. We are restricted from the use of an article at once cheaper and better, and compelled to employ one dearer and worse. Nor can we with justice set off against this loss, as is sometimes attempted to be done, the consequent increase of our trade with Canada. For every customer whom we gain there, we lose one in Russia or in Sweden. We buy Canadian timber with our manufactures; and were we to return to the use of Baltic, it is only with our manufactures that we could buy it.*

Another argument, indeed, for maintaining these protective duties, especially those on timber, arises from the increased employment which the trade, thus regulated, is supposed to give to our shipping, both absolutely and relatively, as compared with foreign countries. But the encouragement of the shipping of the mother country being, as it were, a separate head of the colonial system of commerce, will deserve separate consideration; as well as the remaining head which I indicated at the commencement of my lecture, the restriction, namely, laid on the manufacture by colonists of their raw produce. Having briefly touched on these two subjects, I shall

* The duties on colonial and foreign timber were ultimately equalized in 1860. See Lect. VIII.

conclude to-morrow's lecture by a few general remarks on some economical advantages derived, or supposed to be derived, by the mother country through her relations with her colonies—the per contra, as it were, of the great account which I am now laying one side before you.

THE
to d
riag
ship
T
Eng
our
ever
this
of th
situa
been
teres
super
multi
partic
heavy
botto
Engli
beside
know
ing co
You v
enforc
again
vate i
public

LECTURE VIII.

THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED.

THE next branch of the colonial system to which I have to direct your attention consists in *restrictions on the carriage of merchandise to and from the colonies in other shipping than that of the mother country.*

The attempt to confine commerce with foreign parts to English vessels has been a favourite point of policy with our statesmen from very early times. The object, however, of the more ancient enactments and regulations on this subject seems to have been almost wholly the defence of the kingdom. Dependent for safety, in our insular situation, chiefly on our command of the seas, it has been in all times a matter of the deepest national interest with us, to provide for the maintenance of that superiority. Hence the encouragement offered to the multiplication of shipping and seamen, by bounties on particular branches of maritime employment, and by heavy duties on the importation of goods in foreign bottoms. I may refer you for notices respecting the English navigation laws previous to the 17th century, besides Anderson's History of Commerce and other well known authorities on the subject, to that very entertaining compilation, Southey's Maritime History of England. You will there see how these various prohibitions, always enforced when war was apprehended, were sure to be again relaxed or evaded in time of peace, when the private interests of merchants prevailed over the care of the public security. How far our naval greatness has really

been promoted by our commercial legislation, it is no part of my province to inquire. Undoubtedly no political philosopher will dispute the proposition, that it may be advantageous to a state to sacrifice a portion of her wealth—to lay her merchants under certain disadvantages—with a view to provide for those paramount objects of policy, the means of defending herself against foreign aggression, and maintaining her rank among other powers. Nor was it, apparently, until the 17th century that these legitimate intentions began to be mixed up with others of a more objectionable kind arising from the erroneous notion, that the national wealth could be increased by regulations compelling a portion of it to flow into definite channels.

The extraordinary commercial success of the Dutch served at that time as the principal stimulus to the jealousy of our statesmen. The Dutch had monopolised a great part of the carrying trade of Europe, and almost the whole of that which was carried by the American settlements of all nations with Europe and with each other. In the reign of Charles II., Sir William Petty roughly estimated the whole mercantile shipping of Europe at 2,000,000 tons, of which 800,000 belonged to the United Provinces. Nor was this monopoly the result of superior natural advantages. Inhabiting a country rich neither in timber nor metals, and with every branch of industry heavily taxed, they could neither build nor man their vessels so cheaply as many others. But they possessed a great accumulation of capital, which enabled their shipowners to be content with a lower rate of freight than was necessary to satisfy the smaller capitalists of other countries; and the still greater advantage of a moral capital, if it may be so termed, of energy, industry, habits of business, and liberal institutions, which, in the long run, proved far more precious than the richest gifts of Nature, in hands unskilled or negligent in the use of

them. Most of this, it will be observed, was the consequence of their commercial supremacy, which enabled them to accumulate that capital and to contract those habits. The carrying trade, as Adam Smith truly observes, "is the natural effect and symptom of national wealth; but it does not seem to be the natural cause of it." The English of that day, however, thought otherwise: they resolved to deprive the Dutch, as far as in them lay, by legislative measures, of the exclusive source of riches which they conceived them to have appropriated. Hence the famous navigation laws of Cromwell and Charles II., to which I have so frequently had occasion to advert, and of which I need not now recapitulate the provisions. As far as regards the colonies, they were intended to compel the colonies to use English shipping for the exportation of their merchandise to Europe and to each other, and to secure to the English ship-owners the monopoly of supplying the colonies both with English and foreign commodities.

The enactment of the navigation laws was contemporaneous with the rise of our supremacy, both commercial and maritime, and the decay of that of Holland. And for more than one hundred years, they were universally regarded by ourselves as among the chief causes and most important bulwarks of our prosperity. Adam Smith himself (speaking, however, of the measure in a political and not economical point of view), says that "National animosity, at that time, aimed at the very same object which the most deliberate wisdom would have recommended—the diminution of the naval power of Holland, the only naval power which could endanger the security of England."* Nevertheless, as far as the accumulation of wealth is concerned, it is absolutely impossible but that they must have been, in the first instance, injurious. If Dutch shipping was at that period cheaper than

* Wealth of Nations, book iv. chap. 2.

English, the merchant who was forced to embark his commodities in English bottoms lost the whole of that difference. The English shipowner did not gain the whole of it; a portion was sunk, at a dead loss both to the nation and to the capitalist, as has already been explained. If we were to exclude French wines, for the purpose of growing dearer wines at home, in despite of the difference of soil and climate, either a larger portion of our revenue must be devoted to the production of wine than is now devoted to its purchase, or our consumption of an useful and agreeable article must be diminished. And, in the same manner, any restriction on the use of foreign shipping for exporting our commodities must either divert a portion of capital to be unprofitably employed in the production of ships, or must cause a diminution in our exports. If the navigation laws, therefore, did really contribute to increase the wealth of England, it must have been by some mysterious and indirect mode of operation, inexplicable on ordinary principles of economical reasoning, such as the defenders of commercial restrictions are continually suggesting, but rarely or never attempt to define.

But it is to be observed, that many of these effects which have been ascribed to the navigation laws must, in point of fact, have followed from other causes, if those laws had never been enacted. The Dutch, it has been said, possessed no natural advantages for the monopoly of the carrying trade, or, indeed, of any other branch of commerce. And great as are the conquests which human skill and energy can achieve, no dominion is durable in the foundation of which nature has not co-operated. Holland had also political difficulties to contend against. In the middle of the seventeenth century, while England and other countries were pressing into the lists as rivals, she was toiling under a load of taxation such as no other community has ever endured. On the whole it seems

reasonable to conclude with Mr. McCulloch, that "The decline of her maritime preponderance was owing rather to the gradual increase of commerce and navigation in other countries, and to the disasters and burdens occasioned by the ruinous contest the republic had to sustain with Cromwell, Charles II., and Louis XIV., than to the exclusion of their merchant vessels from the ports of England." And if the amount of their loss by our legislation be problematical, that of our own gain by it is certainly much more so.

In 1825 the truth of the principle was tested by the extensive alterations which then took place in our navigation laws—alterations, indeed, which have affected the foreign more than the colonial trade and shipping of the empire. But the policy of what is termed the "reciprocity system" has been matter of so much debate, that it may be advisable to pause a little in our review, in order to examine what light the experience of late years has really thrown upon it. Let us employ for this purpose the statement of the case by Sir A. Alison, in his work on Population (chap. 15),—a professed enemy to the legislation of Mr. Huskisson and his successors.

The tables to which he refers show that between 1801 and 1822 British tonnage increased from 922,594 to 1,664,186,—in other words, nearly doubled; while foreign tonnage diminished from 780,155 to 469,151. Foreign to British was, therefore, at the first period, nearly as eight to nine; at the latter, less than one to three.

From 1823 to 1836, under the reciprocity system, British tonnage increased from 1,740,859 to 2,505,473, or about one third; foreign tonnage from 582,996 to 988,899, or about two-fifths. In the first of these years, it was to the British as one to three; nearly, in the last, as two to five.

From this table Sir A. Alison infers that the proportion

of foreign to British tonnage has increased since the reciprocity system was adopted, and that the system was unfavourable to our shipping. It is important, however, before we proceed in our calculations, to observe how fortunate he has been in his selection of the particular year, 1801, as the basis of his calculations. It was a year of war, in which the amount of British tonnage was small, and that of neutral unusually large. If he had taken the following year, 1802, as the groundwork of his comparison, it would have appeared that, in his first period, the British tonnage had only increased about a fifth, while the foreign had remained absolutely stationary. We need not accuse Sir A. Alison of unfair intention in adopting so fallacious a test; but it is obvious that any argument by comparison of single years is very unsatisfactory.

But he proceeds to analyse the returns more minutely, with a view to prove, first, the diminution of the British shipping in the trade with countries on terms of reciprocity with us,—secondly, the diminution or slight increase in our export trade with those countries; by which it was thought, when the system was adopted, we should be remunerated for any loss to our shipping interest. He shows that the tonnage of British vessels, which cleared outwards to the countries included in the reciprocity treaties (Sweden, Norway, Denmark, Russia, France, the United States), had increased, between 1822 and 1838, from 469,726 tons to 714,881 only.

Foreign, from 383,924 to 990,328.

Exports, from 18,084,013*l*. to 21,270,705*l*.

To non-reciprocity countries, British tonnage had increased from 407,847 tons to 783,359.

Foreign, from 82,432 to 217,515.

Exports, from 8,355,854*l*. to 15,101,765*l*.

To the colonies ;

British, from 786,613 tons to 1,287,157.

Foreign, from 795 to 2,823.

Exports, from 10,526,156*l.* to 13,689,367*l.*

He also shows that the increase under the first of these heads, in British tonnage, is entirely referable to our trade with the United States. Our tonnage in trade with the nations of Northern Europe has slightly declined.

"Thus," he says, "it distinctly appears, both from the Parliamentary Returns and the admission of the most able and well-informed advocates for the reciprocity system, that the anticipated and promised extension of our foreign trade, from the adoption of that system, has not taken place : that, so far from it, our trade has rapidly and signally declined, during the last 25 years, with the old states of Europe, fifteen of which have been spent under the reciprocity system ; and, therefore, that we have gratuitously inflicted a severe wound upon our own maritime interests, without having purchased thereby any equivalent advantage, either for our foreign trade or our manufactures."

"It is perfectly clear, therefore, that the reciprocity system has had no tendency to check the serious decay which is going forward in our *European* trade ; while the restrictive system, *which is still applied, with undiminished force, to our colonies*, at least in their intercourse with their parent state, has had as little effect in checking the rapid and astonishing growth, both of our shipping and foreign trade, in the three distant parts of the empire."

The alleged failure of the experiment, he contends, proceeds mainly from this cause ; that the reciprocity was not real but nominal. "If the article can be reared cheaper abroad than at home, it is a perfect delusion to say that we have entered into a fair reciprocity treaty,

“because we admit that article on the same terms with them: real reciprocity consists, not in admitting the same article into our ports on the same terms on which our neighbours receive ours, but in obtaining admittance for a corresponding article on our side in which we have a corresponding advantage over them. Unless this is done, reciprocity is entirely illusory, because it is all on one side. . . . Every one knows that the Baltic powers can carry on ship-building far cheaper than England, for this plain reason, that the materials of ships, timber, cordage, hemp, and tar, are produced by nature on the shores of the Baltic, in countries where labour is not half so dear as in the British Isles. On the other hand, cotton goods and iron of all sorts can be manufactured far cheaper in Great Britain than either in France or the Baltic states, in consequence of the accumulation of capital and great skill in machinery in this country, and the incalculable advantage of our coal mines. Real reciprocity, then, would have consisted in a treaty, whereby, in consideration of our admitting their shipping into our harbours on as favourable terms as they admitted ours into theirs, they consented to receive our cotton goods into their ports on the same terms as we received their cotton fabrics into ours.”

Whether this would have been “real reciprocity” or not, it would certainly have been a very gainful treaty for us. But it was scarcely likely that we should persuade the Prussian government, acting on the ordinary principles of commercial policy by which governments conduct themselves, to such an exchange of golden for brass armour as the free admission of the staple produce of our industry, cotton goods, in return for so slight a boon as the free admission of their shipping. But the Baltic states have two great staples of their own, timber and corn. We restrict the admission of both by differ-

ential duties of a very onerous character. Now, when the reciprocity system commenced, the fatal effects of those restrictions on our Baltic trade had only been felt for a few years. Ever since that time they have been sedulously maintained, and as sedulously met by counter-restrictions on the import of our manufactures by the Baltic powers. With or without reciprocity, therefore, our trade with them must equally have declined. If we had not admitted their shipping, which, in point of fact, we were unable to prevent, except by a total cessation from all commercial intercourse, it must inevitably have declined in a greater proportion. After making some allowances which must be made in the comparison, such as the difference of measurement in English and Baltic vessels, which makes our tonnage appear relatively smaller than it is, there is no doubt that, from superior cheapness, the vessels of the Baltic ship-owners are able to compete pretty equally with ours, for those short voyages by which this trade is carried on. Narrowed as our market is, by legislation, for their most valuable productions, it is probable that this circumstance is the principal cause which keeps alive the remnant of this once important branch of our commerce.

With the United States, the other great reciprocity country, although the trade is still chiefly carried on in American vessels, the proportion of our tonnage to theirs has increased since the system began; and this is, undoubtedly, the fairest test of the effects of that system.

As the law now stands*, goods can only be imported into our colonies in the shipping of the country which produces them; and then only if the country in question be on terms of reciprocity with us. I will not discuss the apprehended danger to our maritime supremacy, if, by relaxing these restrictions, we were to lose the carry-

* That is, before the measures which terminated in the final repeal of the Navigation Act restrictions, 1854.

ing trade. But whether we should, in fact, lose any important part of it is extremely questionable. If the received accounts of the strength and durability of the Baltic shipping are correct, it would certainly not be able to compete with our own in Transatlantic navigation. The shipping of the United States, our most formidable competitor, might interfere, to a certain extent, in this branch of commerce: but, considering that our tonnage is at present gaining upon theirs, even in the direct trade between our ports and their own, it would hardly suffer much by their rivalry in what would be to them the more circuitous traffic between Great Britain and her colonies.

A more important remnant of the old navigation laws, as regards the colony trade, consists in restrictions on the direct importation of provisions and other articles from the United States into the West Indies. The duties on Baltic timber may also be regarded as maintained, in part, with a view to the advantage of the British shipowner; inasmuch as the Canadian timber trade is carried on entirely in British or colonial bottoms, while in that of the Baltic Prussian and Norwegian vessels have a share. The number of vessels employed exclusively in the American timber trade is estimated, by an impartial writer*, at 684, and the men at 8700. How large a proportion of these would be thrown out of employment by the equalization of the duties, it is not very easy to conjecture; but the necessity we are under of maintaining our maritime strength, renders it incumbent on us to proceed with caution towards such a measure, however confident we may be that the path will ultimately turn out right.†

* Murray's *British America*, vol. ii. p. 24.

† (1861.) The restriction of the differential duties on colonial and foreign timber was accordingly very gradually effected by successive stages, until their equalization in 1860. Judging from the returns of the cargoes imported (see *M'Culloch's Commercial Dictionary*, 1859,

The injury which restrictions on the carrying trade effect to national wealth, by forcing the merchant to employ home shipping in preference to foreign, has been already explained; and nothing so plainly illustrates its nature and extent, as the singular evasions, or circuitous modes of proceeding, which they usually introduce into commerce when war interposes difficulties in the way of national intercourse: the great price to which commodities often rise will render it profitable to effect their transport by means of the most extraordinary routes. In the late war, American merchandise not unfrequently reached Paris by way of Salonica in Turkey.* On one occasion, says Mr Tooke†, in his work on Prices, two parcels of silk were despatched from Bergamo, in Lombardy, to this country; one went *viâ* Smyrna, the other *viâ* Archangel; the first was one year arriving, the latter two. Now all restrictions, especially those on the carrying trade, place neighbouring nations, as it were, in a perpetual state of commercial hostility; and cause, precisely in the same manner, a profitless expenditure of national property in circuitous modes of transit.

5. The last branch of the prohibitive system may be treated of in very few words: namely, the prohibition laid on colonists to manufacture their own raw produce. Such, indeed, was the importance once attached to these restrictions, that even Lord Chatham went so far as to declare in parliament, that "the British colonists of North America had no *right* to manufacture even a nail or a "horseshoe." But the jealousy of manufacturers on this point was surely a little extravagant. To follow out Lord Chatham's expressions literally, to prevent colonists from manufacturing for themselves the coarse and ordi-

"Timber"), it would appear that the general increase of the colonial timber trade of late years has been very slow, but that the Baltic trade has absolutely fallen off.

* Say, Cours, iii. 361.

† Vol. i. 310.

nary objects of every day want, is, of course, impracticable; and nature itself prohibits them from engaging in manufactures, in the more extended sense of the word. So long as they are thinly spread over a fertile surface, so long as land is cheap and labour dear, their own interest will always point out to them that the most advantageous mode of procuring manufactured commodities is by giving their own raw produce in exchange. And when their numbers are multiplied, and their capital accumulated so far as to render manufactures profitable, they will assuredly cease to be colonists. Such prohibitions, therefore, may be regarded as, in general, little more than nominal. But there are some few branches of industry in which they have been productive of considerable injury to colonies; where the article produced is of great bulk, and the process of reducing it to a consumable shape simple and easily executed on the spot, such as that of sugar refining. It has been the ordinary policy of European governments to forbid the refining of sugar in the islands where it is produced; partly for the advantage of a few capitalists engaged in that business at home, but more for that of the ship-owners, to whom it is more profitable to bring home the article in its bulky than its reduced shape. The business of sugar-refining, however, for some reason difficult to conjecture, has been long regarded with very exaggerated views of its importance by European governments. It has been the practice both with ourselves and others, to encourage it by a drawback on the exportation of refined sugar, rather greater than the amount of the duties which the refiner has to pay for the use of the raw article, amounting, therefore, to a bounty. In France this was formerly carried so far, that of 40,000,000 francs, the whole amount of duty on colonial sugar in 1832, 19,000,000, were returned to the refiners.*

* (1861.) The drawback on the exportation of British refined sugar is one of the few relics of the old artificial system still in existence,

We have now gone through, I fear, in somewhat fatiguing detail, the principal points of the so-called colonial system. We have thus far directed our attention wholly to its effects on the wealth of the mother country. The result of our investigations has been, that although, under certain contingencies, and granting a variety of favourable circumstances, a country might gain by the possession of an artificially monopolized market for her manufactured commodities, yet, in actual practice, such gain is found to be almost wholly illusory; that the disadvantages of a forced trade in manufactured commodities are almost always greater than its advantages, but that to a country possessing the means of manufacturing cheaper than the rest of the world the benefit must be visionary altogether; while, in order to secure this delusive profit, we are forced to concede to our colonists a monopoly for their raw produce, which is a real and substantial loss to ourselves. It is plain, therefore, that the whole fabric is, in truth, maintained by sacrifices on our part, amounting to an enormous national expenditure.

But it is commonly urged, that if the system of monopoly were to be abandoned, the colonies protected by it must be injured, and our trade with them either crippled or totally lost; and the enormous value of the colonial trade to this country is then dwelt upon as a sufficient answer to all those who complain of the monopolies by which it is surrounded. The value of that trade is shown by numerical estimates; and when it has been proved, as it is easily proved, that a greater quantity of British manufactured goods is exported to the colonial market, in proportion to the population to be supplied, than any other, and a greater quantity of British shipping employed in the commerce, the disputants in question appear to think that sufficient proof is given of the importance

although reduced from 46s. to 17s. per cwt. since this lecture was published.

of maintaining it. Let us turn again to the pages of Sir A. Alison for illustration.

"From Mr. Porter's tables, it appears that, from 1802 to 1835, the trade of Great Britain with Europe has declined from 65 per cent. to 48 per cent. With the British colonies in America, it has increased from 18 per cent. to 26 per cent. With the United States of America, it has increased from 6 per cent. to 9 per cent., and that with India has increased from $3\frac{3}{4}$ per cent. to 5 per cent. It is perfectly clear, therefore, that the reciprocity system has had no tendency to check the serious decay which is going forward in our European trade, while the restrictive system, which is still applied with undiminished force to our colonies, at least as to their intercourse with the parent state, has had as little effect in checking the rapid and astonishing growth, both of our shipping and foreign trade, with those distant parts of the empire. Nothing but adherence to theory and insensibility to facts can enable any person to resist the conclusion, that it is in our intercourse with our colonies that the real sinews of British strength are to be found."*

I have not space to quote the rest of the passage; in which the author concludes, that our true policy lies in "cultivating, with the most assiduous care, our colonial dependencies."

There is one fallacy on the face of the numerical statements by which this argument is supported, which it may be as well to caution you against, although I do not mean to say that it materially affects the main question. Several of our colonies are important depôts for our foreign trade.

* Vol. ii. p. 368. (1861.) Such were the prophecies of 1835. If the tables subjoined to this Lecture by way of appendix are correct, it would appear that our exports to Continental Europe have increased about sixty per cent. in the last twenty years; to the American and West Indian Colonies, less than forty per cent.

Ar
for
tho
Ind
qua
to
app
exp
whi
are
acco
offic
for
from
in th
to 3
400,
that
annu
as m
whic
But
in th
man
expo
Th

Impo
Expo

Re

* Se
trating

Articles conveyed thither from Britain are reshipped for foreign parts. This takes place in two ways ; in the authorized trade and by smuggling. Some of the West India islands, especially Jamaica, send a considerable quantity of English goods, in the regular course of traffic, to the countries of the old Spanish Main. These goods appear in the account of the colony *both as imports and exports*, and swell the apparent consumption of the colony, while the real consuming country, that for which they are ultimately destined, figures for so much less in the account of exports from Britain. I have before me the official tables of revenue and population for the Colonies for 1836, the latest in print. From these the imports from Great Britain into Jamaica appear to have amounted in that year to 2,108,606*l.*; the exports from the island to 3,315,670*l.* Taking the population of Jamaica at 400,000 (rather an over estimate), it would thus appear, that each inhabitant consumed rather more than 5*l.* worth annually of British commodities ; that is, about * ten times as much as each native of the United States or Brazil, which are two of our most valuable foreign markets. But when we examine this table a little farther, we find, in the first place, that a very large proportion of the manufactured goods thus brought into Jamaica are *re-exported to South America*.

The following table comprises the principal :

	Cotton manu- factured Articles.	Iron and Steel and Hardware.	Linens.	Woollens.
Imported into Jamaica . .	497,675	100,397	231,444	65,896
Exported from Jamaica . .	273,138	12,308	47,256	7,475
Remain for consumption .	224,533	88,089	184,188	58,421

* See the Appendix to this Lecture, where will be found a table illustrating these positions.

Thus affording a considerable correction of the general result.

The next necessary deduction from the apparent consumption of British goods in the colonies is to be made on account of the unauthorized, or smuggling, trade. Of this it is obviously impossible to estimate the amount. Whether the goods which are conveyed from the British West India islands to St. Thomas and other smuggling *depôts* in the Gulf of Mexico figure as exports in our tables, I have no means of ascertaining. But it is clear that the great importation from Canada into North America, along the line of the St. Lawrence, makes no appearance at all in them. Its amount, if the representations of American manufacturers are to be believed, is very great indeed. The export of British manufactured goods to British America amounted, in 1838, to 1,992,457*l.*, or 1*l.* 7*s.* per head in proportion to the population; that direct to the United States to 7,585,760*l.* only, or about 10*s.* per head*; but how much of the former sum ought in reality to be added to the latter?

Another slight correction necessary to be made, when calculations are framed merely on the gross amount of imports from Great Britain, is for the circumstance that few articles reach foreign ports from Great Britain which are not the produce either of Great Britain or her colonies; whereas in our colonial trade we are the carriers of the produce of all nations, which appears, along with our own, under the general head of imports from Great Britain.

But these deductions, as I have said, very slightly affect the main argument. It is very true that our colonies are on the whole our best consumers, and, if the value of our trade is to be reckoned by the consumption of our produce, our best customers. But I must intreat your atten-

* See Quarterly Review, vol. xlii. p. 534.

tion once more to the principles which were laid down at the beginning of my last lecture. A customer who consumes what I produce injures instead of benefiting me, if he makes me no return, or a bad one. Now, how stands the case as to the intercourse between ourselves and those colonies whose productions we are forced by fiscal regulations to purchase?

If I am forced to carry on a traffic in which I sell cheap and buy dear,—if I buy coats with hats manufactured by myself, and, giving my own hats at the market price, am bound by contract to take the coats for twice as much as they are worth—surely I should be reckoned a strange calculator, if I persisted in estimating the value of my trade by its amount; boasted of the number of hats which I had sold, when I had parted with them for half their value, and measured the value of the coats I had purchased by setting them all down at the fictitious and exaggerated price I had agreed to give for them. Yet this is precisely, and without any exaggeration, the ordinary line of argument adopted by the advocates of the colonial system. Three millions and a half of British exports to the West Indies, in 1838, purchased less than half as much sugar and coffee as they would have purchased if carried to Cuba and Brazil. Goods to the amount of 1,750,000*l.* were therefore as completely thrown away, without remuneration, as far as Britain is concerned, as if the vessels which conveyed them had perished on the voyage. Yet this sum of 1,750,000*l.* is gravely set down, along with the remainder, as part of the annual "value of our colonial trade."

The common and popular reasonings used on this subject, therefore, turn out, as popular arguments in matters of political economy generally do, to be the merest fallacies. But there is another class of arguments sometimes employed, to which it may be desirable briefly to advert.

There is a prevalent opinion among some classes of

political economists (which I have already had occasion to mention, when considering the effects of the abstraction of capital on national wealth), that, in consequence of the rapid accumulation of capital in England, and great competition among its owners for the employment of it, the foreign trade is always carried on by us at something of a disadvantage; that the effectual demand for our commodities, and the production of those goods which are to exchange for ours, does not increase so rapidly as the supply furnished by ourselves. Some of these reasoners, consequently, argue, that preference should be given by the government to the home trade, in which the country cannot lose by this over-supply on the one part and deficiency on the other; and they appear to put the colonial trade on the same footing as the home in this respect. The following passage is extracted from the writings of one of the best known disputants on that side of the question.* “It is evident, that if the general productive powers of a commercial country increase much faster than those of the world at large with which it deals, not only does the competition of capital prevent any permanent increase of its returns, — not only does the benefit derived from its ingenuity ultimately fall to the sluggish foreigner, who is supplied with continually increasing quantities of conveniences and luxuries in return for fixed quantities of his own produce, — but, unless the industry of the foreigner is, by these advantages, stimulated to increased exertions, the improving country actually loses by its intercourse with him. Its imports will be diminishing while its exports increase; and its capitalists must be contented with diminished profits, its labourers with diminished wages. The only remedy to this state of things, which we cannot but consider to have been for some years past the condition of Britain, is to transfer the excess of its pro-

* Quarterly Review, vol. xlv. p. 24.

"ductive powers, its capital, and labour, to other spots
"on the globe possessing facilities for the production of
"those objects which it habitually imports, so as both to
"diminish the competition of its home producers, and, at
"the same time, to impart to the foreign market a portion
"of its own energy, industry, ingenuity, and spirit of im-
"provement. We may perceive from this the important
"superiority possessed by the home and colonial trades
"over the foreign; and a sufficient reason for a pre-
"ference and encouragement to be afforded, in modera-
"tion, by government to the former over the latter. The
"aggregate demand and supply of goods in the home
"and colonial markets are necessarily always on a level.
"What one British subject loses by a change in the rela-
"tions of particular commodities is gained by another;
"but, in the foreign trade, the gain may, for a very con-
"siderable period, fall exclusively to the foreigner, the
"loss to the British party."

The writer of this passage appears to me to employ two distinct lines of reasoning, in such a manner as to occasion some slight confusion. Assuming that an export trade is generally carried on at a loss, he argues, in one place, that the colonial trade is better than the foreign, because, in the latter, the foreigner gains what the Englishman loses, while, in the former, both the gainer and the loser are British subjects. Whatever the value of this reasoning may be, it is not to our present purpose, as we are merely engaged in considering the effects of the colonial trade on the wealth of the mother country. But, in another part of the same passage, he appears to contend that, although the foreign trade be carried on at a loss, the same is not necessarily the case with the colonial; because, in the latter, British industry and capital being concerned on both sides, and the colonists having the additional advantage of a fertile soil, the demand for our products may be made to keep pace with

the supply, the colonist increasing the mass of his exportable commodities at a rate which the "sluggish" foreigner cannot equal.

Now, without for one moment assenting to the supposition on which the whole of this reasoning is founded, namely, that the export and import trade of this country is less profitable than the home—in other words, that the producer knows his interest so little as to prefer selling abroad at a loss to selling to his own countryman with profit; I can nevertheless readily agree to so much of it as shows the economical advantages of colonization. In parting with a portion of our capital for the foundation of colonies (it has been repeatedly said already), we are, in effect, placing it out at interest. Applied to a new and fertile soil, it produces far more than it could produce at home; and the benefit of that superior productiveness is felt by us in an increased supply of useful commodities, for which we are able to give the produce of our own industry in exchange on favourable terms, from the strength of the demand. And when the trade between the mother country and her rising colony, unfettered by monopoly, is gainful to both, such as that between Britain and her Australian settlements, the strongest opponent of colonial dominion can assign no reason to desire the severance of the connection beyond the very slight expense which it occasions; there may be great prospective advantages in maintaining it, especially so long as it is necessary to convey a portion of the stream of emigration in that direction, a point to which we shall hereafter have particularly to attend. But when such arguments are adduced in favour of preserving commercial restrictions by which we are the losers, for the sake of maintaining our connection with colonies, we are bound to demand plain proof of the economical utility of that connection. What real reason is there for supposing that the inhabitants of any old and peopled colony,

if severed from the mother country, would augment their capital less rapidly, would produce a less rapidly increasing amount of goods to exchange for ours, would cultivate our commercial connection less assiduously, than they do at present? In considering such a question, the statesman would have to weigh the chances of the interruption of commerce between independent states from war and mercantile jealousy, against the chances of its interruption between colony and metropolis, by mutual animosity; the peril of losing a free trade by foreign competition, against that of keeping up a restricted trade under some change of circumstances which may destroy its profits and leave its burdens; the comparative effect of a state of independence and a state of subjection on the increase of national wealth in a new country. And when our supposed politician had mastered all these abstruse considerations, and struck in his own mind the balance of advantages, he would probably find the whole of his calculations confounded in practice by some unforeseen circumstance — some little cloud arising unnoticed from the sea, and overshadowing in an hour that firmament in which he had traced, to his own satisfaction, the future destinies of his people. There could be no more dangerous error, in politics, than to build up artificial fabrics, not with a view to present emergencies, but to that future which a thousand contingencies may alter in a moment: most of all, if they are built and maintained at a loss. But, in point of fact, this has never been done. The colonial system, like every other system of the kind, was constructed with a view to the present gain of particular classes: once established, it has found ingenious advocates to defend it, on the ground of prospective utility.

Experience, at all events, speaks, as far as we have any, on the opposite side. Before the American Revolution, we possessed colonies even more extensive and valuable than at present. Yet the trade with those colonies,

though a thriving one, never seems to have been in a wholly satisfactory state. It was subject, like all other trades involved in prohibitions, to the fluctuations arising from that uncertainty of supply and demand which is produced by monopoly.* And during the latter years of the connection, mutual jealousies and antipathies, more powerful even than self-interest, nearly reduced it to ruin. As soon as the connection was severed, what was the consequence? Did the industrious colonists become "sluggish foreigners," and cease to supply goods fast enough to meet the craving of the Liverpool and London markets? Was our profitable colonial trade turned into a losing foreign trade? All the world knows, on the contrary, that the commerce between the mother country and the colony was but a peddling traffic, compared to that vast international intercourse, the greatest the world has ever known, which grew up between them when they had exchanged the tie of subjection for that of equality,

ἡ φίλους ἀεὶ φίλοις
πόλεις τε πόλεσι συμμάχους τε συμμάχοις
συνδεῖ.

No one now really doubts, notwithstanding the hostile tariff of the States, that the separation of our North American colonies has been, in an economical sense, advantageous to us. And yet precisely the same arguments are current at this very day respecting the superior profit of colonial commerce, and the wealth arising from colonial domination, which were in every one's mouth before that great event had occurred, and, by its results, confounded all such calculations. So easily does our reason contrive to forget the strongest lessons, or to evade their force, when prejudice and love of power warp it in the contrary direction.

* Say, Cours, iii. 438.

It remains for me to notice, under my present head, one more mode in which it has been supposed that colonies may be made serviceable to the mother country; namely, by furnishing a revenue, or tribute.

After the various arguments and details into which we have entered, I need not caution you against a fallacy which is occasionally employed, but only by the most superficial reasoners on these subjects; I mean the speaking of duties levied on the importation of colonial products as so much revenue furnished by those colonies. For example: probably you, as well as myself, may have occasionally seen the 4,000,000*l.* which are annually raised by the duty on West India sugar represented as a tribute from the West Indies; and inferences raised as to the enormous value of those colonies. A more ludicrous misrepresentation cannot be imagined. We have already seen, that if the colonial monopoly were abolished, or the West India colonies no longer in our possession, we might still raise 4,000,000*l.* on sugar, and save, in all probability, a million by the diminution of price—consumption remaining the same. So that, instead of receiving a tribute of four millions from the planters, we, in effect, pay them a tribute of one. But without attending to such mistakes or sophistries, let us consider the substantial question before us.

It is, of course, a conceivable case, that the revenues drawn by a government from a colony, as well as from any other possession, may be made to exceed its expenditure, and thus afford a surplus, or tribute. But there are two reasons which render such a result highly improbable; namely, the greater cost of governing a colony, and the greater difficulty of raising a revenue in it. With regard to the first: so long as the colony is to be governed by functionaries, and defended by soldiers and sailors, drawn from the mother country, the cost of their transport must be added to the general

expenditure; and in addition to this, the higher salaries and greater pay which those employed by government on foreign service always require. Although the necessities of life may sometimes be cheap in a colony, luxuries, and all imported articles, are invariably dear. Every soldier in the French colonies costs, according to M. Say, twice as much as if he had remained at home; and I believe the proportion is rather higher in our own service. Civil functionaries must be well paid; because, without securing the services of a good class of functionaries, it is impossible to prevent speculation and misconduct in localities far removed from the superintendence of ordinary discipline and public opinion. Almost every item of public expenditure is higher, many much higher, in the colonies than at home.

As to the second of these causes: taxes are raised ultimately either from general profits, wages, or monopoly profits; that is, rent. Profits and wages being usually high in new countries, may seem, at first sight, to be fit subjects for taxation. Yet it is impossible to carry it far without ruining a colony; because, if this were done, capital would speedily leave the settlement, and emigration to it would cease. In an old country, capitalists will endure a considerable amount of taxation rather than break the connections which attach them to it. But when men have moved to a new one, simply for the sake of obtaining a more ample return for their industry, it would be impossible to tie them and their riches to the soil if any considerable proportion of that return were forcibly taken from them. To this subject we shall revert hereafter.

There remains the resource of monopoly profits, or rent. Comparatively little harm would be done to colonial industry by the raising of a revenue to any amount if it fell wholly on this source. If government were to monopolize the whole surplus produce of the land of a

co
pr
pl
du
mo
un
if
rev
is
the
pre
pre
by
the
bet
mo
cou
mo
a v
this
the
men
to
tors
all
that
Cub
*
The
figur

Bu
figur
effect

country—as is usual in the East—no direct injury to production would follow; it would merely stand in the place of the landlords, and consume its share of the produce much as they would have consumed it. But in most colonies (wherein, that is, the extent of fertile and unoccupied land is considerable) rent is necessarily low, if not unknown altogether, and can furnish no source of revenue. The principal exception to this general rule is where the colony possesses peculiar advantages for the production of any commodity. Let us take the precious metals for an instance. The value of the precious metals in Europe, at any period, is regulated by the cost of extracting and transporting them *from the least productive mines then worked*. The difference between the produce of the least productive and the more productive mines is rent. If, therefore, in any country the mines are uniformly, or for the most part, more productive than elsewhere, that country must yield a very great amount of rent, or surplus produce. Now this, as I mentioned in a former lecture, was precisely the case with Mexico under the old Spanish government; and, accordingly, that province seems not only to have furnished enormous rents to its landed proprietors, but a very considerable revenue, over and above all its expenditure, to the crown of Spain. It is said that the same power derives a considerable tribute from Cuba and Porto Rico at the present time.* And in our

* I have found it difficult to ascertain the real amount of this tribute. The *Annuaire des Deux Mondes*, 1858-9, p. 551, gives the following figures:—

	Expenses (in Piastres).		Receipts.
Cuba . . .	25,316,041	.	25,395,904
Porto Rico . .	2,568,353	.	2,604,634
Philippines . .	10,452,728	.	10,017,341

But it is pretty obvious from the nearness of the balance that these figures are attained by some artificial mode of computation; and, in effect, the same authority adds that the expense placed to the account

own Australian colonies—although we are far from receiving a tribute from them, the expenditure still very greatly exceeding the income—the latter is, comparatively speaking, very large. The very high amount of public contributions is owing, in part, to the great profits lately made by the use of the soil for sheep-farming, on which much of the taxation imposed ultimately falls.

These, however, are extraordinary cases. In general, it has been found, not only that colonies have not afforded a surplus revenue to the mother country, but that the latter has maintained their public establishments by very large contributions of her own. By an Act passed in the eighteenth year of George III. England bound herself not to levy any taxes or duties on the colonies, except for their own use; a provision which circumstances have rendered somewhat nugatory, since our settlements have only recently paid their own civil establishments, and none have defrayed the extra military expense of protecting them.

There is, however, yet another manner in which colonies, of which the soil yields rent, may furnish a tribute or revenue to the mother country. This is by remittances to absentee proprietors, resident in the latter. Undoubtedly a considerable amount has been, in prospe-

of Cuba comprises many items really domestic. On the other hand, in the Spanish budget for 1860 and 1861, the net receipts from the colonies are estimated at 139,000,000 reals = nearly 2,600,000*l.* (*Revue des Deux Mondes.*) But whatever the amount of revenue really yielded by Cuba to Spain may be, it clearly falls on what are described in the text as "monopoly profits." Those earned in Cuba must be very great indeed. If the tables can be trusted, this single island must raise more sugar than the British and French West Indies together. It does so through slavery and the slave trade. And it can well afford to pay to the mother country a certain proportion of its monopoly gains by way of tribute for defending it. So (to some slight extent) did the English West Indies in the most flourishing period of their monopoly. To argue from this unique instance to the practicability of deriving revenue from other colonies would be an error.

rous times, transmitted in this way annually to England from our West India islands; of which many of the landowners are non-resident, and mortgages are held by English capitalists on the estates of many more. The imports from the West Indies averaged, for some years before 1840, upwards of 8,000,000*l.* in value. The exports to them, little more than 4,000,000*l.** A very large proportion of this excess of imports over exports consists of produce sent here for the payment of rents and interest of mortgages due in England. I scarcely need remind you, after what has been said in my last lecture on the subject of absenteeism, that there could not be a greater error than to regard the whole of this sum, whatever it may be, as so much annually added to our national income.† A portion of it is exchanged for British manufactured articles, a portion for foreign manufactured articles, used by the owner resident in England. But if that owner had resided in Jamaica he would equally have consumed those manufactures, both English and foreign. The gain, therefore, on this portion accrues only from the circumstance of the *act of consumption taking place in England*; which, in one sense, may be said to render this country richer, as was explained in my last lecture; but the productive industry of England gains nothing, so far, by the owner's residence here. But the true addition to our revenue, or rather to our national income, consists in that portion of the West Indian produce so imported which, if the landlord had remained at home, would have been consumed by him there, or ex-

* To take a single year, 1833, by way of criterion. The exports from the whole West Indies in that year was 8,448,000*l.*; imports, 3,941,000*l.*

† See Malthus, Political Economy, p. 390. "I see no difference " between a *present from abroad* and the unusual profits of a new foreign " trade, in their effects upon the wealth of a state. They are equally " calculated to increase the wealth of a community, by an increase both " of the quantity and value of the produce obtained."

changed for foreign commodities, but, in consequence of his residence in England, is exchanged for English commodities. In his own country he would have fed his negro menial servants on North American flour and fish, while his English servants consume English provisions; his house would have been built and repaired by the labour of negroes, consuming West Indian or American products, instead of English masons and carpenters; West Indian shop-keepers, instead of English, would have subsisted on the profits of retail dealing with him, and they, too, in part, would have consumed West Indian or American produce. All these items, be they great or small (it is impossible exactly to calculate their amount, but we should probably err in estimating it very high), constitute the gain which the domiciling country obtains from foreign sojourners, and which may, in one sense, be termed a tribute. In the case of the West India colonies, it ought to be admitted as a set-off against the annual expenditure which they cause.

The amount of that expenditure which Great Britain is annually called on to incur on behalf of her colonies, over and above their own revenues, although it has been much exaggerated by opposers of the colonial system, is still very great. By a parliamentary paper of the session of 1835, it appears that the total charge on our revenue, on account of their military, naval, and civil establishments, amounted to 2,360,000*l*. To this must be added, in fairness, the annual loss to this country occasioned, as before explained, by the colonial monopolies, chiefly those of sugar and timber, which is estimated apparently on reasonable grounds, at two millions more; and the charge which we have recently incurred for the liberation of our colonial slaves, is not less than 600,000*l*. or 700,000*l*. per annum. If we were to add to these sums the cost of the wars of which our colonies have furnished the direct cause, the account against us would be enormous indeed.

" F
" b
" c
" v
" v
" n
" p
" o
" h
tha
occ
gre
I
tho
wh
of t
of p
colo
crip
stra

* (C
retur
exper
not m
exper
to th
one o
total
Mess
this v
freigh
broug
1,100
coloni
the Ca
lectur

' Re

"By the war of 1739 (said Lord Sheffield), which may be truly called an American contest, we incurred a debt of upwards of 31,000,000*l.*; by the war of 1755, we incurred a further debt of 71,500,000*l.*; and by the war of the revolt we have added to both these debts nearly 100,000,000*l.* more. And thus we have expended a far larger sum in defending and retaining our colonies than the value of all the merchandise we have ever sent them." This, however, is rhetoric rather than argument: it is hard to set down as expenditure occasioned by our colonies, sums of which by far the greater part was spent to gratify our own pugnacity.*

But this is a digression from my present subject; though it can hardly be considered an inapposite one, when it is remembered how large a portion of our wars of the last century were undertaken chiefly with the view of protecting and strengthening that very trade with our colonies which, I have endeavoured to show you, we were crippling and injuring all the while by the manifold restraints of our prohibitive system. And the true ground

* (1861.) Imperial expenditure on the colonies by Parliamentary return of 1857, 4,115,000*l.* But this included the whole of the *convict* expenditure, as well as the military, marine, &c., and is, therefore, of not much use for our purpose. It may, however, be said that the *civil* expenditure of Great Britain on account of her colonies is now confined to the salaries of some West India governors, and the maintenance of one or two trifling settlements which do not pay their expenses. Her total *military* expenditure, on account of the colonies, is estimated by Messrs. Hamilton, Godley, and Elliot, in 1857-8, at 3,600,000¹: but this very large return includes several charges, such as transport and freight, "proportion of departmental expense," &c., not heretofore brought into account. From this sum should be deducted about 1,100,000*l.* for the Mediterranean and other garrisons not properly colonial. Out of the residue, 2,500,000*l.*, 800,000*l.* were absorbed by the Cape colony alone. See, on this head, some remarks in subsequent lectures.

¹ Report of Committee on Expense of Military Defences in the Colonies, 1859.

on which that system is still defended by many of its supporters is, that the favour thus afforded to the colonies (for the effect of the system, as I have endeavoured to point out, is now almost confined to the affording favour to them) tends to keep them in connection with the mother country; a notion which I do not believe to be well founded, but which, if it be, affords indeed a political justification for maintaining the system, but not an economical one. The misfortune is, that its supporters will not be satisfied with putting its vindication on their own real ground. They cannot be content without maintaining that the country gains by it, in the immediate course of commercial transactions, as well as in respect of the maintenance of the national defence and supremacy. And those whose reasons could not be persuaded of the reality the commercial gain, long had to submit to the imputation of entertaining novel theories and un-English sentiments; as if the economical defence of the system were necessarily involved in the political, and the principles of Malthus and Ricardo were inseparably connected with those of Franklin and Bentham. You, I am sure, will learn to despise this foolish and vulgar outcry. There is no novelty in the plain and simple arguments which show the mischief of restrictions on trade; but if they were novel, they would not be the less cogent. There is nothing un-English in pointing out the fact, that England suffers a certain loss by the maintenance of a particular system: but if it were otherwise, love of country is a poor substitute in inquiry for love of truth.

But these are considerations which need but little concern us now. The rapid tide of sublunary events is carrying us inevitably past that point at which the maintenance of colonial systems and navigation laws was practicable, whether it were desirable or no. We are borne helplessly along with the current; we may struggle

and protest, and marvel why the barriers which ancient forethought had raised against the stream now bend like reeds before its violence, but we cannot change our destiny. The monopoly of the West India islands cannot stand; and its fall will be followed by the crash of those minor monopolies which subsisted along with it; for the branches of the colonial system were nearly connected with each other. And when these are gone, the same curious result will follow which has attended the overthrow of so many other institutions and systems, political and intellectual, which have held for their respective periods a powerful sway over the minds of men. All the theories which have been founded on it by induction, or raised on baseless assumptions, in order to support it,—all the volumes of statistical facts, tortured into arguments,—all the records of the eloquence or the reasoning by which it has been defended, which once were in vogue with the million, which swayed senates and silenced captious objectors, and governed and delighted the public mind,—will pass with it into nothingness, or speak to us as it were in a dead language. Let us look back a few years, and ask where are the monuments of all the zeal and ingenuity which were once vented in defence of the Slave Trade? or of the Stuart succession? or in opposing the mitigation of the penal code? Buried together with the learning which was expended on the topics of witchcraft, alchemy, astrology, and the Ptolemæan system. I do not make these comparisons in any sneering or critical spirit, but merely from the illustration they afford of the dependence of that vanity of vanities, the fame of human speculations, on the durability of the subject or the cause which gives origin to them. We stand, in respect of economical philosophy, as well as other matters, on the very verge of time, between two distinct eras. I do not say that we are wiser than our predecessors; but circum-

stances have thrown a new light on the subject-matter of our studies; and, whatever theories may occupy the thoughts of a future generation, of one thing we may be sure,—that the shadowy arguments by which commercial prohibitions have been so long defended will be remembered only as ingenious and worthless disputations on imaginary premises.*

NOTE TO LECTURE VIII.

ON COLONIAL TRADE (1842).

SINCE this Lecture was delivered, an attempt has been made to place the relative value of Foreign and Colonial Trade in a new light, by Colonel Torrens, in his publication entitled "The Budget." The view of the subject taken by this distinguished economist is,—that any country, by imposing a duty on the goods of another, has the power of attracting to herself a greater proportion of the precious metals, raising the price of her own commodities, and lowering that of the commodities of the country in question. And hence Colonel Torrens deduces the

* (1860.) The last remnants of the old system of differential duties on colonial produce were swept away, so far as this country is concerned, by the equalization of duties on colonial and foreign sugar (1854) and timber (1860). And disquisitions such as those contained in this lecture now possess little more than an historical interest; and that, perhaps, only for those who still remember the heat and vehemence of a by-gone controversy. But France and Spain still maintain the principles of protection with more or less of rigour as regards their colonial trade. The exportation of produce elsewhere than to France is subject to prohibitions, varying in the different colonies. Holland has made great advances towards free trade by her commercial laws of 1860. Nevertheless it would appear from M'Culloch's Commercial Dictionary that differential duties to the amount of fifty per cent. were still levied in Java on manufactured articles imported from foreign places.

conclusion, that hostile tariffs should be met by retaliatory duties, and the trade with our colonies left free; in short, that the old colonial system should be maintained, so long as our foreign customers cannot be induced to deal with us on terms of perfect reciprocity. "The prosperity of the country cannot be arrested by the hostile tariffs of foreign rivals, if England will establish throughout her wide-spread empire a British commercial league -- a colonial Zollverein."

I am not aware that any political economist has ever disputed the proposition, -- that when one country imposes an unfavourable tariff upon the goods of another, a disturbance of the distribution of the precious metals is produced, to the disadvantage of the country of which the commodities are taxed; at least in the first instance. To maintain the contrary would be to maintain that a country suffers nothing by the imposition of duties on her produce in foreign markets. But the extent to which Colonel Torrens carries his doctrine is so unusual, and the consequences he deduces from it are so startling, as to have attracted considerable attention to his arguments.

"By the abstraction of money from one country," says Mr. Ricardo *, "and the accumulation of it in another, all commodities are affected in price; and consequently encouragement is given to the exportation of many more commodities besides money, which will, therefore, prevent so great an effect from taking place on the value of money in the two countries as might otherwise be expected. Besides the improvements in arts and machinery, there are various other causes which are constantly operating on the natural course of trade, and which interfere with the equilibrium and the relative value of money. Bounties on exportation or importation, new taxes on commodities, sometimes by their direct and at other times by their indirect operation, disturb the natural trade of barter, and produce a consequent necessity of importing or exporting money, in order that prices may be accommodated to the natural course of commerce; and the effect is produced, not only in the country where the disturbing cause takes place, but in a greater or less degree in every country of the commercial world."

It appears to be on the foundation of this passage, and

* In his Chapter on Foreign Trade (p. 170, 1st. edit.)

generally of the well-known chapter from which it is extracted, that the theory of Colonel Torrens is raised. And I will proceed to state it, as nearly as my room will serve, in his own words; hoping that I may not render it unintelligible by compression:—

1. "When commercial countries receive the productions of each other duty free, then (the efficacy of labour being the same in each) the precious metals will be distributed among them in equal proportions, and the general scale of prices will be the same in each.

2. "When any particular country imposes import duties upon the productions of other countries, while those other countries continue to receive her products duty free, then such particular country draws to herself a larger proportion of the precious metals, maintains a higher range of general prices, than her neighbours, and obtains, in exchange for the produce of a given quantity of her labour, the produce of a greater quantity of foreign labour.

3. "When any country is deprived of that command over the precious metals which is due to the efficacy of her labour in producing articles for the foreign market, by the hostile tariffs of other countries, she may recover her due command of the precious metals, by imposing retaliatory and equivalent duties upon the importation of the productions of the countries by which the hostile tariffs are maintained.

4. "When, from foreign rivalry and hostile tariffs, a country begins to lose a portion of her former command over the metals, and to experience a contraction of the currency, a fall in prices, in profits, and in wages, and a falling off in the revenue; then, the lowering of import duties upon the productions of countries retaining their hostile tariffs, instead of affording relief, would aggravate the general distress by occasioning a more rapid abstraction of the metals, and a deeper decline in prices, in profits, in wages, and in the revenue, accompanied not by a diminution, but by an increase, in the real extent of taxation."

This doctrine may be illustrated by a supposed instance, which I will also give in the language of Colonel Torrens; having merely changed his imaginary parties from England and France to England and Cuba.

Let us assume, in the first instance, that labour is applied

with equal effect in England and in Cuba; that, in consequence, the metals are distributed in equal proportions throughout the two countries; and that the commerce carried on consists in the exchange of cloth, worth in England 1,000,000*l.*, for sugar, worth in Cuba, 1,000,000*l.* This being the previous state of things, let us assume further, that, while England receives the sugar of Cuba duty free, Cuba imposes a duty of 50 per cent. on English cloth. The effects of this duty would be to alter the distribution of the metals in favour of Cuba, and, consequently, to raise prices in that country, and to lower them in England. The process would be as follows:—In Cuba, the price of English cloth would be increased by the amount of the duty, and its consumption in that country diminished in a corresponding degree; while in England, *in the first instance*, the price of Cuba sugar would not be enhanced, and the consumption would, consequently, continue as before.

The result of these changes would be, that England would not now send to Cuba such a quantity of cloth as would pay for the sugar she received, and would be compelled to discharge a part of her foreign debt by a transmission of bullion. This would *raise* prices in Cuba, and *depress* prices in England. In England, there would be less money applicable to the consumption of sugar, and the consumption of the article would gradually diminish. In Cuba, there would be more and more money applicable to the purchase of cloth, and the consumption of cloth would gradually increase. And these processes would continue until the quantity of cloth sent to Cuba again became sufficient to pay for the quantity of sugar received, and until no further transmission of the metals should be required. But when the commerce between the two countries should thus be restored to a trade of barter, the precious metals would no longer be equally distributed between them, and the scale of prices would be higher in Cuba than in England.

In discussing these views of Colonel Torrens, it appears important to consider, in the first place, whether their truth would be at all affected by the omission of the precious metals from the supposed case. Let us examine how the imposition of a duty of 50 per cent. on English goods in Cuba would affect trade, and the exchangeable value of commodities, if the commerce were entirely carried on by barter; all other assumptions being the same as before.

Suppose that Cuba lays on a duty of 50 per cent. on English cloth, or, in other words, that the government retains one bale for its own use out of every three imported. *Supposing the demand for Cuba sugar to continue in England as before*, it is evident that Cuba sugar will no longer be bought directly with English goods, if it can be bought circuitously with English goods through the intervention of the produce of other countries. England will buy Cuba sugar, say with French silks, by exchanging cloth for silks, and exporting the silks to Cuba. But inasmuch as the demand for English cloth in France at its present exchangeable value is fully supplied, England can export no more cloth thither, except by submitting to a reduction of the exchangeable value of English cloth as compared with French silks. England must buy a smaller quantity of French silks with the same quantity of English cloth as before. England must next carry the silks so purchased to Cuba, to exchange for sugar. But the demand in Cuba for French silks, at their present exchangeable value as compared with Cuba sugar, is already supplied. Therefore, in order that more French silks may be taken by Cuba, their price, estimated in Cuba sugar, must fall. The result, therefore, of the whole transaction is, that English cloth falls in exchangeable value relatively to French silks, and French silks fall in exchangeable value relatively to Cuba sugar. When this has been accomplished, the trade between England and Cuba continues on a new footing, and one disadvantageous to the former country.

It will be perceived at once that the commodity which I have here called French silks is affected precisely in the same manner and proportion as the precious metals introduced by Colonel Torrens into his argument. And if my views are correct, precisely the same effects *would* be produced by a duty imposed by one country on the productions of another, whether the precious metals existed or not.*

This being the case, let us now revert to the supposition excluding the precious metals, and assume that a third country, Brazil, also produces sugar in sufficient quantities to supply the

* Of course I am omitting from consideration the effects which would be produced by the lowering of money prices on existing public and private contracts, and the national credit. These are important practical features of the subject, but have nothing to do with the speculative doctrine.

English demand, but that Brazil sugar is 5 per cent. dearer than Cuba: that is, that if 100 bales of English cloth sell for 100 cwt. of Cuba sugar, 105 bales of English cloth will only obtain 100 cwt. of Brazil sugar. If the quantity afforded by Cuba is sufficient to supply the English consumption, it follows of course that no sugar from Brazil is imported into England so long as free trade between England and Cuba continues. But as soon as the new tariff has been established, and English cloth begins to fall in relation to French silks, English cloth begins also to fall in relation to Brazil sugar. And as soon as Cuba sugar begins to rise in relation to French silks, it begins also to rise in relation to Brazil sugar. Under this double alteration of circumstances, the point is very soon reached at which Brazil sugar comes into competition with Cuba sugar in the English market. And if the Cuba tariff is persisted in, the effect must very soon be, that Cuba sugar is entirely driven out of the field, and Brazil sugar supplies its place. England loses to the amount of 5 per cent. at the utmost on the exchangeable value of her cloth, by its exclusion from the ports of the cheapest sugar-growing country; but the foreign commerce of Cuba is absolutely ruined.

And I confess that I do not see in what way the introduction of the precious metals can vary the supposition. It appears to me that gold and silver would then occupy precisely the same place in the argument which I have assigned to French silks, and be subject to exactly the same laws. Suppose that, before the tariff is imposed, cloth is worth 20s. per bale in England, sugar 20s. per cwt. in Cuba: 1,000,000 bales of cloth exchange for 1,000,000 cwt. of sugar. Brazil sugar cannot be sold under 21s. per cwt. so as to repay the cost of production, and does not reach the English market at all. The effect of the imposition of the tariff is, that Cuba sugar is purchased by England with gold obtained for cloth, instead of directly with cloth as heretofore; and it follows, says Colonel Torrens, that *the money price of Cuba sugar rises*. But as soon as the price of Cuba sugar rises above 21s., Brazil sugar immediately becomes the cheaper of the two, and competes successfully with it in the English market. Nor is this all. It appears to me that, upon Colonel Torrens' supposition, not only the price of Cuba sugar would rise, but the price of Brazil sugar would fall. The Brazil grower cannot afford, in the first instance, to sell his sugar at 20s. per cwt.,

because with 20s. he cannot purchase English cloth enough to repay him the cost of production. But as soon as English cloth fell in price, as by Colonel Torrens' supposition it soon would do, 5 per cent., the Brazilian grower would be able to obtain for 20s. a sufficient quantity of English cloth for that purpose. Thus, I cannot but think, the price of Brazil sugar would fall accordingly.

Thus, whether we introduce, or do not introduce, the precious metals into our supposition, the same commercial causes—the rise in exchangeable value of the commodities of Cuba, and the fall in exchangeable value of the commodities of England—would soon bring into play the competition of the *next cheapest* country producing the same commodities as Cuba. The imaginary country which I have called Brazil, without altering in any respect her existing tariff with England, whatever that may have been, would reap the real benefit of that imposed by Cuba. And, therefore, if we were to allow the theory of Colonel Torrens its fullest operation, the effect of the whole transaction would merely be a slight loss to England on her export trade, and the total destruction of the English trade of Cuba, if she persisted in maintaining that hostile duty by means of which the Colonel represents that she is to “obtain, in exchange for the produce “of a given quantity of her labour, the produce of a greater “quantity of foreign labour.”

And surely this would be the practical result, if any nation possessing only the ordinary commercial advantages should endeavour to improve her position by excluding from her markets the goods of her customers. It is idle to inquire what might be the effects of such a policy, pursued by a country possessing *exclusive* facilities for the production of any commodity, and that an *indispensable* commodity to other countries; for in the present state of the commercial world the idea of such a monopoly is visionary. And it is almost equally idle to examine into the effects of such prohibitory duties, if they were simultaneously adopted and put in practice by all the foreign nations with which we deal. If they were, what possible advantage should we obtain by retaliatory duties, the imposition of which is the policy recommended by Colonel Torrens? No one can deny that a hostile tariff produces evil to our industry. None but a very determined adherent to system will deny that a retaliatory tariff may *sometimes* be the best means of bringing a refractory customer to his

senses. But the admission of these partial truths will in no degree damage the great conclusions of the doctrines of free trade: that the country which imposes prohibitory duties on foreign productions injures itself in the long run more than its rival; and that the country which retaliates, and persists in retaliation as a permanent policy, injures itself in the long run more than the original aggressor.

Still less would these conclusions justify the British statesman in encouraging colonial at the expense of foreign trade. As I have endeavoured to show in these Lectures, the "colonial system" is one of which the advantages in the present state of the world almost entirely result to the colonies,—the losses to the mother country. Under such circumstances there would certainly be very little difficulty in forming and maintaining a "colonial Zollverein" on the grandest imaginable scale. Many an independent state would gain, commercially speaking, by surrendering its sovereignty, and becoming enlisted in the catalogue of British dependencies. But every extension of such a commercial league could take place only at the expense of additional burdens on British industry, and additional loss to British consumers, if the products of the regions comprised in it required protection in order to enable them to compete with foreign products in the British market.

APPENDIX TO LECTURE VIII.

No. I.—A TABLE, showing the Quantity of the principal British Manufactures exported to different Countries in 1838.

	Population. (In round Numbers.)	Cotton manu- factured Goods.	Woollens.	Hardware and Outdry.	Total Manu- factures. (De- clared Value.)	Proportion per Head.
		£	£	£	£	£
North American Colonies	1,400,000	417,796	359,632	76,794	1,992,457	1 1/2
West Indies	1,000,000	993,283	95,412	85,169	3,393,441	3 8/10
Cape of Good Hope	150,000	206,608	64,778	22,660	623,323	4 3/10
Australia	130,000	195,236	104,120	44,739	1,336,662	10 5/10
Mauritius	90,000	169,986	-	12,930	467,342	5 3/10
France	32,000,000	1,992,909	523,942	242,292	7,813,225	0 1/10
Holland and Germany	36,000,000	220,297	53,708	58,655	2,314,141	0 4/10
Russia	55,000,000	5,828,947	1,034,405	118,083	8,548,329	0 0/10
Portugal, and Islands	3,800,000	1,301,339	94,419	36,830	1,663,243	0 0/10
Italy	21,000,000	772,648	224,383	13,875	1,238,727	0 6/10
United States	15,000,000	2,005,585	258,157	49,598	3,076,231	0 2/10
Foreign West Indies	1,500,000	1,476,267	1,854,266	661,704	7,585,760	0 10/10
Brazil	6,500,000	523,259	65,822	51,973	1,025,392	0 15/10
		1,659,152	228,932	51,570	2,606,604	0 8/10

** The reader will find a slightly different calculation in the *Colonial Gazette* for May 20, 1840.

No. II.

A TABLE, showing the comparative Amount of Exports of Articles of the Manufacture and Produce of the United Kingdom to foreign Countries, and to the principal Colonies, in the Years 1839 and 1844, and the Average of the Five Years, 1839—1844, (real or declared value) in pounds sterling. Collected from M'Culloch's Commercial Dictionary: Imports.

	<i>Average of the Five Years 1839-44.</i>	<i>Average of the Five Years 1853-57.</i>
Europe . . .	£23,100,000	£37,000,000
Asia . . .	8,000,000	13,000,000
Africa . . .	1,500,000	5,500,000
North American Colonies	2,700,000	4,400,000
British West Indies .	3,000,000	2,000,000
Rest of America .	12,900,000	32,000,000
Australia . . .	1,300,000	10,900,000

*Average of Imports into the United Kingdom from certain Parts of the
World for the Three Years 1856—58.*

From Russia	£12,200,000
France	12,100,000
Spanish West Indies . . .	3,300,000
Brazil	2,700,000
United States	35,000,000
North American Colonies .	6,000,000
British West Indies . . .	6,700,000
Australia	5,600,000
East Indies and Ceylon . .	20,000,000

PART III.

PROGRESS OF WEALTH AND SOCIETY IN COLONIES.

Y
a
c
c
a
s
li
fe
ce
w
ce
ha
“
“
an
on
se
fir
pe
fal
sac
col

LECTURE IX.

SCARCITY OF LABOUR IN NEW COLONIES; ITS EFFECTS ON THE PROGRESS
OF WEALTH.

I PROCEED, in the next place, to enter upon the more important division of my subject—the economical development of colonies, and the causes by which their advance may be retarded or accelerated.

In doing this, it will be necessary that I should pass over for the present the practical difficulties which always occur in the first foundation of such establishments, and consider the young community as already launched. On a future occasion we may, perhaps, be able to enter into some details respecting the first steps which are preliminary to the formation of new settlements. It is, I fear, next to impossible, that any first experiment in colonization should succeed; if history be consulted, it will be found that, in modern times, none ever has succeeded, in the way and at the rate which its projectors have expected. “Of the colonies planted in modern “times,” says Mr. Wakefield, “more have perished than “have prospered.” Either they have failed altogether, and it has been necessary to commence the work afresh, or they have struggled into prosperity through a long series of privations and discouragements. Far from the first settlers on a new soil being the most amply recompensed for their labours, they have almost invariably fallen victims in the cause, and served only by their own sacrifice to promote the success of some new band of colonists. “The moral and mechanical habits,” says

Malthus, "adapted to the mother country, are frequently "not so to the new settled one, and to external events, "many of which are unforeseen; and it is to be remarked, that none of the English colonies became very "considerable till the necessary manners were born and "grew up in the country."* Neither courage nor intelligence, nor ample means, nor unwearied enterprise, seem to serve as substitutes for that appreciation of circumstances, that practical adaptation of his means to the proposed end, which experience only gives to the emigrant. His mind, as well as his body, must become acclimatized before his industry can be really effective, or his operations well directed; and some years must generally pass before either the one or the other object is attained. This subject, however, I must for the present pass over; merely remarking, that it is impossible to place in too strong a light the errors which our national jealousy and contracted views have imported into our popular theories of colonization. It has long been a subject of complaint with us, that of our poorer class of emigrants who go to Canada, so large a proportion invariably find their way, after the first winter, or earlier, across the frontier into the United States. Had it been practicable, we should, doubtless, long ago have prevented this second emigration, and forced them to locate themselves, raw and unprepared, in the forests of our own provinces. We ought to be able to appreciate more justly the great value to us of a country like the United States, where there is an active demand for labour in the old settled districts, in close juxta-position to our North American possessions. In this way a great number of persons, who would be really useless to our colonies in the outset, are annually drafted off. By their apprenticeship as labourers on public works, or as hired workmen in the better inhabited parts of the country, they acquire

* Essay on Population, vol. iii. chap. 4.

some degree of experience in its habits, and become more fitted for the wilderness; while our own unoccupied and fertile lands attract those settlers, both British and American, who have acquired somewhat of the necessary experience, and are fit to begin the work of civilization*; and the experience of very recent years has shown that this tendency to re-emigration from Canada to the United States is by no means constant, but depends as might be expected on the demand of labour in the latter. Each country serves, to a certain extent, as a reservoir to receive the overflow of the unoccupied population in the other.

Let us however, for the present, regard these difficulties as subdued, and reflect on the principal causes which tend to produce the prosperity of new settlements. Adam Smith disposes of the subject briefly enough, attributing that prosperity to one great cause, economically speaking, "plenty of good land." The abundance of produce, he says, at once induces the landlord to collect labour from all quarters, and enables him to reward that labour by high wages; and the labourer is speedily enabled to become independent, invest his accumulated capital in land, and employ other labourers in turn.

The fundamental principles of the subject cannot be better expressed than they are by this great writer, in the well-known passage which I have here briefly condensed. But a very little reflection will convince us how necessary it is to take into consideration many other circumstances, before we can arrive at the full comprehension of it.

* Before the gold discoveries, the principal emigration from England was directed to the United States and the Australian colonies; from Scotland to Upper Canada, Nova Scotia, and Cape Breton; from Ireland to Canada and Newfoundland. But of the emigrants from the latter country, a great number chose the Canada passage merely as the cheapest way of reaching the United States.

Land, however rich, is of very little value to the owner without capital to cultivate it. The soil on which some of our first American colonists landed, when the primitive forest was removed, was prodigiously fertile—as fertile as that of the Western states of this day. It was to be had for nothing in the state of forest; but it cost from 3*l.* to 4*l.* to clear a single acre of it, principally expended in labour. Of the first settlers, few were rich enough to command so much of the labour of others as was necessary to execute this operation to any extent; they wasted their strength in insulated efforts; they perished, therefore, miserably: ten or twenty thousand settlers are said to have landed in Virginia in the latter years of Elizabeth; and in the reign of James I., Virginia had to be colonized anew.

Land and capital are both useless unless labour can be commanded. When the colony at Swan River was founded, magnificent grants were made to the chief contributor, Mr. Peel: he took out with him, it is said, 50,000*l.*, and 300 individuals of the labouring classes; but they were all fascinated by the prospect of obtaining land in a country where the preliminary labour of clearing is unusually slight; and in a short while he was left without a servant to make his bed, or to fetch him water from the river.

These, it may be said, are instances taken from the very beginning of infant settlements; such errors are likely to be avoided in their farther progress. If a judicious system of co-operation were put in practice, so that no labour or capital were wasted, a much smaller amount of both would be requisite to produce the desired results; and “plenty of good land” would be, what Adam Smith represents it, nearly the one thing needful. This is undoubtedly true; but we must deal with men such as we find them. We must remember, that the leading desire of every man who seeks a home in

the wilderness is to make himself independent. It may be that, as men are wont to reconcile as far as they can their views of interest and their inclinations, he believes, that in so doing he will best further his other great object, the acquisition of wealth. But experience teaches us that this is often a delusion. If Mr. Peel's labourers had remained with him, they might in a short time have accumulated earnings sufficient to commence the career of landowners under the most favourable circumstances. As it was, many perished, some returned to England, and only a few, after long struggles, attained at last a state of comparative ease. And similar causes will continue to produce similar, although less striking, effects in the whole course of colonization; that is, until a country is peopled up to that average mark which we vaguely designate as "full." So long as abundance of good land is to be had for little, so long it is the apparent interest of the farmer, as well as most suitable to his inclination, to exhaust that which he occupies, and then to remove to a fresh spot, instead of endeavouring to improve his original farm. "When you talk to the "American farmers," says Mr. Stuart, "of the necessity "of manuring with a view to preserve the fertility of "the soil, they almost uniformly tell you, that the expense of labour renders it far more expedient for them, "as soon as their repeated cropping very much diminishes "the quantity of the grain, to lay down the land in grass, "or make a purchase of new land in the neighbourhood, "or even to sell their cleared land and proceed in quest "of a new settlement, than to adopt a system of rotation "of crops assisted by manure." In short, there are two principles constantly at work: the desire of obtaining land, which is hostile to all combination of labour; the natural diminution in the fertility of occupied land, which continually urges its possessors to change it for fresh. Where these prevail, there must be great obstacles in

the way of accumulation of capital, and of the raising of surplus produce, and a constant tendency of the population towards barbarism by their dispersion; each settler, as he advances in the wilderness, leaving behind him whole tracts which he considers as unprofitable, or which he has rendered so by exhausting them.

These premises are, undoubtedly, true. We must next examine the deductions which have been drawn from them by the new school of writers on colonization, who have thrown, of late years, so much light upon the subject. Let us take them from the pages of its two most distinguished disciples; the latter of whom, indeed, has high claims to be regarded as its founder—Colonel Torrens, and Mr. Gibbon Wakefield; to both of whom we shall have to look for assistance and enlightenment over a great part of the ground which now remains for us to traverse.

“It is impossible,” says Colonel Torrens*, “to establish a colony in an unreclaimed country, without applying capital and labour to its waste lands There is, in every country, some proportion or other between capital and labour which is most conducive to the progress of wealth, and which gives the highest rates of profit and of wages which the state of industry and the quality of the soil render possible. This proportion is the best proportion; and it may be called the proportion of equilibrium and of rest; because it is the obvious interest, both of capitalists and labourers, not to disturb, but to maintain it. Should the capital and labour first planted in the colony be in this best proportion, in this proportion they will naturally remain.” “The ultimate object of government,” says Mr. Wakefield†, “being the greatest progress of colonization, its immediate object is, that there should exist in the colony those

* Colonization of South Australia, 13.

† England and America, ii. 149.

"circumstances which are best calculated to attract capital and labour, but especially capital, from an old country."

The principle, therefore, which these writers lay down is, that government ought to restrict the natural, or, as it may more properly be termed, *casual*, distribution of capital and labour which takes place over the surface of a newly occupied country, so as to secure to capitalists a supply of labourers for the most profitable cultivation of the soil; to secure to labourers the advantage of abundant capital, so as to render their operations more productive, and remunerate their industry more highly. The peculiar mode in which they propose to effect these objects, namely, by setting a high price on unoccupied land, and applying the proceeds to the purpose of emigration, must be reserved for future discussion. At present we are only concerned with the inquiry, whether there is anything in the condition of young colonies which calls for the adoption of *any* regulations to control the natural course of circumstances?

Now it is a rule prescribed by common sense, in all economical discussion, that the burden of proof lies on the party which proposes such regulations. The principles of the school of writers on systematic colonization to whom I have alluded may be reduced, I think, to two elementary propositions. Let us first attend to some general considerations respecting them, and proceed to examine how far they are borne out by historical facts.

The propositions in question are, I think, the following:—

1. That it is desirable to provide colonists acquiring land with a greater supply of labourers, to work on their account, than their capital would naturally attract.

2. That it is desirable to prevent the population of new colonies from spreading over so large and scattered a surface of land as it would be tempted to occupy, were every facility given for the acquisition of land.

These are their practical principles; and another proposition appears to be implied in some of their reasonings: that an ample supply of hired or compulsory labour tends not only to increase the wealth of the community, but also to produce this second object, namely, the concentration of the people.

Now it is important to observe, that the colonies of modern times may be divided into two very different classes: the difference having arisen, in some, from the different views with which they were originally founded; in others, from various circumstances subsequent to their foundation.

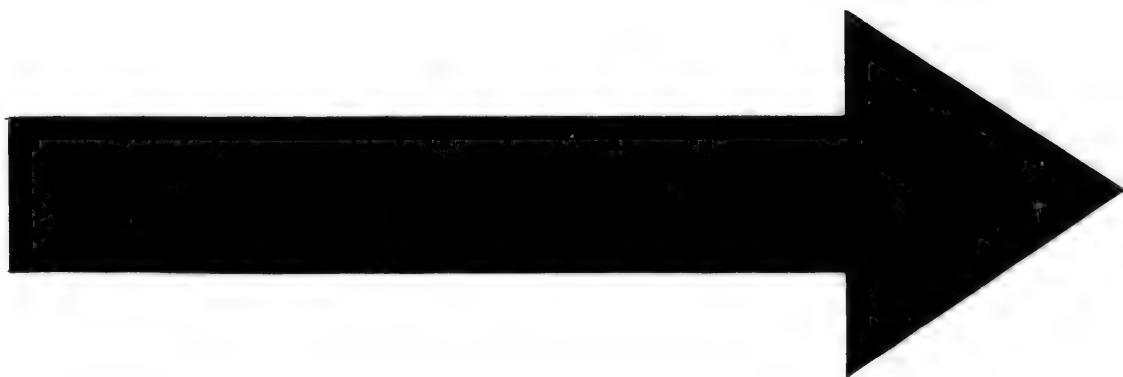
The first are those which have established themselves in countries *possessing no peculiar advantages for the production, by agricultural or mining labour, of articles of value in the foreign market.* Many of these have been originally formed by colonists, anxious chiefly to find a refuge from political or social uneasiness at home, not to become the producers of a great amount of wealth. Others, founded with views of profit, have been forced to pursue a less ambitious career, from natural impediments in the way of their advance to opulence. In colonies like these the first object, and it may be said the main object, of their social economy, has been the providing of a sufficient maintenance for a population of moderate wants. Exportable wealth, of course, they have had, otherwise they could not have provided themselves with the common comforts of life; but its production has been merely a subsidiary end, and not the principal object of their existence. Such were the English plantations in the northern part of the United States, for at least the first century and a half after their foundation — countries of which almost the whole population was engaged in agriculture, and yet the chief exportable wealth consisted, not in agricultural commodities, but in the produce of what may

be termed secondary branches of industry — the timber of their forests and the fish of their seas ; which traded in these alone with Europe, and exchanged only a small surplus of their corn and cattle against the peculiar staples of other colonies. Such are, even more distinctly our “ Lower Provinces ” in North America at the present day ; such was the original character of our Australian settlements, until the discovery of their great capabilities for the production of wool.

The second class of colonies comprises all those in which the industry of the settlers has principally turned towards the raising of staple articles of produce for the European market — articles for which their soil or climate has been found to possess peculiar capability ; or towards mining operations, which fall under the same general law. To this belong most of the ancient Spanish and Portuguese colonies in South America, the southern provinces of the present United States, and the establishments of all European nations in the West Indies.

It will appear, on consideration, that those elementary propositions of the theory of “ systematic colonization,” to which I have already called your attention, are by no means equally applicable to these two classes of settlements.

When a colony is established on a soil possessing no capabilities for the raising of any peculiar produce fit for the foreign market, the first impulse of the settlers is generally to spread themselves over the country, each taking possession of whatever spot of fertile land he may secure, and each tilling his own farm ; some, possessed of a little capital, with the assistance of a few hired labourers, chiefly emigrants not yet located ; others, by their own industry, and with that small combination of labour which the voluntary assistance of neighbours in new countries commonly affords. And although it is said (by Mr. Wakefield), that “ scarce any operation of



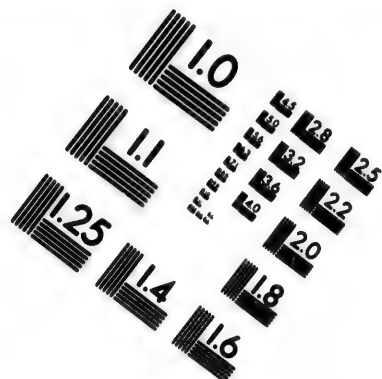
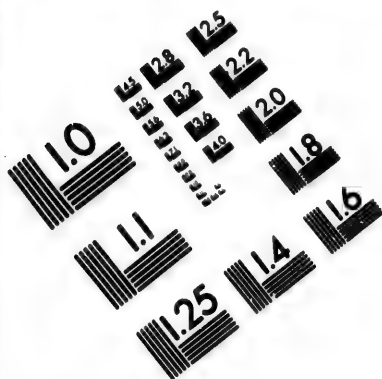
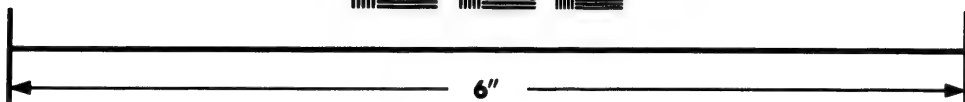
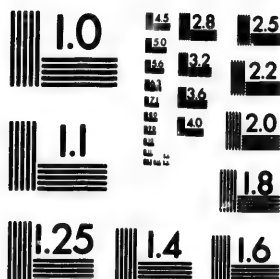


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

18
20
22
25
28
32
36
40
45
50
56
63
71
80
90
100

10
20
30
40
50
60
70
80
90
100

"agriculture can be *very* productive, unless there be
"employed in it several pairs of hands in combination,
"and constantly at the same particular work, at the same
"time, and for a considerable period of time together,"*
yet it is certain that the average industry of an unas-
sisted colonist on fertile soil, and in a temperate climate,
will be sufficiently productive, after a little time, to afford
him, not only the necessaries of life, but a certain quantity
of surplus to exchange for its comforts. Now, suppose
the tract had been "systematically" colonized, and that
each settler had been furnished with a sufficient number
of labourers, effectually restrained from deserting his
service, and from spreading themselves over the land as
independent farmers, it would undoubtedly raise a greater
surplus: a farm cultivated by a capitalist and twenty
labourers would produce more than ten small clearings,
each managed by the slovenly industry of one farmer
and one labourer — mere earth-scratchers, as Mr. Wake-
field calls them. But, by the supposition, there would be
a difficulty in finding a market for this additional surplus.
If Upper Canada were amply provided with indented
labourers or slaves, it might produce more corn and cattle
than it now produces; but Canadian corn and cattle are
not, like Georgian cotton and West Indian sugar, articles
for which there is a constant and urgent demand out of
the colony: the distance from any available market is
very great; and any such extended production would
probably turn out a very unprofitable speculation.† Can-
ada, therefore, would gain little or nothing, at present,
by the change from the system of small-farming to that
of combined capital and labour, even if the labour came
uninvited, and no sacrifices were made to secure it. And

* England and America, vol. ii. p. 10.

† (1861.) It must be remembered that these lines were written before
the modern extension of railway communication, which has greatly
altered the position of Canada as a producing country.

if it were necessary to make sacrifices — to undergo the moral contamination of slave or convict labour, or to make the economical sacrifice of raising the price of land, and checking the spread of cultivation, in order to procure the labour of free emigrants—it would assuredly not be worth the while of the Canadians to make the attempt.

Still less would the concentration of her inhabitants, produced by any artificial means, be of advantage to such a colony in the earlier stage of her progress. Concentration of inhabitants of course can only take place where some of the settlers relinquish the advantage of appropriating the most fertile land within their reach, in order to secure the real or supposed advantages of congregation. Now fertile soil is, to the settler, the machine with which he works; it is that for the sake of which he is content to forego all the benefits which he might have derived from remaining a member of an older and denser community. To prevent his occupation of the most fertile soil within reach, either by raising its price, or by any other conventional arrangement, is to force him to resort to the use of a less productive machine; it is to force him to waste a portion of his precious labour, to forego a part of his expected reward, with a view to certain speculative advantages for the community. It may be indeed true, as I have on a former occasion mentioned, that the mere spirit of independence may occasionally induce a man to take a wrong view of his own interest, and to move into the wilderness, when, for his own sake, he would better have remained in the clearing. But these are only exceptions to the general rule: nor could even these be prevented, except by a sacrifice involving greater loss. It is the energy and enterprise of the individual which leads him to commit the oversight. You cannot save him from the commission of the oversight, but by controlling that

energy and enterprise, and preventing him from performing the part for which he is evidently fitted — that of a pioneer of civilization. And this is, after all, the most formidable of all the objections to any scheme for controlling the natural course of capital and labour in a new colony, for confining its injudicious expansion within a belt of restrictions, to use a favourite metaphor of the advocates of those schemes. Every deduction from the liberty of man as a free agent is, in an economical sense, a diminution of his power. This is true in old countries, truer still in new ones; it forms the immovable basis of the general argument against public interference with the production and distribution of wealth.

Are then these colonies — such, namely, as belong to the class to which we have as yet confined ourselves — to remain, it will be said, always in a state of poverty and infancy? Are their lands to be always carelessly cultivated by the scanty labour of small farmers, hastening to desert them as soon as they become unproductive*, spreading themselves over enormous tracts, with deserts interposed between their scattered habitations? Is pro-

* The same complaints of depopulation and abandonment of land, which are now heard in so many districts which have passed from the first into the second stage of improvement, such as the eastern states of America, were rife throughout the Anglo-American colonies a little before the revolution, when they were far less populous than now. See a passage from the traveller Kalin, quoted in Adam Smith, p. 103, M'Culloch's edition. "We are told by one who knows their country well, that 200,000 people, bred to the cultivation of the earth, are 'thrown out of employment for want of land.'" (*Political Essays concerning the Present State of the British Empire*, 1772, p. 384.) There have never been wanting those who have argued that the process of abandoning old land for new is a losing one. Mr. Shirreff seems to think that in Canada the restoration of the most exhausted land is easier than the removal of a dense forest. (*Murray's British America*, vol. iii. p. 131.) But the balance of opinion, as evidenced by practice, is the other way.

perty never to accumulate? are towns never to rise? On the contrary, the progress of such a community towards wealth, if no external circumstance interfere, is in reality fixed and certain, and slow only when compared with the impatient anticipations of political philosophers. And there cannot, I must add, be more palpable exaggerations than those in which some writers have dealt, who have endeavoured to contrast its prospects with those of settlements founded according to their own economical views. In the first place, however prone colonists may be to dispersion, there is a limit which the boldest backwoodsman does not pass; and that is fixed by the situation of the nearest market. "In the history of American colonization," says Mr. Wakefield himself, "there is but one instance of a "person having settled totally out of the reach of "markets—the celebrated Daniel Boon." As the markets extend, therefore, the settlers will spread; but no faster. Meanwhile, a certain quantity of capital is accumulated by the farmers: they advance from a state of necessity at first to comfort, then to competence. There is no doubt a strong tendency among many to desert their farm as soon as its cultivation begins to require more labour or render less immediate profit; but there is a counteracting tendency also, the love of home, the love of adorning and preserving that which each has won from the wilderness; if many spirits are seduced by the one, many also follow the latter. Meanwhile, subsidiary branches of industry, such as fisheries, or coarse manufactures, arise; people are congregated round the spots most favourable for such pursuits; towns are built; land rises in value from their vicinity; soil, perhaps, which had been cultivated while it retained its original fertility, and abandoned as soon as it had lost it, acquires new and secondary attractions, and is brought into permanent occupation. When once the accumu-

lation of capital has begun, the remainder of the advance to opulence is easily achieved; nor is it necessary for me to trace the steps by which the peddling trade is converted into a vast commerce, the towns become cities, and the scattered farms a wide tract of cultivated land. All this, I repeat, not only *may*, but inevitably *will*, take place, unless there be some extrinsic interruptions to the course of events, in every colony of this description, possessed of good natural advantages; even although land be from the beginning lavished on all who can appropriate it, and there be no provision whatever for securing a supply of hired or compulsory labour.

And it cannot fail to be observed, that prosperity thus gradually attained is of the safest and most certain character. A community may advance far more rapidly to wealth from natural advantages in the production of exportable commodities; but its fortunes are liable to be overthrown as rapidly as they have arisen, by the competition of newer soils, or by a mere change in the demand for particular articles of consumption. But a society of which the course is such as I have described, is independent of all these external vicissitudes, or feels their shocks but slightly; and they may fairly be compared in the language of the poet, who is not answerable for the absurd practical doctrines which his beautiful verses have sometimes been dragged in to illustrate:—

“ Trade’s proud empire hastes to swift decay,
As ocean sweeps the labour’d mole away;
While self-supported power can time defy,
As rocks resist the billows and the sky.”

And these views are so amply justified by the broad and plain results which history presents to us, that to support them by argument is almost a waste of labour. A line drawn from the Atlantic to the Mississippi, nearly

along the course of the Delaware and the Ohio, will separate pretty accurately the two classes of colonies which I have distinguished in this lecture. To the south of it lie the regions where the great staples of American export have been raised, namely tobacco, rice, and, more lately, cotton. To the north, those which produce corn and cattle, and from which little or no exportation takes place to Europe, except of timber. Let us fix our attention for a while on a small portion of this latter region; namely, the older New England states. Never were colonies founded under circumstances more necessarily tending, if the theories which we are now considering were true, to perpetual weakness and poverty. Their soil is, at the best, only of moderate fertility; while they border on the rich and interminable regions of the West. No restrictions were ever adopted in the granting of their lands: each settler could always provide himself with the most fertile, wherever he might find it. They never had, to any extent worth mentioning, the assistance of slave labour, or convict labour, or apprenticed labour; and they were peopled by the most enterprising and independent of men, the least attached, it is generally thought, of all men, to home and its associations,—the most determined enemies to all control. From them have issued innumerable swarms of emigrants; insomuch, that a great part of the United States has actually been colonized by descendants of the first New England colonists. It is true, that, on their first foundation, they exhibited a degree of concentration not often found in English settlements; partly from the strong religious and municipal feelings which bound the settlers together in townships or villages, partly from the density of the forest, partly from the hostility of the natives. But this concentration lasted only during the few first years of struggles and difficulties. Self-interest soon prevailed over the earlier principles of their foundation. Twenty years after their settlement

they found Massachusetts too narrow for them; and swarmed into Connecticut and New Hampshire, "because "the Bay was overstocked." In 1682, the governor of Connecticut writes of the land of that province, "what is "fit is taken up; what remains must be taken out of the "fire, by hard blows, and for small recompence." Connecticut had then scarcely more than 10,000 inhabitants.*

What could be prognosticated of such settlements as these, according to the arguments which might be deduced from some passages of Mr. Wakefield and his followers, but, at best, a slow, languishing advance through long periods of poverty and discouragement? Let us contemplate the picture presented by their actual condition. Massachusetts, Connecticut, and Rhode Island, had in 1840, about 1,200,000 inhabitants on 12,000 square miles English, or 100 to a square mile. Connecticut alone, of which, in the opinion of its governor, all the good land was taken up when it had 10,000 people, had 300,000, almost all agriculturists. But the population of England, at the beginning of the last century, was not much above 5,000,000 on 50,000 square miles. So that New England had reached, in 200 years from its first settlements a density of population equal to that which Old England had attained, six centuries after the Norman conquest. It is now, notwithstanding its enormous annual drain by emigration, actually suffering under the evils incident to an old and over-peopled country. There is a very remarkable passage, in Miss Martineau's "Society in America," respecting the embarrassed state of many of the New England landowners, from the difficulty which they already experience in finding productive employment for their capital. Surely, when we hear of the necessity of stimulating the progress of young colonies, through arti-

* Grahame's History of the United Provinces before the Revolution of 1688, ii. 62. Chalmers' United Colonies, 308.

ficial combinations of capital and labour, and reflect on the advance of communities like this, in which no such systems were ever attempted, we cannot but be tempted to ascribe such proposals to that impatience of gradual results, which is the common parent of rash political speculations.

Let us now turn our attention to the state of things in those colonies, where the chief employment consists in *raising staple articles of produce for foreign markets*. In such communities as these, it is obvious that the necessity for an ample supply of labourers is of a far more urgent character. In them, all that has been said of the importance of combined labour to the productive employment of capital is of pointed application. And in point of fact, all such colonies have hitherto, in some way or other, been supplied from without, or have found the means of supplying themselves, with this essential condition of their improvement. It is this necessity which caused the enslavement of the original inhabitants of Spanish America; which produced negro slavery and the slave trade; which has turned to profit the compulsory toil of convicts; and to satisfy which, without a resort to any of these odious resources, is now the greatest practical problem of colonization.

It is, however, to be observed, that settlements of this description have often flourished for a time, even although exposed to all the difficulties arising from the dispersion of settlers, and the want of compulsory labour. In the early progress of colonies, and while the land immediately adjoining to ports and navigable rivers, or otherwise possessing facilities for transport, is still unexhausted, raw produce can often be raised for the foreign market in considerable quantities by the rude labour of small landowners. We have already seen that this was the ordinary course of events in the West Indian islands; that the first period in the history of each, presents the aspect

of a fertile region, carelessly cultivated with a considerable profit by numerous free settlers. We have seen that Portorico exhibited the same spectacle in very recent times, and is only now beginning to pass into the second stage, that of large capitals and cultivation on a large scale. And the same general features present themselves in the annals of our older North American provinces, south of the Potomac. When Mr. Wakefield describes, in melancholy language, the early state of Virginia while unprovided with compulsory labour, and speaks of the casual arrival of a Dutch vessel laden with slaves in the Chesapeake as the critical event which turned its retrograde career, and opened the way to improvement and abundance, he is drawing a striking illustration of his theory, but surely not narrating historical facts. In Sir W. Berkeley's description of that colony in 1671, when it was already carrying on a flourishing trade in tobacco, he estimates its population at 40,000, of whom only 2000 were black slaves, 6000 "Christian servants for a short time." "Yearly," he says, "we suppose, there come in of "servants about 1500, of whom most are English, few "Scotch, and fewer Irish; and *not above two or three "ships of negroes in seven years.*" This is the picture of a country in which the state of transition from the occupancy of small landowners, to that of proprietors of large estates cultivated by slaves, is only just beginning; when once begun, it is certain to proceed with continually increasing rapidity, until the new condition of society is developed.

The usual course of events appears to be this: that it is not until the more fertile and best situated lands have been occupied, and to a certain extent exhausted, that the superior productiveness of capital in masses, and labour in combination, begins to be practically felt. The stimulus, too, afforded by an increasing market acts strongly in accelerating this inevitable change; and

it is, at least, highly probable, that it may be still further accelerated by measures taken at the outset; by taking thought for the adjustment of the due proportion of capital and labour in the original foundation of the colony. Thus far, I think, the advocates of "systematic colonization" rest on very sure ground, and are entitled to the credit of having been the first to draw the attention of the community, at a very critical period, to this truth; that it is of the highest importance to find some artificial substitute for the slave and convict labour, by which our colonies have hitherto been rendered productive. A truth which many are now ready to term self-evident, and to accuse the writers in question of having laboriously demonstrated principles which no one denies. All who are conversant with the history of human speculation know that this is the reproach invariably thrown on the authors of important discoveries, of which the very simplicity affords to ordinary minds an argument to show the want of originality of the inventors.

But with regard to the other theory of which I have spoken, namely, that an ample supply of labour tends to concentration of people, *that* seems still less applicable to colonies producing valuable agricultural commodities, than to the other class which we have just considered. The abundance of new and productive soil is the very first condition of the prosperity of such settlements. If they have not this, neither capital nor industry, nor multitude of people, will avert that inevitable decay into which they must fall from the competition of newer lands. What has been the cause of the decline of Jamaica, and most of the smaller Antilles? The limited extent of their available land. Why did Demerara, within these few years, produce more than half as much as Jamaica, with less than one-third of its number of labourers? Not because its population is

concentrated, or capital accumulated, but because it possesses an extensive surface of alluvial soil, over which cultivation is constantly spreading, and of which probably not one hundredth part has yet been brought under it. Now the scheme of the writers of whom I speak is really neither more nor less than to substitute an artificial limit in all colonies for that limit which nature has assigned in our islands,—to make an island of a settlement in a wide continent. “The turning point of the system,” says the author of the pamphlet put forth by the Colonization Society in 1830, “is the necessity of fixing such a price on land as shall prevent the abandonment of old for new soil;” that is, in other words, which shall prevent the colonist from making free use of that machine which nature has put within his reach. Surely Mr. McCulloch is right in saying, that “all this proceeds on the exploded assumption that colonists are not, like other individuals, the best judges of what is for their own advantage.”*

In what manner they have usually exercised that judgment, colonial history sufficiently shows. The growers of tobacco, rice, cotton, and sugar for the market have required a far greater extent of soil for their cultivation than the mere ordinary agriculturists of the northern settlements. So far from an ample supply of labour tending to concentrate population, it has, in North America, invariably gone along with the greatest possible dispersion. The early settlers in Virginia did indeed imagine the construction of such a society as the systematic colonizers have sometimes projected—an old society in a new country. For a short time it seems to have realized, in some degree, their imaginary model. The estates of the landed proprietors, congregated together along the banks of the numerous navigable rivers, each with its little hamlet

* Note to Adam Smith on “Colonial Policy,” p. 602.

peopled by indented servants or slaves, the rural aristocracy, the well endowed church establishment, seem to have presented for a few years, slavery alone apart, the resemblance of what has never been exhibited elsewhere in the New World; a little province of Old England, transplanted into the other hemisphere. But the progress of events was not to be thus checked. The landowners found their estates become yearly less productive of tobacco, the most exhausting of crops; they had no alternative between removal and a total change of system. Now, if they had not had abundant labour at their command, it is probable that their course would have been, to abandon their tobacco cultivation, remain on their estates, and sink into mere raisers of ordinary agricultural produce. But the possession of an ample supply of labour was the very cause which promoted their dispersion. They and their slaves migrated in quest of new soil; they spread from the eastern to the western limits of the province, from the Atlantic coast to the mountains, and thence to the valleys of the Ohio and the Mississippi; and at this day, the traveller finds, amidst the deserted "old fields" of Virginia and Maryland, the traces of that ephemeral state of society which I have described—aged mansions, resembling those of the country gentlemen of England, the dwellings of men whose habits and anticipations were widely different from those of the migratory American of the present time. While New England, almost unsupplied with dependent labourers from the beginning, has attained a density of population exceeding 100 to the square mile, that of Virginia, which has been more amply furnished with slaves than any other part of the Union, does not much exceed thirty. So far is it from being true, that an ample supply of labour in colonies tends to concentration of the people. But it is not to be supposed that Virginia does not flourish; she is no longer a great ex-

porting province, newer soils having come successfully into competition with hers; but the increasing opulence of the whole country reacts upon her, and she becomes rich by supplying the cotton-growing states with the articles of which they stand in need.* Can any one in his senses suppose that, if Mr. Wakefield's "belt of iron" had been put round the infant colony,—if the original settlers of Virginia had been forced to remain in their first clearings, and to expend their capital in maintaining them in a state of productiveness after their first fertility had disappeared,—Virginia herself, not to say the Union in general, would have been wealthier at the present day?

The conclusions, then, to which I would draw your attention, as deduced from the reasonings and facts laid before you in my present lecture, are these:

1. That an ample supply of labour is not only desirable, but essential, in a colony raising valuable articles of produce for the general market.

2. That in a colony not raising such produce in any abundance, it is unnecessary; and that any attempt to ensure it, by controlling the freedom of action of the settlers, or preventing them from the easy acquisition of land, would occasion a dead loss.

3. That an artificial concentration of population, by restraining the abandonment of occupied lands, would seriously check the prosperity of most new colonies, and especially of such as raise valuable produce for exportation.

4. That, allowing that such concentration, if it took place from natural causes, might be desirable, the mere ensuring a sufficient supply of labour would not in any degree tend to promote it, but rather the contrary.

* (1861.) Unhappily, since this lecture was written, the "articles" chiefly supplied by Virginia to the newer cotton States have been home-grown slaves.

It will remain for us on a future occasion to consider, whether, in order to secure the advantage of a supply of labour, it may be sometimes worth while for a colony of the exporting class, to sacrifice some portion of its power of expansion; as, for instance, by setting a high price on unoccupied lands, in order to expend the produce on immigration. The subject, however, must not be dismissed, without observing that much of the character and progress of a colony, in respect to the modes in which the three elements of land, capital, and labour combine themselves, depends upon extrinsic circumstances, which control and modify these general laws. The tendency of settlers to isolate themselves, and spread over the surface of the land, may be counteracted, in the first place, by the limited extent of the land itself; as in islands, or valleys surrounded by impracticable mountains, like those of the upper Andes; by the density of natural forests, rendering clearing more difficult*; by the numbers and warlike character of the native population, as in parts of the Cape colony, where the boors are forced to congregate together for self-protection, and in the new French colony at Algiers. In Spanish America, wherever the population was collected in mountain plains, and

* (1861.) This very important consideration of the relative expense of clearing in different colonies, appears to me to have been too much overlooked by the advocates of "systematic colonization" and sale of land at a high price. In Australia, the preparation of land for settlement requires but a trifling outlay. In Canada the clearing of wild land costs, as we have seen, 3*l.* to 4*l.* an acre. In British Columbia, (1860) it is said, from 15*l.* to 30*l.* per acre! Such amounts as these, in point of fact, render clearing by hired labour almost impossible; the first work must be done by the settler himself, and a system of small holdings and low prices or free grants become almost unavoidable. In Australia, clearing costs in general very little; and the settler can therefore afford a higher price for his land, if he is repaid by the devotion of the proceeds to immigration. A remarkable illustration of this oversight is afforded by the history of the colonization of New Zealand. See Appendix to Lecture xiv.

especially where mining operations were carried on, large cities were early founded; Quito, Lima, Mexico, were wealthy and flourishing when there was not a single town containing more than 20,000 people in British North America. A large government expenditure in a colony will produce a similar effect; as in the Australian provinces, where the population of the capital towns has always borne an unusually high proportion to that of the country. On the other hand, the causes which increase to its maximum the natural tendency to dispersion are, a wide extent of fertile soil, a wholesome climate, the absence of dense forests and other natural obstacles, and the want of navigable rivers, upon the banks of which men are usually inclined to establish themselves in communities. In colonies thus circumstanced, the inclination of men for the ease and independence of pastoral, semi-savage life, a propensity which seems to overcome that of self-interest, even in the most enterprising and industrious races, undoubtedly places great obstacles in the way of civilization. Such appears to be the state of the inhabitants of the Pampas of Buenos Ayres and the plains of New Mexico and California; and the danger of falling into a similar state is probably the greatest to which our Australian colonists are exposed. Whether the difference of their moral and intellectual condition, or the prospects of opulence to be derived from combined labour which may probably open upon them, will be sufficient to avert it, is matter of speculation; but it is undoubtedly difficult to conceive, that any government regulations, least of all those of a government established at the distance of half the earth's circumference, can effectually control their future career.

APPENDIX TO LECTURE IX.

Quantity of Wool shipped from Australia at different Periods, prior to
the Gold Discovery.

	lbs.
1825	411,600
1830	1,968,000
1835	4,210,000
1840	9,721,000
1845	24,177,000
1850	39,000,000

LECTURE X.

EMPLOYMENT OF THE LABOUR OF SUBJUGATED NATIVE RACES. — LEGISLATION OF THE SPANISH GOVERNMENT WITH RESPECT TO THE AMERICAN INDIANS, AND THEIR CONDITION. — ESTABLISHMENTS OF THE JESUIT AND OTHER ROMAN CATHOLIC MISSIONARIES.

I SHALL proceed to consider in order, in this part of my course, the different methods by which the requisite supply of labour has been procured in European colonies.

The expedient by means of which the earliest of modern European colonists made available for their service the rich territories they had subdued, was the labour of subjugated native races.

In various parts of their conquests, but more especially on the table lands of Mexico, Peru, and New Granada, or Cundinamarca, the Spaniards found the soil already cultivated by tribes advanced in civilization far beyond the ordinary condition of the natives of America. Into the curious problem of the origin and extent of that civilization it does not fall within my province to inquire. It has been exaggerated by some writers, but unduly depreciated by more. It is, at all events, clear, that they were so far advanced in industry and the mechanical arts as to be capable of developing to the utmost, under proper direction, the vast resources of their native regions.

But they were delivered over, in the defenceless state in which the conquest had left them, to the extremest tyranny which men unrestrained by law or by religion could exercise. The sovereigns, nobles, and wealthy classes were destroyed, and their property confiscated.*

* However we may grieve to hear it (says Mr. Helps) farther research only more and more supports the statements of Las Casas, who was wont to estimate the loss of lives by millions.

The commonalty passed through various degrees of servitude, beginning at the lowest and worst, and gradually emerging into a more mitigated condition. At first they were treated simply as slaves, or rather as a portion of the stock on each estate; and the oldest grants of land in Hispaniola, it is said, mention the number of natives whom the proprietor was thus authorized to treat as cattle. Severe oppression, and particularly the laborious service of the mines, diminished their numbers to such a degree, that the interest of their masters in their preservation absolutely required the adoption of an amended system. The next scheme put in general practice appears to have been that of *repartimientos*, by which the Indians, divided into villages and families, were allotted to the owners of the land, who had a property in their labour, but not in their persons; thus they were *adstricti glebæ*, like the serfs of feudal countries, and incapable of acquiring property of their own.* Finally, the system of *encomiendas* superseded, or became engrafted on that of *repartimientos*. The "Encomienda" was a district within which the Indian labourers were bound to render not services, but tribute, to the encomendero or proprietor, to whom they had been thus granted or *recommended*; the proprietor being bound to render them protection in return for their tribute.† In the towns, however, the Indian artisans appear to have early acquired a greater degree of liberty, to have worked on their own account, and in some, as for instance in

* In the greatest financial distresses of Philip the Second, it was proposed in the Spanish council to sell these "Repartimientos." But the project was strenuously opposed by the king himself, partly through fear of the great proprietors aiming at independence, but more from consideration for the Indians, who would thus be removed from the protection of the state. In consequence of the king's opposition (an unusual circumstance in his council) the scheme fell to the ground. This should be remembered to his honour.—*Ranke, Fürsten und Völker von Sud-Europa*, i. 361.

† See Helps, *Spanish America*, book. xiv. ch. 1 and 2, for an analysis of this rather complicated subject.

Quito and Bogota, to have constituted the bulk of the labouring population.

These various systems all became altered and modified in practice, and out of them grew that heterogeneous state of legislation and custom which Humboldt describes in his *Essay on New Spain*. The superior privileges enjoyed by the Mexican Indians were owing, in part, to the liberal enactments of King Charles III.*, who annulled the *encomiendas*, and forbade the *repartimientos*. In 1800, when Humboldt visited that country, the Indians of the rural districts seem to have been no longer under the obligation of legal compulsory service, either to the crown or to individuals. But they were treated by the law as perpetual minors. They were incapable of entering into valid contracts, to an amount exceeding ten shillings English. They dwelt together in villages, which they seem to have occupied on a system resembling that termed *Ryotwar* in India†; that is, cultivating the fields of the village in common, paying a gross amount of rent to the proprietor, and personal tribute to the crown. They were under the control of the secular priests of their villages, who seem to have been maintained by the government as the most ready and effective instruments of police; and of *alcaldes* and *corregidores* of their own blood, who were often not the least severe of task-masters. Though not legally attached to the soil, they seem to have been practically restricted from the free disposal of their labour. But while the peasantry were in this low condition, it appears that both the inhabitants of the towns and the labourers in the mines were not only free, but able to command high wages and indulge in a lavish expenditure. The remnant of the old Indian nobility was possessed, in some provinces, of considerable wealth; and, through some

* Humboldt, *Nouv. Espagne*, vol. i. chap. 6.

† Humboldt, *Nouv. Espagne*, vol. i. p. 421. 8vo edition.

evasion, doubtless, of the existing laws, the amassing of considerable fortunes, even by Indians of ordinary condition, was not altogether an uncommon event.

In Peru, the state of things was somewhat different. There, too, the Indians of the cities were free ; but those of the country were subject, until the revolution, to the burden of the mita, or conscription. The villages were compelled to furnish annually to the manufacturers, planters, and mine-owners of the neighbourhood a certain proportion of their labouring hands, at wages to be fixed by the crown. The time of service was also fixed, and the distance from their homes at which the Indians might be compelled to serve ; and all by regulations, which, if literally followed, do not certainly appear to have been very severe or burdensome.*

What was the actual condition of the Indians under this legislation, and how did it affect their productive industry ? These are questions not easily answered by reference to such authorities as we possess, and there seems to have been a considerable discrepancy of opinion about them. There are, in point of fact, two very distinct sets of preconceived opinions with which they may be regarded ; two different points of view from which observers have contemplated them ; and in this manner the difference between the conclusions at which these observers have arrived may be partly accounted for. According to the feelings prevalent in the nations of western Europe, in which all classes (some few privileged bodies left out of the question) have long been equal in the eye of the law, and enjoyed the same degree of personal freedom, the regulations to which the Indians were subjected were undoubtedly vexatious and tyrannical ; and the mere idea of retaining the bulk of the people out of the pale of citizenship, rendering them incapable of entering into legal engagements, or assuming any honourable posi-

* Ulloa, Voyage à l'Amérique Méridionale, Discours 18.

tion in society, appears monstrous and unnatural. But it must be remembered, that, in the eyes of colonists, and it may be added of colonial governments, the normal state of the subject Indian had always been regarded as one of servitude or quasi-servitude. Every advance from that state towards freedom, every step by which the native was liberated from any of his ancient burdens, was in this view a progress; and many such steps of high importance had been taken by the Spanish government. If the Indians were *de jure* equal to the whites, which is the doctrine of modern philosophical politicians, then they were an oppressed race. But if they were *de jure* a subject class, which was an uncontroverted tenet, both in Europe and America, during the whole period in which the Spanish colonial legislation was framed, then their condition was highly advantageous, a little below freedom indeed, but far above slavery. If it was necessary to maintain the domination of the whites, to preserve the existing gradation of ranks, the existing distribution of property, it was, perhaps, impossible for the Spanish government to have placed the Indians in a state of full equality with their former masters. And if so, the condition of perpetual minority, which a fiction of law created, was not altogether an unwise invention. By placing the Indians under the direct protection of the law and its ministers, and by rendering it almost impossible for serious quarrel or opposition of interest to arise between them and the wholly emancipated classes, it perhaps removed them from the reach of oppression, while it provided at the same time a security against revolution.*

* (1861.) And I must add, that the more we compare the results of the Spanish system of placing natives, as minors, under government protection, with those of the system of declaring them equal to the settlers in rights, and then leaving them without protection, the less we shall be inclined to believe that humanity has made any progress through the prevalence of the latter principle. "It is not the Spaniards alone," says Mr. Helps, "who have found exceeding difficulty in preserving nations, comparatively barbarous, whom they have

Humboldt truly observes, that we should find the lot of the Mexican Indians less unhappy, if we compared it with that of the serfs of Courland or Russia, or of a great part of North Germany, at the time when he wrote.

With respect to productive industry, it cannot be supposed, that a system of legal incapacity, still less one of compulsory service, was well calculated to develop the energy of the labourer. Accordingly, we find, that in the manufactures carried on in the larger cities, and in the mines of Mexico, the most productive and the best managed Indian labour was free—experience having, no doubt, demonstrated, that it was more profitable than compulsory, wherever much exertion was required. But even where this was not the case, the Indians, when well treated, seem to have been industrious and tolerably effective labourers. Their indifference and listlessness were, indeed, remarkable; but these very qualities rendered them submissive under the tasks imposed upon them. Like most half-civilized people, they had peculiar aptitude for imitation, and little for invention, and the utmost patience in the execution of minute and trivial operations. The Indians, says Ulloa, are in general remarkably slow, but very persevering; and this has given rise to a proverb, when anything of little value in itself requires a great deal of time and patience, ‘That is “only fit to be done by an Indian.”’ The enormous increase of wealth already noticed in some of the

“subjugated. And it is admitted by all who have investigated the subject, that it would be one of the highest triumphs of civilization, and “one of the foremost proofs of extraordinary vigour of government, if a “conquering nation were to succeed in subjugating, civilizing, and at “the same time preserving, the aborigines of any country that they may “conquer.” (Book xx. ch. 6.) He might, in my belief, have defended Spanish legislation in a much less apologetic tone, and pointed it out as the most successful, or rather the only successful one, in this great particular, notwithstanding abuses in practice. See the subject more fully discussed hereafter.

Spanish colonies, particularly Mexico, during the thirty or forty years previous to the revolution, seems conclusively to prove, that the system under which labour was regulated was neither inefficient nor oppressively arbitrary.

The chief abuses to which it was liable arose, not from the conception, but the execution of the laws. The Indians were purposely rendered defenceless, and placed entirely under the protection of appointed officers, both lay and ecclesiastical. Whenever, therefore, these guardians were themselves corrupt and oppressive, no security remained for them. According to Humboldt, the highest of these offices,—those of the Protectors of the Indians—were in his time so remarkably well filled, that, even in so corrupt a community as that of Mexico, not a suspicion of malversation was breathed against the holders of them. But if this were the case, their virtue certainly did not descend to their subordinate instruments. The memorial of the Bishop of Oaxaca, in favour of the Indians, which Humboldt has himself translated, exhibits but too vivid a picture of the ill-treatment which they had frequently to suffer from those to whom by the law was assigned the office of protecting, representing, and acting for them. And a more remarkable document has since appeared, the "Secret Notices" of Antonio de Ulloa. That writer, in his published works, had spoken with moderation, even with praise, of the general conduct of the Spanish authorities towards the Indians; he had even given it as his opinion, that the "Mita" of Peru was not injurious to them. But he addressed manuscript representations of a very different nature to the Court of Spain; and left behind him documents, which have found their way to the light almost a century after his visit to America, in which a series of frauds and oppressions committed towards these inoffensive people is said to be developed, sufficient to account for the rebellion of Tupac Amaru in 1782, and

for the part taken by the Indians in the more important movements of these later days.

Of the condition of the civilized Indians of Spanish America since the revolution I am unable to speak ; nor is there, probably, any very definite notion to be acquired of the position which they occupy in the chaotic state of society which now prevails in those regions, where the most absolute principles of democratic equality seem to be strangely blended with customary fragments of the ancient servitude.*

The policy adopted towards the natives in these ancient Spanish colonies furnishes, perhaps, no example of close application to ourselves, who have never been placed in similar circumstances ; for no tribes approaching the Mexicans and Peruvians in industry or civilization have ever fallen under British sovereignty, in regions open to our settlers. Nevertheless, this brief sketch would hardly be complete without some notice of the extraordinary system of spiritual government under which both Spain and Portugal suffered the subjugated and Christianized Indians to be brought, in the vast frontier provinces of their American dominions. Although the modes employed by the superintendents of these missions to bring the natives into habits of subordination and regular government

* Since these Lectures were published, Europe has become acquainted with the very remarkable history of the subjugation of Guatemala by the pure-blooded Indian Carrera, and his army of Indian peasants. But they do not appear to have established permanent supremacy over the whites. The leader of the "Liberal" party in Mexico (1861), is said to be a pure-blooded Indian. On three points the unsubdued Indians appear still to make successful head against the descendants of Spain : on the northern frontier of Mexico ; in Yucatan : and on the southern frontier of Chili and La Plata. Two years ago, an Englishman, in the heart of central America, was endeavouring to intercede with a band of Yucatan Indians for the lives of some Spaniards. The leader rejected his interference and defied England, as having lost her power since the East Indian mutiny. So rapidly does political intelligence now pervade the world.

might fall, perhaps, more properly under our consideration hereafter, when we have to enter more generally into the question of colonial policy towards aborigines, yet since some of the missionary bodies actually succeeded in converting whole tribes of wandering savages into flourishing agricultural communities, I should hardly have completed this part of my subject without noticing the means which led to this extraordinary result ; to which nothing similar has occurred in the whole course of history.

The Missions of Spanish and Portuguese America were at one time of far greater extent and importance than is generally remembered. From all the points where the peopled provinces touched on the unsubdued forests or deserts of the interior, missionaries of the monastic orders, but more especially Jesuits, were constantly issuing into the neighbouring wilderness, spending their lives in obscure but unremitting labours among the savage multitudes which peopled it, and establishing a chain of settlements along the frontier. These settlements, termed Missions or Reductions, (from the *reduced* or converted Indians which they contained), were left to the internal government of the ecclesiastics, subject only to the general control of the governors of the adjoining provinces. They extended more particularly along the great water communications ; the Amazons, the Orinoco, the tributaries of the Plata, in the forests at the eastern foot of the Andes, and to the extreme north of the Spanish possessions in California. Each establishment served the double purpose of a receptacle for the converted or reduced Indians of the vicinity, and of a factory or place of trade and communication with those as yet unsubdued. And where a military outpost would probably have found itself involved in constant wars with its barbarous neighbours, the missionaries dwelt for the most part in a state of peace and confidence. Thus far, they were of essential, though subordinate, utility ; but the only missions which

ever attained to any great importance, and called the eyes of all Europe to the working of the singular principles developed in their institution, were those of the Jesuits, principally in Paraguay. The history of the Jesuits of that country, which deserves to be called a philosophical episode in that of the human race, has been the groundwork of much controversy, and of exaggeration, both by friends and enemies. Charlevoix's History of Paraguay, Ulloa's Travels, Azara's Paraguay, and many other works, may be consulted as original authorities on the subject; but it will be nowhere found so agreeably treated, or in some respects so fairly summed up, as in Southey's History of Brazil.

The great Jesuit republic, or rather republics, consisted of three different sets of Reductions, comprehended within the same Spanish government, namely, the lieutenancy of Buenos Ayres, but at a considerable distance from each other; those of the Guaranis, the Chiquitos, and the Moxos. The first of these were the most ancient and the most famous, and comprehended the most numerous population; they were situated, not within the limits of the modern republic of Paraguay, celebrated in our times as the seat of the singular despotism of Francia, but in a neighbouring district, now forming part of Brazil. The Guaranis were a very numerous people, whom the Jesuits found the means of reconciling to Christianity during the seventeenth century. Unwilling to lose the fruit of their labours, by the reckless violence of the Brazilian slave-hunters on the one hand, or through the contaminating society of the Spanish colonists on the other, they obtained, by degrees, from the crown, the privilege of governing these Indians under laws of their own contrivance, arming them for their own defence, and excluding from the limits of their territory all strangers, sojourners, and even all visitors whatever, unless admitted for their own purposes.

The Guarani Reductions contained, at one time, from 100,000 to 150,000 souls. They were divided into missions, each of which held several thousand. The people of each mission were collected into a large village or town. In each there resided two ecclesiastics of the order; namely, one with the title of Curate; the other a sub-director, or assistant, to whom the details of the temporal management of the mission were entrusted; and no other white whatever. The Indians of each elected their own municipal officers, after the usage of all Spanish towns; but the nomination was subject to the approval of the curate, and, in point of fact, their authority was titular only; every function of power, from the highest to the lowest, was lodged in the hands of the spiritual governor. All the natives were armed, and officered by Indians of their own nation; being occasionally put under temporary training by Spaniards, under the especial superintendence of the priests. The houses of each town or village were exactly alike, and no distinction admitted in dress, or in the enjoyment of domestic comforts and luxuries. The only sumptuous building was the church; its adornment, and the pomp of divine worship, almost the only mode in which the surplus wealth of the community could be expended. The land of the village was divided into two portions; the field of the community, and the field of God. The latter was cultivated, by the labour of all, for the purpose of raising articles which were exchanged by the Jesuits for such commodities as were wanted for the purposes of maintaining the splendour of their ritual, and supporting establishments for the sick and orphans, and for such other charitable ends as so simple a society could require. The other field was cultivated for the sustenance of the community, and for obtaining by exchange those manufactured articles which they did not themselves produce. How far each individual Indian was allowed to acquire property, either in

the soil itself or in the fruits of it, is not very clearly ascertainable. Southey, following the common account, says, that a separate portion of the field was allotted by the priest to each individual, as soon as he became of an age to labour, which at his death was again assigned to another. Ulloa, who is generally worthy of credit, says that there was a difference between the government of the Chiquito and Guarani Reductions in this respect; that, in the former, each Indian enjoyed the fruit of his own field, but in the latter all the surplus produce of the soil was sold for the community by the Jesuits. The same omnipotent masters allotted to every man, at the commencement of the day, the tools with which he was to labour and the seed he was to use; they superintended the public slaughter-houses, and delivered to each family the necessary meat (the common food of the country), and every other article of which they stood in need; so that, notwithstanding what is said of the division of fields, it is difficult to understand in what sense, if in any, the idea of property could have been received among them.

It will be seen at once how striking a resemblance this system bore to some of those which have been devised, and partly put in practice, in our own times, by the partisans of social equality. The principle, that every man's labour belongs to the community; that his right of property extends only to his aliquot part of the produce of the cooperating industry of all; the regulated exchange, under fixed laws of value, between the produce of the day's labour of each separate artisan or labourer; the exclusion of the use of money; all these, whether asserted in theory or not, were actually practised by the Jesuit rulers of Paraguay, and that for more than a century, with uninterrupted success; whereas no scheme of socialism, or Saint-Simonianism, or Fourierism, or any other of the philosophical dreams of modern times, has ever endured the test of above a few years' imperfect application. And

the reason is obvious. While men are born with different tendencies and unequal powers, no means of maintaining equality among them can be found, except of a compulsory nature. Now, not a single one of the various systems to which I allude has ever contained, or, from its very nature, could contain, any provision for enforcing the observance of that equality on which they all insist. The Jesuits had the means at hand ; their subjects were bound to them by ties of absolute unqualified obedience, such as no government but that which controls the spirit of man can command. And it is, probably, no very adventurous philosophical speculation, to foretel that no scheme of social equality will ever develope itself among mankind, except under a hierarchy.

“An Indian of the Reductions,” in the eloquent language of Southey, “never knew, during his whole progress from the cradle to the grave, what it was to take thought for the morrow ; all his duties were comprised “in obedience.” To establish such a system, in the outset, required great acuteness, great energy and perseverance. To maintain it, when once fairly established, the Indians having been thoroughly brought under the spiritual yoke, and convinced of the infallibility of their masters, required little more than zeal and self-devotion, joined to habits of order, obedience, and regularity. For the Jesuit governor of the village was as completely a slave to the laws of his own community as any one of his Indian parishioners to the regulations which he imposed. The first care which he took of his subjects was devoted to their education. This, however, extended, for the most part, only to instruction in religion, so far as it might be orally given, and to the art of church singing ; reading and writing were only taught to a few, who were intended to fill subordinate offices in the church. Marriage was then enjoined, as a duty, at the earliest possible period ; so far were the Jesuits, as Southey has truly

observed, from carrying their monastic sentiments into their civil government. The rest of the life of the Guarani was devoted to labour in the vocation which the priest at first allotted to him; relieved by military training, and by the observance of fast-days, numerous processions, and strictly regulated public amusements. But unless men are compelled as slaves, the most absolute spiritual control will not force them to be industrious without an object. The Jesuits supplied that object; the one great end of industry which they held out to their simple converts was the honour of God, in the decoration of his church and his service. To this the ingenious man was encouraged to devote his skill, the strong man his strength, the singer his talent; in the pursuit of this alone, those natural inequalities of ability and temper, which even Jesuit discipline could not wholly eradicate, were turned to account.

Of the character of the spiritual instruction given to the Indians, by means of which this extraordinary docility was maintained, it would not become me in this place to speak. It is sufficient to observe, that although, of course, deeply impregnated with what we deem the superstitions of the church of Rome, it was not by any means of so monastic a character as, from the position of their instructors, we might have been led to imagine. It was, perhaps, a peculiar and faulty characteristic of Jesuit discipline, that while the fathers kept almost all possibility of gross sin out of the reach of their converts by the most jealous measures, they encouraged a delicacy of conscience in trifles, a kind of spirit of casuistry in self-examination, which it seems remarkable that they could have instilled into the minds of such simple creatures. Thus we are told that the confession of an innocent Guarani lasted generally four or five times as long as that of the most profligate Spaniard; and that the attending to this duty was, in fact, pretty nearly the hardest labour which a

missionary, amidst all the multiplicity of his avocations, had to perform.* But knowledge, except religious, was altogether excluded. "The object of the Jesuits†," says Southey, with truth, "was not to advance their subjects "in civilization, but to tame them to the utmost possible "docility." This they justified on the plea of a real inferiority in their mental capacity; and, as the same writer observes, with much acuteness, the Jesuits were placed in a somewhat false position, by having to maintain two different theses, in each of which there was some degree of truth, against two different classes of antagonists. In opposition to the Portuguese slave-dealers and the Spanish encomenderos, who represented the Indians as brutes, to justify their own treatment of them, they had to contend that those poor creatures had souls to be saved and minds to be enlightened. Against the partisans of the civil government, who accused them of keeping the natives in abject slavery for their own profit, they advanced the position, that the natural inferiority of the Indian intellect rendered them incapable, not only of self-government, but of any degree of free action, except to their own detriment.

With respect to the accusations of avarice and ambition to which I have here alluded, which contributed in no small degree to the eventual downfall of the society, these seem to have been utterly unfounded. The Jesuits never appear to have turned the labour of their numerous flock to the production of wealth for themselves, and no trace whatever has been discovered of the treasures which they were supposed to have amassed. And as such wealth must have been raised in exportable articles, and all the

* See some curious details respecting the eagerness of the converted Indians to practise confession, at a much earlier period of the history of the church in Spanish America, in Helps, *Spanish Conquest in America*, B. XV. chap. iii.

† History of Brazil, ii. 225.

traffic of the Reductions with other parts was carried on under strict regulations by the Jesuits themselves, no such accumulation could have been made without attracting notice. The ecclesiastics of the Reductions had salaries from the Spanish treasury: the Indians paid to the crown a small tribute, which, it was said, nearly balanced the expenses which the missions occasioned it, and no more. Of avarice they stand fully absolved; and in the absence of all substantial objects of ambition, to what does the charge of ambition reduce itself? The society was proud, no doubt, of its own wonderful republics, in which fifty of its members governed in peace and affluence 200,000 reclaimed savages: and the individuals employed on that most heavy and responsible service must often have felt their hearts uplifted at the thought of the great interests committed to their charge, of the important office which they were called to fulfil on the earth: and such an admixture of human nature as this can scarcely be said to dishonour the purest zeal. But the society derived no temporal power or wealth from the expenditure of its best and noblest spirits in the secluded pursuits of the American missions. And, on the whole, whatever may have been the faults of their system, we shall hardly refuse to repeat the words of Southey, that "there never was a more absolute despotism: but "there never existed any other society in which the welfare of the subjects, temporal and eternal, has been the "sole object of the government:" even if we do not go so far as to say, with Raynal, that "perhaps never was so "much good done to mankind with so little admixture of "evil."

Two important practical lessons, I think, may be drawn from the history of the Spanish missions, and especially those of Paraguay.

The first is this: that history has no example to offer us of any successful attempt, however slight, to introduce

civilization among savage tribes in colonies, or in their vicinity, except through the agency of religious missionaries. This is no question of a balance of advantages, no matter of comparison between opposite systems: I repeat, that no instance can be shown of the reclaiming of savages by any other influence than that of religion. This is a subject to which I shall have occasion to recur: I will merely therefore say, on the present occasion, that there are two obvious reasons why such should be the case: the first, that religion only can supply a motive to the governors, placed in obscure situations, and without the reach of responsibility, to act with zeal, perseverance, and charity; the other, that it alone can supply a motive to the governed to undergo that alteration of habits through which the reclaimed savage must pass, and to which the hope of mere temporal advantage will very rarely induce him to consent. Of this more hereafter: at present, I must confine myself to briefly showing how remarkably the history of the South American missions confirms the position which may be stated in the words of Southey, "that the wealth and power of governments may be vainly employed in the endeavour to conciliate and reclaim brute man, if religious zeal and Christian charity, in the true import of the word, be wanting."

In the middle of the last century the Spaniards, by a blundering treaty, ceded to Portugal the territory comprising the Reductions of the Guaranis. The Jesuits bade their flock submit to the transfer; but the Indians themselves, finding that they were to be deprived of their spiritual masters, took up arms, and defended themselves for some time. At last the Portuguese government restored the Jesuits; but in a few years they were again and finally expelled, at the destruction of the order. Civil governors were then substituted for the spiritual, with similar powers, and retaining, as far as possible, the ancient regulations. But it was found at once that in

these new hands the system was inoperative : it fell to pieces ; the natural inequalities of society made way to the light through the fragments of the old artificial restrictions ; some Indians, says Azara, became rich, many more were ruined : but the tendency to decay prevailed, the habits of savage life returned, and the traveller who visits the wild banks of the Paraná now finds only a few scattered remains of churches half buried in profuse vegetation, marking the site of the ruined towns of the Guaranis.

The same experiment was tried in Brazil, when the Portuguese Jesuits were expelled from their missions on the Amazons : and in that instance it is better worth attending to, because Pombal, who directed it, was a man of enlarged views, and a philosopher, after the fashion of his time ; and his agent, Carvalho, seems to have been humane and well-intentioned. The history of it will be found in the third volume of Southey's Brazil. Civilians were substituted for the Jesuit missionaries, with the title of Directors, and paid by a proportion (one sixth) of the specified compulsory labour of the Indians. That provision alone was sufficient to ruin the undertaking. The directors having their own interest in the labour of the Indians, soon increased their daily tasks, until they perished or fled into the wilderness. La Condamine, no partial witness, describes the flourishing state of the Jesuit settlements when he descended the Amazons ; twenty-five years afterwards their site was desolate.

But although missions have thus been the universal instruments for communicating the rudiments of civilization to savages, they have rarely succeeded for any long time in preserving them. Those of the Jesuits answered better in this respect than others, owing to the strong and Spartan constitution of that society itself ; yet even the best of these seem to have contained in them the seeds of

decay. In general, as Humboldt observed with respect to the missions which he saw on the Orinoco, "the feeble civilization introduced by the Spanish missionaries pursued a retrograde course." It is easy to assign a cause for this; the first missionaries who found a community of reclaimed savages are commonly men of greater energy and greater zeal than those who take charge of a society already framed: and their task is more inspiring and exciting. But the policy of the Spanish and Portuguese priests was invariably to keep their converts from doing anything for themselves—to make them, in the language of Sismondi, great children, listening without understanding, and obeying without knowing why: everything, therefore, depended upon the personal character of the superintendents; and as these diminished in zeal and intelligence, the societies necessarily fell to decay. Further proof of these positions may be found in the melancholy description of the state of the Spanish missions under the Mexican government in California, in Mr. Forbes's work on that country.*

The second lesson which I would draw from this most interesting narrative is, that no kindness of treatment, no vigilance of superintendence, no physical well-being and moral instruction will compensate to man for the loss of his individual liberty of action; of that which he sometimes regards as a burden, but which is also a privilege, the right of taking care and forethought for himself. It may be thought, at first, that the history of the Paraguay

* The Californian missions, not merely neglected but continually plundered by the Mexican government, were broken up in 1845. In that year a considerable number of missions were sold by public auction. The price (and rent of the remainder) was divided into three parts: one bestowed on the missionaries; one on the Indians; the last converted into a "Pious Fund." In 1846 California was occupied by citizens of the United States, and what became of the "Pious Fund" I have not discovered. (See the "Annals of San Francisco," New York, 1855.)

missions rather affords examples to the contrary. Since, for several generations, men were retained together in communities, free from the corroding can and the corrupting vices of civilization; amply supplied (superstition apart) with religious instruction; their heaviest fault, disobedience to their spiritual master; their severest punishment, his displeasure, and the slight penance which he might enjoin for self-infliction; what more, it will be asked, remained to desire? And in these days when the very idea of freedom of action for the half-instructed man is connected in the eyes of many with those of licence, self-will, and infidelity, I know not whether some may not be tempted to contrast the content and the quiet morality of this theocracy with the turbulent passions and vices which deform human society in every other shape. Were I to combat these views on ethical grounds alone, it would be difficult perhaps to meet, certainly to convince, the adversary; because, were I to say that the minds of men kept in this slavish condition are brutalized and degraded, we should probably not agree in the definition of those words; apathy and contentment, ignorance and simplicity, obedience and servitude, are terms which often so nearly approximate in practical application, that an argument founded on the difference between them could scarcely be conducted to a satisfactory issue. But there is another and a very singular test of the success of the experiment of these religionists. It is this; that in all the missions, the great Reductions of Paraguay among the rest, the number of inhabitants was constantly diminishing; an irrefragable proof that there was something in the system inimical to the physical or mental development, or both, of the complex creature man. Writers have failed altogether to assign any general cause for this. They attribute it to a feebleness of constitution in the race; but so unnatural a supposition is wholly unsupported by evidence, and seems to contradict itself, since

their numbers are not said to have diminished before their reduction; to the small-pox and other epidemics; but, in flourishing societies, epidemics have often swept off great masses of population, but have never produced regular and constant decay: to early marriages; but the frequency of these every statistician knows, tends to produce a contrary result.* Yet the fact is undoubted.

The missionaries seem to have been little distressed by it. Enthusiasts in the cause, they regarded, as Charlevoix† says, every simple Indian who perished as an additional intercessor above for them and their labour of charity: but, in order to maintain their communities, they had recourse to the expedient of constant forays among the neighbouring tribes, bringing home captives, and more particularly children, to serve as recruits to the Christian population.‡ This was one of the worst features of the system. The Jesuits have told their own story as to these transactions, and they assert that they only used the means of persuasion and conciliation. But Humboldt, Forbes, and other writers, give fearful accounts of the cruelty with which this work of pretended piety was prosecuted in many missions, and the strange alliance between the practices of the African slave-hunter and the views of the missionary. What was the latent cause of this decay? What was the reason why people well fed, well cared for, entirely without spirituous liquors, inhabiting the climate to which they were accustomed, exempt

* "Now that fresh recruits can be procured with difficulty," says Mr. Forbes of the Californian missions, "and consequently the stock maintained only by the procreation of those already domesticated, it is probable that the whole race will gradually diminish, and in a few generations become wholly extinct."

† Hist. du Paraguay, vol. ii.

‡ The practice of kidnapping and seizing wild Indians for slaves was still carried on, in 1840, by the Brazilians in the north. See the narrative of Mr. Schomburgk's voyage down the Rio Negro.

for the most part from external hostility, not only did not multiply, but uniformly failed to keep up their numbers. Was it not want of liberty? Is it not the most probable solution of the phenomenon, that where the mental action is restrained altogether, the physical constitution likewise suffers: that men in a state of complete servitude, like caged animals, will not multiply: that, in the absence of all excitement and care, the faculties become torpid, the bodily strength sinks, and the man dies early of a premature and painless decay, like Southey's young savage in his tale of Paraguay? while communities, composed of men thus circumstanced, waste away by that unseen destruction which Hesiod enumerates among the calamities inflicted on guilty nations.

ἀποφθινύθουσι δὲ λαοί·
οὐδὲ γυναῖκες τίκτουσι· μινύθουσι δὲ οἴκοι,
Ζῆνος φραδμοσύνησιν Ὀλυμπίου.

Such are the consequences of contravening the laws of nature: of which it is assuredly one, that man shall provide for himself by the sweat of his brow, whatever the suffering with which that condition of life may often be accompanied; and another, that man shall choose his own course of action, and distinguish for himself between the right and the wrong, however dangerous the liberty thus enjoyed, however beset with snares the path of self-guidance may be.

In a future lecture, I shall endeavour to point out the application of these principles to the conduct of our own colonial governments towards the aborigines of their respective territories: at present, I have merely introduced them by way of digression from my subject,—the various modes, namely, in which colonies have been, and may be, supplied with labour.

LECTURE XI.

EMPLOYMENT OF SLAVE LABOUR. — PRESENT CONDITION, AND PROSPECTS, OF NEGRO SLAVERY AND THE SLAVE TRADE. — EFFECTS OF EMANCIPATION ON THE BRITISH COLONIES, AND REMEDIAL MEASURES NOW REQUIRED. — FRENCH PROJECT OF EMANCIPATION.

THE diminution in the numbers of the native inhabitants of the Spanish colonies in America drove the conquerors, in little more than half a century after its first discovery, to resort to the importation of negro slaves to supply the deficiency. For three centuries, from that time to the present, every year has witnessed the arrival of fresh cargoes of these doomed children of servitude on the shores of the Western continent and its islands; destined in part to replace the waste which excessive toil and unnatural restrictions continually make in their numbers, in part to accelerate the multiplication of the black and coloured races in that hemisphere, which seems likely either to balance or to outweigh the influence of the white and civilized race over great part of its surface. The difficult and intricate character of the questions involved in this fatal subject of slavery—the very wide extent of the interests embraced by it—the feeling of reluctance, and almost abhorrence, with which the mind approaches the mere economical consideration of matters so deeply interesting to every social and moral feeling of our nature,—all these render it extremely difficult for me to enter on it at all, and make it almost a bewildering endeavour to compress the treatment of it within the compass of a lecture. I must content myself with bringing its features

very generally, I fear very indistinctly, before your view ; and what space we have for more minute investigation must be devoted to what is of the most immediate interest at present to ourselves—the economical condition of those colonies in which slavery has been recently abrogated.*

Of the great multitude of labourers, of coloured race, enslaved and free, inhabiting former or existing dependencies of European states, almost the whole are occupied, directly or indirectly, in raising exportable produce, chiefly for the European market. Nearly all our sugar, and the greater part of our cotton, tobacco, and coffee, not to mention other and less important articles, are raised by negro labour ; nine tenths of which is that of slaves. About one third of our export trade is now carried on to slave countries, and the products which we receive in exchange for the goods which we send there are raised by slaves.

I mention these circumstances, not only in order to excite that general interest which the magnitude of the subject may provoke, but in order to exhibit, in some degree, the extent of that moral responsibility under which we in England lie with reference to this wide-spread system ; that responsibility, I mean, which still remains to us, after we have by solemn enactment renounced, for ourselves, the right of keeping our fellow-creatures in bondage. I am quite aware that many will look on that supposed responsibility as somewhat of a visionary character. Cases of conscience, it is truly said, must not be unnecessarily

* (1861.) I insert in a note the probable numbers of coloured slaves in different countries, which I had placed in the text of my first edition, together with more recent estimates.

	1840.	1860.
United States	2,500,000	3,800,000.
Brazil	1,800,000	3,500,000.
Spanish (American) colonies	500,000	900,000.
French	300,000	emancipated.
Of other countries	200,000	chiefly emancipated.

multiplied, or too subtly investigated. To say that every one who shares in the common physical benefits of civilization is answerable for his share of all the moral evil at the expense of which those benefits are produced, would be nearly equivalent to a sentence of banishment from the world. Still, in this particular instance, the distinction between direct and indirect participation in the gain arising from slavery and the slave trade does appear to me too minute to be substantial and honest. While we retained the system of slavery in our colonies, it was most justly said, that we could not lay the guilt of it, whatever that may be, to the account of our planters, while we were enriching ourselves at home by importing their produce in exchange for our own goods. In what way is the American government, or the cotton planter of Louisiana, or the cabinet of Spain, or the tobacco grower of Cuba, precluded from making the same reply to us, when we taunt *them* with the miseries which their institutions engender? We speak of the blood-cemented fabric of the prosperity of New Orleans or the Havanna: let us look at home. What raised Liverpool and Manchester from provincial towns to gigantic cities? What maintains now their ever active industry and their rapid accumulation of wealth? The exchange of their produce with that raised by the American slaves; and their present opulence is as really owing to the toil and suffering of the negro, as if his hands had excavated their docks and fabricated their steam-engines. Every trader who carries on commerce with those countries, from the great house which lends its name and funds to support the credit of the American Bank, down to the Birmingham merchant who makes a shipment of shackles to Cuba or the coast of Africa, is in his own way an upholder of slavery: and I do not see how any consumer who drinks coffee or wears cotton can escape from the same sweeping charge.

If this be so, we cannot consider that we have exo-

nerated ourselves by our own acts from all participation in the great offence, as some have termed it, of modern times. The abolition of the slave trade was indeed a great and noble action : it deserves to be called so, inasmuch as it was in truth that rarest of all achievements, a deed of national self-denial : by it we sacrificed (to a greater extent, it must be admitted, than we were then aware) the means of preserving and extending our colonial opulence. The recent emancipation was also a just and beneficent measure ; but I cannot attribute to it the same high character of self-denial as to the former, inasmuch as slavery without the slave trade, and in the then circumstances of our colonies, was rather a loss than a gain, and the prosperity of most of them, as I have shown on a former occasion, is now almost entirely factitious, and maintained only by a heavy tax on industry at home. And by that enfranchisement the natural course of events was, in all probability, only anticipated by a few years ; the slaves must have become free from the increasing burden on their masters of maintaining them, and slave labour is dearer than free *wherever abundance of free labour can be procured*. But by these public atonements, our state may have discharged its duties, but we, the people, have not earned the right of calling ourselves saints, and the rest of the world sinners. We cannot rid ourselves so easily of our liabilities.

If, then, the encouragement of slavery were, in itself, and necessarily, that black and inexcusable crime which some represent it, I confess that my casuistry will not furnish me with any defence for those millions of individuals who aid in encouraging it by their commerce or their consumption.* But if we look at that system more calmly

* (1861.) Many of those who have watched the course of events during the last twenty years, and have witnessed the fearful growth of inhuman practices and more inhuman legislation in the Slave States of the American Union, will doubtless consider the expressions in my text as a very

—if we regard it as a great social evil indeed, but an evil differing in degree and quality, not in kind, from many other social evils which we are compelled to tolerate, such as the great inequality of fortunes which our institutions produce, or pauperism, or the overworking of children, or the state of the poorer classes of our manufacturing labourers, which no legislative interference can greatly ameliorate while our system of manufactures exists, we shall, perhaps, be more reconciled to take the world as it is, endeavouring each in his own sphere to improve it; we shall feel that there is a bond of connection, a more compulsive one than the mere common tie of humanity, between each of us and the meanest slave who toils in the cotton field or the boiling-house; that we, who enjoy the fruits of his labour, are not free from the duty of protecting him; that Great Britain, the great commercial metropolis of the world, is bound, above all communities (regard being had to prudence, and to that due respect which must be entertained for the independence of other states), to watch, as far as in her lies, over the interests of the negro race.

After the consideration which we gave in a former lecture to the subject of the scarcity of labour in the new or increasing colonies, it will be easily understood, that the great demand for slaves and the great profitableness of slavery, at the present day, arise altogether from that

lukewarm commentary on what they regard as the most monstrous of existing evils. But I leave it, as written, to the judgment of those who have studied history widely and impartially. The present condition of slavery in those States is in truth anomalous and exceptional. When a higher civilization, and more scrupulous morality, are brought into direct contact with slave institutions, the vices of these latter are not only brought out in relative importance, but they are actually aggravated. The passions of the slave-owners are roused, their safety is in their belief menaced; they revenge and defend themselves by creating a reign of terror around them. And so the hours which we may hope precede the dawn are inevitably the darkest.

scarcity. Slave labour, it has almost passed into an axiom, is dearer than free ; that is, whenever the demand for labourers is abundantly supplied. When the pressure of population induces the freeman to offer his services, as he does in all old countries, for little more than the natural minimum of wages, those services are very certain to be more productive and less expensive than those of the bondsman, whose support is a charge to the master, and who has nothing to gain by his industry. This is true, without any exception for the effects of climate, which some have set up as a kind of justification or excuse for the enforcement of compulsory labour. Free Indians raised sugar in Mexico * before the Revolution ; the labour of Portorico has been, up to a recent time, performed almost entirely by free whites and coloured men. In the burning atmosphere of the Malay islands, the free Chinese labourer exerts skill and energies as far superior to those of the enslaved negro as the power of the English peasant is to that of the Russian serf.

This being the case, it is obvious that the limit of the profitable duration of slavery is attained whenever the population has become so dense that it is cheaper to employ the free labourer for hire. Towards this limit every community is approximating, however slowly. And although political institutions and old habits may prolong the existence, either of slavery or of villenage, to a much later period, as they did among the Greeks and Romans, and as they still do among the nations of the east of Europe, still, from that moment, the state of society becomes favourable to its abolition.

But it happens most unfortunately, in some respects, for the interests of society, that this favourable turn of events, as far as regards colonial slavery, is rendered almost incalculably distant by the extent of fertile unappro-

* Humboldt, *Nouv. Espagne*, vol. iii. 177 8vo. edit.

priated soil in or adjoining to the principal slave countries. As has been already remarked (and it is a truth to be particularly remembered in all discussions on this subject), neither skill, nor capital, nor abundance of labour have ever been found able to compete, in tropical cultivation, with the advantage of a new and fertile soil.* Notwith-

* This position seems to be disputed by some of those who argue against the remission of our duties on foreign slave raised produce. And since much reliance has been placed on it in these pages, a few words in explanation may not be out of place.

No one contends that the land in Jamaica or the smaller Antilles has anywhere become exhausted so as to be unproductive. No one ever disputed that with the help of labour, capital, and skill, the oldest estates in the West Indies may produce as much as or more than the newest clearings under slovenly cultivation. Barbadoes affords the strongest possible evidence in the affirmative. But this has nothing to do with the question: which simply is, whether new and fertile soil, *cæteris paribus*, i. e. with equal expenditure and skill, is not far more productive than old. It is difficult to conceive that there can be any doubt on this point. The writer of the able paper in the Spectator of April 15, 1843, on this subject, speaks of land in the West Indies being "ignorantly termed exhausted," and gives a statement by which it appears that some new plantations in Cuba return about 2175 lb. of sugar to the acre, while the average return of Jamaica is 2000. But as the same writer depicts in the strongest language the wretched state of sugar cultivation in Cuba, the fact seems to prove the very reverse of his theory: as would pretty distinctly appear if the capital employed in producing these equal amounts were compared. And he elsewhere quotes, without any remark, the language of Mr. Turnbull respecting the "worn-out districts" of Cuba itself. How came they worn out?

Undoubtedly there are practical men (some of the witnesses before the Committee of 1842 among the number) who speak as if they maintained the paradox that the large cultivated soils are as productive as the new: just as there are people, in North America, who will have it that it is as profitable to occupy the "old lands" as to break up the soil of the forest. There are always to be found many ingenious men who will support such unusual views: and some clever agriculturists, who by industry and contrivance will here and there realize them. But the broad evidence of facts is the other way. Wherever there is room enough, and European energy at work, cultivation *does* desert old soils for new: and in tropical countries even more than others. In Demerara the abandoned land is already as extensive as the occupied. Of course the

standing all the improvements in agriculture, which experience or accumulated knowledge can bring about, it has always been found, that whenever a new district has been opened to adventurers, it inevitably attracted the capital, and eclipsed the prosperity, of the older ones. In a former lecture, I had occasion to show you how completely this fact is borne out by the history of the West Indies: how Jamaica, after its first occupation by the English, after the expulsion of the Spaniards, undersold and outstripped the older Antilles; how St. Domingo rose for a time, while Jamaica remained nearly stationary; and how, in these later times, even the indolence of the Spaniard and Portuguese has been overcome by the temptations of an extending market and a rising price; and Cuba and Portorico are rising in wealth with unexampled rapidity, while our own colonies and those of France either decline or advance almost imperceptibly. So long, then, as there is new soil to break up, so long the continuance of slavery is secured; because workmen must be had at all hazards, and it is more profitable to cultivate a fresh soil by the dear labour of slaves*, than an exhausted one

inferior accessibility to commerce of remoter districts offers some check to this process: but it has not prevented the desertion of the lands along the side rivers of Virginia for the distant interior beyond the Alleghanies: nor, if any great social revolution were to infuse new energy into the society of Brazil, would it prevent the untrodden plains along her vast rivers from worming the seats of the greatest tropical cultivation in the world. (See Lect. ix. p. 264.)

In small islands, and peninsular spots of continent, the process of abandonment cannot easily take place; men's wits and patience are taxed to compel the soil to continue to make ample returns after the loss of its first fertility; men are necessarily more sparing, more provident, more ingenious in turning the minor usances of labour and art to account; one reason among many for the earlier and higher civilization of such spots, generally speaking.

* The profits of slave cultivation, with an abundant supply of hands and a fresh soil, seem to be enormous for a few years. The net produce of a plantation in St. Domingo paid the purchase-money in six years.—*Say, Traité*, ii. 301. Adam Smith considered that the rum and molasses

by the cheap labour of freemen. It is secured, I mean, as far as the immediate interest of the masters can prevail in maintaining it.

For example: the limit of the ill-gotten prosperity of Cuba will, of course, be found in the exhaustion of the fresh and fertile soil in that island. How near that limit may be, it is impossible to conjecture. We have seen that the old sugar plantations in the neighbourhood of the Havanna are already abandoned: but that clearing is continually extending in the interior. About three millions of acres in Cuba are said to be in cultivation; that is, a sixth of the surface of the island. But if that limit had been reached, no perceptible advance towards the abolition of slavery would be gained. The southern part of the New World still offers its vast and almost untouched continent to the speculations of avarice. Brazil, the second, if not the first, slave state in the world, has soil available for every kind of tropical produce beyond all practical limit: and if unchecked by any other than economical causes, there seems no reason why the slave trade and slave cultivation should not extend with the extending market of Europe, until the forest has been cleared, and the soil exhausted of its first fertility, from the Atlantic to the Andes.*

North America affords a still more remarkable instance of this general truth. I entered, in a former lecture, into some details of the economical history of Virginia, as an

on a West India estate, in his time, paid the rent, and all the rest was net profit. In the Mauritius, on virgin land of the best quality, it is even said that 5000 lb. of sugar per acre are obtained. "But this produce is materially lessened the second year: and when the land has been cropped for several years in succession, the crop is often reduced to "1100 lb. or 1200 lb. per acre." (Porter on the Sugar Cane, p. 239.) These statements are rendered credible by the evidence of the present prosperity of Cuba.

* Since these lectures were published the slave trade has been abolished by Brazil (1853), and Cuba remains the only region of any importance to which it is legally carried on.

example of the natural course of things in regions of limited fertility, raising exportable produce by compulsory labour. You will have perceived from that statement, how slavery, from having afforded a high rate of remuneration to the planter, becomes at last a burden; the profit of his cultivation falling off along with the gradual diminution of fertility, while the expense of maintaining his slaves remains the same or increases. Therefore, if the Alleghany Mountains had offered as formidable a barrier to the migration of slaves and slave owners as the sea which washes our island colonies, it is very easy to perceive that, in the older slave states of America, all economical reason for the maintenance of slavery would by this time have ceased; its continuance, if it continued at all, would have been owing only to habit or to fear, and free labour would by degrees have been superseding compulsory. But, unfortunately, a new source of profit opened to the Virginian slave-holder. Whether from better institutions, or from a healthier climate, the negro race multiplies in slavery in America, while it declines or remains stationary in the West Indian Islands. While, therefore, capital is migrating farther and farther westward, and new lands are daily taken up as the old ones are abandoned, slaves are bred in the older states, and supplied, by a regular domestic slave trade, to the new. This tide of population has already overflowed the boundaries of the States. Texas is now the land of promise of the slave-holder; its savannahs are beginning to swarm with wealth and industry, and the price of slaves in its sea-ports is said to be three or four times as high as at the Havanna.

It seems, therefore, but too evident that no economical cause can be assigned on which we may rely for the extinction of slavery, and that those who have persuaded themselves that nations will gradually attain a conviction that its maintenance is unfavourable to their interests are under a delusion. What political or moral reasons may operate

against its continuance in those societies in which it prevails, it is not within my province to inquire. It is certain that in most slave-holding communities, in which the population contains any intermediate class between slaves and masters, that class has an interest in its abolition; although prejudices sometimes interfere to prevent its being clearly perceived by them. The Spanish islands, for instance, contain a free white and mixed population of many hundred thousand, who themselves live by labour; these find themselves opposed by the slave in the market for their own commodity; and even if they belong to a class somewhat higher than this, that of the small land-owners, they share very little in the prosperity of the sugar planter, while they are familiar with all the social evils which that dearly purchased prosperity engenders. It is thought by recent observers that this class is pretty generally opposed to Spanish connection, to the slave trade, and to slavery itself; and that these are chiefly maintained by the influence of the richer landed proprietors, aided by the colonial government: and the example of the freedom granted in our own islands, and shortly to be announced in those of France, may operate more powerfully and generally than we can anticipate. It is, however, but too plain that little reliance is to be placed on such uncertain speculations; and the prospects of this question, it must be confessed, have at no former period been so generally dark and discouraging.

Such, I repeat, are its present prospects. Nevertheless, there are measures of internal policy, entirely unconnected with any irritating and unjust interference in the affairs of other nations, by which I cannot but believe that it is in our power at once to develop our own latent resources, and to deal a heavy blow to the abominable system which thrives to our cost and to the disgrace of humanity. The attempt to cut off the supply of slaves by repressing the trade appears almost as impracticable as it

would be to compel the enfranchisement of those now in captivity. After all the fruitless expenditure of treasure and negociation which has gone on for the last thirty years, even those zealous partizans who have all along urged our government to its continuance, beaten by the force of circumstances, now come forward to aver that not a single step has been gained towards the accomplishment of the object; that the foreign slave trade has quadrupled under our benevolent endeavours to check it; that force is of no avail, and that its employment must be abandoned. I refer to the recent work of Sir Fowell Buxton, which is as important, as a manifesto of the present sentiments of leading abolitionists on the subject, as it is, unfortunately, unsuccessful in pointing out a substitute for the present system; the best resource which the ingenuity of the writer can point out being the chimerical speculation of civilizing Africa, by establishing a legitimate commerce with her inhabitants, through the force of government bounties. I would not speak in any other than respectful language of the promoters of a scheme in which some of the best and most philanthropic minds of the day take so warm an interest; but, surely, among the thousands who welcomed its announcement with enthusiastic applause, few indeed could have reflected on the utter disproportion between the means and the object, even were there any reasonable probability of those means being carried into execution.*

Let us leave the consideration of these visionary plans

* The expedition here alluded to failed, some time after this lecture was printed, even more lamentably than its greatest opponents anticipated. But philanthropy is not easily discouraged. The great enterprises of Dr. Livingstone have been supported by numbers of our best citizens, merely on account of their seeming tendency to open new ground, on which to try an experiment, which, on old ground, has failed everywhere—that characterised as chimerical in the text. Fortunately, the good results of such achievements as his are not the less certain because they do not exactly answer, either in amount or in character, the anticipations of their abettors.

of cutting off the present supply of labour, and reflect on the other means which may exist of meeting the demand for it. I have already said, that while some of our sugar colonies are full of people and poor of soil, others are suffering under the most distressing want of labourers, and abounding in land, which scarcely any conceivable extension of supply could exhaust.

The necessary consequence of this state of things, during the interval between the abolition of the slave trade and the abolition of slavery, was that the value of slave labour in the market differed to an extraordinary extent in our several colonies. As slaves could not be imported from one into another, there was no mode of equalizing it. Each settlement was restricted by law to the employment of its own native labourers. However great the demand for additional hands which a fertile soil and an accumulation of capital might produce, they were not to be procured except through the natural movement of the population; that is, not at all, for the negro population did not increase. This truth is remarkably proved by the official returns of the money value of slaves in the several colonies at the period of emancipation, which are subjoined in the appendix to this lecture. The price of a field labourer, of the class there called *prædial attached*, which comprised the great majority of the negro peasantry, was assessed by the compensation commissioners in Demerara at 169*l.* which is a continental colony, with a highly productive soil, and a great scarcity of population in proportion to it; in Trinidad, the least populous of the islands, at 110*l.*; while in Barbadoes it only reached 75*l.*, in Dominica 70*l.*, and in Jamaica 67*l.*

This statement of figures will indicate to us the different state of circumstances in which the several classes of colonies had to undergo the process of emancipation, and the different manner in which they were affected by it. It will also point out to us the different character of the

measures to be adopted, if any measure should be deemed advisable, in the present crisis of their respective fates.

It will be found, I think, that the British slave colonies, at the time of emancipation, might be divided into three classes, as respects their economical situation :—

First, the oldest of our settlements, established in the smaller Antilles. Some of these had been, for many years previous to this great event, in a very depressed state; but others, comparatively speaking, were in a flourishing condition. They were those in which the land was nearly all occupied, population extremely thick, cultivation ancient, and capital accumulated. Such was Barbadoes, the most densely peopled spot of the western hemisphere, perhaps of the world; such was Antigua; possibly, also, St. Vincent's, Dominica, and one or two more. In these, population and production had been nearly stationary for a long series of years; the cost of production was generally great, and profits moderate. They had not been injured by the abolition of the slave trade, for they were always fully supplied with labour. They were less injured than any others by the immediate effect of emancipation; for the negroes had no resource except in continuing to work; there was no unoccupied land for them to possess, no independent mode of obtaining a subsistence to which they could resort, still less of obtaining those luxuries which habit had rendered desirable to them. There appears to have been in most of these really no serious interruption at all, either in production or the ordinary course of social life; and those appear to have fared the best of all, in which the masters were wise enough to perceive their own position, and to feel that, as the force of circumstances must drive the enfranchised negro to depend on them for wages, to retain them in any degree of servile control was only to postpone the period of satisfactory adjustment. In the little island of Antigua, densely peopled by 35,000 inhabitants, of whom 29,000 were slaves, the

masters voluntarily rejected the proposed apprenticeship, and allowed their slaves to pass at once from servitude to perfect liberty.* The result of this bold experiment has been, that, far from having suffered by emancipation, property is said to have greatly increased in value; the negroes are all employed, and apparently in perfect content, at very moderate wages, by no means exceeding the former cost of maintaining them.†

It would, perhaps, be rash to conjecture that, in colonies such as these, the cultivation of sugar might still be maintained on an extensive scale without protecting duties; but it is certain that they are in the best condition for that skilful application of combined labour and capital which alone can make head with any success against the advantage of superior fertility. And it is equally certain, that the continuance of slavery must have been highly detrimental to them; for the expense of maintaining it, in densely peopled countries, is perpetually on the increase. Their chief complaint at the present day is of the emigration of their emancipated labourers to colonies in which wages are higher. They will probably find, like other countries from which emigration takes place, that it is no loss in the end.

2. The next class is that of colonies in which the fertile or advantageously situated soil was all cultivated, and becoming exhausted; but there remained much unoccupied soil, of a less valuable description, and the population was not dense in proportion to the whole surface. This is the case with some of the smaller Antilles, but most

* See De Tocqueville's Report on the French Project of Emancipation, p. 39.

† Allowance must be made for the years 1836 and 1837, in which, I believe, the seasons were very unfavourable in Antigua. The physical circumstances of this island are very peculiar. Not only is the cultivable land all occupied, but in time of drought there is no access to fresh water except where it is preserved on the plantations, of which there are 130. The negroes are therefore absolutely dependent on the owners of the soil.

conspicuously with our most important tropical colony, Jamaica. For many years the state of that island has been extremely unsatisfactory, beautiful and rich as it undoubtedly is. In my former lectures I have traced the course of its fortunes; and have shown by numerical statements the gradual decline of its prosperity. Its population has remained nearly stationary since 1800: its production of sugar had diminished from about 100,000 hogsheads at the peace, to little more than 60,000 *before* emancipation; and of other articles in proportion. About two thirds of its surface are under cultivation. The best soils for the raising of sugar appear to be very limited in extent, and have been wrought for more than a century. But there is a great breadth of land, both cleared and uncleared, available for the raising of provisions and other articles, sufficient to supply the necessary wants of the negro labourer. The colonists, therefore, suffered, during the continuance of negro slavery, by the unprofitable nature of their cultivation. They were injured, *perhaps*, by the abolition of the slave trade; and they suffer now, since emancipation, by the difficulty of compelling the negroes to perform hired labour while they have their own provision grounds, and other resources, at their disposal. It is difficult to ascertain the real amount of the injury which the measure has inflicted upon them, amidst the conflicting exaggerations of both parties. The language of many of the colonial party is despairing. It would be absurd to pronounce with confidence in the midst of such opposite testimony. But, on the whole, we cannot avoid perceiving, in the first place, that political and social causes have rendered the working of the great experiment in Jamaica difficult; but that, in the second place, even should that difficulty prove only temporary, the economical evils under which the colony suffers have a deeper root. Nothing maintains cultivation on the large scale, at the present high rate of wages, except the high price of sugar; if that cannot

be maintained, it is difficult to see in what manner the colony will weather the storm. But it is equally evident that the dangers which have beset it have an origin long anterior to emancipation; and that nothing can give a favourable turn to its destinies except some new development of energy which freedom may peradventure exhibit, and which under servitude would have been impossible.

3. The destiny of these two classes of colonies, however, it is not in the hands of government to control, nor has our legislation as to slavery materially affected it. Let us turn to those of another class, in some of which the fertility of the cultivated soil is as yet unexhausted, in others there is abundance of fertile and unoccupied land. Such are the Mauritius and Trinidad, and, in a far higher degree, Guiana. The last is one of the most productive countries on the face of the globe. A vast alluvial level extends from the foot of a chain of low interior mountains, along the banks of three large rivers, and along the sea-coast. This soil is rich to an excess of luxuriance, and a most insignificant portion of it only has been brought as yet into cultivation. Between 1814 and 1825, the exports of Guiana increased from about 600,000*l.* to 859,000*l.*; the negro population in the same period diminished from 102,000 to 92,000. Since that period, except in some remarkable years, its production has been stationary or retrograde: its slave population has continued to diminish, and amounted to 86,000 only at the period of emancipation. Now here it is impossible not to perceive that the abolition of the slave trade has very seriously checked the economical progress of the province. The existing labourers have been worked to excess—their diminution unhappily proves it—more were not to be procured. Guiana had abundance of land, and the means of attracting abundance of capital; but the third great requisite, labour, was wanting. With the

slave trade, and with British enterprise, Guiana would at this day have exceeded Cuba in prosperity. It is with no feeling of regret that I state this truth ; but in order that the evil and its remedy may be clearly before our eyes.

Upon these colonies the effect of emancipation seems to have been partially unfavourable, though the returns are as yet uncertain and unsatisfactory. The negroes have found it easy to obtain a subsistence in a country overflowing with natural wealth : they have been rescued from a servitude involving, perhaps, a greater amount of labour than in any other settlements : they have abundance of land to resort to for their maintenance. The accounts, both from Guiana and Trinidad, seem to report the negroes as generally peaceful and well-inclined, but indisposed to labour, to which they can only be tempted by the most exorbitant offers of wages. An able-bodied and willing negro is a prize, which the owners of neighbouring estates intrigue against and countermine each other to obtain, with all the artifices of rival diplomatists. The production of sugar and its associated articles seems to have fallen off in the first year of emancipation about one fourth in Guiana, and the same in Trinidad. But these results, it is plain, are comparatively unimportant : with or without emancipation, the same general consequence must have followed : the wealth of Trinidad and Guiana must either have remained stationary or declined, through absolute want of the necessary labour.

Now for the evils under which these colonies suffer, both those of immediate and of more recent origin, we have the remedy in our hands. A supply of labour is the one thing needful, to enable them to resume or maintain their superiority in the production of tropical wealth. Could the supply only be equalled to the demand, much more than this might be done ; they might be enabled to compete successfully with the foreigner, even if the pro-

tection now given to British colonial produce were withdrawn. Could the planter of Guiana only obtain hands to work at moderate wages, what would he have to fear from the rivalry of the Cuban or the Brazilian? His soil is fully as fertile as theirs, his climate as propitious, his situation for commerce as favourable; while he has all the advantage of British capital and British enterprise on his side. The immigration of free labourers could produce no benefit in the smaller Antilles, which are over-peopled already; its advantage would be very doubtful in Jamaica, where the people are sufficient for the work to be done, and the present disinclination to labour, and high rate of wages, may perhaps arise from temporary causes only; for Demerara and Trinidad it is the one great requisite, the *sine quâ non* of their future prosperity. Its immediate effects would be to bring down the enormous rate of wages by fair competition: its ultimate effects would be to extend production indefinitely, and convert the precarious condition of those settlements into one of unexampled prosperity.

What then are the reasons which prevent the immediate attention of our legislature from being given to this, by far the most important exigency of our colonial administration at the present day? It is really with sorrow that one who is impressed with the deep importance of this crisis is compelled to advert to the class of objections which have hitherto been urged against the adoption of decisive measures by some of those who have been most influential in furthering the cause of negro emancipation. One favourite bugbear is, the fear of introducing a new system of slavery under the guise of regulations for the newly imported free labourers; surely a most chimerical fear, when the eyes of government and of the public are so jealously fixed on the subject as they now are, and when our suspicions are so easily awakened by the slightest suspicion of encroachment on the rights of the

labourer. The danger of injustice to the employer is, just at present, the greatest of the two. Another is still more difficult to define and to contend with—it is the fear lest the importation of free labourers should interfere with the satisfactory adjustment of differences between the employer and their former slaves—with what is called the working out of the great problem of emancipation; in other words, lest the competition thus produced should force the labourer to be content with lower wages than he can now obtain. I cannot but think, that any one who has impartially examined the present condition of these islands will see that, sooner or later, this result, the lowering of wages, must arrive; the only choice is between the ruin of the capitalist and the labouring class together, and the proper adjustment of the relations between labour and capital. The present rate of wages is maintained only by the unnaturally enhanced price of sugar. The moment that this gives way, if a reasonably cheap supply of labour be not introduced, the whole social system will give way along with it.

But, argue some reasoners, is it necessary for the welfare of the West Indies and the happiness of the negroes that the vast surplus produce which they now export should continue to be raised? We did not emancipate our slaves in order that these island factories might continue to flourish; but in order to procure a free, moral, and contented population. Let the great plantations go to decay, if it must be so; the loss will be abundantly compensated by the establishment of numerous small occupiers, each maintaining himself by the produce of his own industry; and the gangs of slaves who in former days assembled under the lash of the taskmasters, will be exchanged for an independent yeomanry, if I may use the expression, of the coloured race. There cannot, I fear, be a greater delusion than this. The great danger of emancipation, which all its reasonable friends have

foreseen, and against which they have been most anxious to guard, has been lest the half-civilized freedmen should sink into the indolence and apathy so natural to their climate and condition; content themselves with an easily acquired subsistence, and relapse by degrees into the savage state. Now, the immediate effect of freedom has been just the reverse,—to stimulate their love of luxury and display. Their expenditure has been greatly increased. The high rate of wages has enabled them to maintain it; and the consumption thus excited has given for the time an air of activity to all those branches of commerce which contributed to supply this consumption. But unless the profuse expenditure of capital among them, in the form of wages, be continued—that is, in other words, unless the production of staple articles of export be maintained—all these acquired tastes will die away, from the utter impossibility of gratifying them. Each negro will be able to support himself in tolerable comfort; but, without the aid of capital, he cannot produce surplus wealth; without it, therefore, he must remain a stranger both to the wants and the refinements of civilization. The example of Hayti is before our eyes. There the gradual relapse from comparative civilization to barbarism, of which I have spoken, actually took place during the first twenty or thirty years after the recovery of liberty. At first, the negro community retained much of the wealth and industry of the old colony; but the wars consequent on the French invasion destroyed its remaining capital; and the people sank into that condition which some philanthropists appear to desire for our West Indian fellow subjects—that of small occupiers, vegetating in barbarous indolence on their prolific soil. The cultivation of sugar disappeared; the production of molasses, the less finished article, increased; that of coffee diminished, but has of late years again increased, though not to such a height as it had attained before the revolution; mahog-

any, dyewood, and other products of rude and unorganised labour, altogether neglected in the flourishing days of the colony, were shipped in increasing quantities from the ports of the island. In short, to use the language of an observer, "every branch of cultivation requiring steady "systematic labour fell into decay, while all that called "for occasional exertion, and might be resumed at intervals, rather increased;"* and the people, in spite of severe laws for the enforcement of labour, fell into a state of easy indolence from which they have never since been able to raise themselves.

Emigration of labourers being recognized as the great want of these colonies, the next question is, from whence these labourers are to be obtained. For this is a matter in which undoubtedly government must interfere, and not leave it to be wholly settled by the voluntary proceedings of individuals. Emigrants of the lower orders are among those classes of subjects to whom all governments owe the exercise of a sort of protective authority.

Emigration from Europe, I fear, cannot be encouraged. After all the precautions which humanity and prudence can suggest, the climate presents an almost insuperable obstacle to the prosperity of a white labouring population. It is true, that the Spanish race have become naturalized, not only in Cuba, which possesses a com-

* Evidence before the Lords' Committee on Hayti. "I believe," says one witness, "that Hayti is the only country where chairs are "placed for the sentinel on duty: this was introduced in Pétion's "time, and may be considered as a fair sample of the system." Sometimes, however, by way of variety, they carry with them a mat to sleep in their sentry-boxes. (Schœlcher, Hayti, p. 254.) The small negro cultivators of Hayti (says this writer), live in exactly the same destitution and indolence as the Xivaros of Portorico.

Coffee exported from Hayti, —

1789 (before the Revolution)	77,000,000 lbs.
1826	32,000,000
1840	43,000,000
1859	60,000,000. — <i>M^cCulloch.</i>

paratively temperate climate, but also in Portorico, as well as on some parts of the burning shores of the Spanish Main; but this naturalization has been the work of time, only accomplished in several generations, and at great cost of life in the commencement, while we stand in need of immediate results. Often as the venture has been tried, no body of European labourers, transported under this hostile but treacherous sky, has ever thriven. The lamentable account of the latest experiment of this sort in Trinidad, published in the last report of the Land and Emigration Board, is sufficient to discourage the warmest advocate for this species of colonization.

I will not carry you now into the controversies which have been raised respecting the importation of other classes of free labourers from Asia and Africa, Chinese, Indian Coolies, and native Africans.*

Another, but a limited source of supply, will be from the heretofore slave population of the thickly peopled Antilles. This cannot, of course, be prevented, if it were desirable to do so; as freemen, the negroes have a right to carry their labour where they will; but there can be little doubt that it will prove beneficial to both the colonies they leave and those in which they settle.

But no quarter which has hitherto been suggested appears to promise so favourably for this purpose as the United States of America. The southern and middle states are said to be peopled by great numbers of free coloured people, of inferior condition, whom their laws degrade, and who under the system of slavery can find only a precarious employment. The white Americans themselves are said to be so jealous of the numbers of this dangerous class, that emigration from thence would meet with every encouragement at home. They are of the same kindred with the West Indian negro, and their

* See Appendix at the end of this Lecture.

importation would obviate that mixture of races which some profess to deprecate. They are far superior in intelligence, and said to be fully equal in strength, to the natives of Africa. They are certainly better adapted to the climate than Europeans, and probably than any race of Asiatics; and whatever the danger of the oppression of free emigrants by their employers may really be, it is evident that it would be far more easily guarded against in the case of American negroes than any others. They would not readily suffer themselves to be placed in a worse condition than their brethren, the natives of the islands; it would be impossible to prevent the knowledge of their condition from reaching their kinsfolk in America; they would therefore be protected, both by their own greater means of self-defence and by the interests of the planters, from such injustice as might, by the supposition, be practised on other classes of labourers.

There is still another instrument which England has in her possession, which may be powerfully used in her war against slavery, but the use of which is not, I fear, equally acceptable to our planters. I mean the employment of free labour in the wide and fertile regions of the East. The British East Indies already supply us with 500,000 cwt. of sugar per annum, or nearly one-sixth of the quantity furnished by the West Indies. After long opposition to so equitable a measure, the duties on this sugar have been lowered to an equality with those on West Indian, and there is every reason to expect that its production will greatly increase. The equalization of the duties on other kinds of produce is now contended for. But our islands and maritime settlements in the Indian Archipelago, particularly Ceylon, might probably raise sugar in much greater abundance, and on cheaper terms, than the main land of Hindostan. China is at hand, to supply labourers to almost any amount, and the best of labourers,—active, persevering, and intelligent. In the

eventual course of things, and as the artificial fabric which European governments have so long toiled to construct gradually gives way, under external shocks and internal decay, it is difficult to imagine that the tropical East, with its ancient civilization and its abundance of labour, will not compete successfully with the West, laden as it is with the curse of negro slavery.

It remains for me to notice very briefly the various plans for the emancipation of slaves which have engaged the attention of statesmen. The fears which were at one time so widely entertained, and almost prevented all calm discussion of the question, of bloodshed and confusion as the immediate consequences of their liberation, may now be regarded as obsolete; so complete, in that respect, has been the success of the British measure. It has been tried in countries in which the proportion of slaves to freemen was higher than in any other part of the world. It has been brought about without a single day of disturbance, without a single shot fired in anger. The question which now remains to be solved is, in what manner this great change can be effected with the least loss of the negro's labour, and with the fairest prospects for his civilization.

Three different modes of accomplishing this object naturally present themselves to the mind: namely, immediate and general emancipation; emancipation of individuals, one by one, as the reward of good conduct; and general but graduated emancipation; the latter to take place, as has been most commonly suggested, by continuing the system of compulsory labour, but taking the slave out of the control of the master, and placing him under that of the law. The apparent advantages of the two latter plans are so great—they recommend themselves so readily to the natural fears which men entertain of any sudden and violent change—that there is no wonder that they have generally obtained the suffrages of speculative writers and statesmen.

The author of the "European Settlements in America" entertained, nearly a century ago, the idea of placing enfranchised slaves in a sort of villein condition, dependent on the government.* "What, if in our colonies we should go so far as to find out some medium between liberty and absolute slavery, in which we might place all mulattos after a certain limited servitude to the owner of the mother; and such blacks whom, being born in the islands, their masters, for their good services, should think proper in some degree to enfranchise? They might have land allotted them; or, where that could not be spared, some sort of fixed employment, from either of which they should be obliged to pay a certain moderate rent to the public. Whatever they should acquire above this, to be the reward of their industry." And similar views have been expressed by most of those who have since speculated on the subject: namely, that enfranchisement should be the reward of good conduct, and that the slaves should be conducted, one by one, from the state of servitude to that of liberty.

Nevertheless, there are serious objections, although not at first sight so obvious as its advantages, to any scheme of individual enfranchisement. They are strikingly brought forward by M. de Tocqueville, in his Report already cited. The most important of them, and that on which alone I shall at present dwell, is that by making liberty a condition of good conduct a stigma is inevitably cast upon labour. All know how completely toil is a badge of degradation in slave colonies. One of the principal objects of their institutions should be the destruction of this most injurious prejudice. The plan to which I have alluded must necessarily foster it. The enfranchised negro feels his own superiority to his comrade chiefly in his freedom from compulsory labour. Thus enfranchised negroes in

* Vol. ii. p. 13.

slave communities prove, in general, an idle and a dissolute part of the population. Any scheme by which they should be called one by one to freedom would probably only augment the ranks of the useless, at the expense of the useful, portion of the community.

This error our government avoided, by placing the negro population simultaneously in a state of apprenticeship. Thus, we adopted the second of those plans which were just now enumerated—namely, universal but gradual emancipation. But, in doing this, we committed what some have considered two capital mistakes.

The first of these was the fixing a definite term for the apprenticeship. It is difficult to conceive how it could have been imagined, that with certain freedom before them at the end of six years, the negroes were to hug their remaining chains during the whole of that period, and apply themselves quietly to heavy and continuous labour. And, on the other hand, the masters, having nothing to gain and nothing to lose by their conduct towards their apprentices, and certain of being deprived of all power over them at the end of the stipulated time, were too often tempted to make the most of their brief authority, and to employ the arm of the law, wherever they could influence those who wielded it, to wreak upon these dependents that vengeance which they could no longer personally exercise.

The next and more important error was, that our plan of emancipation, as M. de Tocqueville too truly observes, seemed to have been framed with a view to the interests of colonial wealth alone, and to secure as little interruption of labour as possible. For this purpose, the negro was simply converted from the slave of the master into his apprentice, instead of the relations which bound the one to the other being entirely broken asunder, and subordination to a new authority introduced. The master could no longer sell his slave; he could no longer

punish him, but was forced to recur to justice for that purpose ; but the apprentice was, as before, his compelled labourer, only the compulsion was administered from another quarter.

Under these restrictions, the period of apprenticeship, in almost all our colonies, was one of mutual discontent, suspicion, and aversion ; the worst of all possible preparations for that condition of absolute freedom which was to follow.

The former of these steps, even M. de Tocqueville, I am surprised to find, does not propose to avoid. He recommends to his government a plan of apprenticeship for a definite period, similar in this respect to the British measure. But in some of its features it differs essentially from our own. The apprentices are to be transferred at once from the power of the masters to the control of the state. All property in their labour is to cease. They are to remain under the tutelage of government until the period of their full emancipation ; and government is to assign their services, on such terms as it may judge expedient, to those who require them.*

External circumstances seem to promise favourably for the success of this experiment. The principal French colonies, Martinique, Guadeloupe, and the Isle Bourbon, are much in the condition of our own smaller islands ; that is, their available soil is almost all cultivated, and the cost of production is high, which renders slavery unprofitable ; while, on the other hand, the slave can with difficulty find resources for subsistence except by his hired labour. They have also one inestimable advantage over ourselves, on which, being purely moral, it is scarcely within my province to touch ; complete unanimity between the government and the ministers of religion, on whom so important a part of the task of civilization

* Rapport, p. 50.

devolves.* How far our own colonies have been from enjoying it, is unfortunately too notorious; that the miserable neglect of the negroes by our national church, during the last century, threw their instruction almost entirely into the hands of a class of ministers, whose merits towards them have doubtless been great, but between whom and the landowners and colonial authorities perpetual opposition has existed. It is wisely proposed by the French government to accompany, or rather to anticipate, its proposed enfranchisement by a large addition to the number of ministers of religion in the colonies, and by considerable institutions for negro education.†

* It must be confessed, however, that the reports of the character of the Catholic priesthood in the islands, and of the results of their ministry, are not very favourable. Having under our eyes the daily exhibitions of conflicting sects, we are apt to exaggerate the advantages of external unity for the purpose of these missionary labours. On the other hand, some French observers seem to attribute the indolence and small influence of their own clergy in the Antilles to want of competition. "Je n'ai point trouvé dans le clergé catholique," says the commandant Layrie, a French official visitor to the islands, "cette sévérité de mœurs, ce désintéressement que l'on remarque à un si haut degré chez les ministres du culte réformé. Il m'en coûte de dire qu'à quelques exceptions près, je n'ai pas vu les prêtres à la hauteur de leur mission. C'est un aveu pénible pour moi, mais je le dois à la vérité. Généralement je n'ai trouvé que désordre, que dépravation chez les membres du clergé romain; et je les ai vus plus occupés de satisfaire leurs passions et leurs intérêts que de ramener dans la voie de la vérité des populations qui ont tant besoin de conseils et de bons exemples. . . . J'ai remarqué que dans les lieux où les noirs professent le catholicisme, le concubinage était presque général; non pas parce que les hommes dont il s'agit diffèrent en rien de ceux des îles voisines, mais parce que les efforts tentés pour les ramener dans la voie de la morale ne sont pas aussi soutenus que si des sectes rivales étaient là pour renchérir les unes sur les autres." (V. Schœlcher, *Colonies Étrangères*, i. 195.)

† (1860.) After many years of cautious discussion, the slave emancipation of the French sugar islands was effected at a blow by the Republican legislature of 1849; as that of St. Domingo had been by the National Assembly of 1790. The results, however, showed a wide difference of times and circumstances. Some disturbances,

Still, the eventual result of their endeavours, as well as of our own, is yet in the womb of time. The keenest eye is baffled in the attempt to penetrate the clouds which overshadow that province of futurity; the acutest judgment can hardly attain to any clear view, even of the immediate prospect, amidst the mis-statements and recriminations of conflicting witnesses. It would seem as if the spirit of partizanship must distort, not the intellect only but the very senses, when we compare the recent accounts which we have received of the state of the enfranchised commonalty in our West Indian possessions.

Read the descriptions of the friends of emancipation; they admit nothing of doubt or uncertainty, they speak not even of partial success; they pronounce the result of the grand experiment to be triumphant,—the state of the new commonwealth happier than any which the world has ever known. A free, orderly, industrious, moral, religious people; abundance of work, wages reasonably high; a new taste for luxuries and refinements hitherto undreamt of; man raised in his own estimation, and by that increased self-respect converted at once from a savage into a civilized and virtuous citizen; a general passion for education, a zealous attachment to religion; labour performed with all the willing strength of freemen, and consequently twice as productive as the listless efforts

and much derangement of industry took place in the Antilles. In Réunion a resolute governor placed the emancipated slaves by his own authority under a year's compulsory service, and tided over the difficulty successfully. In three or four years the production of sugar seems to have nearly equalled its former amount, except in Cayenne. And in 1858 the production of the two Antilles had reached 56,000,000 kilos, against 36,000,000 in the last year of slavery. But the cost of production is great, and these colonies in general show little sign of advance, with the exception of Réunion. Their sugar has still certain privileges in the French market: but it has had to compete not only with foreign sugar under lowered duties, but also with the fostered industry of the beet-root. (See Lect. II. p. 67.)

of slaves ; commerce, wealth, increasing with gigantic strides ; these are all the phenomena which strike their imaginations. If their attention is recalled for one moment to the fact that, in the middle of all this prosperity, the production of staple articles of export is still annually diminishing, it is but treated as a temporary and trivial mischief—the consequence of the natural clinging of the masters to the shadow of their abolished tyranny—a slight cloud which is already vanishing under the beams of that new and glorious day which has dawned on the negro race.

Turn to the statement of another class of observers, and all is gloom—difficulty and discontent in the foreground of the picture, ruin in the distance. The breach between the capitalists and the working class is complete and irremediable. It is absolutely impossible to count on the steady labour even of the best disposed among the negroes ; a fit of idleness or caprice, or the desire of procuring unreasonable and unattainable wages, will induce them to abandon the fields at the most critical period, and leave the ripe crop to rot in the ground. Production is diminishing year by year in the larger colonies, estates are falling into decay ; a less breadth of soil is annually devoted to the raising of exportable articles ; in fine, all betokens the approaching abandonment of these ill-fated regions by the white races, with their knowledge, enterprise, and accumulated capital, and the rapid degeneracy of the negroes, on the soil which they will have conquered from its owners, into a condition of abject and apathetic barbarism.

It is impossible for the candid inquirer, at a distance from the scene of action, to satisfy himself of the real truth amidst accounts so strangely contradictory. Thus much we cannot fail to perceive, and with unmixed satisfaction : that the moral condition of the negro mind, in most respects, is higher than the best friends of the Afri-

can race could have ventured to pronounce it, before it was tested by the dangerous acquisition of freedom: that the subjects of our experiment have passed through the ordeal of enfranchisement most triumphantly, as far as order and good conduct are concerned. There is scarcely a population in the world with so little of civil crime. The eagerness for the marriage tie*, and the happiness of domestic life among those to whom ancient tyranny had nearly denied both—the sincere and earnest desire for the blessings of education, blessings which it is difficult to understand how beings emerging out of a state of compulsory ignorance could have been found to appreciate—the love of comfort, the show of self-respect in externals, which prevails among them—all these are most gratifying testimonies to the innate powers and excellences of the race, as they are also to the eternal, but much neglected truth, that freedom in man is the soul of virtue as well as of energy. But the display of these qualities does not solve the great question of the future. The present flourishing condition of the negro peasantry cannot continue without steady industry. We are not now discussing the abstract question, whether civilization may not flourish in the absence of wealth. In the present state of the West Indies, the growth of wealth alone can insure the growth of civilization. Their tastes for comforts and luxuries, and the great increase in the importation of articles consumed by them, on which so much stress is laid by writers on the prosperous side of the question, prove that they are able just at present to obtain very high wages for very slight and irregular labour—the worst of all preparations for an orderly and industrious state of life. When those wages fall, as fall they inevitably will, and that shortly—what

* Marriages in Antigua for six years before emancipation,
 (1828 to 1833.) 294
 “ “ six years since (1834 to 1839) 2,025

will be their conduct *then*? Will they be content to work more steadily for less remuneration? or will they prefer to continue in their present desultory habits, and drop, one by one, their acquired wants, rather than undergo the additional fatigue which will then be necessary to satisfy them? This is not only the great question of the day in reference to the actual condition of our tropical colonies, but it is perhaps the most important of all the questions which now agitate the political world, in its ultimate bearing on the destinies of the human race. If all our sacrifices, all our efforts, end but in the establishment of a number of commonwealths, such as Hayti now is, flourishing, in contented obscurity, side by side with the portentous and brilliant opulence of slave-owning and slave-trading states—the best interests of humanity will have received a shock which it may take centuries to repair. If, on the other hand, we do but succeed in bringing about a state in which wealth shall continue to grow, and civilization to spread, however slow their progress at first may be,—if the seed can but germinate at all,—then the ultimate destruction of slavery, and the redemption of the children of Ham from their age of captivity, may be contemplated as within the range of speculation. Fortunes, such as never hung suspended on the issue of battle or revolution, are involved in the peaceful crisis which is even now in operation. Are we prepared to meet it? Have we seriously thought of its importance? Much must be left to the control of a higher Power; but something we ourselves can effect; and if I have at all succeeded in pointing out the way in which a copious immigration may operate in stimulating the negroes in our larger colonies to labour, and in lowering the cost of production of colonial articles, it must follow that no measure has more urgent claims on public attention, if we would not remain resigned and apathetic spectators of the threatened catastrophe.

APPENDICES TO LECTURE XI.

No. I.

PRICE OF SLAVES of the Class called "Prædial attached," in the undermentioned Colonies, from the Returns made for the Purpose of assessing Compensation under the Emancipation Act.

	£	s.	d.
Honduras	190	19	3
Guiana	169	10	4
Trinidad	110	2	11
Grenada	100	0	0
St. Vincent	97	6	9
Antigua	94	8	11
Mauritius	93	15	4
Montserrat	90	0	0
St. Lucia	80	0	0
Barbadoes	75	0	0
Dominica	70	0	0
Jamaica	67	1	8
St. Kitt's	59	15	9
Nevis	57	0	0
Tobago	55	0	0
Virgin Islands	55	0	0
Bermuda	51	18	0
Bahamas	35	10	0

Average Indemnity on Abolition of Slavery in the principal French Colonies, 1849.

	Per Head of Slave.
Martinique	438 Francs.
Guadeloupe	477 "
Réunion	738 "

No. II.

Importation of Sugar into the United Kingdom from the British West Indies.

	cwt.
Six years before free trade, 1841 to 1846 .	14,629,550
Six years after free trade, 1847 to 1852 .	17,918,362
Six next years, 1853 to 1858 . . .	18,443,331

Importation into the United Kingdom from Cuba.

	cwt.
In 1846	596,380
In 1854	1,997,370

Importation of Coffee into the United Kingdom from the British West Indies.

	lbs.
1831	20,030,802
1845	6,355,970
1858	2,964,058

No. III.

Return of Immigrants and Liberated Africans introduced into the West India Colonies and Mauritius in each Year, from 1848 to 1858, as far as known.

	Jamaica.	Guiana.	Trinidad.	Rest of West Indies.	Mauritius.	Total Immigration.
1848	1,940	5,542	873		5,302	From
1849	1,080	197	1,868		7,282	East Indies . 175,971
1850	468	2,259	775		9,823	Madeira . . 11,622
1851	808	2,256	173		9,334	Sierra Leone 6,543
1852	16	4,082	1,328		16,796	St. Helena . 7,147
1853	199	5,509	3,081		12,144	China . . . 2,107
1854	472	2,576	687		18,516	Other places 4,282
1855	212	3,397	291		12,915	
1856	—	2,270	628		12,854	
1857	362	2,925	1,586		12,725	
1858	—	3,162	2,083		29,946	
Total	5,557	74,135	13,368	5977	148,595	
Total introduced into Mauritius 1843—59 incl.						
Adult males					187,317	
Females					44,557	
Children					29,453	
						261,327

No. IV.

Total Production of Sugar for Exportation. 1859.

	tons.
English Colonies and India	351,500
Spanish Colonies	325,000
Brazil	200,000
Dutch Colonies	65,000
French Colonies	64,000
Danish Colonies	7,500
United States	136,500
Spain (Andalusia)	7,500

No. V.

Showing by tabular Statement the Progress of Sugar Cultivation in the British Colonies since Emancipation.

Production of Sugar in Cwt.	Average of six Years preceding Apprenticeship.	Average of four Years of Apprenticeship.	Average of four Years before first Step toward Equalization of Duties, 1842 to 1845.	Average of seven Years during Progress of Equalization, 1847 to 1853.	1855.
Colonies of the First Class (see p. 313.)					
Barbadoes	343,513	409,354	335,315	541,784	590,656
Antigua	173,947	143,878	187,881	186,152	219,939
Of the Second Class					
Jamaica	1,362,798	1,040,070	677,875	595,270	451,726
St. Vincent	222,732	194,223	132,094	156,469	98,122
Grenada	200,708	161,327	79,902	101,467	66,981
Of the Third Class					
Trinidad	310,797	295,787	314,508	426,042	418,902
British Guiana	874,347	935,849	537,029	634,007	761,946

West
8,

n.

5,971
1,622
3,543
7,147
2,107
4,282
7,672

No. VI.

Slave Labour (1860).

It would be an undertaking far exceeding the limits of a work like the present, if I were to endeavour to append to this lecture anything like a complete account of the economical and social progress of our formerly slave colonies since the period of its first publication. And I am bound to add, that I am acquainted with no subject of the same class on which it is so very difficult for one who aims at impartiality and truth to form a correct opinion. For nearly fifty years this subject has been the continual battle-field of two inveterate parties. And such publications as I have seen respecting it, whatever appearance of weight and authority they may carry, are nearly all impressed with the characteristics of party pamphlets, and can only be regarded in that light. Official reports from the colonies contain matter much more reliable; but it is very rare for an English functionary to remain long enough in those colonies to form correct notions respecting them, without acquiring local prejudice on the one side or the other, if he did not carry it out with him. Statistical returns are conclusive within certain limits; but every day's experience shows how very difficult it is to draw from them general inferences, and how utterly unsafe to rely on those drawn by others.

Thus much is certain; that we have to deal here, unfortunately, with a very different class of phenomena from those presented by other colonies or recently colonized countries. We have a very different aspect of things to contemplate from that presented by the triumphant progress of free communities, such as those of North America and Australia; very different from that of the scarcely less brilliant, though insecure and sinister, prosperity of

Cuba and Louisiana. Like their neighbours on the Spanish Main, the British West Indies, with some remarkable exceptions, are in the whole in a stationary condition at best. They subsist, but do not accumulate wealth. Their towns, their buildings, their roads, their outward appliances of mechanical civilization, are barely kept up to the ancient standing point; no marked improvement strikes the eye, even where there are no signs of absolute decay. The old magnates of the land, the great planters of former days, have disappeared wholly in some parts, nearly so in others. Their successors are men of a lower position in the social scale, and with less means of expenditure, however they may be better adapted in other respects for present times and circumstances. How far the great mass of the population are physically and morally better off than in the times of slavery is a question not easily answered, notwithstanding all the confident assertions which have been uttered respecting it. There seem, however, to be signs of the slow, but steady, formation of a middle class of inhabitants, chiefly coloured, independent of manual labour, and occupied in various branches of commercial industry; and this is perhaps the most favourable feature in the general condition of these colonies.

But one class of reasoners regard these facts as conclusive evidence that the West Indies have been governed and legislated for during the last thirty years on false principles, and that their permanent cultivation by free labour and without protection is hopeless. Others believe that the old artificial system, which produced a brief prosperity, had in it the seeds of speedy decay, and that emancipation and free trade have arrested that decay, if they have not as yet replaced it by rapid progress. This is the real question at issue.

It was endeavoured to be shown, in this eleventh lecture, that the abolition of the slave trade was the real death-blow to the old fabric, such as it was, of West

Indian prosperity. Whatever emancipationists may hold to the contrary, there can be no doubt that, with plenty of fertile soil, and a slave trade, tropical production may continue to thrive and augment for an indefinite period; as Cuba has proved of late years, and as Jamaica and St. Domingo had in truth proved before. But the slave population, without the slave trade, had not in these islands the power to maintain its numbers. Whatever the reason, such was unquestionably the fact. In some years prior to emancipation it was diminishing so rapidly, that if slavery had not been destroyed by law, it must have died of inanition.

Emancipation was therefore a necessity; but it is not the less certain, that its immediate result was a great diminution in the production of exportable commodities. The predictions of those who relied on the ordinary doctrine of motives for labour were abundantly falsified. After some years of struggle the tide began to turn, and prospects brightened; but then came a series of unfavourable events, telling severely against the struggling interests of the planters. In many of the years between 1840 and 1850 the seasons were most unfavourable.* In 1846 came the beginning of the free trade measures, for the equalization of the duties on British and foreign sugar, completed in 1854, and with it the unavoidable, though temporary evils of such a change; and, lastly, in 1847, came that great commercial crisis, which visited many regions in many shapes, but which was felt in the West Indies in the shape of an unparalleled fall in the price of their produce. That of sugar fell from 37*s.* to 24*s.* per cwt.; in other words, the money value of the whole exportable produce of these colonies was diminished by more than a third at a single blow. The effect of such a visitation on struggling producers, for the most part in

* See Ed. Review, vol. cviii., "The West Indies as they are."

debt, and with scarcely any reserve of capital to fall back upon, was undoubtedly disastrous in the extreme.

Seldom has a bolder experiment in commercial legislation been carried into effect than that of the equalization of the sugar duties. The party of monopoly had on its side not only the usual support of those who defended protection on general principles, and of those who defended protection as a means of maintaining colonial empire; but also the zeal and energy of the philanthropic party, generally supporters of free trade, but in the present instance shrinking from the exposure of recently emancipated labourers to open competition with foreign slaves. It required great resolution and strong faith, to triumph over an opposition not only so powerful but possessing such especial title to respect. The result has amply vindicated the right cause. It is not only that the signs of progress, slight as they still are, become more and more distinct, but there are still more unmistakable signs of the improvement of the public feeling—of that improvement which inevitably arises from the consciousness that there is no farther reliance to be placed on external aid, no farther tribute to be derived from the sympathies, or the policy, or the economical errors of governments or consumers: no more room left for the endless miscalculations, deceptions, and misapplication of means to end, of which protection is the fertile parent; signs of the arousing of heart, and hope, and energy. Far from accelerating the downfall of the West India interest, free trade has at the worst delayed it, and, it may be hoped, averted it.

These general views, however, require to be modified by regard to the very different circumstances, and prospects, of different classes of these colonies.

The first class of our old sugar colonies (following the division already made in this lecture) is that in which surplus land is scarce or none, and population

presses closely on the means of subsistence; of which we have seen that Barbadoes presents the most striking instance. In Barbadoes the disturbance of industry, produced by emancipation, was slight and transient. The colony soon recovered to more than its former prosperity. Notwithstanding the extremely limited area of the soil, and its diminishing fertility, production has increased and is still increasing with uninterrupted steadiness. The negroes — so commonly represented as destitute of the very capacity for continuous industry — are as regular in their daily labour as the operatives of the old communities of Europe. The abundance of labour seems to have had, indeed, only one bad effect, that of rendering the planters less anxious to avail themselves of scientific improvements than those of less populous colonies.* And its surplus overflows into the neighbouring islands, though not to any great extent, since it seems to be difficult to tempt a Barbadian to leave a home which he, with some reason, esteems superior to all its neighbours. No other island approaches Barbadoes in this order of prosperity; although Antigua, and one or two more, may perhaps be comprised within the same general category, as regions in which the want of labour is not seriously felt, and in which production is steadily though slowly on the advance.

Jamaica is the principal type of the second class. In Jamaica, and almost in Jamaica alone, production has receded since emancipation, and that very largely. A very considerable proportion of its surface has gone out of sugar cultivation, and either been devoted to other and

* See Mr. Trollope's "West Indies and Spanish Main," 1859. His visit to that part of the world was but a short one, and he is accused of having seen it too much with the eyes of the Planter party: but he is an observer of no common acuteness, and one to whom the maxim of *ridentem dicere verum* is peculiarly applicable.

less productive purposes, or abandoned to the bush. The landed fortunes have all but disappeared; the great commercial profits of old times have disappeared likewise; nor is there any settled prospect, though there may be occasional hopes, of prospective amelioration.

Of course this phenomenon is differently accounted for, according to party views. The doctrine of the West Indian interest is, that Jamaica has ceased to flourish because the free negro will not work. The opposite theorists urge several pleas, with more or less success, in mitigation of that general doctrine; they point to the general indebtedness and mismanagement of Jamaica properties; the inveteracy of the old habits and nations of the times of slavery, which have prevented the landowners from dealing justly with the labourers, from offering sufficient wages, and allowing the use of the soil on liberal terms. Among those who insist much on this latter argument, Governor Hincks, one of the most acute of West Indian observers, is particularly worthy of notice. But those who are accustomed more to rely on general than on special causes for the explanation of very general phenomena, will perhaps be disposed to look a little farther into the case. They will remember the position, laid down by the best authorities, and which it has been endeavoured to illustrate in great part of these lectures; that for the successful raising of exportable produce in new, and especially tropical, countries, abundance of fresh soil is the first requisite, abundance of labour the second. When the old system of production was checked in Jamaica, first by the abolition of the slave trade, and then by emancipation, it possessed neither of these requisites. It had a great extent of virgin soil indeed, but not of virgin soil adapted to cane cultivation. The sugar land was beginning to show signs of exhaustion, or rather of entering into that second stage, in which additional capital and labour are required to maintain production. The

possession of other waste but fertile land, of the extensive mountain pastures and savannas, where men might live and multiply at small cost, was an evil and not a good, in a commerical point of view. It enabled the emancipated labourer to subsist without uniform industry, and only to lend his aid to the planter reluctantly and irregularly, when stimulated by the desire of high wages to unusual exertion.

This is, unfortunately, true; at the same time there is much in the economical circumstances of Jamaica which seems to me unexplained, and many phenomena apparently inconsistent. Judged by the test of statistics, its decline is evident; and the observations of eye-witnesses go far to confirm, in some respects, the result thus obtained. The higher classes have suffered greatly; and yet the middle class seems to be very numerous, and advancing in prosperity. There are in Jamaica, we are told, 70,000 coloured people, all, or nearly all, of the commercial order. There are 300,000 of the negro labouring class. The first seem to possess a fair share of the comforts, and some of the luxuries of life. Whether the latter are improving or declining in condition is much disputed; but there can be no doubt that they have a superfluity beyond the necessary minimum of wages, and that some of them spend considerable sums for purposes of enjoyment. Now, in Jamaica, there is scarcely any domestic industry, except in the production of the staple articles of export. Dress, ornament, the usual articles of better domestic life, even food, to a considerable extent, are derived from abroad. All are purchased with exported commodities. How they are purchased so largely and distributed so extensively, in an island of which the whole exports are not much more than estimated in statistical tables at 1,000,000*l.*, it is really difficult to understand. Possibly contraband trade may still help, to some extent, as in old times it did very extensively. But I can only

leave the circumstance as one which West Indian controversialists, on both sides alike, have failed in my judgment to account for.

To the same category as that of Jamaica—the category, that is, of colonies possessing no available soil for the cheap extension of sugar cultivation, but a good deal of it available for other purposes, so as to exempt the negroes from the necessity of continuous industry—belong, perhaps, St. Vincent's, Dominica, and other islands of less importance, which at different periods, under slavery and with newer soil, have been highly productive.

The third division of our West India colonies comprises two only, Trinidad and Guiana. As stated in the text of this lecture, these two regions possess untilled soil, available for sugar cultivation, in an abundance which for present purposes may be termed inexhaustible. Regions so circumstanced at once needed labour in abundance, and could pay for it. The abolition of the slave trade, not emancipation, was, as has been said, the real check to their prosperity: but as soon as the first effect of both measures had been felt, the energetic communities which inhabited them turned their thoughts at once to the supply of her labour by immigration. It is not within my province here to recount the opposition which their projects met with from the powerful party at home who deemed it right that the experiment of emancipation should be tried in the most favourable manner for the negroes, without exposing them to forced competition in the labour market: the long controversies, during which the mother country, sometimes wisely, but sometimes, it was thought, in a vexatious spirit of interference, endeavoured to protect the imported labourers from sufferings on the voyage, and from oppressive contracts of service in the colonies: the still greater financial difficulties which beset the scheme at its commencement,—suffice it to say, that these difficulties are now wholly or partially

overcome, and every reasonable encouragement given to this kind of immigration, including the guarantee by the mother country, of colonial loans for the purpose : but the statistical results are instructive. Since 1848, Guiana has imported 34,000 free labourers ; Trinidad 13,000 ; while Jamaica has imported 5000 only ; and the rest of the West Indies 6000 only. In other words, no free labourers have been imported in any numbers worth mentioning, except into the two former colonies. It appears, therefore, that the benefit of the system, to the West Indies in general, has been of a very limited description : and further, that it has not succeeded for the particular object which its promoters originally had in view. That object was, to counteract, by competition, the alleged unwillingness of the negroes to labour, and supply the deficiency occasioned by their indolence. But we see that the importation, in the greater number of colonies, including those in which the complaints of this indolence have been greatest, has amounted to very little. Immigration really thrives, not where the native labourers are too idle to do the work, but where there is more work than those labourers are able to perform. The profitableness of introducing immigrants depends on this general cause, not on any supposed moral disqualifications of the Creole labourer. On the whole, these colonies appear to have regained, by the application of imported labour, about the same amount of productiveness which they possessed before emancipation ; but hardly as yet to have exceeded it.

Lastly : the case of the Mauritius, since emancipation, stands alone. To mix up the statistics of its progress with those of the West India islands, as is constantly done in this controversy, does but disturb the numerical results, and throw confusion on the whole subject. Mauritius, like the two last colonies mentioned, possesses an extent of sugar soil beyond the power of its former

slave population to cultivate : but it possesses over them the great advantage of being in close proximity to the great reservoir of free labour, British India. The cost of conveying a Coolie from India to Mauritius is believed to be not a third of that of carrying him to Trinidad, and no source has hitherto been found, except British India and China, from which any regular supply of laborious immigrants for hopeful cultivation can be derived. Accordingly, when once the planters of Mauritius, by vigorous and continued efforts, had removed the obstacles which opposed the early success of the experiment, it proceeded and prospered at such a rate as to constitute an absolutely novel phenomenon in economical history. In ten years, nearly 150,000 Coolies have been imported into Mauritius : they constitute much more than half the inhabitants of the colony : they are not voluntary immigrants in the ordinary sense, led by the spontaneous desire of bettering their condition : they are not slaves, seized by violence, brought over in fetters, and working under the lash. They have been raised, not without effort, like recruits for the military service, imported under government care, assigned by the local authorities to masters, but with their freedom and rights carefully watched over, and their option to return to the mother country after a limited period of industrial service, carefully secured to them.* In the same period the exports of Mauritius have nearly doubled, and while the Coolie labourers are themselves

* " When carefully managed, as I know them from personal observation to be both in Bourbon and the Mauritius, they are far better off than in their own homes. They leave India full of prejudices, utterly ignorant, and as low in the scale of humanity as it is possible to imagine such beings to be. They acquire in their transmarine experience habits of thought and independence, a knowledge of improved means of cultivation, a taste for a higher order of amusements, a greater pride of personal appearance, and an approach to manliness of character rarely if ever seen in the same class in their native villages." — *Report of Dr. Mouatt*, May, 1852.

well paid and contented, the Creole negroes have greatly benefited by their introduction ; as they have had opened to their industry the new and extensive market which the wants of these very Coolies occasion.

Thus much is unquestionably true ; and it is impossible not to admire the energetic will and practical wisdom which, sharpened by necessity, thus repaired in a few years the breach which abolition measures had made in the continuity of industry, and raised the prosperity of this splendid island to a pitch far exceeding what it had attained in the times of slavery. But, however unjust it might be to interfere in any way with the process thus going on, it cannot be denied that it has a tendency towards evils which were scarcely anticipated at the period of its commencement. Its results are in the main unsatisfactory, because forced and unnatural. Granted that all objections to the recruiting, conveying, and apprenticing these Coolie labourers are unsubstantial or fairly overcome : granted that their freedom is sufficiently cared for, their condition improved by the change : still the question will recur, what are the future prospects of a colony, in which industry is exercised, not by the native population, but by a multitude of strangers, brought over by an artificial arrangement for a temporary purpose ? If they return to their home (which comparatively few do as yet) they carry with them their earnings, and impoverish the country they were brought to enrich. If they do not (by far the more common case), then, whenever the temporary purpose for which they were imported is served, or whenever it receives a check in unprosperous seasons, they become a helpless mass of people, to be supported by charity. They are unpopular with the coloured labourers, who regard them as interlopers, and who cannot but feel that their importation is mainly provided for out of the revenue raised by the taxation of all classes, including them-

selves. They are almost all males (about one-sixth only females in Mauritius), and their society subject to all those rooted evils, not the less real because they make little external show, which, when occurring in collections of our own countrymen, have been deemed sufficient to justify the abandonment of great schemes of public works and reformation. They are (comparatively speaking) barbarians imported into a civilized region; heathens among Christians; either hated and avoided by the natives, or apt to communicate to these some of their worst habits. In short, in everything but the compulsion and the cruelty, the immigration trade is but a repetition of the slave trade, and the economy of Mauritius resembles that of Cuba. Such a colony is but a great workshop, rather than a miniature state. And, whenever a serious check to its prosperity occurs in the ordinary course of commercial vicissitude, it may be that this wealthy community will see cause to envy the far less brilliant but more solid fortunes of such regions as Barbadoes.

This brief summary ought not to be concluded without some notice of a feature in the state of the West India islands, little noticed in controversy; but which affects their prosperity far more seriously than ordinary observers suppose. I mean their system of government. Jamaica and the English Antilles (except St. Lucia) being old English settlements, or conquered colonies into which English rights have been imported, have English constitutions; that is to say, each little community, of a few thousand souls only, has its miniature king, lords, and commons, its governor, council, and assembly, together with a host of administrative and paid functionaries, most disproportioned to its importance. And each assembly guards (or until very recently guarded) with the utmost jealousy, not only the right of taxation, but the anarchical prerogative of voting away the public money at will, without any initiative proposal by the

governor. All this overweighted system of local government is a relic of times past away. So long as England continued tributary to these islands, by the monopoly which she accorded to their sugar, she requited herself, to some extent, by maintaining in the West Indies places for English functionaries and sinecurists, paid by West Indian money. The system has ceased; but many of the places remain; and the impoverished communities, which can scarcely afford to pay the salaries, seem, nevertheless, to entertain the strongest objection to reducing or consolidating offices which have become objects of local ambition. All this Parliament might redress, to the incalculable benefit of the community. But Parliament is justly reluctant to exercise a power over poor and defenceless colonies, which it abstains on principle from using towards rich and great ones, possessed of similar rights. It lies with the colonies to take the initiative. And something has been done. Jamaica has within these few years materially improved her institutions by approximating, under restrictions, to the ordinary type of responsible government. In other islands, the initiation of money votes has been relinquished to the governor; a simple but most practical reform. But far more than this is required. Whatever slight reason there may have been in former days for the maintenance of these small local governments, has been wholly taken away by modern facility of communication. They should be united, and this rather by consolidation than federation. Supposing Jamaica and Guiana to remain independent, from their importance, and Bahamas from insulation, two, or at most three, distinct executives and legislatures would amply suffice for all the remainder; and economy of public money, and improvement of the efficiency of the public service, would in this instance coincide even more closely than they are found to do in ordinary cases.

LECTURE XII.

EMPLOYMENT OF CONVICT LABOUR.—REASONS ASSIGNED FOR THE NEW-MODELLING, OR ABOLITION, OF THE PUNISHMENT OF TRANSPORTATION, AS FAR AS THEY CONCERN THE COLONIES.—RESULTS OF MEASURES LATELY TAKEN BY THE BRITISH GOVERNMENT.

THE employment of the labour of transported convicts in colonies is necessarily so limited in extent, that inquiries relating to it may appear altogether insignificant, when compared with those suggested by the interests which we had under consideration in my last lecture. The subject presents, nevertheless, some important economical questions, and has only lately received the attention which it merits on the part of the public of this country.

The Portuguese appear to have been the first European nation who employed transportation and penal labour in the colonies as a mode of punishment, and offenders are still frequently banished to their African settlements. We have seen that the energetic Paulistas, or people of San Paulo in Brazil, are said to have sprung in great proportion from the original stock of convicts. England adopted, in the seventeenth century, the system of transportation to her North American plantations, and the example was propagated by Cromwell, who introduced the practice of sending his political captives to serve as indentured servants or slaves there and in the West Indies.* But the number of regular convicts was too

* See an interesting passage in Palfrey's History of New England, vol. ii. p. 35, as to the Scots prisoners of Dunbar carried to Massachusetts. They seem to have been liberally and kindly treated.

small*, and that of free labourers too large, in the old provinces of North America, to have allowed this infusion of a convict population to produce much effect on the development of those communities, either in respect of their morals or their wealth. Our own times are the first which have witnessed the phenomena of communities in which the bulk of the working people consists of felons serving out the period of their punishment.

The penal colonies under the British government† were, in 1840, four in number—New South Wales, Van Dieman's Land, Bermuda, and Norfolk Island. In Bermuda there were about 900 convicts only, working in gangs, and employed exclusively in the government dock-yards. Norfolk Island was used as a place of temporary punishment; originally, for convicts banished from New South Wales for first offences; since, in some cases, for convicts sent thither direct from the United Kingdom, who were employed there in severe labour, and obtained the privilege of removal to New South Wales by good conduct. The two Australian colonies contained in 1836 more than 40,000 convicts; of these it appears, in the height of the assignment system, that about 26,000 were "assigned" people; that is, made over to settlers as servants to perform compulsory labour; the remainder were disposed in the following ways, as enumerated by Colonel Arthur:—"In the service of government, in the road

* In the middle of the last century Maryland was estimated to contain 107,208 inhabitants, of whom 1981 only were convicts. Yet Maryland was one of the principal receptacles of criminals.—*Sadler on Population*, i. 447.

† (1861). As to the discontinuance of transportation to the greater Australian colonies, see Appendix to this lecture. Bermuda and Gibraltar are retained as places in which male convicts under sentence of penal servitude serve out their time on public works, as in old times in the hulks; but they are not places to which transportation, properly so called, takes place.

"gangs, in the chain gangs, in the penal settlements, or
"in the chain gangs in the penal settlements."* From
1787 to 1836, 75,200 had been transported to New
South Wales, and 27,757 to Van Dieman's Land. These
facts are furnished by the Report of the Transportation
Committee of 1838.

The causes of the early and rapid growth of wealth in
these colonies are not difficult to trace. They were, in
fact, almost wholly artificial—on the one hand an ample
supply of labour, on the other a large government ex-
penditure. Instead of being forced to support their own
servants, the colonists received in truth a bounty for
employing them, their produce being taken off their
hands by the government at high prices, for the purpose
of maintaining those very labourers. "The extraordinary
"wealth of these colonies," to borrow the language of
the same report, "was occasioned by the regular and
"increasing supply of convict labourers. The convicts
"were assigned to settlers as slaves. They were forced
"to work in combination, and raised more produce than
"they could consume; for this surplus government pro-
"vided a market, by maintaining military and convict
"establishments, which have cost this country above
"seven millions of public money. Thus the government
"first supplied the settlers with labour, and then bought
"the produce of that labour: the trade carried on was
"a very profitable one for the settlers, as long as the
"demand of the government exceeded the supply; and
"this excess of demand over supply has continued up to
"a late period."

When the scales of the balance here indicated began
to turn, it would be perhaps difficult to ascertain; but it
appears certain, although the annual expenditure of these

* Number of convicts in 1836:—New South Wales, 27,831; Van
Dieman's Land, 16,968. Assigned (1833), New South Wales, 20,207;
Van Dieman's Land, 6475.—*Report of Committee on Transportation.*

colonies has averaged of late years half a million, that they no longer depend in any essential degree on that government expenditure for their prosperity. Although a certain amount of stimulus is still given to production by the artificial demand, it is no longer the main economical feature in the state of their society. And it becomes of less importance every day, as the increase of the colonial resources is far more rapid and certain than the increase of the government expenditure. These settlements have, therefore, passed out of the first stage of their progress, that of dependence and infancy, into the second, or stage of adolescence. And situated as they now are, it becomes important to trace the effects produced on their condition by the continued influx of convict labour, and the probable results of its discontinuance. These are both economical and moral; and the latter are so intimately connected with the former, that it would be treating the subject unworthily to pass them over on the present occasion, although with us they must of necessity be secondary objects of inquiry.

1. In the first place, the effect of the extensive introduction of convicts on the progress of population is to be considered. The great disproportion between the sexes, which is unavoidable under such circumstances, necessarily prevents it from making a rapid advance. Accordingly, the increase of numbers in Australia was very slow, until the great influx of free labourers which commenced in 1838; while that of wealth was uncommonly rapid. It appears that the convict emigration alone into New South Wales, between 1788 and 1833, was larger than the whole population of the colony in the latter year, while there had been a considerable free emigration also; consequently, the deaths in that interval had very greatly exceeded the births. But a population which grows in this manner, by adult emigration and not by propagation, must be, for some time at least, favourably

constituted with respect to the productiveness of labour : there must be a smaller number of unproductive persons, such as children, and to a certain extent women, to support out of the wages of labour—just as it is cheaper to import slaves than to breed them. But slaves are short-lived, the success of the speculation in their flesh and blood greatly depends on their dying before they are past labour : convicts, in a healthy country like Australia, grow old : it may be doubted therefore whether, after a certain period, such a population is really more effective than one which grows by natural movement.

2. The labour of convicts is probably the dearest of all labour ; that is, it costs more to some portion or other of society. The master himself obtains it cheaper than the services of a free labourer ; but this is only because the state has already expended a much greater sum than the difference on the maintenance and restraint of the convict ; and, when obtained, it is not in the long run equally efficient or valuable. In our colonies the convicts, as we have said, are divided into two classes, those employed on public works, and those assigned as servants to individuals. From the first of these classes it is probable that as much labour is obtained, for an equal expense, as would be procured from hired labourers, at that high rate of wages which prevails in young communities. But with reference to the other class, that of assigned servants, the case is very different. The difficulty of employing them profitably and at the same time rendering their condition one of punishment is extreme. The ordinary labourer may be compelled, by dread of severer coercion, to perform a certain quantity of work ; about two thirds of what would be done by a free labourer, according to the estimate of an intelligent witness before the Transportation Committee.* But severity will never compel the skilled mechanic to exert his

* Mr. Heath's Report, p. 267.

powers. Their development can only be won from him by fair means—by good treatment, and indulgence, perhaps in his most pernicious habits; and thus, with respect to those very criminals who are in general the most depraved, there is a constant temptation to the master to treat them with the greatest lenity and favour, by which the object of punishment is entirely frustrated. To this Sir George Arthur, who has become conversant with the system by ample experience, bears testimony. "Those who have any mechanical skill," says he, "are unfit for assignment; because, though men may be compelled in private service to do a certain given portion of rough work, it has been found that the application of their skill can only be elicited by coaxing and indulgence." These are causes of general operation: there are others, peculiar to Australia. The staple industry of the country is pastoral: the great demand for assigned convicts is for the purposes of that industry: in 1837, no fewer than 8000 of them were serving as shepherds and neatherds in New South Wales. It is impossible to conceive a mode of employment less calculated either to terrify or to reform. It encourages habits of indolence; it gives ample leisure for that solitary meditation, which, unaccompanied by labour, is generally found to have the worst effects on the ignorant and depraved intellect; it gives ample opportunity, not only for the formation of barbarous tastes and habits, but for the actual commission of crime. On the other hand, those assigned servants whom there is no object in treating with indulgence are often subject, if not to cruelty, at least to capricious and unreasonable ill treatment at the hands of their masters.

3. Lastly, to return once more to the economical view of the subject: our great Australian colonies seem to have advanced beyond that point at which the importation of convict labour can be of any material service to

* It
of pub
convic

the body of landowners and capitalists. It is true that a strong opinion prevails, both here and in Australia, of its importance, and of the evils occasioned by its loss.* Individuals still suffer from the diminution in the supply of convict labourers; and they attribute to that cause much more than its real effect; for the consequences of the vastly increased demand for labour, which has followed from the large emigration of capitalists, are very naturally compounded in their mind with those which result from the measures of government. But it is strongly argued by the opponents of the present system, that the great interests of the colony can be materially touched by a change of this description, and however temporary inconvenience it may occasion to many proprietors. Supposing that the practice of the assignment of convicts immediately on their arrival were to continue in its full extent, little more than three thousand labourers would thus be added every year to the working people of New South Wales. The population of that colony amounted in 1840 to 110,000; it then began to increase with great rapidity, both from births and from free emigration; and as the supply of convicts cannot under any circumstances be very materially augmented, it must bear every year a less and less proportion to the wants of the colony, and become at last altogether insignificant.

Such were some of the arguments urged against the practice of transportation, as carried on until of late years, with reference to its effects in the colonies. These arguments have so far prevailed, that the practice of the immediate assignment of convicts has been generally discontinued. It is intended that all convicts should be employed, in the first instance, under military superintendence in separate "penal settlements," or in public works in the

* It must be remembered that this was written long before the tide of public opinion in Australia had turned against the reception of convicts. See Appendix.



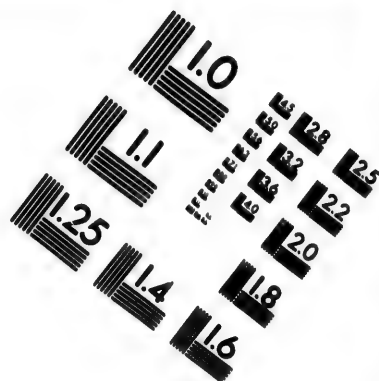
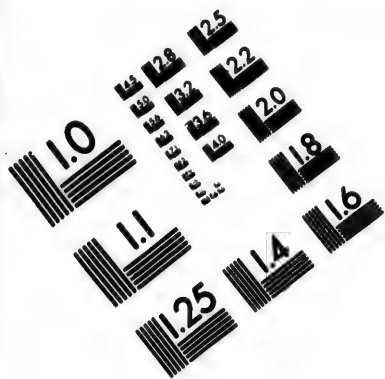
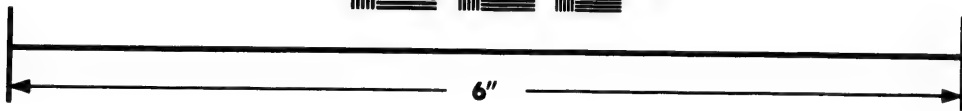
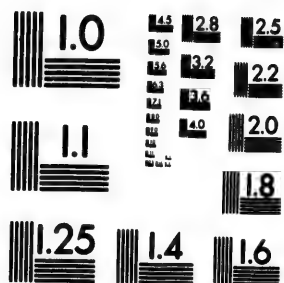


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

**23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503**

18
20
22
25

10

older colonies; and the assignment to colonists as servants is to be considered as a reward for good behaviour—a first step in that gradual rehabilitation which is to replace the offender in his former rights and honour as the citizen of a free community, so far as this can be done with safety to the community itself.

Thus far public opinion seems to concur in approving of the scheme of reformation, which has been mainly prepared by the labours of the Transportation Committee of 1838. But it is well known that the views of many reformers of our penal code go farther. They are anxious for the entire abolition of the punishment of transportation. You are probably all aware of the very active part which Archbishop Whately, my predecessor in this chair, has taken in advocating this great change. It has, indeed, been rendered public enough, if such publicity were needed, by the violent attacks of which he has been made the object, on account of his pictures of the moral condition of our penal colonies under the present system. Whatever the result of the alteration may be, there is no one on whom the responsibility or the credit of effecting it will rest more decidedly than on him.

Now, by far the most important of the considerations which are adduced in favour of this change relate to the efficacy of transportation as a punishment: its effects, or rather its alleged want of effect, in deterring from crime; its inadequacy as an example. These do not fall within the range of our subject. But, since the advocates of its abolition have also laid great stress on the utter demoralization which they suppose to be the result of it in the colonies themselves, we may be permitted a cursory glance at this portion of their arguments.

The general features of their statement admit of no denial. The state of public morals in New South Wales and Van Dieman's Land is but too plainly evinced by the criminal returns from those countries. It is notorious

that a large proportion of their community consists of men restrained from the commission of every crime merely by the exercise of severe and constant watchfulness over them. It is notorious, that almost every wickedness of luxurious and corrupt societies is practised there, amidst a scanty, laborious, and unrefined population. Nor is it possible to deny the extensive influence which the contagion of this vicious class exercises on the remainder of the community. The habit of entertaining convict servants introduces crime and recklessness into the families of respectable emigrants. Of the "emancipists," as they are termed, or convicts who have passed the term of their sentence, too many are apt to fall into one or the other of two classes, each in its way pernicious to society: the low and brutal, "whose habits," it is said, "are nearly the same as those of the convicts, while "they are under less control;" and the able and dexterous, who contrive to attain competence, or even to amass considerable fortunes, often by the most iniquitous means. One individual of this class was said, a few years ago, to have acquired property to the amount of 40,000*l.* a year; having begun his career, after the expiration of his sentence, by keeping a public house, which was frequented by the drunken settlers of the neighbourhood, at the time when the prosperity of the colony ran highest, where they were inveigled into fraudulent bargains in a state of intoxication. Such men as these, not to mention the evil effect produced by their example, often become the most bitter enemies of institutions by which a certain line of demarcation is still preserved, at least in society, between the liberated criminal and the man of unstained character.

All this is only too true; and yet the question would not be fairly judged, unless certain other circumstances were taken into consideration.

In the first place, it must be considered that many of

these evils belong, not to transportation itself, but to transportation as hitherto conducted. They will be much diminished by the mere discontinuance of the mischievous practice of indiscriminate assignment, of which the effects have already been fully developed. In the early stages of the colony, all thoughts of punishment and reformation seem to have been set aside in the ardent pursuit of wealth. The first object was to make the labour of convicts as productive as possible; and it appears to have been fancied that in this manner they performed that restitution which they owed to the country whose laws they had infringed. It is unfair to charge upon the general system consequences which have flowed from so manifest and flagrant an abuse of it. If, from the beginning, assignment had always been made conditional on good conduct, and reversible at pleasure, and in no instance allowed until some part of the term of punishment had been served out in severer and more penal labour, it is not too much to conjecture that the convict servant would have brought far less of corruption into the families of his employers, that he would have been in general more orderly and industrious, and that the rapid rise of emancipists to prosperity as individuals, and to importance as a party, would have been materially impeded.

It must be added, that this last unfavourable circumstance has been mainly produced by the mistaken views which long prevailed in the administration of these settlements. As Archbishop Whately truly says, the governors of our penal colonies had the problem proposed to them of accomplishing two different, and in reality inconsistent objects:—to legislate and govern in the best manner with a view to, 1. the prosperity of the colony; and, 2. the suitable punishment of the convicts. But some rulers increased their difficulties by adopting a *third* object, incompatible with both the

others. One of the governors of New South Wales, whose conduct had a very extensive influence on its subsequent fortunes, discouraged free emigration altogether, and is said to have declared that his province "was a convict colony, established for the benefit of convicts, and had been brought into its present state of prosperity by their means."—"He looked," says one writer, "upon no title to property in New South Wales as so good or so just as that which had been derived through the several gradations of crime, conviction, sentence, emancipation, and grant." It is needless to add that such mistakes as this are not likely to be repeated.*

Next, it is obvious that these colonies have already passed, or are quickly passing, through the first and most unfavourable stage of their moral progress. A new generation is advancing with daily increasing rapidity to occupy the stage; a generation born in the colony, nurtured doubtless under many discouraging circumstances, but free at least from the utter debasement of the original settlers. And the free emigration, now so enormously on the increase, will tend most powerfully to accelerate this change in the general face of society. The members of the Committee on Transportation, who have undoubtedly done much to throw light on the subject, but whose voluminous pages must nevertheless be perused with considerable caution, so evident is the bias on the minds both of the examiners and of a great number of the witnesses, lay down formally in their report, as one of the reasons against transportation, the disinclination which it produces in the minds of free emigrants to choose the penal colonies

* Upon the subject of this governor's conduct in advancing pardoned convicts to public stations, and endeavouring "to force their society upon the *undetected* part of the colony," the reader may consult an article of the Rev. Sydney Smith's, full of his peculiar combination of humour with sound practical sense, in the *Edinburgh Review* for 1823, reprinted in his works.

for their place of abode. I cannot help suspecting that the Committee have here, by help of a lively imagination, metamorphosed their own theories into supposed facts. I cannot find, either in the evidence collected by themselves or elsewhere, any proof whatever of the alleged reluctance. On the contrary, when the witnesses were asked, after the usual parliamentary fashion of putting leading questions, whether, in their opinion, such motives did not actuate the labouring population at home, and render them unwilling to emigrate to Australia, the answer has generally been that they were not aware of anything of the kind.* And facts speak far more strongly than witnesses. Voluntary emigration has certainly never been directed towards that region, on account of the expense and the distance. But as soon as government began to offer encouragement to emigrants of the labouring classes, there was no lack of candidates for its assistance; the number of emigrants to Sydney in the years 1838 to 1841, was great beyond all anticipation—proof positive, I fear, that the Committee were doing an unmerited honour to the moral delicacy of our peasantry in the motives which they attributed to them. In a community thus expanding, the effect produced on society by the contagion of the one bad part must continually diminish. If poison and water be poured into a vase, the latter in a continually increasing proportion to the former, the mixture must at last be rendered innocent by the dilution; and in Australia, as in America, according to all the probabilities of the case, the convict taint would in time utterly disappear.

* The Committee do not, however, quite go so far as the distinguished Captain Smith, in the reign of James I., who attributes still greater refinement of feeling to the thieves of his own time. He says of Virginia that "the number of felons and vagabonds transported did bring such evil characters on the place, that some did choose to be hanged ere they would go there, and were."—*Graham's Rise and Progress of the United States*, i. 71.

To dwell for a moment on a single cause of demoralization—the disproportion between the sexes. By the census of 1836, New South Wales contained 55,000 males and 21,000 females; that is, the former were to the latter as five to two. The births were about one in thirty-six annually; deaths one in forty-seven. Supposing the annual emigration to consist of 3000 convicts in the proportion of five males to one female, and 10,000 free persons in the proportion of three males to two females, which is stating the position unfavourably for my argument, it may be shown arithmetically that in five years the females would amount to one half the number of the males*, and probably in twenty more (although I have not taken the trouble to carry the calculation so far) the relative numbers would approximate as nearly as is necessary to maintain a community in a healthy state.

And lastly, it is most important to control those sanguine expectations of good, and that impatience of present evil, which are apt to bias our minds in the investigation of questions such as this, by the recollection that the solution of them offers, most emphatically, nothing but a choice of difficulties. Crime, and misery, and punishment, considered abstractedly, are evils in every shape; the last

* (1860.) The estimate in the text (singularly enough) has been exactly verified by the result. The census of 1841 gave 87,298 males, and 43,558 females. The proportion of the sexes in the principal Australian colonies by latest returns (1860) is nearly as follows:—

	Males.	Females.
New South Wales	200,000	143,000
Victoria	323,000	181,000
South Australia	62,000	58,000
Tasmania	46,000	35,000
	<hr/> 631,000	<hr/> 407,000

The great diminution of the former disproportion is owing partly to births, but more (as we shall see more distinctly hereafter), to the judicious management of the emigration fund of the colonies by the authorities at home.

among the heaviest evils which society must necessarily endure. Nothing that philanthropy or sagacity can suggest will ever render human punishment other than it is—a coarse, indiscriminating, and imperfect preventive of crime, often demoralizing instead of reforming, and only inflicted because, on the whole, it represses, as we hope, more mischief than it occasions. Now the mind, in dwelling strongly on this or that special form of evil, acquires by degrees an intensity of feeling respecting it which renders it quite incapable of adopting the true test, that is, the relative one, and compels it to regard that form, and that alone, as something to be got rid of by any sacrifice. And thus the old history of the good bishop Las Casas, who introduced negro slavery in order to relieve the enslaved Indians of America, typifies the character of a whole class of reformers, moral and social, not a few of whom have done much service to humanity; for perhaps no great changes would ever have been brought into execution, if reflection had always accompanied enthusiasm. Such persons are always desirous to shift the burden from the galled shoulders, with little consideration for those on which it is next to be imposed. The whole history of the theory of punishment affords abundant instances of this truth. Our ancestors preferred to punish offenders by the compendious methods of the gallows and the lash. The inefficacy, as well as cruelty, of those time-honoured practices were abundantly proved; and transportation gradually superseded the infliction of death, as the ordinary punishment for the class of offences next below the heaviest. Evidence has now been carefully accumulated of the ill success and injustice of this once admired system. A better regulated method of imprisonment is the proposed substitute. But all punishments are ineffective—all punishments are unjust, except by comparison only. If the attention of the observer is directed to any one alone, the inevitable evils attending it

will so press upon his attention, as to drive him to unfavourable conclusions ; and, should imprisonment be adopted as the ordinary penalty for serious offences, it needs little foresight to anticipate, that in few years it will be assailed by objections to the full as heavy and unanswerable as those which are now urged against transportation. It is so already in the United States, where more attention has been paid to the subject than in any other country.

To apply these remarks to the subject immediately before us ; it should be remembered, that for a long time, after the establishment of our penal colonies public opinion ran high in their favour. There was general confidence in the then favourite theory, that the best mode of punishing offenders was that which removed them from the scene of offence and temptation, cut them off by a great gulf of space from all their former connexions, and gave them the opportunity of redeeming past crimes by becoming useful members of society. Was this theory altogether without foundation ? Erroneous as the treatment of convicts in many respects has been, have none of these expectations been realized ? Have not numbers of convicts found what at home they never could have found under the best devised system of punishment : space for exertion, reward for industry, and comparative oblivion of the past ? Is not a flourishing community, tainted though it be with the remnant of its original impurity, gradually rising into importance, of which their labour has been the primary instrument ? Let us adopt, if we will, the language of a candid observer, biassed by none of these theories, either for or against the system. " On the whole, as a plan of punishment, it has failed : as a real system of reform it has failed, as perhaps would every other plan : but as a means of making men outwardly honest ; of converting vagabonds, most useless in one country, into active citizens of another, and thus giving birth to a new and splendid

“country, a grand centre of civilization, it has succeeded “to a degree perhaps unparalleled in history.”*

Is there, then, no plan by which transportation might be rendered more effective as a punishment, and at the same time prospective advantages secured to the convict, conditionally on good behaviour; that social “*jus post-liminii*,” without the hope of which life spent under punishment is hardly endurable, and reform, let the lovers of gaols and penitentiaries say what they will, almost impossible?

It was with this view, as we have seen, that the scheme originally suggested under Lord Stanley’s administration has been put of late years into execution: namely, the abolition of assignment in the first instance; the employment of convicts in public works, or in distant and strictly penal settlements, such as Norfolk Island, for a part of their time.

Another suggestion has been made by some practical men. They propose that convicts should be employed in the first instance as pioneers in the formation of new colonies. That a gang, for example, should be immediately despatched as soon as an eligible site has been discovered, to cut down wood, to make roads and harbours, to prepare the soil for the reception of free emigrants, who would thus enjoy the great benefit of possessing at once those mechanical advantages which are usually attained by new settlements only after a considerable period of shifts and privations. The convicts are to be sedulously kept from mingling with the free settlers so long as they are thus employed. But as soon as the gang is broken up, its purpose being fulfilled, the ban may perhaps be withdrawn, and the better conditioned convicts allowed to begin their course of service as assigned labourers.

The chief objections that have been urged to these plans, besides those which apply generally to the whole system of transportation, are twofold. The first is that of ex-

* Darwin: Voyage of the Adventure and Beagle.

pense. It is contended that, considering the quantity of military and police superintendence required, employment on public works is among the most costly modes of maintaining convicts.

This is a subject on which it is extremely difficult to speak with precision. But it is to be observed, that those who have entered into calculations on this subject, have made their comparison, in general, between the systems of employment on public works and assignment. That the former is very far more expensive to the revenue than the latter, admits of course of no doubt. But the datum from which we set out is, that assignment, at least in the first instance, is to be abolished: that although cheaper to the mother country, and possibly more beneficial to the colony in an economical point of view, than any other mode of disposing of convict labour, the moral objections to it far outweigh these advantages. The real comparison to be made, is between the expense of maintaining a convict on public works in the colonies, and in a penitentiary at home. What may be the balance between the two systems, I mean those of imprisonment and colonial public employment, on the profit and loss account of each, it is not easy to estimate. But this must always be remembered, that the labour of the convict in a colony paves the way for the introduction of capital into the most productive of all fields, that of new colonies: that it raises up a nation of producers, supplying the wants of the mother-country, and receiving her commodities in exchange: while that of prisoners in penitentiaries is almost inevitably a loss to society, both present and ultimate.

The other objection to the continuance of this species of punishment rests on moral grounds. It is thought by many that the spectacle of gangs of convicts, employed in penal labour, has a peculiar tendency to brutalize and degrade the minds of the population accustomed to behold it. And, on the other hand, the terrible statements,

recently made public, of the vice and barbarism which are said to prevail among the gangs of convicts in our remote penal settlements, have produced a feeling of repugnance in the minds of many which it is difficult to combat.

Nevertheless, it is peculiarly necessary to remember, in this instance, the truth of what has already been said, that a choice of punishments is a choice of evils. It is impossible to deny that the spectacle of felons working in gangs has the effect of familiarizing eye-witnesses with the sight of crime and punishment, and, to a certain extent, producing indifference to it. But let this be fairly weighed against the objections which can be urged against other modes of secondary punishment; and let it be remembered that many nations, not among the last in civilization and morality, well acquainted with penal theories, have been able to find no satisfactory substitute for this: that although nothing is more common than to hear the practice denounced in general terms, no one, that I am aware of, has ever distinctly pointed out the connexion between cause and effect, any peculiar prevalence of vicious habits in those parts of France and Switzerland, for example, where this species of exhibition is, or lately was, matter of every day: and let it be also recollected, that the effects of such exposure must be very different in the middle of the crowded and idle population of European countries, and among the scattered and busy settlers of a new colony. As to the moral condition of convicts themselves under such a system of punishment, the real question is, not whether it is hideous and fearful, whether it forms a subject of contemplation from which every well constituted mind must shrink with horror, but whether it is substantially worse, upon the whole, than that of bodies of similar criminals undergoing any other course of secondary punishment. I do not dispute the evidence of the witnesses who have visited Norfolk Island; though I am,

perhaps, justified in attributing to it something of the colouring which is inevitably communicated to such pictures by the feelings of men viewing, for the first time, with their own eyes, such receptacles of misery and vice : and although I think it will be found, that the vivid language in which they depict the general features of the case is not always fully borne out by the minute details of what fell under their own observation. But I would ask the calm inquirer, before he pronounces judgment against the system, to compare that evidence with what has been collected respecting the state of things in some of the boasted penitentiaries of other countries ; even in those conducted according to the most approved and best considered theories of prison discipline.

To those who sincerely indulge in expectations of the moral reform of prisoners in gaols and penitentiaries, I am well aware that these observations will appear extremely defective, as passing over with little regard what, in their view, is one of the greatest ends of penal law. They naturally regard the system of transportation as wanting in the chief essential of discipline, and consider its continuance as an obstacle to the development of their theories. But to those whose views of human nature, or of the power of human institutions, are of a less sanguine character,—who have been led to consider the prospect of *reformation by punishment*, in the great majority of cases, as altogether hopeless and delusive,—it must appear doubtful whether it be not more advisable to improve the system than to destroy it ; whether there was not something of truth and reason in a scheme where the hope of reformation rested, not on the effects of the punishment itself, but on the prospect held out beyond it, in the only plan yet devised by human ingenuity which could secure *one* object on which enlightened penal reformers have laid great stress, namely, the rehabilitation of the offender—the offering him what, in his own country, he never *can*

attain, his fair chance of prosperity and success, after the payment of his penalty to society. Not much attention is due to any proposed scheme of secondary punishment, unless the projector is able to answer one very obvious question : What is to become of the convict after he has undergone it? Imprisonment, with the notions which now prevail in society, is of all punishments the most intolerably defective in this essential particular. Nine out of ten who undergo it, for any but the very slightest offences, if not destroyed body and soul, are ruined for life as citizens, and condemned to an existence not only useless but pernicious to society, from the first day on which they enter the walls of their house of confinement. Speaking generally, no one who has suffered this punishment can recover character, except through the purifying process of labour, and the respect paid to usefulness and industry : the discharged convict at home seeks in vain for opportunities of honest exertion, and is driven back to crime, both by habit and necessity ; in the colonies, if he have but the will to restore himself, he cannot fail of success. Surely this consideration alone, if no other were involved in the question, ought to induce the nation to pause before she revises this part of her institutions, and condemns some thousands more of her criminals annually to undergo the ineffaceable brand of her hulks and penitentiaries.

APPENDIX TO LECTURE XII.

CONVICT LABOUR.

THE preceding lecture may already be regarded almost as an essay on some interesting but antiquated historical subject. A great social question has been either closed or adjourned—time must show which—not by the victory or defeat of parties, but by an entire change in social circumstances. It becomes therefore superfluous to go into details respecting the violent conflict between the mother-country and certain of the colonies, on the subject of transportation, which occupied so large a share of public attention in the years 1850—1854. The motives which actuated the colonial opponents of the system were in part of the highest order,—a desire to rescue their society from supposed contamination: but these were mingled with sentiments of a very miscellaneous description,—the spirit of opposition to home dictation, some ostentation of independence, popularity-seeking in its various forms, and (among many of the people) that mistaken desire to maintain a high rate of wages which has since led to serious evils in the Australian communities. The colonists prevailed at the time, as colonists, when determined, always have prevailed in the councils of Great Britain since the present balance of parties began; and the whole problem may for the present be dismissed as a *procès jugé et non plaidé*. But, independently of these disputes, causes arose which rendered the maintenance of the system at once unprofitable and impossible. A marked diminution of domestic crime, in comparison of our wealth and population, began to render the difficulty of dealing with our criminals at home a manageable one, nearly at the period when the discovery of gold in Australia

made that region entirely unfit for the reception of convicts, had its inhabitants been content to receive them.

But what has been may be again, and we may look forward to the probable recurrence of times when the ancient expedient may suggest itself for the relief of prevailing embarrassments in dealing with our criminals. It may therefore be worth our while to pay a little attention to certain lessons suggested by the great controversy between the mother-country and the colonies to which I have above adverted.

To the mother-country, the object of transportation is simply that of getting rid of certain classes of convicts: for the secondary object of founding new colonies, and creating new sources of wealth, may be left out of the question as comparatively unimportant to her. This main point secured, it is further desirable (in the interests of justice and humanity) that the convicts in their new home may be employed in such manner and under such conditions as may be most conducive to their reformation.

To the colonies, the object of transportation is to receive such classes of convicts, and to employ them in such manner, and under such conditions, as may be most conducive to the production of wealth.

If the mother-country acts despotically, it will of course carry on transportation with a view to the first, or first and second, of these objects only, whether the result be a New South Wales or a Cayenne.

But when the problem presented to the State is that which existed in the early case of the North American settlements, and of Australia from 1845 to 1855,—namely, how to carry on transportation to a free colony and with the good will of the colonists,—the preliminary difficulty at once presents itself, that the objects of the two parties to the arrangement are not the same.

For neither are the conditions of labour, which are

regarded by philanthropists at home as most conducive to reformation, those which are regarded by the colonists as most conducive to the production of wealth; nor are the classes of criminals, of which the mother-country is most anxious to get rid, those which the colonists are most desirous to receive.

The first of these positions was very amply illustrated in the course of the Australian controversies.

We have seen that convicts, in the earlier period of transportation to New South Wales, were "assigned," that is to say, reduced to a state of enforced servitude; and it is shown abundantly in these lectures that compulsory labour in some shape or other has always been the great agent in producing staple articles of export in young colonies. As long as assignment prevailed, transportation had always a large class of colonists, namely, the employers, interested in maintaining and defending it.

But philanthropists at home became dissatisfied with "assignment." Forced labour on government works; "tickets-of-leave," which entitled the criminal to work for whom he pleased and where he pleased, provided he remained within the local limits of his sentence; finally, "exile," or the sending to the colonies, as free labourers, men who had served a period of punishment in prison at home: these were the devices which it was endeavoured to substitute for the old system. How far they would have answered the objects intended by their authors was hardly proved; for they were cut short by that general storm of unpopularity in which transportation perished, an unpopularity which the devices themselves were singularly calculated to enhance. Their effect on the colonial mind seems hardly to have been contemplated at all. They took away from transportation that quality which alone made it palatable, the insuring a supply of forced labour to individual employers; consequently, they left the

system almost without a colonial defender. It was in vain to prove to the colonists, by economical argument, that a supply of labour was valuable, although individuals could no longer insure the advantage of that labour. The proposition might be true, but interested no one in its defence. It was felt, truly enough, that the convict system, retaining all its real and supposed moral evil, was now an engine worked wholly for the purpose of the mother-country, and not (as heretofore) for that of colonial capitalists also.

The second of these positions has been illustrated, on a smaller scale, by what has taken place in the recent history of transportation to Western Australia.

That distant colony, being at once so poor as to desire a supply of labour, and so far from the gold regions as to be beyond their dangerous influence, and not having as yet popular institutions, was selected with much judgment for the continuance of so much of the system as it was still thought desirable to maintain, after it had ceased on the larger scale.

But under our modern enactments, transportation was reserved as the last penalty for the worst offences short of death, or for repeated offences only. The class of criminals of whom we wished to get rid comprised only those whom it was thought as a class impossible to reform, and whose return to society would be dangerous. Now such criminals form precisely the least useful and the most dangerous class to the colony which receives them. Professional criminals of long standing are very ill calculated for productive labour. If they have served long periods in prison, so much the worse in most cases. The transportation of this class, therefore, produces (to the colony) the greatest amount of moral evil with the least amount of economical good. This has been much felt and expressed in Western Australia, though the experiment is on too small a scale to be of great importance as an example.

As far as the colonies are concerned, the most desirable subjects of transportation are the old "seven years'" class, of whom such numbers were sent to Australia in the earlier years of the system; men whose moral nature was as yet unhardened by habitual crime, their physical energies unabated by long imprisonments. And, undoubtedly, "assignment" is the most profitable mode of employing them ever yet devised. While at the same time they constitute the class on whom the sentence of expatriation has the greatest deterrent effect. Novices in crime mostly dread it. Hardened criminals desire or disregard it.

If, therefore, the balance of reason is against the transportation of minor offenders, then it is against transportation altogether. The transportation of hardened offenders, whether after other discipline or not, is of no good to the mother-country, beyond the mere trivial relief by the expulsion of the individuals. It is of no good to the colony, as we have seen. Except indeed in one limited case. Benefit might no doubt be derived from the employment of any class of convict labour in very young colonies, on their first settlement, on those elementary public works which are so essential to their progress, and to find means for the execution of which is their greatest practical difficulty. The early advance of New South Wales is attributed in great measure to the excellent roads constructed by convicts through wild regions, long before settlement had reached them. It is scarcely possible to estimate the addition which might have been made to public wealth, had a similar power been applied in British Columbia. It is unnecessary to advert to the difficulties, political, financial, and disciplinary, which oppose the reduction of such schemes to practice. They are not insuperable, but such as are not likely to be overcome except under the pressure of urgent motives.

LECTURE XIII.

METHODS OF OBTAINING LABOUR IN COLONIES WITHOUT SLAVES OR CONVICTS.
— INDENTED LABOURERS. — PRINCIPLES OF THE WRITERS ON SYSTEMATIC
COLONIZATION, OR MR. WAKEFIELD AND HIS FOLLOWERS, RESPECTING
THE PROCURING OF LABOUR BY THE REGULATED DISPOSAL OF LAND.

THE various methods which have been formerly devised for furnishing colonies raising exportable produce with that supply of dependent labourers which they so greatly need, without introducing a servile or quasi-servile population, need not long arrest our attention. They have been evidently inadequate to their purpose; and their history is of no great importance, except as showing indirectly how much the want has been felt, by the nature of the shifts resorted to for relieving it.

In the infancy of our West India colonies, and of our tobacco and rice-growing settlements in North America, it was common for the colonists to procure *indented labourers* from England. These were invited by the promise of high wages; and as the captains of vessels obtained considerable emolument by this valuable part of their cargo, they were induced to use, in addition, the most disgraceful methods of raising the required contingent. Not only crimping, but actual kidnapping, seems to have been of common occurrence; and persons brought over, in extreme poverty, by the ship-owners, frequently had to pay for their passage by submitting to a species of slavery, and being disposed of by the skipper to the best advantage in the colonial market. But, as may naturally be supposed with respect to recruits procured in this manner, the difficulty was extreme of holding such indented labourers to their bonds. Unprincipled settlers

were constantly on the watch to seduce away the apprentices of their neighbours ; and those who had actually gone to a great expense in providing themselves with this species of wealth, had not unfrequently the mortification of seeing it vanish altogether from their grasp, and go to enrich some other proprietor, whom the acquisition of it had cost nothing. And, in North America, the vicinity of the uncleared tracts, and the ease with which good land might be procured for nothing, were powerful seductions to the enterprising labourer, who, if he thought at all about the matter, would probably consider himself amply justified in breaking his engagements by the delusive and fraudulent nature of the system under which they had been contracted.

The extreme inadequacy of this mode of supply naturally led to the introduction of slavery, both in the islands and on the continent. It continued, however, to be practised, on a limited scale, up to the period of the American revolution. Something similar to it has been proposed in our own time, by advocates of systematic emigration, with this difference, that, according to their views, the labourer should not be bound to perform service for any specified individual, but should be left free to choose the market for his own labour, subject to working out the price of his passage, and repaying by instalments the government at home, which has furnished in the first instance the funds for his emigration.

Two plans are set forth for the accomplishment of this object (by Mr. Poulett Scrope, I believe) in a paper in the "Quarterly Review," vol. xiii. The first is that of securing the repayment by a direct tax on the wages of the labourer in the colony.

"An office might be appointed in the colony," he says, "at which every labourer, as soon as he arrived, should be registered : the cost of his passage, with that of insurance on his life long enough to repay the sum,

“debited to him : and he might then be allowed to work
“when, where, and how he chose, on the sole condition
“of paying a sum weekly or monthly to government,
“towards the redemption of the debt incurred by his
“importation.”

The author, however, seems to be himself aware of the extreme unlikelihood, to say the least of it, of the success of a scheme like this. The difficulty of attaching wages for payment of a debt, even at home, and where the labourer is under strict legal superintendence, is well known to all who are practically conversant with the condition of the labouring classes. In a colony where the inhabitants are scattered over a wide extent of territory, it would be enormously increased ; and without saying that such a method would be impracticable, it is certain that the machinery of it must be expensive, and the execution odious. “The plan of taking labourers out with
“an agreement to repay their passage-money out of the
“proceeds of their labour,” says Mr. Wakefield, “has
“been tried in a vast number of instances, but has always
“failed. Great pains were taken to carry that plan into
“execution in New South Wales : a great deal of capital
“was invested ; and it seems at first so easy and natural
“a thing to do, that one is loth to believe it will not
“answer : but it did not answer.” The only exception with which he was acquainted was that of some German emigrants during the last American war, who were conveyed to the United States by those contractors who were styled “redemptioners,” and kept in a kind of slavery through their ignorance of the language.*

Mr. Scrope, therefore, proceeds to propose as a substitute “a general tax on the employment of labour in
“the colony, to be paid by the employers. A tax of this
“kind would readily be paid by capitalists, if they knew
“that its produce was fairly and economically expended

* Report of Committee on South Australia, 1841, p. 254.

“in the introduction of fresh labour: since the cost of
 “cultivation would be by no means increased—the re-
 “duction in the price of labour more than compensating
 “the tax. It would soon be seen, that the tax will be
 “paid in appearance only by employers, who will be in-
 “stantly repaid by their labourers in the shape of a
 “diminution of wages—for this reason. In all new
 “countries, where fertile land is to be had upon easy
 “terms, labour always obtains the maximum of payment;
 “that is, it keeps up to the highest point at which, under
 “the circumstances of soil, climate, competition, markets,
 “&c., it is profitable to supply it. A tax on the employ-
 “ment of labour would turn this point, by rendering
 “labour unprofitable, except at a rate diminished by
 “exactly the amount of the tax; wages will therefore fall
 “to this extent, and the tax will really be paid by the
 “labourer himself; and this is as it should be.” The
 writer goes on to explain why: it is, he says, no more
 than just and equitable that the labourer, to whom govern-
 ment has afforded the means of obtaining ample remunera-
 tion for his toil, and enjoying the comforts of life to
 a degree which he could never have hoped for at home,
 should submit to a slight deduction from his gains until
 the cost of his conveyance be repaid. And he proposes
 a tax, to be imposed in some indirect way on the capital
 of the colonists, amounting to 6*d.* a day, for a limited
 time, on each labourer imported.

We shall return to this passage hereafter, in order to
 examine the doctrine contained in it respecting the inci-
 dence of such a tax as is here mentioned. But a pre-
 liminary objection to the plan will perhaps already have
 struck the minds of such of my hearers as may remember
 what was said in a former lecture respecting the causes
 of the deficiency of labour in new colonies. It con-
 tains no provision whatever for retaining the labourer in
 the service of the capitalist, who will be charged, in the

first instance at least, with the expense of his emigration. The writer supposes throughout that land is to be left of easy acquisition to every one, as it has been until lately in most of our colonies. But if this be so, then, wherever land is plentiful, it would be utterly impossible to prevent the better and more enterprising class of mechanics and agriculturists from leaving service and becoming settlers on their own account, long before the benefit of their labour had been substantially felt. Supposing it were desirable, from peculiar circumstances (such as have lately arisen in our old slave colonies), to import fresh labourers into ancient settlements, where the land is already occupied, and men must work for wages or starve, some modification of Mr. Scrope's proposal might possibly be found beneficial : in other instances, it would be merely pouring water into a sieve, as all experience demonstrates.

It was chiefly from a conviction of this difficulty that the suggestion was first made, and pressed on government by the original members of what was termed the Colonization Society, about 1830, of fixing a comparatively high price on government lands, in order at once to furnish a fund that might be exclusively appropriated to the purpose of emigration, and to prevent the poorer emigrants from acquiring a dominion in the soil on too easy terms, and becoming occupants in lieu of labourers. The first fruit of their project was, as you are aware, the foundation of the colony of South Australia : since that time the same principle has been applied with more or less strictness in all our Australian colonies.

In order to a clear comprehension of the South Australian, or Mr. Wakefield's, "principle," on which I touched, and only touched, in a former lecture, it is necessary that we should establish in our minds a few clear and definite notions respecting the objects of colonization ; the mode in which it may be rendered most useful to the settler, and to the mother-country : for nothing, I will

venture to say, can be more indistinct than the ideas which a first and superficial review of the subject almost necessarily presents to the mind.

Passing by all political considerations, as irrelevant to our present inquiry, the economical objects of colonization are two only :—

First. To furnish a means of bettering their condition to the unemployed, or ill-employed, portion of the people of the mother-country.

Secondly. To create a new market for the trade of the mother-country.

That these two objects are very nearly connected in practice needs no demonstration. Every emigrant, whose energies, unproductive at home, are transferred to the new soil of a colony, becomes a raiser of valuable commodities for the benefit of the mother-country ; commodities which the mother-country will purchase, if she is herself the producer of any articles of value in the market of the world, either directly or indirectly with those articles. In the case of our own country, with which we are more immediately concerned, every emigrant becomes rapidly a raiser of raw produce for the advantage of our consumers, and exchanges it for our manufactures.

Still, although these objects are thus nearly connected, it would be a mistake to suppose that they are co-extensive in every case, and that the one result always accompanies the other in the same ratio of progress. We have seen that some colonies are fitter for the purposes of emigration, others for the purposes of trade ; that in some, commodities of great value are raised with a comparatively small expenditure of labour ; while in others, the quantity of net exchangeable produce which can be raised is comparatively insignificant, but abundant room is afforded for the settlement of great numbers of emigrants, and for their comfortable maintenance. Between

1820 and 1840 (taking a rough average), the population and export trade of New Brunswick increased in pretty nearly the same ratio, that is, each doubled.* In the same space of time, the population of New South Wales a little more than trebled; her exports increased about fifteenfold. Therefore the progress of foreign trade, as compared with that of population, was in that period in New South Wales about five times as rapid as in New Brunswick. Others of the North American colonies would exhibit a still slower rate of progress. The emigrant, therefore, to New South Wales becomes much more rapidly a producer of value than the emigrant to British America. But New South Wales, both from its distance and from other circumstances, is by no means so well adapted to receive a large amount of emigration as British America. Colonization, directed to the latter country more readily promotes the first object; colonization directed to the former is more serviceable for commercial purposes.

The more rapid increase of production in New South Wales has been partly owing to the use of convict labour, but much more to the natural advantages which the country possesses for the production of the great staple, wool; a staple from its very nature requiring, relatively to other commodities, much capital and little labour. And this brings us back to the distinction which I endeavoured to establish in my ninth lecture, between colonies possessing peculiar facilities for the production of exportable commodities and colonies not possessing them. This is a distinction which it is absolutely necessary to bear in mind throughout the discussion on which we are now entering. We must not take it for granted, as has been hitherto generally done, that the same principles of colonization apply to both, but follow those principles into their results, as affecting each class respectively.

* See the tables at the conclusion of Lecture IV.

We have, then, now to consider in what mode the government can best employ the waste lands at its disposal in new colonies, for the furtherance of this double object: first, to provide a home for emigrants; secondly, and I must add, at the hazard of all misconception, as the far more important purpose of the two, to render it most attractive to those classes of settlers who will most rapidly increase the wealth of the community, and by so doing further the prosperity of all. The only exception (if such it can be called) is to be found in the reservations which it may be necessary to make for certain ulterior public purposes—such, for instance, as education and religion—if it should appear on investigation, that this is the most eligible mode in which they can be provided for: a subject which will be considered hereafter.

Yet, obvious as this principle appears to be, it is habitually disregarded by those who speak of the unoccupied lands of our colonies as if they were so many wide commons, into which our surplus population, chiefly consisting of needy persons without capital, is to be turned in great multitudes, to find subsistence as it can. For, supposing the first difficulties of location overcome, it is impossible that small settlers, unaided by the accumulated wealth which we term capital, can turn those lands to the best account in raising the exportable commodities through the production of which colonies become rich. In order, therefore, to promote wealth and commerce, and with them employment for the poorer classes, it is desirable so to regulate the disposal of land as to secure the introduction of capital and labour in the most convenient proportions. Now those proportions, as has been so frequently remarked, must depend upon the character of the colony; whether it is one producing in abundance staple articles of export, or the reverse. In the former case, the intro-

duction of abundant capital will be relatively more necessary than in the latter.

But, in every instance, the requisites which the settler needs, in order to render his capital productive, are three—land, labour, and what I may term Preparation; that is, accurate surveying, convenient communication with the neighbouring markets by roads and navigable waters, watching and defence, and similar preliminaries to a profitable occupation. To obtain any of these requisites cheaply or gratuitously is to save so much capital and insure so much additional profit. If the *bonâ fide* settler gets his land for nothing (as under the old free-grant system), he has so much more to spend in labour and in contributing to matters of public convenience. If he has an ample supply of labour offered him at a cheap rate (as formerly in New South Wales under the plan of convict assignment), he will have more to lay out on land. If the state chooses to take on itself the expense of road-making and surveying, his funds, freed from those burdens, will be more available for the purchase both of land and labour. The economical effect of either of these methods of disposing of any fund which the state possesses for the purpose, supposing each to be equally convenient to the settler, must be the same. Now such a fund the state possesses in its wild lands, or the money for which they may sell. And, therefore, divesting the subject of some little mystery, in which it has perhaps been enveloped in recent controversies, the question seems to be simply this: In which of these modes is it most convenient for the settler that the fund should be applied?

First, Let us suppose a vast and virgin dominion, such as British America may once have been, added at once to our colonial empire. Let us suppose it under the same physical circumstances with that region; a country of very various degrees of fertility and natural

advantages, possessing neither a climate nor soil peculiarly adapted to the produce of any commodities of great value, and requiring much capital to raise them, but able to supply in abundance the necessaries and many of the comforts of life.

If the state were to commence its system of colonization by offering the lands gratuitously to emigrants, and if any mode could be devised of securing that these grants should be made to persons really intending to occupy them, we may perhaps conjecture that the following would be the economical results of the experiment.

Few capitalists would probably avail themselves of the offer; or, if they did, the experiment would end in disappointment. I have supposed, in the first place, that the district affords no peculiar facilities for the rapid increase of capital by the production of articles of great value. Still, there, as everywhere else, the possession of capital would insure great advantages to the cultivator, if he could only command a sufficient supply of labour. But this would be absolutely impossible. If the rich emigrants could contrive to carry with them, or cause to emigrate to their settlements, any conceivable number of labourers, they would find it impracticable to retain them in their service. As in the case of the settlement of Swan River, and in every other instance of the same description, they would rapidly spread themselves over the soil, and desert the service of the capitalists for the condition of independent occupiers.

Secondly, Such a state of things, however promising the prospects which it might appear to hold out, would prove in reality most unpropitious to the fortunes of the great body of poor emigrants. These would land destitute of capital, and equally destitute of experience in the new mode of life on which they are about to

embark. To suppose that they would voluntarily associate themselves with the capitalists, and content themselves with the state of dependent labourers until they had saved enough to start for themselves, would be to make a supposition which history and reason alike confute. And as capital, from the uncertainty of labour, would flow slowly into such a colony, this resource would soon cease to be offered them. The land of promise would turn out to them a mere land of disappointment and distress, perhaps of destruction. Instead of stimulating the emigration of this class of people, it would soon become abundantly necessary to discourage it, and allow the influx to follow the tardy growth of capital and increase of employment.

But, thirdly, The middle class of emigrants, those who go out intending to labour with their own hands as small farmers, but who leave their native country with a competent stock of wealth, sufficient to carry them through the two or three years of privation which must necessarily precede their successful settlement in such a country as I have been describing: these, I apprehend, notwithstanding all the representations of a school of economists already frequently cited, would have every prospect of thriving in such a country and under such conditions as I have described. And if so, there is no doubt that these alone would suffice to raise it eventually to a high pitch of wealth and prosperity. This is a class of colonists which must of necessity be altogether deterred from settling in a colony where there is a high price fixed on land. The little capital at their command is barely enough, for the most part, to carry them through the preliminary expenses of clearing their ground, and through the long and difficult period of abstinence which must precede the reaping of a single crop. The time during which a small settler must necessarily subsist on his former resources appears to be

at least a year and a half in Canada; and it is considered that three, four, or five years must elapse before a creditor, who has advanced him money for these purposes, can expect his first instalment.* To suppose that such persons can afford any additional drain on their slender finances, without immediate return for it, is out of the question. A system of free grant, or something approaching to it, seems the only one under which a population of small yeomen can plant itself successfully over an extensive surface. But, as we have seen, they must renounce the advantages of an abundant supply of labour, and with it the prospect of great profits and a rapid accumulation of capital. A country thus colonized would be a land, as Lord Sydenham said of Canada itself, affording "no lottery, with a few exorbitant prizes" and a large number of blanks, but a secure and certain "investment, in which a prudent and reasonable man "may safely embark."†

If, however, the country thus added to our dominion was one possessing peculiar facilities for producing exportable articles of value, by the expenditure of capital; if it was a land fertile in sugar, coffee, or cotton, like the West Indies, or the southern states of the American Union; or rich in mines; or eminently adapted for the multiplication of flocks and the production of fine wool, as Australia has been discovered to be; then it is obvious that the disposal of the land by free grant would prove most inauspicious for the development of such natural resources. The impossibility of procuring a

* See the opinions of a great many observers, collected and compared, in Mr. Murray's *British America*, vol. iii. ch. 3. p. 124, &c. The progress of internal communication has of late years somewhat abridged this period of abstinence.

† "It is undeniable—if such a circumstance may not rather be "called admirable—that the agricultural wealth of Canada has chiefly "fallen into the hands of the poor practical farmer, and the still poorer "labourer."—*Canada, a Prize Essay*, by J. S. Hogan. Montreal, 1855.

sufficient supply of labour, where all labourers might immediately become independent landowners, would render the accumulation of capital extremely slow, and profits very precarious.

2. This, then, is the first disadvantage attaching to the system of disposal of land by free grant. The second is, the difficulty which has been found in obliging the owners to cultivate the soil. It is evident in how prejudicial a manner their neglect to do so influences the fortunes of a colony. The consequence is, the interposition of neglected and unprofitable tracts between the settled portions of the district; aggravating to a high degree the necessary evils of a dispersed population; rendering the scanty means of communication which settlers possess with each other, and with the markets and navigable rivers, still scantier; and imposing great additional expenses on the infant community in maintaining such roads as cannot be dispensed with. In a future lecture, we shall consider historically the results of the systems of free grant, and of sale at low prices, in those colonies in which they have been generally adopted; and on that occasion we shall be able more conveniently to examine how far the evils here alluded to are necessary results of the former system, and how far they might have been avoided by proper measures, without the imposition of high prices. At present I will merely allude to them, as among the most prominent of those mischiefs which the framers of the South Australian scheme had it in their view to correct.

3. Another supposed or real mischief, attributed to the system which rendered land easy of acquisition, was the facility with which old land could be abandoned for new, and the consequent dispersion of the population of colonies. In my ninth lecture I gave some reasons for doubting whether this tendency, regarded in a general point of

view, can be regarded as injurious at all ; or, at all events, to the extent and in the manner in which the school of writers on systematic colonization have represented. I will not repeat what was there observed, but proceed to lay before you the fundamental principles of their speculations.

The so called South Australian system is developed, with all the arguments which zeal and ingenuity can suggest in its behalf, in a remarkable pamphlet published by the Colonization Society in 1830 ; in Mr. Gibbon Wakefield's "Letter from Sydney," 1829 ; in his greater work, entitled "England and America ;" by the same very able individual, in his examination before the Committee on Waste Land, 1836 ; and by Colonel Torrens in many writings, especially in a work already often quoted by me on the Colonization of South Australia. You will find it criticized and impugned in many publications, with various success ; but I would refer you especially to Mr. McCulloch's note to Adam Smith, on Colonies, and to an article in the Edinburgh Review for July, 1840.

The principles of that system may be very briefly stated as follows :—1. That the prosperity of new colonies mainly depends upon the abundance of available labour at the command of capitalists, in proportion to the extent of territory occupied. 2. That this abundance is to be secured by introducing labourers from the mother-country, and other well peopled regions, and taking measures to keep them in the condition of labourers living by wages for some considerable time ; at least two or three years, according to the suggestion of Colonel Torrens. 3. That the revenue derived from the sale of new land is the fund out of which the cost of introducing them is best defrayed. 4. That the most convenient way of preventing them from rising too rapidly from the condition of labourers into that of independent landowners is to sell the land at a sufficiently high price. 5. That the entire proceeds of

the land sales ought to be devoted to the purpose of obtaining emigrants ; and that only by devoting the whole, and not any portion, will the exact equilibrium between land, labour, and capital be secured. 6. That the sale of land should be at a uniform price per acre for all qualities and all situations, and not by auction. 7. (which is not necessarily connected with the others.) That this system will lead to concentrate the population, and check that inconvenient dispersion which is apt to take place in new colonies.

It is obvious that these propositions may be regarded in two very different points of view ; either as a series of practical rules for the disposal of colonial lands and the fund arising from their sale, of which some may be more important than others, and all may admit of modifications according to the several circumstances of different countries ; or as a connected system, of which each part necessarily depends upon all the rest, of which no link can be injured without rendering the whole chain a valueless encumbrance. This latter is the character under which the projectors have themselves uniformly represented their theory. I confess that after the most minute attention I have been able to give the subject, I have failed in thoroughly comprehending the whole of their arguments on this subject. I shall therefore do the best I can for the purpose of my present lectures : examine, one by one, the propositions here stated ; examine the objections which have been started to them, as well as the reasonings which are adduced in their favour ; and see how far each is really and practically involved in the others. I will then conclude this part of my subject with an examination, historical and statistical, of the results of the old English system of free grant, the American system of sale at low prices, and the modern system of sale at high prices ; including a sketch of the remarkable career of the model colony of South Australia.

The first proposition is,—

1st. That the prosperity of new colonies mainly depends upon the abundance of available labour at the command of capitalists, in proportion to the extent of territory occupied.

I discussed this proposition in my ninth lecture at considerable length, and suggested the necessity of modifying it greatly, when we are considering the circumstances of colonies not possessing peculiar facilities for raising exportable commodities of value. It is in my opinion not true in respect of these, that an abundance of available labour at the command of capitalists is at all necessary to their prosperity.

Colonel Torrens, I cannot but think, has neglected, in considering this subject, one very important feature of the case. I will state in his own language* (which is nearly the same with that used by the other supporters of the scheme) his view of the effect of the combination of labour with capital in ordinary agricultural industry.

He supposes that in a new settlement in which land is given away to all who apply for it, four labourers locate themselves on four separate lots, of fifty acres each. He shows, what is undoubtedly true, that each of these four must undergo considerable expense of labour and time in constructing his own house, clearing his own ground, making his own road, disposing of his own produce. He then varies the supposition, and assumes that the land, instead of being given away, is sold at a proper price; and that “our four labourers, instead of dispersing themselves over the wild, and occupying four farms of fifty acres each, as independent cultivators, work for wages with a capitalist, who purchases a farm of 200 acres, and proceeds to cultivate it with their aid. This farmer and his four labourers, working in combination, may

* Colonization of South Australia, p. 35, &c.

“raise at least four times the quantity of produce which
“could be raised by four isolated labourers.”

Now, in this passage Colonel Torrens assumes that the connected farm of 200 acres is of equal fertility, acre for acre, with the separate lots of 50 acres; and this is the assumption which, I cannot but think, vitiates to a certain extent his whole theory.

In very few countries is land of the first fertility found in extensive patches. It is commonly dispersed here and there, in spots of comparatively small dimensions. This is preeminently the case in Australia, the country which the Colonel has in his immediate view. There the productive spots of arable land seem not only to bear an unusually low proportion to the barren, but to lie in a remarkably scattered disposition, along the borders of water-courses, in narrow valleys separated by large tracts of table land, and often in irregular masses, affording a diversity of soil for which it is difficult to account on any philosophical theory.

Now in old countries, lands of inferior quality have been long occupied, and a farm of 200 acres, although containing soil of very various excellence, might be all under cultivation together. In this case it is most true that it would return more *net* produce, cultivated by a farmer and a small number of labourers, than by two or three times as many small occupiers.

But in a new country, under the system of free grant, the most fertile spots only are occupied. Each of the four labourers would choose his fifty acres in some productive locality. Suppose that the owner of the 200, if he wishes to secure the same advantage, finds it necessary to have his 200 scattered in different lots instead of in one compact block; that 200 acres, for example, with only twenty of water frontage, are far less valuable than four lots of fifty acres with twenty a piece. He must then make his choice between the advantage of combined

labour and the advantage of first-rate land ; for he cannot spread a small number of labourers over a large tract of country. If the most productive portions only are to be cultivated, the cultivation must necessarily be in small patches ; and there can be little doubt which alternative the emigrant would select. The best land will always be the first occupied, the land being disposed of, on the supposition, by free grant, or at a uniform low price.

Thus, in transferring to a colony suppositions which are perfectly true of an old country, the school of writers, whose views we are now considering, seem, as I have said, to omit one of the most essential features of the case. The great privilege of the colonist is, the use of first-rate machines of production only ; and so long as these only are employed, if the colony is only engaged in ordinary agricultural industry, it may, I think, be pretty safely predicted that, in whatever proportion the land may be divided between owners, it will be profitably occupied only by small cultivators. As soon as inferior soils begin to be taken into hand, then, and not till then, combined capital and labour will be employed with the greatest advantage.

Nor let us imagine, once more, that the rise of a community, in this natural manner, is necessarily slow, uncertain, or liable to serious interruption. The state of Ohio, in North America, is entirely a new country, or colony from the older states : its first settlement began scarcely fifty years ago.* It has, from the beginning, possessed no supply whatever of dependent labourers, slavery having been unknown. Its lands have been pur-

* The "New England Ohio Company" was formed in 1786. The first settlement was founded in 1788 : but its growth was impeded, for several years, by Indian wars, and by the exaggerated notions which prevailed of the unhealthiness and other perils of the wilderness. In 1791, the entire population of the country between Pennsylvania, the Mississippi, the Lakes, and the Ohio, was estimated at 15,000 only, exclusive of Indians (North American Review, October, 1841).

chased from the government, lot by lot, at a price rarely exceeding 6s. an acre, and sold by speculators to emigrants from the Eastern states. These have been, with scarcely any exception, small yeomen. There have been no masses of capital, and scarcely any large farms. The land has been rescued from the wilderness, bit by bit, by occupiers, beginning with the most fertile and advantageously situated, a few acres at a time. Its industry is almost entirely confined to ordinary agriculture; it raises no exportable produce except corn and cattle. Now the rise of this state, although under these circumstances, has been by far the most extraordinary in the annals of the world. I have said that fifty years ago it was an unbroken forest. In 1840, it already contained 1,519,000 inhabitants, and was then the third state of the Union in population, although only the sixteenth in size.* It was, in 1841, the first state in productiveness, in respect of wheat; the third for other grain; the third for sheep; the second for horses; and proportionably rich in other raw produce of the same character. It would, of course, be unfair to make any comparison between the growth of an American state, surrounded by districts sending into it an abundance of emigrants, and an English colony, at 3000 or 12,000 miles from the mother-country. The argument which the marvellous creation of Ohio affords is only conclusive on the question, whether a country can rise rapidly into wealth, without any combination of capitalists and labourers.†

* Now (1860) 2,300,000. But Illinois, in the last decennium, has far outstripped the progress of Ohio. Its economical history is precisely similar.

† Mr. Wakefield, when pressed with the example of Ohio, attributes its prosperity to the indirect effects of slave labour, because New Orleans, the chief place of export for the foreign commerce of Ohio, is in a slave state. (Report of Committee on Colonial Lands, 1836, p. 178.) An explanation with which it requires some faith in his theory to be satisfied.

The result, therefore, is, that such a combination is only necessary to prosperity where the colony has facilities for the production of exportable articles, which require the labour of many hands in co-operation, or a large outlay of capital.

rarely
emi-
with
e been
The
it, by
vanta-
stry is
raises
ow the
es, has
of the
an un-
19,000
ion in
It was,
ect of
sheep;
other
course,
wth of
g into
ony, at
The
affords
ountry
tion of

um, has
is pre-
tributes
se New
of Ohio,
s, 1836,
n in his

LECTURE XIV.

DISPOSAL OF LAND IN NEW COLONIES.—EXAMINATION OF THE PRINCIPLES
OF THE WRITERS ON SYSTEMATIC COLONIZATION CONTINUED.

THE next position of the writers on systematic colonization which we have to consider, following the order proposed in my last lecture, is this; That the requisite abundance of available labour is to be secured by introducing labourers from the mother-country, or other well-peopled regions, and taking measures to keep them in the condition of labourers living by wages for some considerable time.

This proposition need not detain us long. Slaves and convicts being now out of the question, the only means by which a supply of dependent labour can be now procured, where requisite, is free emigration. The only method by which dependent European labourers can be retained, is to prevent them from passing immediately into the condition of landholders. It is true that the danger of their immediately aspiring to become owners of land must greatly vary according to the circumstances of particular colonies. The temptation in North America, where the soil has high agricultural capabilities, and accumulated capital is comparatively rare, must be much stronger than in Australia, where the land is generally barren, and high wages are attainable in the service of large proprietors. Consequently, the American back-woodsman is a farmer; the Australian "overlander"* is a drover by profession. Still the danger everywhere exists, in a greater or less degree. And all other modes of obtaining labour, together with all other modes of keeping the labourer in dependence, may be pronounced both unsuited

* See Captain Grey's Journals, vol. ii.

to the genius of the present age, and demonstrably productive of more evil than good.

But it may not be out of place to notice here an objection which has been urged against this part of the scheme; namely, that it is an undue interference with the rate of wages; that by securing artificially an abundant supply of labour, the remuneration of labour will be artificially lowered. This is the view taken among others by Mr. M'Culloch, the most determined assailant of the scheme of sale at high prices. "It is a part of this new project," he says, "on the excellence of which much stress is laid, that the sums got by the sale of lands in the colony are to be expended in defraying the expense attending the conveyance of land to the labourers. This is a species of bait held out to tempt capitalists to buy land by making them believe that though land be artificially dear labour will be artificially cheap, and that, on the whole, they will be very well off. This, however, is merely attempting to repair an injury done to the capitalists by inflicting a more serious injury upon the labourers. In a colony where a large portion of the capital is swallowed up in the purchase of land, the demand for labour must be comparatively limited, and this limited market is to be glutted by throwing upon it crowds of paupers, transported gratis from England."*

This is a view which appears plausible at first sight, and until we have examined the real state of circumstances in new colonies. Labour, as Mr. Poulett Scrope truly expresses it, obtains the maximum of wages in new countries where land is easy of acquisition. The maximum of wages, be it remembered, is the highest amount which can be obtained, leaving the necessary profit to the capitalist. The competition of emigrants,

* Note xxiii. to Adam Smith.

and the difficulty thrown in the way of the purchasing of land by its dearness, seem to have a tendency to keep the market more amply supplied, and lower the price of labour. If so, it is contended, that whether or not it offers advantageous terms to colonists, it must artificially depress the condition of the working classes.

But the fact appears to be far otherwise. The real pressure which is felt by capitalists in new countries raising exportable produce arises not so much from the high price of the labour that is to be had, as from the difficulty of procuring any. Without the assistance of slavery, or some of those substitutes for it which we have recently considered, it has been found scarcely possible to obtain it at all; absolutely impossible to obtain it in such proportions as to render capital most productive by a proper division of employment. Accordingly, as we have seen, the history of most colonies raising much exportable produce shows a considerable waste of wealth in their early stages, until this deficiency was in some way remedied; it shows also great disinclination on the part of the wealthier classes at home to embark any part of their fortune in so unpromising a venture as the cultivation of the earth in a region without a labouring class. But if the supply of labour be once secured, capital is immediately tempted to flow in by the abundance of the return from a new soil; and the combined exertions of a sufficient number of labourers will, under that capital, be so far more efficient than it could be without them, that there is every reason to conclude that high profits and high wages may both be realized; that, instead of suffering by each other's competition, the industrious emigrants may find that they mutually assist each other and the capitalist in drawing from the earth the largest amount of produce, to the proportionate advantage of all. And, to conclude this part of my observations in the language of Colonel

Torrens, "while the increased production would enable the capitalist to pay high wages, his own interest would compel him to do so: because the rapid accumulation of capital would cause a competition for labourers wherewith to employ it; and because a sufficient supply of combined labour could not be maintained, unless the augmented production which it created should be so divided as, at one and the same time, to increase both profits and wages."

When we examine in detail the economical history of the colonies in which this scheme has been wholly or partially put into execution, we shall easily satisfy ourselves of the truth of these views; and that the very last evil which there seems to be any reason for apprehending is an unnatural depression of wages.

3. Our next proposition was, that the revenue which may be derived from the sale of wild land is the fund out of which the cost of introducing emigrants is best defrayed. This is the suggestion which in reality forms the great discovery of Mr. Wakefield, and does the greatest credit to those who have supported and enforced his views. About the speculative parts of his scheme many doubts may be entertained; respecting this, few who have considered the subject are likely to disagree with him, except in so far as he has propounded as a universal rule, what is only of partial application. The mere change from the system of free grant to that of sale, as we shall see when we examine the historical part of the question, was a great benefit under the circumstances of most of our colonies; the appropriation of the fund thus raised, or a considerable part of it, to a definite, useful, and honest object, and one in which the interests of the colonies are so closely involved, is, at the least, a practical measure of the highest value, omitting the peculiar economical advantages which are supposed to attend it.

But, 4thly, the advocates of the scheme further contend,

that the most convenient way of preventing these emigrants from rising too rapidly from the condition of labourers into that of independent landowners, is to sell the land at a sufficiently high price. What is meant by the phrase, a sufficiently high price? The answer to this question will more distinctly lay before us the principles of the theory than any other part of our investigation.

By a sufficiently high price cannot be meant a price which shall adequately represent the actual value of the land. In old countries, the price which land bears is regulated by the returns from it. The yearly income derivable from it is a thing easy to be estimated; and the number of years' purchase is determined chiefly by the rate of interest. But the value of wild land in a colony is, properly speaking, nothing. It is, in its actual condition, useless and unproductive. The purchaser only hopes, that, by the application of capital and labour, it may be rendered otherwise. The price of all land, therefore, must at first be arbitrary, whether it is a uniform price or a varying price. That is, in other words, government may impose a tax on speculators in the purchase of wild land, in proportion to the expectations which these may entertain of rendering it valuable, which is the system of sale by auction; or it may impose a uniform tax per acre on the acquisition of land, which is the system of sale at a uniform price. In either case, the imposition rather resembles, in many of its effects, a tax laid upon the purchaser, than the exaction of purchase money in the ordinary sense; and I do not know whether some erroneous views might not have been avoided, if it had been called from the beginning by that name.

What, then, is a sufficient price? A price which will answer two conditions: first, the preventing the premature purchase of land by individuals in the labouring class: secondly, the price which will enable the purchaser to command the necessary quantity of labour. Let us

confine ourselves to the last consideration only. Let us suppose, that 100 acres, in South Australia, require, on the average, the labour of three men; that these, with their families, amount, on the average, to twelve individuals; and that the price of conveying emigrants to Australia is, what it is roughly estimated at by the land and emigration commissioners, about 15*l.* per head. Then the entire expense would be 180*l.*; and the sufficient price, *supposing that the whole of it were devoted to this purpose*, would be about 1*l.* 16*s.* per acre; or if we follow the strict rule of allowing only young couples without children to be conveyed at the colony's expense, then half that sum, or 18*s.* per acre, would be sufficient. It would then only be necessary to ascertain, whether this price would be sufficient to attain the other object, viz. to prevent premature purchases by labourers; and if it were found to answer in that respect also, we should have solved the problem proposed to us.

And thus we are enabled to understand that which I have stated as the fifth fundamental proposition of the theory—that the entire proceeds of the land sales ought to be devoted to the purpose of obtaining emigrants; and that only by devoting the whole to this purpose, and not any portion, will the exact equilibrium between land, labour, and capital be secured. This follows almost as a corollary from the problem above stated.

The result of Mr. Wakefield's reasoning on this subject, when examined before the Committee on Waste Lands, is thus stated, and appears to be fairly stated, in the *Edinburgh Review*:—"There is a certain ratio between "the supply of labour in the market and the surface "of land under cultivation—a ratio varying, indeed, "with the varying circumstances of the case, but in "each case discoverable—by which the greatest quantity of produce will be raised. If you miss this ratio "either way, you fall into the evils, on the one side,

" of an under-peopled country, in which the land is
" scratched and the population scattered : in the other,
" of an over-peopled country, in which the competition
" of labourers reduces wages to a minimum, and the
" competition of capitalists reduces prices to a minimum ;
" and the land will not yield enough to feed the people.
" To keep up always the proper ratio, you must keep
" the ratio constant between the emigration of hireable
" labourers and the price of unsold land ; and this must
" be done, by first fixing the just price, and then determin-
" ing to apply the whole of that price to emigration.
" You might, indeed, fix a higher price, in the first
" instance, than would be necessary to bring in the just
" supply of labour ; and, in that case, you might use the
" surplus fund for other purposes, without losing the
" desired portion between land and labour ; but you
" would introduce an evil of another kind ; you would
" place an unnecessary restriction upon the field of culti-
" vation : with a lower price, the same money would
" have been spent in buying more land, which land would
" have supported more labourers, which labourers would
" have raised more produce ; and the money you want
" would be obtained at less cost by taxing the produce
" raised, than by taking the fund which goes to raise
" it." *

But the reviewer proceeds to show that a very obvious difficulty appears to suggest itself to this simple mode of arriving at the required result,—a "sufficient price." The assumption is, that a certain number of labourers are requisite for the cultivation of a certain portion of soil. Now nature admits of no such ascertained proportion of labourers to acres. It may be that four individuals, the number assumed in this instance, may suffice to render 100 acres of land in Australia productive.

* Edinburgh Review, July, 1840.

But six would make them more productive. Therefore whether or not the capitalist would employ six labourers instead of four, supposing him to be able to obtain as many, would depend entirely upon the rate of wages. When it is said that four labourers are necessary to render 100 acres productive, the expression must mean four labourers at a given rate of wages. If wages could be lowered, it would be far more advantageous to the capitalist to employ six. But wages would be lowered if the number of emigrants were increased. The greater the number of labourers who arrived, in proportion to the number of acres occupied, the lower the rate of wages would be. Therefore it might very possibly be desirable for the capitalist to give a still higher price for land, if he could thereby secure the importation of a greater number of labourers; and, in point of fact, the proposition, as has been truly and acutely observed, seems to reduce itself to this: that the sufficient price of waste land, if it is to be estimated by the quantity of labour required, will be the highest price which any body thinks it worth while to give.*

And another objection presents itself to this compendious mode of calculation. Every one who has written on the subject appears to assume that it is not desirable to restrict the labourer from the purchase of land for more than a limited time: a time which it would be

* Mr. Wakefield, indeed, seems, to a certain extent, to anticipate this objection, when he says that "beyond a *sufficient* price, every farthing of price would tend to lower wages." But the lowering of wages is not necessarily an evil: wages may be so high as to check production. Mr. Wakefield must mean, lowering beyond the right standard. Then if, indeed, we could ascertain the maximum of wages desirable for the colony, at a certain stage of its progress, and the price which would insure that maximum of wages, we should approximate to a solution of the problem before us; but, until this is done, to make the test of a sufficient price depend upon its securing the best rate of wages, is to explain *ignotum per ignotius*.

unreasonable to attempt to define, without an accurate practical knowledge of the circumstances of particular colonies; but probably not exceeding three or four years in ordinary cases. Now the plan which we have been considering provides only a supply of labour in proportion to the quantity of land bought: the price of 100 acres is to be spent in the importation of the labour necessary for 100 acres. No provision is made at all for the land which will, in every year, be losing its available labour by the conversion of its husbandmen into landowners. Consequently (unless it is to be assumed that the natural increase of the population will supply the gaps thus occasioned, a supposition which requires proof at all events, and would probably be a wrong one in the case of a very young colony), there will be a competition between the new comers who require labour, and the old settlers who have just lost theirs, for every working man who is brought from the mother-country by the expenditure of the capital of the former. Wages, therefore, will rise; the purchaser will not obtain the whole benefit of his outlay; the imaginary equilibrium between land and labour will be disturbed, and the proposed test of a sufficient price will prove altogether inapplicable.

It appears, therefore, that whether or not it may be possible to ascertain that imaginary standard of price which will secure the presence of labour in the best possible proportion to land, the calculations hitherto made proceed upon insufficient premises.*

* We have the authority of Mr. Wakefield himself to support us in this view of the question. His experience on former occasions, and especially in his evidence before the Colonial Lands Committee of 1836, have certainly been thought to give colour to the opinion, that a "best possible" price might be ascertained: but he now says, "I have seen attempts made by very ingenious persons to lay down what they imagined was the rule for determining the price of lands in a colony theoretically, but it appears

Another difficulty in the way of fixing the "sufficient price" of waste land in colonies arises from the double object which the framers of the theory have in view: the obtaining a sufficient number of labourers, and the restraining these labourers from the acquisition of land for a sufficient, and not more than a sufficient, time. Now it may happen that the price which is adequate to the one purpose is either inadequate or excessive in reference to the other. This will appear plainly enough, when we consider the manner in which the nature of the soil, and its staple cultivation, must affect the question of price in different colonies. Most of the great articles of colonial exportation—sugar, coffee, tobacco, &c.—require careful cultivation on a small surface. The proportion borne by the quantity of labour employed to the extent of soil is in such countries extremely high. Hence the very dense agricultural population which has been supported in a small space in various tropical colonies; for example, our own smaller West India islands, as noticed in a former lecture. Other articles of export require of necessity a very extensive range of country, and a very small number of labourers; such are those which are produced by pastoral industry—hides, of which the importation is now so great from Spanish America, and the more valuable article of wool, the wealth of our Australian settlements. Now it is obvious that there must be extreme difficulty in adjusting any such principle as that which we are here discussing to the relative wants of communities so widely different. The tropical colonist requires but a very small extent of land to become rich, if that land be of superior quality; but without a profusion of labour his land is worthless.

"to me impossible."—*Report of Committee on the Affairs of South Australia*, 1841, 2731. See, for his last observations on the subject, his "View of the Art of Colonization," 1849, p. 353.

The Australian must have a range, to be measured by square miles rather than acres, to serve him as a sheep-walk; but a few herdsmen and shepherds will afford him nearly all the assistance he requires to render it productive. Will it not then be possible, it may be asked, to adjust this difference by the simple process of measuring the price of the land by its *expected* value, estimating, in each case, the average amount and value of the annual produce of an acre of land, say in Guiana and in Australia, and correcting the estimate by the necessary allowance for the relative outlay of capital and labour in each kind of cultivation? But then we are embarrassed by the other essential requisite of the scheme; namely, the temporary restriction of the labourer from leaving the service of the capitalist and taking land for himself. In order to effect this, the price must be reasonably high. But it may very well happen, that for the purpose of raising exportable produce there may be an enormous difference between the value of land in different colonies, and yet for the labourer's purpose—that of raising necessary subsistence—the difference may be small. It is possible, for instance, that an acre of land employed in raising sugar in Guiana yields as great a net produce, and requires as many labourers, as fifty acres of farm and pasture land in Australia, and yet that a well-selected acre in Australia will go nearly as far as an acre in Guiana towards supporting a labourer and his family by the work of their hands. On this supposition, the necessary price for procuring labourers would be fifty times as high in Guiana as in Australia; the necessary price for restricting purchase would be nearly the same. If, then, it be possible in either of these colonies to ascertain the exact price which shall serve both purposes, how can it be possible to ascertain it in the other?

It may, perhaps, be thought, that I have directed attention at somewhat unnecessary length to this theoret-

ical question of the possibility of discovering a sufficient price for waste land, the *τὸ καλόν*, as Mr. Poulett Scrope calls it, of this branch of economical research; to what you may, perhaps, be disposed to consider a mere idle speculation, or exercise of ingenuity. But this is not quite the case. On the soundness or unsoundness of the assumption, that such a price may be ascertained, depends the solution of one or two of the most important practical problems in colonization; problems which have been very strongly debated between opposite parties, both at home and in the colonies.

Thus it is contended, as we have seen, that it is a necessary part of the scheme of systematic colonization, that the whole produce of the land fund should be applied, without any deduction, to the purpose of immigration. This you will find insisted upon uniformly, by all the writers who have expounded its principles, as the very key-stone of the whole system. And so it undoubtedly is, upon the supposition that a sufficient price can be discovered; for the preservation of the right proportion between land and labour is, as we have seen, the essential property of that supposed price; and any diversion of the fund from the object of obtaining labour must necessarily derange this proportion. But if the idea of a sufficient price is altogether visionary, then this undeviating application of the land fund cannot be a fundamental rule. It may, for anything we know, be highly expedient, desirable, and important; but its necessity cannot be demonstrated as a mathematical truth. We will proceed, therefore, to discuss this much debated question as one of expediency, and not of economical science.

Besides the hypothetical arguments to which I have alluded, it is, moreover, strongly contended, in favour of the exclusive appropriation of the land fund to the purposes of emigration; first, that it is the mode by which

the economical advance of the colony is most effectually promoted, because every shilling laid out on emigration is more productive than if laid out on any other object whatever. Secondly, that it furthers the purchase of land, because nothing is more attractive to the capitalist than the prospect of having the whole of his outlay returned to him in the shape of labour. Thirdly, that the strict adherence to such a regulation is the only mode by which governments can be restricted from irregularly appropriating and squandering the wealth of young colonies.

Assuming, say the patrons of the scheme, that the highest price which can be obtained for land, in a new colony, is not more than sufficient to purchase the requisite labour, (an assumption which may be very safely made, for the price has probably never approached that amount,) any diversion of it from that purpose occasions a loss of part of the necessary labour. But that labour is the one great requisite, without which the land cannot be rendered productive at all. The various purposes of government, and of preparation for settlement, surveying, road-making, public works, police, and so forth, are all undoubtedly necessary; but expenditure on these objects is not expenditure which repays itself with interest. But the introduction of labourers is the actual introduction of wealth. By checking it, you check the increase of wealth, and stop the source of taxation. And therefore, they say, it is demonstrably cheaper to provide for such purposes by direct taxation as far as possible, and when that is impossible, by loan, than by appropriating a portion of the land fund. This argument cannot be more distinctly stated than it is by the Board of Land and Emigration Commissioners, in one of their Reports.*

“In South Australia,” they say, “the expenditure of “20,000*l.* in conveying emigrants to the colony has been “found to increase the population by about 2000 souls,

* Report of the Land and Emigration Commissioners, 1840.

“including those above and below the regulated age who
“pay their own passage, *as well as the settlers of a su-
“perior class who accompany each emigration ship.* And
“it appears by the latest financial reports, that the
“revenue raised in the colony amounts to 2*l.* per head
“upon the whole population. Taking these facts as data,
“it follows that withdrawing 20,000*l.* from the emigration
“fund, and applying it to the general purposes of govern-
“ment, would occasion a loss of population to the extent
“of 2000 souls, and a loss of revenue, from internal
“taxation, to the extent of 4000*l.* per annum. Now the
“commissioners were able, even in the first infancy of
“the colony, to obtain a loan upon colonial securities at
“seven per cent., and could probably at the present time
“obtain a loan upon the same securities at five per cent.
“Raising a loan of 20,000*l.* at five per cent., for defraying
“the expenses of the local government, would entail an
“annual charge of 1000*l.* upon the revenue of the pro-
“vince; while withdrawing the sum of 20,000*l.* from
“the emigration fund, in order to defray the expenses of
“the local government, would occasion an annual loss of
“revenue to the amount of 4000*l.*”

“There is another point of view in which the finan-
“cial question may be considered. The expenditure of
“an emigration fund of 20,000*l.* conveys to the colony
“1000 adult emigrants of the labouring class, and each
“adult of the labouring class has obtained upon the
“average in money and rations wages to the amount of
“about 50*l.* per annum. The wages of the adult labour,
“conveyed by an emigration fund of 20,000*l.*, may be
“taken at 50,000*l.* per annum. But the rate of profit
“in the colony is at least twenty per cent., and therefore
“the capitalists who advance 50,000*l.* per annum in
“wages must obtain in return a reproduction to the
“amount of 60,000*l.* per annum. It follows, that with-
“drawing the sum of 20,000*l.* from the emigration fund

“ for the expenses of the civil government must occasion
“ a diminution in the gross produce of labour and capital
“ to the amount of 60,000*l.* per annum.”

“ There is still another point of view in which this
“ question may be considered. When the proceeds ob-
“ tained by the sales of waste lands are employed as
“ an emigration fund, each successive emigration leads to
“ a further increase. Thus, when the operation of an
“ emigration fund amounting to 20,000*l.* has caused an
“ increase of population to the extent of 2000 souls, the
“ effect upon the progress of the colony through the
“ means of emigration does not terminate with the first
“ increase. The additional population creates an ad-
“ ditional demand for food, and causes an additional
“ quantity of land to be purchased for supplying it: the
“ proceeds of this purchase become a new emigration
“ fund, and the new emigration fund again increases the
“ population, the demand for land, and the fund appli-
“ cable to emigration.”

The first of these arguments, which is the most practical one, appears to me defective in one or two points

In stating the revenue at 2*l.* per head, and the consequent loss of 2000 emigrants as a loss of 4000*l.* to the revenue, the commissioners have assumed that the loss of labourers, occasioned by a deduction of 20,000*l.* from the emigration fund, will be accompanied by an *equal loss of emigrant capitalists*. This seems to be assuming the point in dispute, and something more. Let us suppose that, in one year, 4000 emigrants are carried out for 40,000*l.*, and that 200 capitalists likewise arrive. Suppose that in the next year half the emigration fund is diverted, and 2000 emigrants only arrive; but, making for the moment the contrary assumption to that of the commissioners, the same number of 200 capitalists. Then 400 capitalists will have to bid for the labour of 6000 labourers, instead of

200 for that of 4000, as in the former year. Wages will rise. So much will be lost by the capitalist. But the capitalist will gain, on the other hand, by saving all that deduction from his profit which would be necessary to pay the interest of the loan. Admitting that the loss on wages would more than exceed this gain, still it is not to be considered as a total loss; and it is plain, therefore, supposing capitalists to act with a right view to their own advantage, that their emigration will not diminish in quite the same ratio as that of the labourer, and, consequently, that the amount of revenue which the colony loses by the operation is something over-estimated.

But, in the next place, the commissioners seem to be considering the case of some extraordinary emergency requiring a very large outlay. And it may be very true, that such an outlay is better provided for by loan than by drawing on the land fund. But will the same reasoning apply to "ordinary purposes of revenue?" Might we not as reasonably justify a government in always borrowing to meet any unusual outlay, great or small; nay, when the argument is pushed to the extreme, to meet the current expenses of the year? Let us assume the rate of profit at 10 per cent., 100% at the beginning of the year becomes 110% at the end. At the end of the second year, the sum would be 121%; at the end of the third, 133% 2s. But, at the end of the first year, a tax is imposed which reduces profits to 9 per cent. The amount at the end of the second year is only 119% 18s.; at the end of the third, not quite 130% 14s., and so on. Why is it not more advantageous to prevent this diminution in the rate of progression by borrowing every year, and charging profits only with the interest of the loan? The answer is to be found in the nature of credit itself. If it was certain that the rate of profit would always continue the same, and if the lenders entertained this confidence, there is no assignable rea-

son why the process should not continue *ad infinitum*, and funding of perpetual loans supersede the raising of all revenue whatever. Since this report to Lord John Russell was composed, the commissioners have had practical experience of the effect of relying, too confidently, on the credit of a new and flourishing settlement. It might have been better for South Australia, if something had been deducted from her land fund for purposes other than those of emigration, instead of both land sales and emigration coming to a stop together, as has recently been the case.

And the same observations apply very forcibly to the second argument above noticed; namely, that a colony is rendered much more attractive to capitalists by the certainty that the whole of the price of land will be repaid in labour; that this certainty raises the price, and extends the purchases, to the maximum. Now there are certain expenses—very considerable expenses—which necessarily accompany the foundation of a colony, and continue heavy, although diminishing in pressure, for a long time after its first establishment. And the more rapid the colonization the greater the expenses,—nay, they may rise even in a greater ratio than capital and population; that is, in a colony where 2000 persons settle in the course of the first year, they may be more than twice as heavy as where 1000 only settle. For instance, to take one item of many, it may and often does cost more than twice as much to survey a million of acres as half a million; the time, labour, and travelling expense being more than doubled, because the surveyors have to go farther into the wilderness to execute the second half of their survey. But if a capitalist is willing to give more money for land, and to buy more land, in a new settlement, on the faith of the promise that every shilling will be expended on immigration, this must be either in utter carelessness and ignorance of

these preliminary expenses, or because he relies on their liquidation in some way or other. But how? He must rely on their being defrayed by loan, and on the repayment of that loan by future exertions on the part of the colony; he must look forward with brilliant and vague conjectures to the rapid prosperity of the young community, and determine confidently to anticipate its imaginary revenues; or, lastly, he must entertain a lurking belief that if the worst comes to the worst, and all these magnificent expectations should fail of accomplishment, the burden will be taken on its capacious shoulders by the government of the mother country—the ultimate guarantor to which such adventurers always look. Now, to rely on each or any of these resources, and to advance capital in such reliance, is mere speculation in the worst and most mischievous sense of the word. The prosperity created by such speculation is sure to be temporary only, and followed by reverses as signal as the original success. Were a colony to proceed in the career of wealth with even greater rapidity than the most ardent fancy has ever suggested, we may be sure of this,—that, if founded in speculation and on fictitious credit, the ardour of the speculators would outstrip her progress, that the original deficit would never be filled up, that loan would succeed loan, and expense be accumulated on expense, until—although not, perhaps, until long after the original adventurers had made their fortune—the tide would turn at last, and public enterprise and private accumulation receive at once a check, the more stunning in proportion to the rapidity of the movement. Even if we had not the example of South Australia before us, mere reasoning on ordinary principles ought to suffice to lead us to this result.

It seems to follow from these considerations, that it is essential to the safety of any scheme of colonization

that some thought should be taken beforehand for those preliminary expenses which cannot be left to be gradually defrayed by the settlers without entailing on them a long period of discouragement and privation. And it would be difficult to suggest any more appropriate fund for this purpose than that which is derived from the first sales of land; either to be directly applied to it, or, if the sum thus raised be insufficient, to be used as a specific security for the raising of money by loan. There is no reason why a loan, not raised in the spirit of mere speculation on the possible resources of the colony, but limited in amount and charged on a definite fund, may not be serviceable, possibly necessary, in the outset of a colony.

But it must be added, that governments and official people seem by no means disposed to be contented with this limited appropriation of the land fund to certain objects. They show a very strong desire to have a fund, so convenient, so abundant, so easy to be got at, entirely at their own disposal; to make it serve to fill up all the deficiencies which the reluctance of settlers to submit to taxation, or the extravagance of those in authority, may occasion in the ways and means of a colony. It is this habitual tendency of governments to apply all the resources under their control to the nearest emergency—that is, in this instance, to squander the very life-blood of a colony for purposes of the most trivial expediency—which constitutes, in reality, the best apology for the policy of the South Australian Acts, by which this revenue was exclusively appropriated to immigration. For example, the people in New South Wales are disinclined to local taxation for ordinary municipal and local purposes; the land fund is at hand, and it is immediately suggested, with no small show of reason, that if the people will not tax themselves, they must submit to lose the benefit of a supply of labour.

Again: Sir George Gipps is of opinion "that the charges " which may properly be said to belong to the territorial " revenue are the following:—1. All charges of collec- " tion and management; 2. Expenses incurred on ac- " count of the aborigines, the first possessors of the soil, " from whence the wealth of the colony is derived; " 3. The expenses of immigration." Others have thought that the police establishment of a colony, use- ful works, roads, and many other branches of the public service, have at least equal claims on the land fund with the objects already specified. And, lastly, Lord John Russell, in his original Instructions to the Land and Emigration Commissioners, proposed that it should be appropriated to immigration, "only so far as this use " of it may be compatible with a due regard for the " pressing and necessary demands of the local govern- " ment, for which no other resources can be found."

If this proposal were once adopted by a lavish ad- ministration — if the land fund were turned into a fund for miscellaneous estimates—it needs little sagacity to conjecture how much benefit the colonists would derive from it in the shape of labour. It appears, therefore, very essential that this appropriative tendency of colonial governments should be controlled, as far as this can be done by the adoption of stated regulations. And the best-adapted regulations for this purpose would be such as should not only specify the branches of the public service to which any part of the land revenue should be devoted, but also the proportion of that re- venue which should be sacredly set apart for the primary purpose—the procurement of labour.*

* To this opinion Lord John Russell appears himself to have approximated, when additional experience in office had opened to him new views of the subject. He is aware (he says in a despatch of 1840) "that objections have been made, of considerable weight, " against any separation of the revenue derived from the sale of land

The principle of distribution established, it would be idle in a work like the present to pretend to decide on the fittest proportions: it is enough to indicate what appears to be the safest general conclusion on a subject of considerable difficulty; namely, that the land fund should be charged, in the first instance, either directly or by way of anticipation, with those preparatory expenses which are absolutely necessary for the foundation of a colony; and that, subject to this deduction, if the whole of the residue be not applied to the purpose of immigration, a definite proportion at all events should be set aside for that essential object; remembering, however, the irregularity of the source from which these supplies are to be derived. The extreme variations from year to year in the quantity of land sold in our colonies were certainly not anticipated by the first authors of the project.

6. In the next place it is contended, by those whose views we are now considering, that the sale of waste lands in colonies should be at a fixed and uniform price, and not by auction.

This proposition likewise depends upon the assumption that a sufficient price can be discovered. If it can, then sale by auction would evidently be disadvantageous. The price at which land would be sold would

“from the general mass of the revenue of a colony; but if this distinction is not made, and a separation of this kind is not established
“by positive rule, experience shows that the immediate temptation
“of a large expenditure without taxes is strong enough to overbear
“the permanent interests which are involved in the constant supply
“of fresh labourers to the colony. The rule fully and firmly established, both the colonies and the mother-country will be sensible
“of the benefits derived from it.” His lordship then proposes to devote fifty per cent. of the land sales to immigration: the remaining half to the other expenses of the colony. (Which proposal, as we shall see, was ultimately adopted as the basis of the Australian land system, after the date of these lectures.)

be, in all probability, either under or above that which is by the theory sufficient. If under, the requisite supply of labour would not be obtained; or, the requisite restriction would not be placed upon small purchases. If above, there would be an unnecessary taxation of the settlers, and an abstraction of a portion of that capital which they would otherwise import into the colony.

But although we may reject this theory of a sufficient price, several strong reasons are still adduced for preferring the practice of sale at a fixed amount, on the South Australian plan, to that of sale by auction.

At first sight, the latter system certainly appears the more natural one. Lands in new colonies vary infinitely in value to the speculating purchaser; they do not vary only according to the fertility of the soil, but even more according to situation. The land which has the advantage of water-frontage, or of vicinity to harbours and navigable rivers, is far more valuable than similar soil of equal quality; while the ground which has been selected for the site of an intended town will sell for ten, twenty, or fifty times the price of mere farming land. Why, therefore, it is asked, should the colonial revenue lose all the difference between the ordinary or average price of land and the highest? for it must be assumed, that the uniform price will coincide, on the most favourable supposition, with the ordinary or average price in colonies where land is sold by auction; no one would give 1*l.* an acre in Australia, if average land sold for 15*s.* at Port Phillip. Why should the speculating purchaser appropriate to himself all that advantage which under the auction system would result to the land fund, and consequently to the general resources of the country? Why should the money which ought to be collected for the sake of the colony be thrown away? Why should not the "natural course" of things be followed, according to which land would fetch exactly that price which

the adventurer would be willing to give for it, having fairly weighed all its qualities of soil and locality?

The answer to these questions carries us back to the first principles of the scheme which we have already considered. Land, as we have seen, can scarcely be said to have a present "value" in that state in which it yields no return. The more capital is applied to it in that state (supposing that labour can be procured), the greater the return will be. The less is abstracted from the pocket of the capitalist in the shape of purchase money or taxation, the more he will be enabled to apply to the land. Consequently all preliminary taxation or exaction of purchase money, whichever it may be called, is an evil, and is only imposed for the sake of obtaining a certain good. As soon as that good is secured, all further imposition is superfluous and injurious. If, therefore, the scheme of sale by auction brings more into the revenue than the scheme of sale by uniform price, that is no advantage, but distinctly the contrary, supposing that the uniform price is a good one. The revenue gains, for the time, by the higher price; but the resources of the colony are diminished.

In the next place, the "natural" course of settlement is, that which would take place, not if land were sold at the sum which it will fetch, but if it were granted away without any purchase at all. Free grant is the "natural" system; deviations from it are for the sake of particular results, and produce artificial, though perhaps very useful, effects. Now, under a system of free grant, settlers would first occupy the most fertile and best situated lands—those from which the return to the capital expended would be greatest. A system of uniform price produces exactly the same effect. As soon as land becomes worth 1*l.* per acre, or whatever other price may be established, "whether its value is given by fertility or position, or, what is most likely, by a combination of both, it becomes

“occupied; it is not occupied till then, and it is not likely to remain unoccupied long after it acquires that value.” Inferior land will, therefore, become occupied in the regular order, as soon as it has acquired a value to speculators by the progress of the colony, and not before. The whole district will be settled precisely in that succession in which it is most advantageous for the purposes of production and wealth that it should be settled.

Sale by auction produces the very contrary effect. Inferior land, in point of fertility or position, is cheaper than superior, precisely in proportion to the difference. Therefore there is no inducement to the individual settler, in the first instance, to prefer the latter to the former. If he gets less by the worse land, he spends less in buying it. A considerable number of purchasers will be attracted by the inferior price; and these will generally be the poorest, whom it would be most desirable to place in such a situation as to avail themselves to the utmost of the natural capabilities of the land of their adoption.

These are the principal reasons commonly urged in favour of the system of sale at a uniform price. There are also various practical arguments in support of it; but these, from their nature, can only be touched upon very generally by us. The question is altogether one of detail and convenience, on which it would be presumptuous for inquirers like ourselves to pronounce.

The principal points insisted on by the supporters of the fixed price system, especially Mr. Wakefield in his evidence before the Waste Lands Committee of 1836, are, the delays which a settler must undergo, under the auction system, before the lands on which he is desirous to fix are advertised by the government for sale; the advantage of having colonial lands purchaseable by speculators or settlers in this country, which is impossible if the sale is by auction; and that of avoiding the competition of bidders anxious to take advantage either of the ignorance

of others or of their supposed skill. The settlers "may
" have to encounter competition active in proportion to
" their supposed knowledge of the qualities of the soil,
" and may be compelled either to pay an excessive price
" on account of their own skill, or else to make another
" selection, and after renewed delay to incur the hazard
" of renewed disappointments." Under the system of
auction, also, numerous frauds, it is alleged, are practised
on the government, as well as impositions on the purchaser.
Parties combine to keep down the price of land, and then resell it among themselves and divide the profit,—a species of conspiracy for which they sometimes, although rarely, become amenable to law.

The objectors reply (and with truth), that some of these evils are not necessarily inherent in the system : that the delay may be diminished by giving the intending purchaser a right to call peremptorily for the sale of land,—say at a month's notice, as is the case in New South Wales ; that unfair competition may be prevented by allowing the tenders for biddings to be closed, so that the bidders may not be known. They contend, also, that the plan of selling to individuals in England merely gives an encouragement to baseless speculation ; that the uniform price makes the purchase of land a lottery, in which persons embark only for the chance of re-selling at a profit. "Land throughout the wide extent of New South Wales," says Sir George Gipps, "is to be found of such varied
" quality and value, that I feel persuaded a complete
" scramble would ensue if any price whatsoever were
" fixed at which the first claimant might be entitled to
" take such portion of it as he chose. Every acre of
" good land would be immediately bought up by our
" great capitalists, at whose mercy all newly arrived emigrants would infallibly be placed."

This last objection is the only one to which I will call your attention more particularly. I do not think that

the warmest admirer of the South Australian system of sale at uniform price can deny, that it does powerfully conduce to promote "land-jobbing" and speculation. Lands are offered for sale in England as well as in the colony, and are extensively purchased by buyers entirely ignorant of their quality and real advantages or disadvantages; many of whom merely purchase with a view to re-sale at a higher price. Now, the promoting of this sort of rapid sale was one of the objects most zealously pursued by the original founders of the colony. Economically speaking, speculation of this sort is only disadvantageous to a colony in one particular case; when capitalists are induced to lay out, in the purchase of land which they cannot use profitably, a portion of that capital which they would otherwise have employed in the cultivation of land which they are able to occupy. And it may be reasonably doubted, whether this specific evil is likely in any case to arise: that is, whether the quantity of capital thus vested is not generally overbalanced by the quantity of capital which the spirit of speculation forces into employment in the colony, over and above what would have been attracted there in the natural course of events. Certainly in South Australia and Port Phillip, the most remarkable seats of land speculation among our colonies, it cannot be truly said that a want of capital for productive employment has arisen from the lavish expenditure of it in the land market. But the evils of this kind of speculation are of another nature. The feverish excitement which it communicates to all the transactions of ordinary business; the impatience of slow results, the restless disposition, the languid inattention to regular labour, which it infuses into the spirits of all classes; the enormous and discreditable puffery to which the speculators resort to increase the value of their lands, which is sure to raise extravagant expectations in the first instance, in the

minds of those who embark themselves or their fortunes in the colony, and then to end in discouragement and disappointment : these, not to mention, for the present, some still heavier moral evils, are the certain and fatal results of the over-prevalence of speculation ; and so far as the South Australian system encouraged this, we shall have little hesitation in pronouncing it mischievous and mistaken.

And it is obvious that the gain to the *bonâ fide* settler by the "uniform system" which the theory supposes, is at best only partially realized. "The one thing needful," say the South Australian Commissioners *, in young colonies, "is to offer high bounties on the introduction of capital ;" and they consider in the nature of a bounty the encouragement given when town lots in South Australia, for instance, are sold to a purchaser at 1*l.* an acre, which would have fetched three, four, or ten times that amount at an auction. And this is very true : but it must be remembered, that a large proportion of these town lots are probably purchased by persons having no intention to employ them profitably at all ; or who, if they ever had such intention, are led to abandon it by the temptation of the high price which they can obtain at a re-sale. The land thus finally passes into the hand of the *bonâ fide* occupier at the highest attainable price, whether by public auction or private contract. He, therefore, obtains it at last on precisely the same terms as his neighbour at Port Phillip, where sale by auction prevails. The only difference to the colonies is this : that in South Australia the difference between the original and the second price goes into the pocket of the first purchaser, who may possibly have no connection with the colony whatever, or, at all events, may have no intention of expending his gains there : at Port Phillip, the whole sum goes to the government, which employs it

* Fourth Report, p. 11.

on public purposes for the benefit of the colony. What proportion of the purchases of land in South Australia have been made on speculation by parties intending to re-sell, I have not the means of ascertaining: it is evident that in all such instances the chief argument adduced by Mr. Wakefield and others, in support of the system, namely, that it spares the capital of the colonist, has no application whatever.

It must, however, be observed, that if government profits by the high prices realized by the sale of town lots and eligible situations, government must take upon itself the functions of the land-jobber. In the United States, where, as we shall see, the sale of land is virtually at an uniform price, companies or individuals make the original purchase; the sites of towns and so forth are selected by them and by the public, not by the government which sells in the first instance: they benefit by success, and are responsible for failure. And "it may be questioned whether the government does wisely to encumber itself with the pursuit of a business so liable to miscalculation, so often ending in disappointment among the buyers and reproaches against the seller, and, above all, when undertaken by the government, so apt to stimulate merely speculative investment, as that of choosing the sites of intended towns, in a half-explored country, and selling suburban lots by auction."*

With regard to the selection of the best lands only, which is said to be an advantage of the uniform price regulation, it must be remembered that if the best lands only are selected over a pretty wide extent of territory when the quality is very various, the tendency of modern colonists to spread themselves over an inconvenient extent of ground will be very much increased. Now this the writers whose views we are considering represent as

* Letter of Mr. Wakefield.—*Spectator*, Dec. 4, 1841.

a great evil: I believe that they exaggerate its importance; but any thing which tends to it must be inconsistent with their views; and all must admit that the loss of capital by distance, and by the expensiveness of communication, may in some instances be greater, when the best lands only are occupied, than would have taken place if nearer but inferior land had been first settled. "Suppose two fertile valleys," says a writer in the "Edinburgh Review,"* "separated from each other by a barren tract. On the uniform price system, the fertile would be bought up and cultivated, the barren left waste and unappropriated. An easy communication between these fertile tracts would no doubt increase the value of both; but whose interest will it be to make it?"—which seems, at all events, to point to the conclusion that the uniform price system, in order to be successful, should be accompanied by the creation of some definite fund for those purposes which may be generally termed "preparation." It should, however, be added, that in Australia the intervening land thus described would probably be found valuable to let as "natural pasture," but not worth the while of any settler to purchase, whether by auction or otherwise.

One other serious difficulty presents itself in some localities; namely, how to restrict the monopoly by a few settlers of peculiar natural advantages, of which it is very desirable that a share should be left to a great many. Population naturally establishes itself, in the first instance, along great lines of communication: thus the banks of the St. Lawrence, from Quebec upwards, have been well peopled for a century, while ten miles from the river the country is often a wilderness. This is the natural progress of events, and it would be unwise in a government to attempt to check it. But take the instance of a country where water is scarce, as in Australia, gene-

* Vol. lxxii. p. 543.

rally speaking. It is absolutely necessary that the occupier of land for pastoral purposes should have access to a stream. But its banks will be immediately monopolized by a few. The first capitalists who purchase land will rush to seize them. Under the auction system, the price of such situations would rise to such an extent that no one would be anxious to purchase more water-frontage, as it is called, than was absolutely necessary for the sake of his other land. Under the other, every one would secure as much of it as his money would buy. The only mode of meeting this danger appears to be by absolutely restricting the quantity of water-frontage which may be bought by each, and making it preserve a fixed proportion to the rest of his purchase.

I have laid before you in some detail the arguments on both sides on this question, because it is one of those which have been most strenuously contested of late years, both among speculative writers and practical men in the colonies. I do not pretend to form any judgment upon it, or to give you more than a few of the materials for forming one. It has unfortunately produced some of that vacillation in judgment which always exercises a certain degree of injurious influence on the transaction of business. Mr. Wakefield, I believe, was at first inclined to the auction system; he afterwards advocated the uniform, which, mainly owing to his representations, was adopted in the experiment of South Australia. In all other colonies auction was the rule. In 1840, official opinion inclined to the other plan. The Commissioners of Land and Emigration recommended that "public land should be open to sale at the uniform price of 1*l.* per acre" in all parts of Australia, except the old counties of New South Wales. In Canada the same principle was on the point of being adopted, the only difference of opinion being as to the amount; and also in Western Australia. But, shortly afterwards, the sudden embarrassment into

which the affairs of South Australia fell, threw a discredit on principles which were then rapidly becoming popular. And, in the main, the system of auction prevailed.

7. The last proposition we have to notice is, that the system would tend to promote concentration of the people, to restrain that inconvenient dispersion which is apt to take place in new colonies, and to prevent the abandonment of old land for new.

On this subject I will not detain you long. I may refer you to my ninth lecture for some arguments against the supposition that this natural dispersion is practically injurious, that is, on a fair balance of conveniences and inconveniences. To reason from extreme cases, on so comprehensive a subject, is only to mislead the inquirer. It may be true that at Swan River the dispersion of the original colonists was so great that some settlers died of hunger, because, although there was food at the government-house, the governor did not know his way to them, nor they to the governor; but the instance of Swan River is that of an extreme case—a case of very great practical mismanagement, and of much personal misunderstanding between the leader of the colony and the labouring emigrants, independently of whatever errors of principle may have been committed.* Generally speaking, the body of settlers will not disperse beyond the limits of tolerably easy communication with each other; and none, or a few hermits only, will go beyond the reach of markets. The theory of “concentration” cannot be better stated than in the words of a despatch of Lord Glenelg:—
“The territory, expanding only with the pressure of
“population, is commensurate with the actual wants of
“the entire community. Society, being thus kept together, is more open to civilizing influences, more directly

* Evidence of Mr. Wakefield before the Waste Land Committee, 1836.

“ within the control of the government, more full of the
“ activity which is inspired by common wants, and the
“ strength which is derived from the division of labour ;
“ and, altogether, is in a sounder state, morally, politically,
“ and economically, than if left to pursue its natural
“ course.” All this may be true ; and yet, on the other
hand, the economical loss which the colony inevitably
sustains by not being left to follow its natural course —
by being forced to concentrate itself on the less valuable
soils — will probably overbalance all these real or ima-
ginary advantages.

But (which is of more importance to us than the
abstract question, whether an enforced concentration
would be advantageous), it is extremely difficult to prove
that the South Australian system, or any system, would
produce that concentration. The historical illustrations
adduced by its supporters seem very little applicable.
Mr. Wakefield relies on the example of the early Greek
colonies, and attributes their little expansion without the
walls of their towns to the abundance of slave labour.
It is difficult to see the supposed connection of cause and
effect ; but, in point of fact, we know that the habits and
principles of Greek colonists were altogether opposed to
such expansion ; and that, if this had been otherwise,
they were far too feeble, and their plantations situated
for the most part in countries too fully occupied by
native agricultural races, to admit of their spreading over
the surface like modern settlers. And the course of
modern colonial history seems to point altogether to an
opposite conclusion. Abundance of slave labour has
certainly not promoted density of population ; for the
slave states of the American Union are uniformly less
populous than states of cotemporary foundation without
slaves. It certainly has not prevented the abandonment
of old land for new : we have examined on a former
occasion the instance of Virginia ; and it may be added,

that in Demerara the cultivated land is not more extensive than the abandoned. And, lastly, in South Australia itself, the "model colony," the experiment seems to have entirely failed in obtaining anything like concentration. In March 1840, when the population could not have exceeded 12,000 souls, "the purchases had far exceeded "its agricultural and pastoral requirements. The lands "already surveyed would well bear from 50,000 to "40,000 inhabitants, while the districts actually sold "would support in comfort double those numbers."* This, argue the supporters of the theory, only proves that the price of land is not high enough, and ought to be raised. It would be possible, no doubt, to raise it; but the moment that the intended compression began to make itself felt, the operations of the squatter would interfere, and no government could prevent the unlicensed occupation of land if it persisted in excluding colonists from the lawful acquisition of the best within their reach. The only ascertainable principle on the subject appears to be this,—that the tendency to dispersion will in all cases be greater in proportion to the value of the produce of the soil. The greater the profit to be drawn from the land, the more certainly the temptation of occupying the most fertile portions will prevail in the mind of the settler over attachment to society, and the feeling of the inconveniences which that dispersion must occasion. All artificial methods of restricting the extension of a colony over the surface, and cramping it, like a Chinese lady's foot, according to some imaginary standard of elegant proportion, seem injurious; such, for example, as the plan of continuous surveys, by which the government only offers adjacent portions of territory to purchasers in succession, instead of acceding to the wishes of the settlers themselves, by surveying at once those for which the

* Despatch of Colonel Gawler, March 21, 1840, in the Appendix to the Report on South Australian affairs, 1841, p. 262.

greatest desire is manifested, within a reasonable distance of the nucleus of the settlement. For the most part, such methods are fortunately impracticable; that is, the squatter, who is the natural corrector of land monopolies, as the smuggler is of commercial, would render them to a great extent nugatory. But in whatever degree they could be carried into effect, in the same proportion the young community would be checked in the development of its vigorous principle of expansion.

Before quitting this part of my subject, it is essential to remark that the natural exigencies of a pastoral country and community must considerably modify the character of any scheme of "systematic colonization" applied to it. For example, in New South Wales and Van Diemen's Land it has long been the practice to grant to the owner of cattle and sheep licences to occupy, for the purpose of pasturage, tracts of land, of which the ownership is in the crown, at a low rent. "Certain boundaries are established, by the name of the boundaries or limits of location: within these limits land is either sold or let on lease; beyond them it is not either sold or let; but licences are granted for the occupation of such tracts as may be desired for pasture by proprietors of stock, on each of which licences a fee of 10% is payable annually, and an assessment under a local ordinance is based on the stock depastured thereon. Each of the tracts thus occupied is called a station, and the size varies from 3000 to 5000 acres."—(General Report of Land and Emigration Commissioners, 1843).*

I have now gone through the principal features of the modern scheme of systematic colonization. Let us divest it of the too exact form in which it has been presented by some of its supporters; let us dismiss all

* This system was the foundation of the great pastoral wealth attained by these communities. See Appendix to Lecture XVI.

idea of a precise proportion between land, labour, and capital, an exclusive employment of the land fund on emigration, and of a mathematically "sufficient" price; let us consider its principles as confined to the sale of land at as high prices as can reasonably be obtained, and the strict devotion of the proceeds to a few essential purposes, among which the supply of labour holds the principal place; let us consider it, moreover, as chiefly applicable only to colonies raising large quantities of exportable produce, and perhaps also to other colonies so distant from the mother country that the stream of emigration needs to be artificially directed to them; let us, I say, subject the theory to all the qualifications which I have suggested, although not all of them with equal confidence, and we cannot then fail of being struck with its simplicity, its facility of adaptation, its high practical utility. Never was there a more remarkable instance of the success of a principle against all manner of misapprehension—against the fear of innovation—against corrupt interests—against the inert resistance which all novelty is sure to encounter. At its first announcement, if warmly advocated by a few supporters, it was received by the multitude with incredulity, by the learned with derision. The idea of putting a high price on that which it had been the uniform practice to lavish with unlimited profusion, and expecting thereby to promote colonization, was received by them as the climax of absurdity. "The whole scheme," said Mr. M'Culloch*, "seems, in fact, to be little else than a tissue of delusions and contradictions; and it says little for the discernment of the public that it should have attracted any notice. It is true that the Americans sell their unoccupied lands; but they sell the richest and finest lands in the valley of the Mississippi at less than a dollar an acre, whereas, we exact five shillings an acre

* Note xxiii. to Adam Smith.

“ for the worst land in Canada, and no less than twelve
“ shillings or twenty shillings an acre for the worst land
“ at the antipodes, as in that terra incognita called
“ Southern Australia! If these regulations be intended
“ to direct the current of voluntary emigration from our
“ own colonies to the United States, they do honour to
“ the sagacity of those by whom they were contrived,
“ and there is not a word to be said against them. But
“ in all other respects they seem to be as impolitic and
“ absurd as can well be imagined.” The experiment
was tried in South Australia. It succeeded, in respect
of the quantity of land sold and the number of emigrants
conveyed, beyond the expectations of the boldest specu-
lators. The government at home shook off its prejudices,
and resolved on applying it, though prudently and even
timidly, in New South Wales. The attempt, however,
coincided with one of those paroxysms of speculation
which are so characteristic of modern British enterprise,
and in four or five years upwards of 1,700,000*l.* were
realized in the Australian colonies by the sale of land.
And although this fever passed off, as to all impartial
observers it was evident that it would, and the invest-
ment of capital in the purchase of waste land for some
years almost wholly ceased, yet the experiment was
attended with success, and with advantage to the nation
at large, inasmuch as it was the means of conveying
to the colonies, with reasonable prospects of obtaining
work, thousands of labourers who must otherwise have
struggled on at home against the difficulties of their
social position; and of furnishing labour to many capi-
talists, who must without it have invested their capital
elsewhere. It is not to be supposed that the rapid
advance of New South Wales, or Port Phillip was the
result of direct economical causes; that there is any
magic in the maintenance of a certain proportion be-
tween land and labour, which can, as it were, by a kind

of mechanical operation, make the fortunes of a community rapid and certain. The true origin of that advance is, doubtless, to be sought in the confidence given to capitalists—to speculators, if you will—by the certainty that their large outlay is honestly and systematically devoted to supplying their demand for labour. They look forward to prosperous results, because they see things conducted on a plan (although not quite so steadily as might be wished), instead of being left to the blind operations of chance as formerly; they see that a definite object is proposed by the managers; that this object is not shrouded in diplomatic mystery, but fully and frankly explained; that all are invited to discuss its merits beforehand, to examine how far it has been attained. The wealthy settler feels that he has no chance of being abandoned, like Mr. Peel at the Swan River, by the whole army of labourers whom he has induced, at an enormous expense, to accompany him; of undergoing all the degradation and annoyance to which the supply of convict labour, precarious as at best it is, would expose him; of struggling for years, like our West India planters before the Emancipation Act, against the heavy necessity of maintaining labourers whose resources were becoming less and less profitable, and being placed at last under the torture of a desperate experiment, which may relieve or may destroy him.

And if we carry our views beyond mere economical results, without relying too much on hopes which a thousand circumstances may render abortive, we may perhaps indulge in the conjecture, that communities thus founded begin their career under higher auspices of political and moral happiness than those mere casual offsprings of industry or of discontent which European civilization has scattered over the globe, and left to perish or to flourish by their own resources. The early influx of men of wealth and education attracted by a state of

society in which wealth must confer power, and consequently education must meet with some degree of sympathy and encouragement, while the curse of slavery is absent; the mutual dependence in which, if the system can be carried into practical effect, the different ranks must be placed towards each other;—these seem to furnish a promise that the population of a settlement thus founded will afford some of the features of a commonwealth, instead of a mere body of unconnected speculators; that it may realize, in some degree, the idea of a colony such as it presented itself to the ancients, and such as Coleridge and Whately have pointed out as one of the desiderata of modern civilization.

LECTURE XV.

EFFECTS OF THE DISPOSAL OF LAND IN NEW COLONIES BY FREE GRANT,
AND BY SALE AT LOW PRICES, EXAMINED, ESPECIALLY IN NORTH
AMERICA.

WE have now examined together the principal theories which have been promulgated respecting the disposal of waste land in colonies, and have endeavoured to follow them out into their economical consequences. I propose to conclude this part of my inquiries with a very brief investigation (as it necessarily must be) of the facts which experience furnishes respecting it; confining myself to those chapters of history which are the most instructive and important to us: namely, the recent annals of our North American colonies, the United States, and Australia. These will present to us, in succession, the results of the system of free grant, the system of sale at low prices, and the system of sale at high prices.

"In the North American colonies, as in the United States," Lord Durham has said, "the function of authority most full of good or evil consequences has been the disposal of public land." The phrase may be exaggerated; but of its great importance, in all colonies, no doubt can be entertained.

But, as we are now considering the case of old colonies, I must revert to a question touched upon in an earlier portion of these lectures. If this function be of so great importance, and if it be one strictly domestic in its character, and requiring, above most others, that practical knowledge which is best attained on the spot, why is it not confided to the colonial governments, especially

to the colonial legislatures, where these exist? I do not here speak of very new settlements, but of those in which society has made a certain degree of progress, and institutions have attained a certain amount of solidity. Surely, if we recognize the principle that colonists should govern themselves, except in those particulars where the exercise of self-government would necessarily clash with imperial sovereignty, this is one of the functions which should seem in theory more peculiarly fit to be exercised by the colonial, not the imperial, authorities. It is a power of which the employment, in one way or the other, can in no way affect the supremacy of the crown, or the existing interests of a single subject of the mother-country. To contend, as is commonly done, that the colonists ought not to have it, for fear they should misuse it, is to contend against the concession of political or municipal freedom to colonists in any instance; or else it is an example of that wavering political faith, that halting between two opinions, that offering of boons with one hand and withholding them with the other, which have characterised for a series of years only too large a portion of our colonial policy. But, however ignorant we may choose to suppose colonial legislatures of their own interests, what public body, after all, could mismanage the lands of its own demesne more than those of our American colonies have been mismanaged by the imperial government ever since their foundation?

But the most plausible argument advanced in favour of retaining the disposal of public lands, as an essential prerogative of the crown, is, that the mother-country is interested in the manner in which that disposal is effected, with a view to the relief of her surplus population by emigration. Now, in answer to this, I may refer you, in the first place, to the reasons advanced by many of the soundest economical writers, and shortly

stated in a former part of this course, for believing that the possibility of any extensive relief from emigration is altogether imaginary. But even those who look to emigration with greater confidence will perhaps find, upon inquiry, that by far the greater portion of what actually takes place, and is likely to take place, is altogether uninfluenced by the measures which may be adopted for the disposal of public lands. Half a million of emigrants went from the United Kingdom to New York and Quebec in the ten years before 1840; of whom, ultimately, full three-fourths settled in the United States. Of all this multitude, it is difficult to discover that any were in the slightest degree affected by the proceedings of government in reference to public land, except, perhaps, a few hundreds or thousands settled by the Canada and other land companies on tracts recently purchased by them from the crown.

And, at all events, full scope for all the efforts which government is able to make in the way of encouraging emigration would be left in those newer settlements in which, by universal consent, it should retain the disposal of land. Nor need this power be conceded to the colonial legislature in all parts of the colony at the same time. There would, probably, be little difficulty in retaining it, for example, in each county, or district, until a certain proportion of the land were granted or occupied. Thus the wild frontier belt of an extensive colony would remain under the control of the crown, long after the more settled districts had passed under that of their own assemblies. And the competition of these imperial lands would be a strong check on the offering unfavourable terms to settlers in those under the colonial jurisdiction.

This, however, is a mere matter of speculation, on which the views of many of my hearers may be different from mine. At present the inclination of the metro-

politan legislature and government seems to be strongly in favour of retaining this branch of dominion. Such is the decided opinion of Mr. Wakefield, although a warm friend to the extension of the representative system in colonies. Such was the strongly expressed recommendation of Lord Durham; and similar language has been held by our statesmen in general during the many discussions to which this subject has lately given rise. "It is for the Imperial Parliament," says Mr. Buller, "to reconcile the different interests, and, "by providing for the greatest development of the "resources of the colonies, to enable them to offer a "market for the manufactures, and a home for the surplus population, of the United Kingdom."

I do not pretend to point out to you the better opinion in this conflict of sentiments; nor to decide whether some of the reasonings advanced in favour of the policy of retaining this power in the hands of government may not be conclusive, although others certainly appear little better than the common arguments by which the strongest always persuade themselves of their own superior fitness to exercise power.* But we must now confine ourselves to our own more appropriate sphere

* (1861.) This great question was decided, soon after the publication of these lectures, by the concession of the revenue and management of public land, in all the more important colonies, to the colonial legislatures. Not that this concession was the result of political reasoning. But the ingenious and able school of the "Colonial Reformers" of 1840—50 overdid their own work. They wished to promote colonial independence. They wished also to promote their favourite experiments in colonization. But the two purposes were in truth incompatible. The emancipated legislatures soon endeavoured to appropriate the land revenue as their first prize, and the home government did not find it worth while to make any serious opposition. For, contemporaneously with these events, the development of free trade and consequent prosperity of England robbed the "emigration" question of all that pressing interest which attached to it when these lectures were delivered. (See Lecture V.)

of investigation—the economical effects of the different modes of disposing of land.

The general belief in former times, to judge by the practice, seems to have been, that the best mode was to give it away. And so, in many cases, it might have been, if any security could have been obtained that the parties who received the grants were *bonâ fide* settlers, possessed of sufficient capital to render the grants available for their own comfortable support, and the production of wealth; for it was soon obvious, that if the owner neglected to cultivate his grant, the community was injured by the interposition of vacant spaces between the occupied lands. But in finding this security lay the real difficulty of the case. The modes which were devised to meet it were, to annex conditions to the grant, and subject it to forfeiture if these were not fulfilled; or to impose a moderate tax or quit rent, either on uncultivated land only, or on all land, at an amount not oppressive to the settler, but rendering it not worth the while of any one who did not intend to settle to keep it. But both these methods were found in practice very imperfect, from the difficulty of enforcing them. Conditions might be easily evaded, for it was both invidious and difficult, as well as very expensive, for government agents to ascertain whether or not they had been substantially executed.* The same objection applied to the payment of fines for non-cultivation; and general taxes on the land were unpopular, and difficult of imposition.

These objections apply to the system of free grant in general; but it must be owned that its evils, whatever they may be, have been much aggravated by gross

* "All conditions," thinks Mr. Wakefield, "must become dead letters which are in the nature of a promise, or something to be done after the land has been obtained."—*Evidence before Committee on Colonial Lands*, 1836, 655.

abuses, and that these abuses have furnished an opportunity for exaggerated invectives against the system itself. In our North American colonies, and partly in our Australian also, land seems to have been long regarded as a mere present made by nature to the colonial government, for the purpose of being re-distributed as freely as it was given, without the slightest regard to the effects of its distribution on the prosperity of the community. The history of these abuses will be found detailed in many works; but nowhere so fully and clearly, as regards North America, as in Mr. Charles Buller's Report.* A few instances out of many may suffice for our purpose. In Lower Canada (under the ingenious invention called the system of "leaders and associates," by which regulations restricting the amount of grants were evaded†), 1,425,000 acres were made over to about sixty individuals, during the government of Sir A. Milne; that is, a territory nearly equalling in extent the county of Devon. In Upper Canada, about seventeen millions of acres had been surveyed in 1825; that is, a surface as great as that of Ireland: all this had been granted away, except about 2,000,000 acres; and yet the population scarcely reached 150,000. Three millions had gone by way of reward or compensation to "American Loyalists," of whom very few seem to have settled in the province; six hundred thousand to militia men; half a million to discharged soldiers and sailors, of whom very few turned cultivators, so that their grants, as Mr. Buller very truly observed, amounted in fact to little more than small and variable gratuities in money, according to the price they might get for their

* Appendix B. to Lord Durham's Report, 1839.

† As not more than a certain number of acres could be granted to a single person under the existing regulations, a number applied for grants at the same time, and then the associates made over their shares to the leader. — See Lord Durham's Report, and Bouchette.

lots. In Nova Scotia, out of about six million acres of useful land, 5,750,000 have been lavished in free grants. Lastly, "the whole of Prince Edward's Island was given "away in one day," in 1767, to about sixty grantees, subject to quit rents and conditions of settlement which have never been fulfilled; and thus, says Lord Durham, "its prosperity was stifled in the very outset of its existence."

In the catalogue of these abuses most writers have inscribed the system of crown and clergy reserves, a characteristic part of our land disposal in America. The clergy reserves were instituted in Lower Canada by the constitutional act of 1791; the crown reserves by the executive government. Originally one-seventh of each entire lot granted was reserved, I believe, for the clergy, and as much for the crown; which clumsy method of appropriating made the reservations, in the language of the surveyor-general, Mr. Bouchette, "present the aspect of chess-boards, every second or third lot alternately in each range being a reserve, one for the protestant clergy and one for the crown." After 1821 these scattered fragments were consolidated into "blocks;" a less inconvenient arrangement, it seems, but still presenting the difficulty of interposing desert tracts between the cultivated, except in those cases where takers were found to occupy the reserves on long leases. The crown reserves were afterwards abandoned. Of the clergy reserves, one fourth were sold in 1831, another portion in 1836, and the remainder has been rendered disposable by an act of parliament of 1840.* The history of these reserves in Upper Canada is nearly the same.

* (1860.) Under this and later acts of parliament these reserves were afterwards converted into money; and in 1856 the last vestige of the system was abolished, by the absorption of that money into the general revenues, vested interests alone being respected.

These peculiar features of our colonial land system have, as you will perceive, no necessary connection with the method of disposing of land by free grant; and to confound the practice with the abuse has been in this, as in many instances, rather too much the habit of zealous reformers. But even in regard to the abuses themselves, without wishing to defend them, we may reasonably imagine that their effects have been somewhat exaggerated. For to a certain extent these evils bring their own remedy along with them. The persons who have acquired large grants, which they have been unable to cultivate, sooner or later find it their interest to make them over in smaller portions to others who will; and thus the land is eventually disposed of to the actual cultivator at a fair price; the only difference being (and I do not deny that it is a difference, and an unfavourable one), that there is a period of delay during which the land lies idle, and that the price goes into the pockets of individuals instead of the government. Thus, although the power of the state to assist settlers may be almost extinguished, the process of settlement, under favourable circumstances, will nevertheless go on. In Upper Canada, since 1825, government has had scarcely any lands left to part with, that is, lands attractive to settlers; and has, in fact, disposed of only 600,000 acres; yet in those fifteen years the population of the province has increased from 150,000 to 400,000: thus almost the whole of this population must have established itself on lands purchased from private owners. Prince Edward's Island presents a remarkable instance of the same kind. You will see it constantly cited by writers on colonial subjects as a kind of prerogative example, to use Baconian language, of the vices of the old system of dealing with land. Its soil was granted away to a few large proprietors, of whom scarcely any, with the honourable exception of

Lord Selkirk, have ever resided or paid serious attention to the improvement of their estates, while they have steadily and successfully resisted any attempt to tax themselves, or to enforce the conditions of their grants. What is the actual state of the island? Its population, although it increased slowly up to 1820, has nearly doubled since that year. Its trade and revenue have increased in nearly the same proportion. Its state of society is pronounced by Mr. McGregor superior to that of our other North American colonies. "It is a common plan," he says, "with those who own farms they do not occupy, to let those farms 'on the halves,' that is, to stock the farm with horses, horned cattle, sheep, and hogs, provide half the necessary seed, and then give possession to a practical farmer, who will cultivate it and find the labour. After harvest, the produce, even to that of the dairy, is equally divided between the proprietor and farmer." A good plan, he adds, for "farmers who dislike commencing at once in the wood."* I mention this in passing, as the only instance I have met with, in the wide regions colonized by the British race, of a recurrence to that primæval plan of division between landlord and tenant, called in modern Europe the *Métayer* system, which dates from the very origin of civilization. This picture may present no very extraordinary features of rapid advance or towering fortunes. But no one, I think, would conjecture that it described a colony of which Lord Durham said, that "its prosperity was stifled in the very outset of its existence."

With respect to the mischiefs of reserves of land for public purposes, especially the clergy reserves, which must be inalienable on principle, they are, no doubt, obvious enough, even to the mere speculative inquirer; their actual amount is not so obvious; and either it must

* Brit. N. America, vol. 3. p. 462.

be much exaggerated, or some of the praise so liberally bestowed on the land-revenue system of the United States must be withdrawn. For in that country education, and many other public purposes, are provided for by means precisely analogous to the "reserves" of Canada, although smaller in amount. In every American township, a section of 640 acres, or one square mile, is I believe still appropriated to the purpose of education, forming one thirty-sixth part of the whole township.* And yet Lord Durham, and writers of the same views, are in the habit of mentioning the American mode of disposing of public lands as one of the great causes of the superior condition of the Northern States to the neighbouring British provinces. It must be added, that whatever the economical disadvantages of these reserves may be, they are necessarily diminished, either when a high price is placed on land by government, or when adjacent land becomes valuable by the progress of settlement; for in either of these cases it becomes worth the settler's while to rent the reserved land.

* Although observers in general have expressed themselves very unfavourably of the effect of the clergy reserves, Archdeacon, now Bishop, Strachan says, "On my inquiries a few years ago on the occasion of the attempted sale to the Canada Land Company, I found a greater number of inhabitants in proportion on the clergy sevenths than on the granted lands of the crown, as they offered facilities to settlers which cannot be otherwise obtained." — Appendix B. to *Lord Durham's Report*, p. 123. An ingenious plan was devised by Archbishop Whately for retaining the benefit of a landed establishment for the church, and avoiding the evils of the reserve system. As I understand it, the purchaser of land was to pay for a certain portion, and occupy another portion gratuitously for a time. For instance, the purchaser of 80 acres might occupy 100 more. After a period, he was to be called upon to single out 20 of those 100 for the use of the church. These 20 were to be selected in the following manner: the purchaser was first to select 40, and then the agent of the church 20 out of the remaining 60. A similar scheme was proposed for adoption with respect to the lands reserved for the aborigines in South Australia; but never carried into execution.

I have brought these considerations before you partly with a view which my hearers may perhaps think that I have already enforced, on various occasions, almost to weariness, namely, in order to remind you how much we are apt to overrate the effect of particular laws and institutions, both on economical prosperity and on the movement of society. It is the natural propensity of the sanguine and inquiring mind, as soon as it has detected an abuse, to refer to that abuse, by the most ingenious deductions, all the evil and imperfection apparent upon that face of things which it is contemplating. Then comes the eagerly embraced conclusion, that the specific remedy for that abuse is, at the same time, a cure for all the disorders which the reason perceives, or the imagination can conjure up. We withdraw our eyes from dwelling on the action of the great laws of economical and social progress, because we feel a secret sense of dissatisfaction in our own inability to control them; we prefer to be busy about the forms and accidents of things, matters which we can regulate and mould according to the theories which may have possession of our fancies; and to these we attribute the powers which really reside in the great springs of the machine.

However, a great change was unquestionably effected for the better when the anomalous practices which had prevailed from earlier times were superseded in all our colonies by the uniform system of sale for such a price as the land would fetch. Its introduction in Canada began in 1826; but previous payment of purchase-money, an important feature in the plan, was not required until the date of the instructions of Lord Glenelg in 1837. In Nova Scotia and New Brunswick sale by auction was established in 1827. In all these cases the sales were by auction, and the upset price, with the above exception, pretty generally regulated by the sum fixed for that purpose in the United States of Ame-

rica; namely, about 5s. As the system adopted in those States was the great model followed in these proceedings, it is now time to give a general account of it.

“The greater portion of the unoccupied lands of the United States constitute the national domain, and are, of course, under the control of the national government.

“The lands are surveyed on an accurate plan, according to a general system; afterwards they are offered for sale, by proclamation of the president, and, by law, must be sold by public auction, the minimum price being one dollar and a quarter per acre, ready money. If no one bids for the land at that price, or upwards, it is subject to private entry at any time after, upon payment at time of entry; for no credit is allowed.

“One section in each township is reserved for the support of schools in the township; and all salt-springs and lead-mines are reserved from sale, unless by special order of the president.

“The surveys are founded upon a series of true meridians, which run north, principally from the mouth of some noted river. These are intersected at right angles with lines running from east to west, called base-lines. There are five principal meridians in the land-surveys of the western states.

“Each of these meridians has its own base-line, which forms the base of a series of surveys, of which the lines are made to correspond, so that the whole country is at last divided into squares of one mile each, and townships of six miles each; and these subdivisions are distributed with mathematical accuracy into parallel ranges.

“The township consequently consists of thirty-six square miles. A square mile is called a section, and contains 640 acres. The section is subdivided into

“ half sections of 320 acres each, quarter sections of
“ 160 acres each, and half-quarter sections of 80 acres
“ each : these last, under certain conditions, are sold in
“ equal subdivisions of 40 acres each, which is the
“ smallest amount of public lands disposed of by the
“ general government. Any person, whether a native-
“ born citizen or a foreigner, may thus purchase forty
“ acres of the richest soil, and receive an indisputable
“ title, for fifty dollars, being at the rate of a dollar and
“ a quarter an acre ; and lands sold by the general
“ government are not subject to taxation under five years
“ after purchase.

“ The parts of townships, sections, quarter sections,
“ &c., made at the lines of either townships or meridians,
“ are called excesses or deficiencies. The fractional sec-
“ tions, which contain less than 160 acres, are not sub-
“ divided. The fractional sections, which contain 160
“ acres and upwards, are subdivided in such a manner as
“ to preserve the most compact and convenient forms.
“ A series of contiguous townships, laid off from east to
“ west, is called a range. These are numbered east and
“ west, from the principal meridian running due north
“ and south. Townships are counted either north or
“ south from their respective base-lines.

“ By this admirable system all the townships and
“ subdivisions are in regular mathematical forms, pre-
“ cluding the fruitful source of litigation arising from
“ the uncertainty of butts and bounds, in forms with
“ curve, meandering, or zigzag lines.

“ The land sales unite three essential objects—the
“ right of selection by the highest bidder at the public
“ sales, extreme cheapness at the private sales, and a title
“ of clearness and unquestionable surety commensurate
“ with the stability of the government. The convenience
“ and excellence of this system constitutes an essential
“ element in the rapid population of the new states.

“ The public lands are laid off into districts, in each
“ of which there is a land office, under the superintend-
“ ence of two officers appointed by the president and
“ senate, called the register of the land office and receiver
“ of public moneys.

“ All deeds, conveyances, mortgages, or title papers
“ whatsoever, must be recorded in the recorder's office
“ in the county where the land is situate. Deeds and
“ title papers are not in force until filed in the recorder's
“ office.”

The three main features of the system, it may be col-
lected from these particulars, appear to be,

1. That territory possessed by the state is held by the government in trust for the people, to be sold individually.

2. That all lands are sold at an uniform upset price.

3. That all proprietors are subject after a few years to local taxation. It must be added, in order to obtain a tolerably complete view of the system, that “squatters,” when the land on which they have established themselves is sold, are in some cases entitled by law to a right of preemption; and where this is not the case, they exercise a similar right by usage.

But the American government has never aimed at any-
thing beyond the carrying into effect of these simple
principles. It has never sought to render the sale of
lands subservient to the purpose of constructing the frame
of society after a preconceived pattern. The funds raised
by it have gone into the general coffers of the Union. No
attempt has been made to accumulate labour in particular
localities, or to discourage the acquisition of land by the
poorest class. In point of fact, public land in the United
States is sold very cheap. The ordinary price seldom
exceeds 6s. 3d. an acre.* The system gives, as may be
supposed, great encouragement to speculators: land gene-

* The upset price was two dollars until 1819, lowered in that year
to one and a quarter dollar.

rally passes in the first instance into the hands of purchasers whose only object is to re-sell it at a profit ; but it is not likely long to remain unoccupied, in consequence of being subject, whether occupied or not, to local taxation.

The difference at present (1840) between our system in North America and that of the United States is, that the upset price of our land is generally smaller. Ideas have been entertained of late years of taking a further step, and raising the price of land in our North American colonies. Mr. Charles Buller recommends an uniform price of 10*s.* per acre.* The Land and Emigration Commissioners suggested to Lord Sydenham uniform prices of 7*s.* 6*d.* per acre for a portion of the colony, and 5*s.* for the remainder. His lordship thought these prices too high, and preferred 6*s.* and 4*s.* respectively. The commissioners subsequently recommended 6*s.* per acre for all land†, from which Lord Sydenham dissented. I am not informed that either of these suggestions was carried into effect ; but it is hardly possible that government can introduce into those colonies any method which shall have much effect on their economical progress. Except in very new localities, they appear to have long passed that stage at which such measures are of any great importance. And the proceedings of the crown must evidently be governed by the competition of private owners and of the United States. And, in the next place, the facilities of communication are so much greater in the United States, from their admirable system of local taxes, that, in the opinion of Lord Sydenham, their land at 6*s.* 3*d.* was cheaper than Canadian land at 6*s.*, even when the liability to those taxes was taken into account, the benefit more than countervailing the expense. Therefore the

* Appendix B. to Lord Durham's Report, p. 33.

† Report, 1840, p. 101. Despatch of Lord Sydenham, in "Correspondence relative to Emigration to Canada," 1841, p. 36.

prospect of forming any considerable emigration fund by the sale of land in Canada seems visionary, even if such fund were needed.

If settlers are to be attracted thither, it must be, as heretofore, by the easy acquisition of land. And the government seems to have been all along entertaining plans of this description, although seemingly inconsistent with the theory of high prices. There are two projects for limited grants of free land to emigrants of the poorer class, both of which have been partially tried. The one is that of giving small lots of five acres to labourers of the lowest class: this may be sometimes useful in the case of emigrants who arrive at a time when the demand for labour happens to be slack, but obviously only in the neighbourhood of great towns or markets: it has been tried near Quebec and elsewhere, and, says Lord Sydenham, has answered tolerably well, although it has been attended with expense. The object is to attract persons who may be useful as labourers, not having land enough to be wholly independent. The other plan is that of making grants of 50 or even 100 acres to emigrant families in new townships, and especially along great lines of communication, it having been first satisfactorily shown that they possess capital to cultivate them. This project is especially pressed on government, for political reasons, under the present circumstances of Canada; but, independently of these, there seems every reason for believing that it might prove economically advantageous. The class of small yeomen, as I have endeavoured to show before, is precisely that by which colonization in such countries as the newer parts of Canada is best carried on. But in order that it might be so, or rather in order to prevent its execution from proving a mere nuisance to the colony, it is absolutely necessary that the preliminary inspection into the means of the settlers should be rigorously carried out. Now I am afraid that

the more we have studied the history of land-granting in British colonies, the less reliance we shall be disposed to place on the satisfactory enforcement of this or any other condition imposed upon occupiers.

But while little can probably be done for these colonies in the way of the disposal of waste land, much might be done in other ways; by attending to the fulfilment of such conditions where they have been imposed already; by the *bonâ fide* exaction of fines, and even of forfeitures, for the neglect of them; and, above all, by the establishment of a system of local taxation, for the purpose of local wants, such as those of roads and public works. To this we shall return on another occasion; at present it is sufficient to observe, that of all the economical causes which have been suggested for that painful inferiority in the evidence of public spirit, wealth, and activity, which seems to strike all observers in passing from the United States into our neighbouring provinces, this absence of local taxation is the most substantial, perhaps the only substantial one. But with these things our government can have little to do: our northern colonies possess legislatures of their own; and it remains to be seen whether they have sufficient perception of their own interests, and sufficient public virtue, to impose on themselves the necessary sacrifices.

NOTE.

(1861.) I have allowed the foregoing account of the land system of Canada to remain, although antiquated, as possessing perhaps historical interest for some inquirers. The suggestions of Charles Buller and others, made when the "Wakefield system" occupied men's minds, for the raising of the price of government land in that colony, never met with favour there: and it is plain that they could not have been acted upon, while United States' land in close contiguity was sold at low prices. Canada has been peopled almost entirely by the gradual aggregation of independent settlers, with some slight assistance from the efforts of the companies. The present system (Land Regulations of 1862) runs as follows:—Wild land is sold at upset prices not exceeding one dollar an acre *on credit*. The purchaser of an entire township has certain advantages, but has also certain expenses of surveying thrown upon him, and is liable to forfeiture if the land be not "settled" within a certain number of years. Land has also been extensively offered in "free grant" along some great lines of interior road, which road the settlers are bound to keep in repair.

The settler in Canada therefore obtains his land with great cheapness and great facility. But on the other hand we have seen that his expense of clearing and fencing is from 3*l.* to 4*l.* per acre. And no system—or rather a variety of systems—prevails for defraying expenses of communication. Some roads are maintained by turnpikes. Others (in Upper Canada) by the municipalities. Others by the adjoining settlers: and, in Lower Canada, under the venerable plan of "corvée," or statute labour. I have been informed by a traveller that he has seen roads in that province parcelled out by the surveyor into small segments, each to be repaired by a neighbouring "habitant"—at the expense probably of a day or two's work of his cart and horses: so profound is the objection entertained by Jean Baptiste to anything in the shape of a pecuniary rate. There is no material difference as to land regulations between Canada and the other North American provinces.

The chief alterations in the United States' land system, since these lectures were delivered, have been; 1. Through the operation of the "Preemption Act" of 1841 and ancillary measures; under which great quantities of land have been made over to "squatters" on what are considered equitable terms, before they were ready to be offered to purchasers. 2. By the great and increasing profusion of grants to States, for purposes of education, the construction of railways, "overflowed lands," &c. &c. So far have these been carried that the whole



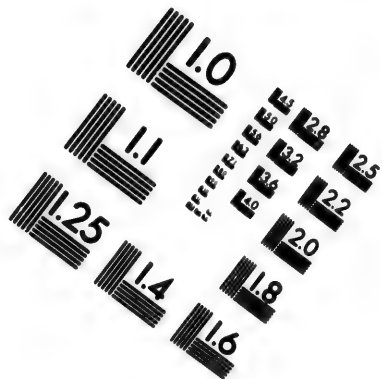
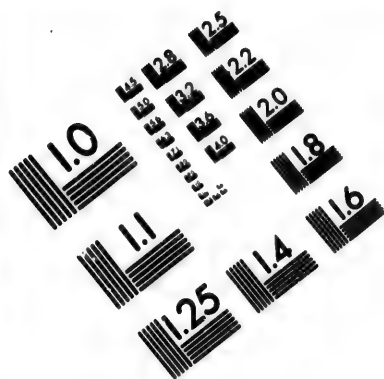
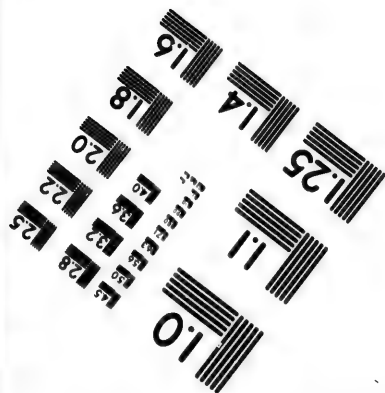
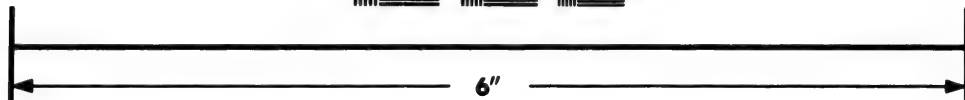
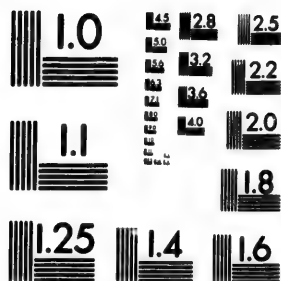


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

**23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503**

0
16
18
20
22
25
28
32
36
40
45
50
56
63
71
80
90
100

01
02
03
04
05
06
07
08
09
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
71
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
89
90
91
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99
100

revenue derived by the central government from its gigantic landed estate seems to amount to barely a million and a half of dollars per annum. In five quarters of 1858-9, five millions of acres only were sold, 3,500,000 "located," eight millions granted to the several States. This profusion, however, is represented to be in accordance with established policy. The United States, it is said, "as a proprietor, "receives from the application of the grants to the prescribed uses a "compensation in the enhanced value of the remaining lands."

LECTURE XVI.

EFFECTS OF THE DISPOSAL OF LAND IN COLONIES AT HIGH PRICES. — SKETCH
OF THE HISTORY OF SOUTH AUSTRALIA.

THE colony of South Australia was founded in 1836, under a system of government and of economical administration altogether new. It must, however, be stated, that this system was in several respects different from that which the projectors imagined.* Their intention was to found a chartered colony, resembling those which were established in North America in the seventeenth century. According to their plan, an incorporated company would have exercised, by delegation from the crown, many of the powers of sovereignty within the intended province; and besides disposing of the waste lands, and controlling the finances, would have appointed the governor, enacted the laws, and levied the taxes.

This project did not suit the views of the government at home, and was therefore considerably modified by the act 4 & 5 W. 4, c. 95, the original constituent law of the settlement. The ordinary executive and legislative powers were vested in a governor and council, according to the common method; but in addition to these, a board of commissioners was appointed, one of whom was to reside in the province, who were to have the disposal of the land, and the management of emigration. The whole of the funds raised by the disposal of land was to be devoted

* "The experiment did not attain the success of being fairly tried," says Mr. Wakefield, apologising for its comparative failure in his latest work (*Art of Colonisation*, Letter IX.).

to the purpose of conveying labouring families to the colony.

By this act no specific provision whatever was made for what I have termed the preparatory expenses of a colony—the land-surveying, the public works, the foundation of establishments, the construction of roads, and other communications. But a general power was given to the commissioners to begin their operations in sending out labourers, by levying 50,000*l.* on land, on the security of the land fund; and to defray “the necessary cost, charges, and expenses of founding the colony,” and provide for its government in the first instance by raising 200,000*l.* on the security of *the future colonial revenue*, exclusive of the land fund, which, however, was to serve as a collateral security.

It was one of the original views of the projectors of the colony, that it should support itself. The principle on which it was founded—that of applying the land fund to the purposes of emigration—was called by them the “self-supporting” principle; as if it involved in itself sufficient security that a settlement so regulated could not cost anything to the mother country; or, at all events, that its prosperity must be so certain and so rapid as to place the danger of its becoming eventually burdensome altogether out of the question. Mr. Wakefield himself, to whom the public has looked in great measure as its author, denies that he was at all concerned in propagating this view of it.* But it was certainly put forth in a variety of shapes by the friends and promoters of the original establishment; nor can it be questioned that, upon their own theory, they had some ground for anticipating its realization.

Difficulties soon arose as to the working of various

* “I never called it the self-supporting system: I look upon the “calling it the self-supporting system as a sort of puff.”—*Report of South Australian Committee*, 1841, 2584.

parts of this act. There was no sufficient line of demarcation between the powers of the governor and council, and those of the commissioners ; " ignorant and careless amateurs," as Mr. Wakefield styles them. Although this produced no disagreements at home, in the colony the case was otherwise : the infant settlement soon became divided between a commissioners' party and a governor's party ; and it was found that the powers of raising money by loan were too loosely given ; or rather, in point of fact, that the notion of raising 200,000*l.* on the security of the future local revenues of a land where the soil was yet unbroken, was impossible, even on the terms of 10 per cent. allowed by the act. 39,000*l.* only had been borrowed upon it in 1838, when a new act was obtained (1 & 2 Vict. c. 60). This statute introduced some material improvements in the administration of the affairs of the settlement ; but it also materially increased the power of the commissioners as to borrowing ; in fact, to such an extent that it was said, not without truth, to have materially infringed on the fundamental principle of the settlement. They were empowered to apply the money raised on the security of either of their two funds convertibly, keeping separate accounts : that is, money raised on the security of the land revenue might be applied to purposes of general necessity, and *vice versâ* : which some deemed a covert mode of enabling them to anticipate the readiest of the two funds, namely the land fund, without appearing distinctly to do so. But to this borrowing from the land fund a limit was placed—that the total debt due from the general fund to the land fund should never at the end of the year exceed one-third of the whole amount of the sums received in that year by the land fund. That is, if the sums raised by land sales amounted, for instance, to 30,000*l.* in any given year, the commissioners were to take care that, at the end of that year, the debt from the general fund to the land fund should not exceed 10,000*l.*

Matters therefore stood thus: There was a power to raise a very large sum for general purposes on the credit of an imaginary fund, that of the general revenue, which no sober man could for a moment imagine would nearly equal the ordinary local expenses for many years to come; and there was a very restricted power to aid those purposes by borrowing from the land fund, a real and available fund, which was rapidly increasing every year, but which was limited by the constitution of the colony to one peculiar purpose. You will see at once that the first part of the provision was altogether inadequate; and you will also see what a powerful stimulus was given thereby to the curse of young colonies—the eagerness to attain rapid results. The whole system rested on mere speculation. Nothing was real but the land fund, and that was appropriated. There were a very large sum to be repaid, and very heavy charges to be borne, by the general revenue as soon as it began to exist: it was therefore of immediate importance to create one as soon as possible—to force the colony as if in a hot-house. The numerous speculators at home who had joined in the original project, with anticipations of profit mingled with their honourable desire to carry into effect a great experiment, were driven to use all their exertions to raise the colony's credit in the market. The artificial advantages of the scheme, the natural advantages of the colony, were placed in the most tempting light before the public, and puffed through every possible channel. Every means were to be used to force the stream of English capital into this distant province, even before any thing like a satisfactory certainty could be obtained as to the profitable investment that existed for it.*

* The original price of town sections in Adelaide was 12s. per acre: only three days after the completion of the plan of the town, 560 sections were sold at the average price of 6l. 3s. an acre: and in 1839 it was thought that those in the best situations were worth

Meantime the settlement advanced. By the end of 1838, 5300 persons had left the United Kingdom for South Australia, and some hundred Germans had gone thither also ; while it was supposed that 600 at least had emigrated to it from the neighbouring provinces, attracted by its vaunted excellencies. The price of land which at first had been 12*s.* per acre, was very soon raised to 1*l.*, at which sum it has ever since remained fixed. Nearly 50,000*l.* had been raised by the sale of land, and applied to emigration ; but almost the whole of the sales, up to that epoch in the history of the colony, had been effected in England, and of course were to a great extent of a very speculative character.

The year 1839 was the most prosperous era of the experiment, as far as the influx of a great stream of capital and number of emigrants into a field, as yet altogether unprofitable, can be called prosperity. In that year 5316 persons emigrated from the United Kingdom : 50,000 acres of land were sold in England, and nearly 100,000 in the colony, at 1*l.* per acre ; and the land revenue of this infant settlement considerably exceeded the whole land revenue of New South Wales, including Port Phillip. Up to the end of 1839, the commissioners had borrowed about 125,000*l.* on the credit of the future revenues, out of the 200,000*l.* which the act allowed them ; it will be observed that the interest of this sum was a heavy charge, much having been raised at 10 per cent., or even on higher terms ; while the revenue was, of course, insufficient for the mere local expenses of the settlement, the civil list, and police department.

It was at this state of affairs that the most extraordinary system of public expenditure in the colony began,

1000*l.* to 2000*l.* per acre ! (*Fourth Report of the Commissioners*, p. 11.) Surely, instead of quoting such facts as evidences of prosperity, they ought to be recorded like the events of the tulip-mania and the South Sea bubble.

which, perhaps, the annals of financial extravagance can disclose. It must be recollected, that most of this expenditure was brought on by the determination of the patrons of the colony to force it into prosperity. "The 'one thing needful,'" such was the perpetual language of the commissioners, "is to give high bounties on the 'introduction of capital.'" There was an indifferent natural port : but foreign commerce must not be checked or embarrassed, and enormous sums were, therefore, spent on the port at all hazards. Land was to be sold as fast as possible ; but land, in order to be sold, must be surveyed in still larger quantities ; surveys, therefore, were pushed on, labour being enormously dear, until they actually rose to an average of 3*s.* 6*d.* or 4*s.* per acre, and in some cases 10*s.*, or half the price of the land. Thousands of emigrants arrived in a few months of the "season : " and, although they eventually found employment at enormous wages, still there was an interval during which they entailed a heavy expense on the government. The item of police was twice as high, in proportion to the population, in this colony without convicts, as in New South Wales. And with these expenses upon him, the governor thought fit to commence the erection of a government-house, to cost 25,000*l.* We need look no farther for the cause of all that afterwards befell the settlement. At the expiration of four years from the commencement of the colony, there was an expenditure at the rate of 140,000*l.* per annum, the revenue of the colony not being more than 20,000*l.*

No kind of dissatisfaction, it must be added, seems to have been excited in the colony by these marvellous proceedings. All seem to have been seized with the same spirit of vertigo, or the same desperate resolution to gamble on, and trust to that golden future to which the commissioners had always been pointing as the ultimate result of the experiment. The immediate mode which the governor took of meeting the enormous calls upon

him, was by drawing bills on the commissioners, 12,000 miles off, in utter ignorance of the state of their funds. They, as we have seen, had already borrowed, at the end of 1839, three-fifths of all that they could borrow, and had spent the proceeds. He drew to the amount of 123,000*l.* in the course of 1840 only. In the mean time a change had taken place in the constitution of the colonial board in England. The original commission had been revoked, and a board of land and emigration commissioners constituted for all the colonies, South Australia included. They entered on their functions in the beginning of 1840. About the middle of that year, the governor's bills began to arrive in pressing quantities. The new commissioners, after taking a little time to consider the position in which they were placed, refused to accept them. The colony became bankrupt. The emigration and land sales ceased in August, 1840 : and a sudden and complete stop was put to the rapid career of so-called prosperity.

There are friends of the colony who maintain that the commissioners might have retrieved its affairs and maintained its credit, by raising new loans (we have seen that they had not done so quite to the extent of their powers), in order to pay these bills. But the remedy of more borrowing seems rather a desperate one, for a disease which over-borrowing had engendered in the first instance.

The result was, that parliament was obliged to interfere, and to empower the government to advance a very considerable sum to meet emergencies, on such security as could be obtained without over-burdening the resources of the colony. And so ended the "self-supporting" part of the scheme ; and South Australia, like other settlements, was content to depend for a while on the mother country for assistance.

I have thought that it might be worth our while to

devote thus much of our attention to the brief history of a particular province, because it really does afford some valuable lessons to the inquirer, and because it has been popularly supposed to afford others, which cannot be deduced from it by any candid reasoner. It furnishes no evidence whatever against the reasonable application of those principles respecting the disposal of public land which we have been so long considering. Besides many minor circumstances which may have contributed to the ill success of this experiment (such, for instance, as the inconvenient division of duty and responsibility between the governor and commissioners), the candid inquirer cannot but perceive three primary causes of failure. First, that the situation was ill selected for so critical an attempt; for, although South Australia is far from being the inhospitable desert which some have thought fit to describe it, it does not appear to possess any of those extraordinary advantages which enable a community to become rapidly rich; and we have often had occasion to observe, that natural advantages are in the long run of far more importance than sound economical doctrines, to the progress and well-being of a colony. Secondly, the total omission of all means to provide for the preparatory expenses of colonization, except by a general power to raise loans to a certain amount on the credit of a future revenue, which could not come into existence for years, and was certain for a long time to be unable to support the immediate charges on it. Thirdly (and this cause was by far the most injurious of all), the unnatural encouragement given to speculation, and to its inseparable companion—extravagance. Every thing tended to this one result. The sale of lands in England threw great part of the soil into the hands of capitalists here, eager to make the most of it, and to raise its value as soon as possible, whether for resale or investment; and if the real value could not be raised rapidly enough,

to give an imaginary value to their purchase, by acquiescing in delusive representations, if they did not actually propagate them. The commissioners were anxious, at the same time, to force on the settlement of the colony, in order to raise its credit in the market; and to force up its credit in the market, in order to provide funds to carry on the settlement. And the colonists themselves were only too ready to fall into the example which the patrons of the project had set them. Time was wasted, and the interest of capital sacrificed in land-jobbing operations, which might have been profitably employed in sheep-farming or agriculture.

And let us pause a moment to consider the social state of a community introduced into life under such auspices. There was surely something short-sighted in the policy of its first founders—those, I mean, who looked to greater results than the mere production of wealth. It was impossible to evince a more creditable care than they did, in matters of detail, for the moral well-being of the colony. Convicts were excluded from it, and great discrimination was exercised in selecting the emigrants: the interests of religion and education were put prominently forward. And yet it never seems to have occurred to them, that a community urged on by the spirit of speculation which they sought in every manner to encourage, cannot be morally or socially healthy. “The one thing needful,” thought they, “is to encourage the rapid influx of capital by high bounties:” and they never thought of the tide of evils which flow in along with a rapid influx of capital, when that capital is not gradually attracted by the opening field of employment, but comes in hopes of finding or creating such a field. The wealthier emigrants, finding no useful occupation for their means, took to land-jobbing, that is, gambling, while waiting for it. The poorer emigrants, attracted by the hope of large wages, were disappointed

by the high prices, and found even the high sums which they actually realized insufficient to satisfy their anticipations. The moral consequences of such a state of things it would not be difficult to depict; and I am afraid there is some truth in the high-coloured representation of a recent visitor to those regions, nor is it altogether confined to South Australia—that though actual crime is rare, it seems an admitted principle that all means short of crime are legitimate for obtaining money.*

* (1860.) The more agreeable task now remains of tracing the recovery of the colony from the depression under which it laboured when the first edition of this work was published. In 1840, things were at their worst. 8000 persons were congregated in Adelaide; nearly half the population of the colony. The working men “scouted” the idea of proceeding into the country,” being employed by Colonel Gawler on government works: and the young metropolis numbered seventy public-houses! In the last quarter of 1840, the government expenditure was at the rate of 240,000*l.* per annum. The self-supporting system came down with a crash. Colonel Gawler was recalled: a sum of 155,000*l.* voted towards the temporary liquidation of the bills drawn by him; and Captain (now Sir George) Grey sent out to reform and retrench.

And the colonists soon found that these needful operations must commence in every man's home. The prospects were fearful. The land sales, and influx of money, ceased at once and completely. They fell from 170,000 acres sold in 1839, to about 600 in 1843. The new governor reduced the expenditure in a single year from 90,000*l.* to 30,000*l.*: and nearly 2000 persons were thrown on Captain Grey's hands, as absolute paupers, at the end of the first year of his administration. The moneyed men were bankrupt: the workmen all but in a state of insurrection. The young colony was pruned to the very root; and it shot forth with a health proportioned to the unsparing vigour with which the knife had been applied. Of course government had to bear, amongst some just reproaches, the whole weight of what was really due to private avarice and over speculation. But while the colonists thus vented their dissatisfaction, they set to with English resolution to save themselves. At the end of 1842 one-third of the houses in Adelaide were deserted; their tenants, the surplus population created by the land-jobbers, had turned to the cultivation of the soil in earnest. Now, instead of paying 270,000*l.* in one year (1839) for the necessities of life, the only want of the colonists was a market. Wheat was at 2*s.* 6*d.* a bushel; sheep were fattened with it. But this

I will conclude this lecture with a brief notice of the success which has hitherto attended the raising the price of land, and employment of the land fund on emigration, in our other Australian colonies.

great desideratum was soon supplied by the increasing communication with the other Australian colonies, and their greatly increasing demand. In a year or two more, the colonists were poor indeed; but they were out of debt, and working their way to prosperity; the governor, by his sturdiness and far-sighted economy, had redeemed their financial position; though not until the self-supporting system appears to have cost the mother country about 200,000*l*. Lastly, to close the history of the singular vicissitudes which this young community underwent in ten short years of life — the discovery of copper-mines*, containing a richer ore than the richest known in England, and accessible from the coast with the utmost facility, seems to have revived the spirit of speculation, and lent additional activity to agricultural pursuits.

In 1851 occurred the gold discoveries of New South Wales and Victoria. None of the precious metal has ever been discovered in South Australia. The consequence, for the time, was so heavy a blow as made the young industry of the colony stagger, and induced many to abandon it in despair. The young and adventurous made their way to the diggings, leaving the useless mouths behind. The copper mining interest first, and then the agricultural, seemed to collapse for want of hands and abstraction of capital. The local government and legislature showed themselves fully equal to the occasion. Instead of attempting in any way to check the emigration of their people, they encouraged it; but strove to hold out inducements to return. They turned their attention to the possibility of placing themselves in commercial connection with the gold regions. They enacted a law, by which uncoined gold brought into the colony was enabled to be assayed and stamped, and invested with part of the qualities of a legal currency, long before a mint had been established at Sydney. In this way the solvency of the colonial banks was maintained until a sufficient importation of coin could arrive from home. Their efforts were crowned with complete success. The first shock of the gold discoveries over, South Australia resumed her course of prosperous advance with singular readiness, and has continued it ever since.

Founded to a considerable extent by speculative politicians, the South Australian community has always been at once of a very democratic

* Wheal Maria, the richest in England, furnished copper at 8*l*. 18*s*. 6*d*. per ton in 1845: the "Kapunda Mine," 24*l*. 15*s*. 3*d*.

I have already touched more than once on the series of disasters which attended and followed the original settlement of Swan River, or Western Australia. So great was the distress at one period, that the settlers were relieved by subscription in the neighbouring colonies; and this settlement which now contains only 4000 people, has cost this country, first and last, 150,000*l*. But the most unfortunate feature in its early colonization was, that the land was squandered with such profusion in enormous grants to parties who found it impossible to turn them to account, that the fund by which its prosperity might have been best promoted can now with difficulty be raised.* In Van Diemen's Land, likewise, the great extent to which the appropriation of land has been carried renders it difficult, or impossible, to raise any considerable fund at present by means of land sales.

In the important colony of New South Wales the system of sale by auction at an upset price of 5*s*. per acre, commenced in 1831; and the quantity sold under

turn, and yet orderly and regular. It stands to those of Victoria and New South Wales in somewhat the same relation as New England to New York and Pennsylvania. Its legislature, of its own accord, when emancipated from the constraint of the Australian Land Sales' Act, maintained the principles of that law and of the Wakefield system for the disposal of land; and maintains them still. It is because this colony exhibits, in its history, so much of the normal character—free from all disturbing causes—from slavery, native wars, convicts, gold discoveries, large pastoral interests—because it displays more completely than any other of modern times the particulars of the advance of an industrious colony without staple exports of high value—that its annals are worth studying in greater detail than its mere statistical importance would justify.

* Nearly 1,600,000 acres were given away in the first seven or eight years. (See *Report of Land and Emigration Board for 1840*, p. 23.) Yet with all the facts of the original settlement before their eyes, the colonists seem to have disliked the change; and one writer, Ogle (*Western Australia*, p. 136), compares its effects to “stop-ping a vehicle in rapid motion.”

e series
original
a. So
rs were
olonies ;
people,
But the
on was,
ision in
sible to
its pro-
w with
ikewise,
and has
to raise
l sales.
ales the
5s. per
d under

ctoria and
y England
n accord,
Sales' Act,
system for
cause this
ter—free
icts, gold
ore com-
e advance
lue—that
statistical

seven or
Board for
ent before
and one
to "stop-

these regulations soon became extremely large. In 1831, the sales of land reached the sum of 126,000*l*. The average sum realized appears to have been about from 7*s*. to 8*s*. per acre, including town allotments. In August, 1838, the government at home wished to raise the upset price to 12*s*. per acre ; and this resolution was carried into effect in the following year. Great opposition was excited in the colony by this alteration : all the ordinary arguments which have been put forth against the sale of waste land at high prices, both by those who understand and those who do not understand the principle of the system, were brought to bear against it. And it appears that the first effect, as might have been expected, was to diminish both the quantity of land sold and the number of emigrants ; although part of that diminution may perhaps have been owing to the apprehension which began at the same time to prevail respecting the diminution of convict labour, and part to the great popularity of Port Phillip. But this opposition almost entirely died away, as soon as the fears of the colonists had become really excited, and incipient inconvenience began to be felt, through the gradual discontinuance of the practice of assignment. What amount of injurious effect that measure may really have had in depriving them of the necessary supply of labour, it would be difficult to estimate. But it probably occasioned some immediate loss, and greater indirect injury, by the discouragement which it threw on the investment of capital. Now, in such a state of things, a system under which any considerable number of free emigrants could be introduced into the country was the greatest boon which government had it in its power to offer ; and this result rapidly followed, through the increase of the land revenue consequent on the increase of price, and through the application of an increased proportion of that revenue to the purpose of obtaining labour. In the three years

1838-40, from 8000 to 10,000 emigrants were annually carried to Sydney by the expenditure of this fund; a more copious supply of labour than assignment could furnish, although undoubtedly not so easily procurable and controllable, nor at least, in the first instance, so cheap.

The good effects of this extensive importation were soon felt even in the remotest part of the colony. A settler in the interior, giving evidence on the subject before a committee at Sydney, says, "Indirectly the immigration of free labourers has benefited me; as it has disengaged a description of labour which is of greater service to me; that is, of men who formerly found employ in the settled districts, but are now obliged to come farther to look for it." This seems to point out that the influx of emigrants disposed of itself in the most satisfactory manner; the new comers, who are not so well fitted to encounter a change of life to the wilderness, remaining for a time in the settled districts.

Lastly, the singular good fortune which has attended the youngest of all these colonies, Port Phillip, since its commencement, although owing mainly to natural advantages, has certainly been promoted by the good management of its funds, and the high price of its land. Its foundation was carried on, in all respects, under happy auspices. It was not made, like South Australia, the subject of an experiment. It was not an insulated settlement, but a district of New South Wales, and enjoyed the benefit of the government of that colony, and assistance from its revenue. It owed its existence, not to speculation, but to the actual wants of the neighbouring colonies: the increasing capital of Van Diemen's Land, unable to obtain sufficient profit in that island, where so much of the land was appropriated, found a new field in this adjacent region,—the nearest part of the continent, and, as far as yet appears, the most favoured by nature.

Its land has sold at the great average price of 30s. per acre: 3000 emigrants went there in 1840, a larger number than to South Australia; and it furnished, in 1841 nearly 800,000 lbs. of wool to the English market, exceeding the produce of the Cape of Good Hope. Let us suppose that its land had been given away, or sold at low prices: those who are still sceptical as to the policy of the present system may ask, whether the purchasers would not in that case have retained more of their capital in their pockets, and been able to provide labour for themselves? The answer is, in the first place, that capitalists would not have got the land at all: it would have been appropriated, for the most part, by numerous and poor settlers, if these had equal chances of obtaining it with the rich; and, in the next place, the few capitalists who might have settled there could not, by their insulated efforts, have procured labour half so cheaply or effectually as government has been able to do it for them; besides the other advantages which the territory has derived from the partial application of its land fund to other branches of necessary expenditure.

APPENDICES TO LECTURE XVI.

No. I.

To continue the extraordinary economical history of Victoria (formerly Port Phillip) since the gold discoveries of 1851, is a task beyond the compass of this work. I have only added in an appendix, some of its leading facts in relation to our immediate subject, the disposal of public land. The statistics and results of the gold discoveries down to 1856 inclusive, are fully developed by Mr. Newmarch in his sixth volume of "Tooke's history of Prices." These had then attained their maximum. In 1856, gold to the value of 11,943,458*l.* was shipped from Victoria (besides about 2,000,000*l.*, supposed to have been raised in addition). In 1859, only 9,122,037*l.* shipped. "Dividing this among the persons on the gold fields, it would scarcely average 45*l.* per head per annum." (Mark Lane Express, Feb. 1861.) The decline of production has been gradual. Thus far, Victoria presents no exception to the general law of gold adventure. The first explorers only scratch the surface, and astonish the world by their success. Their successors work in partnerships, with more labour and better appliances, dig deeper, and obtain (individually) less. The last comers expend capital in applying all the resources of machinery, and obtain less still. Nor can anything except the discovery of virgin gold fields alter this course of events.

No. II.

Quantity of Wool imported into the United Kingdom in lbs.

	Total.	From Australia.	From South Africa.
1845	65,713,761	24,117,317	3,512,924
1858	126,738,523	51,104,560	16,597,504
Average price in 1859. Australian Wool 1s. 3d. to 2s. 11d. per lb.			
South African 1s. 2d. to 1s. 9½d. „			
(M'Culloch's Commercial Dictionary.)			

No. III.

NEW SOUTH WALES, Waste Land sold from 1840 to 1858.

TOTAL.							Average Price of Country Land per Acre.		
Years.	Number of Acres.			Purchase Money.					
	A.	R.	P.	£	s.	d.			
1840	105,900	0	27	99,231	5	7	0	14	11
1841	19,546	1	36	21,923	12	2	0	15	0
1842	7,711	1	7	13,405	14	10	1	1	2
1843	5,259	2	34	9,564	12	2	1	9	0
1844	4,079	0	2	8,030	16	10	1	15	4
1845	4,061	2	10	14,104	1	8	1	18	8
1846	3,105	3	17	10,997	10	1	1	10	5
1847	2,652	3	36	9,182	2	4	1	7	4
1848	3,472	1	39	8,865	8	9	1	4	5
1849	8,166	1	38	22,740	16	7	1	8	5
1850	11,800	2	33	35,251	10	7	1	6	7
1851	24,030	0	15	67,912	3	2	1	7	1
1852	26,550	2	5	56,875	10	11	1	16	6
1853	72,158	3	2	251,667	3	7	2	2	4
1854	83,396	1	39	272,078	18	11	1	10	3
1855	127,952	0	32	269,131	14	5	—		
1856	167,753	3	23	274,200	2	7	—		
1857	145,102	1	8	219,961	8	0	—		
1858	169,214	2	28	248,726	8	3	—		

"Squatters' Runs," in 1856, estimated at 31,500,000 acres.

No. IV.

VICTORIA, Waste Land sold from 1838 to 1858.

TOTAL.						
Years.	Number of Acres.			Purchase Money.		
	A.	R.	P.	£.	s.	d.
1838	38,694	1	12	34,328	12	6
1839	38,348	1	8	70,049	13	10
1840	83,887	2	16	218,019	16	6
1841	66,229	2	11	71,615	3	3
1842	2,962	0	4	6,039	1	0
1843	811	3	32	1,770	1	3
1844	181	0	0	1,001	8	10
1845	3,685	2	1	8,717	2	4
1846	4,577	3	17	19,186	8	10
1847	26,073	2	31	67,780	5	3
1848	18,007	2	34	33,054	0	10
1849	28,090	3	39	71,171	19	0
1850	18,398	3	18	98,657	7	6
1851	99,769	3	31	194,174	14	4
1852	163,897	2	1	599,310	0	10
1853	305,693	1	12	1,568,113	9	7
1854	404,472	0	1	1,378,858	18	11
1855	438,972	2	20	763,554	2	4
1856	437,562	0	0	749,317	13	3
1857	500,383	1	3	1,067,450	8	1
1858	255,724	2	28	638,650	1	3

No. V.

SOUTH AUSTRALIA, Waste Land sold from 1835 to 1859.

Years.	Number of Acres.			Purchase Money.		
	A.	R.	P.	£	s.	d.
1835 } to 1840 }	297,167	0	0	272,878	0	0
	(of which 160,000 sold in England.)					
1841	8,310	0	0	8,310	0	0
1842	17,081	2	0	17,081	10	0
1843	598	0	0	613	13	9
1844	3,428	0	0	5,666	13	0
1845	49,658	0	0	52,902	8	0
1846	59,402	0	35	98,594	9	0
1847	35,033	1	8	36,336	17	0
1848	29,200	0	0	31,762	13	0
1849	56,607	0	0	59,677	17	3
1850	64,349	0	0	90,385	18	2
1851	82,589	1	0	88,740	15	0
1852	86,672	1	5	99,081	0	0
1853	213,321	1	4	291,660	1	0
1854	213,925	0	9	383,469	13	3
1855	171,610	1	29	233,745	1	0
1856	187,451	0	18	235,460	3	0
1857	179,138	2	5	216,289	8	0
1858	158,015	3	18	202,468	1	0
1859	188,065	0	34	229,732	4	0

No. VI.

DISPOSAL OF REVENUE DERIVED FROM WASTE LANDS IN
NEW SOUTH WALES, 1831—40.Received from Sales of Crown Lands in New South
Wales, from 1831 to June 1840 inclusive . . . £958,000Charges of various kinds, including Expenses
of Settlement at Port Phillip, and Protection
of the Aborigines . . . £41,300Actual Charge of Survey and Management,
about . . . 149,700

£191,000

Emigration 502,000

General Expenses 265,000

£958,000

No. VII.

(1861.) At the time when these lectures were delivered and first printed, the so-called South Australian, or "Wakefield" scheme of colonization, occupied to a great extent the minds both of political philosophers and of practical men engaged in the conduct of emigration. Like most projects based on theory, however far-sighted and comprehensive, it took in practice a different course from what its inventors anticipated, and its results were in many respects curiously divergent from those with a view to which it was constructed. But it would be a great error to infer on that account that it was unsuccessful: on the contrary, there are in history very few instances to be found in which a system, devised in the closet by studious men, and put in execution in a new and distant world which those men had never seen, has produced such extensive and beneficial results. Although Wakefield and his disciples are already almost forgotten, and to some extent deservedly so, because they erred by attributing an imaginary scientific exactness to what was in truth but a sound practical rule of action, yet it is not too much to say, that the success of our Australian colonies is in very great measure attributable to their lessons.

The Home Government were so far persuaded by the arguments of this school, that in 1842 Parliament was induced to pass the "Australian Land Sales Act," in general accordance with their doctrines. The more ardent disciples, however, were dissatisfied with this law, which they regarded as a timid and evasive measure. Instead of adopting the favourite principle of a "fixed price," it established the system of auction at an upset price of 1*l.* per acre. Instead of applying the whole proceeds to surveys and emigration, it devoted one half only to the latter purpose, the other half being placed in the hands

of government, which applied it to the expenses of land management, public works, and other outlay of the nature which I have termed preliminary. The conduct of emigration was placed under the control of Commissioners in England.

A farther deviation from principle was soon introduced through the necessity of the case. The great and rapidly increasing pastoral interest of Australia could not be made dependent on this kind of legislation. Purchase at high price, or any price, was inapplicable to their case. They obtained therefore "licences" of pasturage over their enormous "runs" on easy terms. This practice also was rendered legal by an act of Parliament passed shortly after the Land Sales Act, and amending its provisions.

This law has been often represented as repealing the "Wakefield" code. In truth it was only the complement of it. While the squatters*, under the licence system, were spreading far and wide over the interior, the eligible sites for agricultural purposes were probably appropriated, sold, and occupied by emigrants, under that of sale at high price. The process of this colonization was not rapid: Australia is not, like North America, an attractive region in general to the small settler, and is much more distant: but it was on the whole singularly steady, and almost entirely free (thanks to the rigid provisions of its institution) from those evils which have so extensively arisen from the engrossing of land by speculators in free-grant or low-price colonies.

And a crisis soon arrived in which the value of the practical portion of the system was severely tested. The early labour of the colony, both in making roads and the like, and in pastoral pursuits, had been performed by the

* It need hardly be said, that while the so-called "squatter" of North America is a small farmer settling on vacant land, his Australian namesake is a flock-owner engrossing a whole district for temporary occupation.

assigned convicts. I have adverted elsewhere to the causes which first reduced, and ultimately annihilated the supply of convict labour, between 1845 and 1851. Although the "pastoral interest" were forced to conform to the times, and even to take a leading part against the continuance of transportation to Australia, yet in truth they felt the blow very severely. Although their industry did not require any very extensive supply of labour in proportion to the capital employed, it did require that this supply of labour should be steady and reliable. In this emergency, the operation of the Land and Emigration Commissioners came most opportunely to their assistance. By pouring in a regulated supply of emigrants, in proportion to the funds annually received from the sale of land, and therefore pretty nearly in proportion to the amount of capital annually invested in the colony, they furnished the stockholders with available labour, not indeed to such an extent as their wants required, but to an extent which it would have been utterly hopeless for them to attain, had the land been low priced and emigration unassisted: and thus preserved the staple interest of the colony.

Another and greater trial awaited the system. The gold discoveries directed towards the Australian shores in 1851, and the following year, a vast number of unassisted emigrants; adventurers proceeding there on their own account. The same discoveries raised immediately the price of land, greatly augmented the sale of it, and placed, accordingly, a greatly augmented amount of funds in the hands of the commissioners. These were no longer needed (at least in the vicinity of the gold regions) in order to furnish a supply of labour. That was rapidly furnishing itself, in even alarming abundance. But this influx of "unassisted" emigrants consisted almost wholly of males. Scarcely any women accompanied them at all. It is difficult to see how the gold colonies could have prospered at all, although not difficult to see that they must have

contained a mass of moral contamination, had it not been for the "Wakefield system" and its wise application by the commissioners. They turned their attention, as far as they possibly could, to the essential (and by no means easy) task of organizing an extensive female emigration. In one year they appear to have sent out emigrants, to all Australia, in the proportion of five females to three males; to the gold districts in a higher proportion of females, and the result of their operations was highly successful. While in California—ten years after the gold discovery—the females constituted only one fifth of the population, in Victoria, after the first rush to the diggings, they never seem to have constituted less than a third. It scarcely requires to be very conversant with the social economy of communities to judge of the enormous difference in happiness, morality, and industry, which this difference of proportion represents. If Victoria has been free from the worst features of the turbulence, vice, and insecurity, which attended the height of the gold fever in California—if law and order never ceased in the roughest time to prevail there substantially—if it has formed itself rapidly and completely into a thriving civilized community, from a mere collection of fortune-hunters—it owes this pre-eminence in part, we may flatter ourselves, to the advantages of British institutions, but probably much more to the accessions to the female population contributed through the "Wakefield system." Here, then, that system has produced a result highly beneficial, but altogether beside the views of its founders, and which could not by possibility have entered into their contemplation.

That system has served its purpose in the more advanced colonies, and is now at an end. The "unappropriated" half of the proceeds of land sales (that is, the half not applied to emigration) had been handed over by the British to the colonial government several years ago. The entire control of the land fund has been gradually

surrendered to them likewise, and the transfer was completed in 1855. These governments now exercise it according to rules of their own; and (as might have been expected) the distinction between land and general revenue has been generally broken down. But they have hitherto preserved (for the most part) the usage of sale at comparatively high prices, and that of encouraging immigration by large grants of public money.

It is, however, most essential to observe, that the success of the system of high price in Australia has been attained under peculiar natural conditions. First, speaking generally, the cost of clearing agricultural land in that region is trifling, and the even surface of the land affords singular facility for the construction of roads, or rather for dispensing with roads in the first stages of settlement. Secondly, the easy acquisition of pastoral land, and the rapidity with which wealth has been created by sheep-farming, have furnished a constant stimulus to agriculture, and a constant field for the employment of surplus labour. The mere purchase-money of the land has formed, consequently, a very considerable part of the purchaser's expenditure. He can afford to pay to the land fund what the Canadian purchaser must devote to clearing. He consequently reaps the full benefit of his expenditure by the importation of immigrants; while these, gaining for the most part high wages and easy employment, are the less tempted to abandon at once the character of hired labourer for that of landowner.

While the Australian colonies were thus affording ample testimony to the practical utility of the Wakefield system when applied to a region admitting of its application, the history of New Zealand was exhibiting the reverse of the medal, and proving the entire unfitness of that system under different physical conditions.

All that portion of New Zealand to which British industry was earliest directed (the Northern island, and the northern part of the Middle island) is either forest

country, or overgrown with the native ferns, even more difficult and costly of extirpation than the forest itself. And, when cleared, it has not hitherto been found available for the prosecution of any productive industry on a large scale, although eminently so for ordinary agricultural purposes. It is only within the last few years that the wide grassy plains of the south (Canterbury and Otago) have been opened to the squatter. New Zealand in general, therefore, presents a similar character to that of North America: a region in which clearing is very expensive: communication very difficult, and expensive likewise: in which the labouring settler finds abundant scope for his exertions, with secure but gradual results, the capitalist few openings for his capital. A country, in short, in which the natural process of settlement would appear to be gradual colonization by small holders of low-priced land.

But the celebrated scheme for the colonization of New Zealand, 1841—45, was originated by adherents to the opposite or high-priced theory. According to the original proposals of the New Zealand Company, land in its three settlements (Wellington, Nelson, New Plymouth) was offered to purchasers at 2*l.* per acre, the price to be applied, according to certain fixed rules, to the several purposes of surveys, emigration, public works, and even public institutions. And they possessed so much influence in the councils of this country, that when, in 1847, government entered into an arrangement by which it placed three fourths of New Zealand at the disposal of the company, it pledged itself at the same time that land in its own portion (Auckland) should not be sold for less than a pound per acre.

The failure of this ambitious project, on which no small amount of capital and an unrivalled amount of ingenuity had been expended, was in truth complete. Many subsidiary causes were assigned for it, and discussed with controversial ardour: the failure of government to

secure a fair field for the operations of the company; the mistakes committed by the company in its early selections of land; the difficulty, enhanced by administrative delays, of obtaining titles from the natives; the land speculations of individuals; political motives, and personal favouritisms and jealousies; all were cited by partisans in mutual accusation, and some of them may doubtless have had their share in producing the catastrophe. But, as has been said, the grounds of ill success lay deeper. Purchasers who had invested as much as they were willing to devote to the experiment in the acquisition of large tracts of land, found that this was only the commencement of expenditure. The ground was to be cleared, roads to be made, in a wilderness more than usually impracticable; surveying was in arrear; the emigrants collected by the expenditure of their purchase-money arrived, from the antipodes, slowly and uncertainly, and when arrived evinced as usual a marked desire to set up for themselves. Nor were the means of gratifying this desire long wanting. Land obtained by original subscribers was soon forced into the market on low terms. Purchase on the original terms consequently ceased. When the land, and land fund, of these settlements were handed over to the little provincial governments after 1852, things were almost at their worst. The provincial governments resorted, less from any economical persuasions than from the uniform popular tendencies of such governments, to the opposite system of low price. Under the recent Auckland land regulations, the price of country land was fixed at 10s. an acre: and a similar diminution of price has taken place in the other settlements above mentioned. Immigration is now steadily increasing, and although the great attraction of the neighbouring Australian colonies has prevented New Zealand from achieving so rapid a rate of progress as was once anticipated, its advance during the last five years has far exceeded what was attained under the principles of its first foundation.

But the history of the southern settlements (Canterbury and Otago) furnishes again a distinct illustration of the general principles I have endeavoured to establish. Canterbury was founded ten years ago, on a scheme which was even then deemed an exaggerated offshoot of the "Wakefield" theory. Land was offered to purchasers at 3*l.* per acre. The sum thus realized was not only to furnish immigrants and preliminary expenses, but it was also to supply institutions for religion and education. Canterbury, in short, was to realize that favourite vision of so many ardent minds, the transplantation into a new region of a complete section of old British society. If the physical circumstances of Canterbury had been similar to those of Nelson or Wellington, experience now enables us to say with certainty that such an experiment could only have ended in a very costly failure. But the projectors had drawn a fortunate ticket in the lottery of adventure. Canterbury is a region comparatively free from forest and undergrowth, where the expense of clearing, and of first communications, is comparatively small. And adjoining to that part of the settlement adapted for agricultural occupation, are vast and fertile plains, singularly adapted to the purposes of the squatter. In such a region, the rule of high price has in the main a beneficial tendency. The immigrant labourers, who were imported out of the land fund, were easily set to profitable labour, and were prevented by the enjoyment of high and ready wages from indulging too far in the ordinary tendency to set up as small landholders. The system of high price, supplemented, as in Australia, by the easy acquisition of runs for pastoral occupation under licences, continues to prevail in this thriving settlement, and bids fair to maintain itself through the actual demand for land. And I believe the progress of the second southern settlement of Otago to have been of a similar description, and under similar natural circumstances.

LECTURE XVII.

EXAMINATION OF SOME SUBJECTS CONNECTED WITH THE DISPOSAL OF LAND
IN NEW COLONIES. — PREPARATORY EXPENSES. — LAND COMPANIES.

WE have seen of how great importance it is that it should be distinctly ascertained, at the first foundation of a colony, out of what fund its preparatory expenses are to be defrayed. We have seen the dangers attending the practice of borrowing on the credit of a future and contingent fund, such as the general revenue of a young colony; an experiment, indeed, which is not very likely to be soon repeated. We have seen that the only available fund, to serve as security for loans, is that derived from the sale of land; a fund which is most copious precisely in those early stages of the existence of the settlement during which the general revenue is as yet of trifling amount. Let us briefly examine to what extent this fund can be safely anticipated.

Let us suppose that a fixed portion of it is devoted to the purpose of procuring labour, and another fixed portion, as proposed in a former lecture, to other specified purposes. It appears to have been lately suggested in many quarters, that it is desirable to raise money on the credit of the former portion of the fund, in order to send out a larger number of emigrants in the first instance. It admits, of course, of easy proof, that the greater number of emigrants originally sent out, the less exorbitant the wages of labour will be; the greater attraction will be afforded to capitalists, the greater scope given to enterprize, the greater stimulus to the purchase of land. All this is extremely plausible; but

the scheme seems peculiarly open to the objections which have been already urged against all *forcing* experiments. The example of South Australia has shown the danger of accumulating emigrants on a newly occupied spot to find employment, instead of waiting until there is an effective demand for labour. And, besides these general objections, the peculiar nature of the land fund must be considered. As has been already shown, it is a fund which must diminish relatively, and will probably diminish positively, along with the progress of colonization. If such a fund (or rather the portion of it of which we are speaking) is charged at the very outset with the interest of a heavy loan, its eventual utility must be much diminished; and it must be a serious question whether, in order to obtain a temporary result by dispatching a few thousands of additional emigrants in the first instance, and thus setting the machine of production in motion a little earlier than would have been done under the natural course of things, it is wise to cause a permanent deduction from that income which should serve to pour in a continuous stream of immigrants, and enable population to spread in proportion to the extent of surface purchased and occupied.

With respect to that other portion of the land fund which, by the supposition, is appropriated to the purposes of roads and public works, the case is very different. The necessary preparation for the reception of emigrants, the preliminary general surveys, the laying out of town sites, the rudiments of internal communication, are all requisites for the success of the colony, which cannot be obtained without considerable expense: and for these legitimate purposes it cannot be far wrong to pledge, by anticipation, that portion of the land revenue which belongs to them.

This is quite a different consideration from that respecting the mode of providing for the more permanent

expenses peculiar to young colonies, which require regular disbursements, inasmuch as these are of a continuing character, and necessarily accompany *pari passu* the advance of the settlement, if they do not even outstrip it. Let us confine our attention to the two most important of these burdens — the surveying of lands for the purpose of sale, and public works of absolute necessity, of which road-making is the principal.

When the sale of land was stimulated in South Australia by the prospect that the whole of the purchase-money was to be returned to the purchaser in the shape of labour, an urgent demand for surveys was the immediate consequence. This raised the price of what is at all times an expensive operation in new colonies. It was still farther enhanced by the permission given to purchasers to demand what were called special surveys; that is to say, a person who proposed to buy 4000 acres was entitled to demand that 16,000 should be surveyed for him in a single block, as it is termed, out of which he might make his own selection. Whether this practice is a good or a bad one, in reference to the natural progress of wealth, empowering, as it does, the purchaser to select the lands possessed of the greatest natural advantages, and reject the remainder, must be decided by reference to principles touched upon in my former lectures. But it has of course the immediate effect of rendering it necessary that much more should be surveyed than is actually occupied, and thus throwing on the colony the expense of undertaking labours of which the benefit is prospective only, and which entail much additional burden on her young resources. In this way the cost of surveys has risen to a height perfectly astonishing, when compared with that of similar work in this country, or in the United States. And as the labours of the surveyor, under the operation of rapid sales, and the special survey system, are carried on

farther and farther from the coast and the inhabited districts, the cost per acre is of course at present an increasing one.

Now for all this the South Australian system made no provision at all. It was, I may perhaps say, an unforeseen difficulty. The expense was thrown, like all other expenses, on the general funds of the settlement. The warmest friends of that project now admit that a great mistake was committed in this particular; and the consequences seem certainly to bear strong evidence to the necessity of providing against such contingencies, instead of relying blindly on the course of events for the discovery of remedies or preventives.

Warned by this example, some have now proposed that a preliminary survey of a district should in all cases precede settlement: but it may be doubted whether this is practicable. If surveying is, as hitherto, to accompany the sale of land, it seems that the expense of surveying ought, upon the whole, to be defrayed out of the price of land, either by separately taxing each purchaser for the survey of his purchase, or out of a general fund formed by reserving a certain proportion, out of the purchase-money. The latter mode is the most convenient, if sales of colonial land in England are to be encouraged; because any thing like uncertainty of taxation must prejudice them. It is desirable also to fix a minimum number of acres to be sold by government in a single lot; and that on a tolerably high scale, in order to lessen the expense of surveying. This is not suggested with the view of placing difficulties in the way of the purchase of land by people of small means; but these are never likely to be customers of government to any extent. They generally buy land ready surveyed in small lots from private owners.

With regard to the other and more important preparatory labours of a colony—the construction of roads,

harbours, wharfs, bridges, and other public works of actual necessity, the first common conquest which must be achieved by the combined exertions of all over the wilderness--there is greater difficulty in determining whether or no these ought to be paid for out of the proceeds of land sales; and, if not, what other fund ought to be made available for the purpose.

As the fund to be raised must, in any case, be adequate to its object, it seems at first sight to make little or no difference to the general capital of the colony which mode is adopted. Either the price of land must be raised so high that a per-centage out of the whole land fund will suffice, year by year, for the construction of roads; or the purchasers must submit to raise the same sum by annual taxation; or a certain proportion must be paid out of the land fund, and the deficit supplied by a rate. In either of these cases the capital taken for the purpose is presumably capital which, if that purpose had been otherwise provided for, would have been profitably employed in other ways, and would have increased the annual income of the colony. Whether the purchaser pays 1*l.* an acre, to receive it all back in labour, and make his own roads, or 15*s.* to be received back in labour, and 5*s.* to have his roads made, the same drain appears to be made on the means of the capitalist. He gains as much by relief from the burden of making his road, as he loses by losing the benefit of 5*s.* worth of additional labour.

But this, the advocates of the South Australian system might say, is not exactly so. On the first supposition, twenty labourers are imported; on the latter, fifteen. In both cases the road has to be made: the owner is to pay for it in the first, the government in the second; but the road can only be constructed by labour. Say that two labourers are required for the purpose: in the first case, these will be selected out of twenty, in the latter, out

of fifteen; the same amount of capital being imported in both. Wages in the latter case will therefore be higher; the construction of the road will cost the government, and consequently the settler, more than in the former. And if, as they contend with reason to be the case, the entire application of the land fund to immigration will barely afford a sufficient supply of labour, any deduction from labour and addition to wages must be inconvenient to the colony.

It seems plain, therefore, that the colony would gain something if it were, at the earliest possible period, to submit to local taxation for the purpose of road-making, and set free a portion of the land fund for the purpose of purchasing more labour. Besides this, the former system seems to have other advantages, both political and economical.

The control of local assessments must of necessity (according to the British system of government) be vested more or less absolutely in municipal bodies. The control of funds drawn from the land revenue would probably be vested in the general government, to which the land revenue belongs. It is therefore the interest of the colonists, if they value self-government, to substitute the former for the latter as soon as practicable.

And, in the next place, the principle of local assessment seems to work more fairly. It is imposed, of course, according to the annual value of land; whereas the appropriation of a sum from the purchase-money would be a tax of so much per cent on the purchase of land; a purchase necessarily of a very speculative character—a transaction in which the value of the thing purchased might be far above, or far below, the money given for it. This would be the case even under the system of sale by auction: under that of uniform price the disparity would be enormous.

When all these considerations are weighed, you will probably incline to the opinion, that the best mode of providing for this class of expenses is by a local rate or assessment, levied according to the wants of each particular district, and by local municipal bodies wherever these exist; and that the application of the land fund to such purposes is a mere expedient, and ought to be carefully restricted to those limits within which it appears absolutely necessary, viz. the construction of the first lines of communication before the process of settlement has fully begun.

ou will
mode of
rate or
ch par-
herever
fund to
t to be
appears
the first
ttlement

APPENDIX TO LECTURE XVII.

I HAVE omitted from this lecture a series of details which have lost much of the interest which attached to them in 1840, when schemes of regulated colonization were rife. Public opinion has for so many years acquiesced in the conclusion that such matters are better left to the settlers themselves, that the best mode of raising funds for what I have termed the preparation of the land for settlement has ceased to be a matter of special interest at home. And no kind of principle has in general been observed by the colonial authorities. As to the methods of road-making in Canada, see note to Lecture XV. The simple but wasteful system of constructing public works by special votes of the legislature prevails pretty generally in British settlements. It would be scarcely within my present province to speak of the great loans recently effected by Canada and by Victoria for railway and similar purposes. These are the resources of advanced states, not of ordinary colonies. It is however a question of some interest, how far loans of this kind constitute a permanent burden on the resources of a young community in which there is as yet no great accumulation of capital. "If the capital taken in loans is abstracted from funds either engaged in production or destined to be employed in it, their diversion from that purpose is equivalent to taking the amount from the wages of the labouring classes." (I. S. Mill, *Principles of Political Economy*, book v. ch. 7.) There must therefore be a temporary loss, even though the loan be employed on an

ultimately reproductive object. But if the capital be abstracted from some fund not so engaged or destined, as, for instance, where it is advanced by foreign capitalists, this consequence cannot follow: the fund is so much added to the wealth of the colony: and the loss consists in the tribute paid hereafter to the foreigner by way of interest and redemption of principal. Now this last is the case of all colonial loans: the capital is advanced by foreigners, in the economical sense of the word, and diminishes in no appreciable degree the fund destined for the maintenance of labour. The injury which this kind of profusion may produce is by its ultimate effects on the solvency and commercial character of the community.

LECTURE XVIII.

POLICY OF COLONIAL GOVERNMENTS TOWARDS NATIVE TRIBES, AS REGARDS
THEIR PROTECTION AND THEIR CIVILIZATION.

I HAVE now to treat of a very important division of my subject, and one to which it is unfortunately impossible for me to devote an attention at all proportioned to its importance—for this could not be done without overstepping the limits I have imposed myself—I mean the duty and right policy of colonists and colonial government towards the native inhabitants of the regions which they occupy.

I shall not detain you over the wretched details of the ferocity and treachery which have marked the conduct of civilized men, too often of civilized governments, in their relations with savages, either in past times, or during the present age, rich almost beyond precedent in such enormities. They have been of late the subject of much attention, and of much indignant commentary. You may study them in the accounts of travellers and missionaries, in the reports of our own legislature, in the language of philanthropic orators and writers. You will there read of the barbarous and incessant warfare which has thinned the border tribes of South Africa; of the natives of Tasmania reduced to a few families by long maltreatment, and those few transported, six years ago, to a small island in the vicinity, almost as a measure of precaution, to save them from the settlers, who shot them down in the woods, or laid poisoned food within their reach; of the ancient race which inhabited Newfoundland

reduced to a single pair, man and woman, and those two shot by a British colonist in 1823; of the shores of New Zealand, infested by the outcasts of society, the very refuse of our refuse, escaped convicts and runaway sailors, exciting the savage passions of the natives against one another, and imparting every imaginable vice, in addition to their own; of the unequalled course of oppression pursued by American governments towards the defenceless tribes domiciled in their territory on the faith of treaties; of the numerous and gallant nations of the interior of North America actually perishing before our eyes. To dwell on all this would be a painful, and I am sure an unnecessary, task. The general features of the subject are by this time sufficiently known, and perhaps regarded with sufficient abhorrence: it remains for us now to act; and with a view to that purpose, it is perhaps desirable that we should cease to dwell so exclusively on the dark side of the picture, as many have hitherto done; still more, that we should not rest contented with vague and general desires of good, or imagine that the evil influences at work are to be counteracted by great undirected efforts — by proclaiming principles — by organizing societies — by pouring forth the lavish contributions of national generosity, without examining for ourselves the channels into which they are to flow. All this is little better than mere idle philanthropy; or, it should rather be said, than the mere fulfilment of certain ceremonies, by which the mind relieves itself of the sense of a debt. But the subject is one of which the consideration peculiarly requires practical and dispassionate views; while to act upon those views requires, in addition, patience under discouragement, contentment with small successes and imperfect agents, faith in sound principles, zeal without blindness, and firmness without obstinacy.

And, in truth, there is something extremely painful

in the reflection with which we are driven to conclude all our speculations on this subject — namely, that the evils with which we have to contend are such as no system, however wise and humane, can correct. Our errors are not of conception so much as of execution. Nothing is easier than to frame excellent theories, which, if they could be carried out, would go far towards removing the stigma under which we lie, and redressing the miseries which we have occasioned. But we cannot control the mischief which is going on at a far more rapid rate of progress than we dare expect for the results of our most practicable schemes of improvement. Of what use are laws and regulations, however Christian and reasonable the spirit in which they are framed, when the trader, the backwoodsman, the pirate, the bushranger, have been beforehand with our legislators, poisoning the savage with spirits, inoculating him with loathsome diseases, brutalizing his mind, and exciting his passions for the sake of gain? Desolation goes before us, and civilization lags slowly and lamely behind. We hand over to the care of the missionary and the magistrate, not the savage with his natural tendencies and capacities, and his ancestral habits, but a degraded, craving, timid, and artful creature, familiarized with the powers and the vices of the whites, rendered abject or sullen by ill-treatment, and with all his remaining faculties engrossed by the increasing difficulty of obtaining subsistence in his contracted hunting grounds. What success could the ablest and most zealous philanthropist promise himself out of such materials? And what must be *our* expectations, who have mainly to rely on agents necessarily removed from close control and responsibility, and often very imperfectly qualified for the work we have to undertake? All the anticipations of success which a reasonable man can frame to himself from schemes of reform and amelioration must necessarily be

subject to one reservation—namely, if they be not thwarted by the perverse wickedness of those outcasts of society whom the first waves of our colonization are sure to bring along with them. If their violence and avarice cannot be restrained by the arm of power—and it must be confessed that there appears scarcely any feasible mode of accomplishing this—it is impossible but that our progress in the occupation of barbarous countries must be attended with the infliction of infinite suffering. Nor is this state of things peculiar to our own times, though increased demoralization, as well as increased energy and activity in colonizing, may, of late, have rendered it more conspicuous than heretofore. The history of the European settlements in America, Africa, and Australia, presents everywhere the same general features—a wide and sweeping destruction of native races by the uncontrolled violence of individuals, if not of colonial authorities, followed by tardy attempts on the part of governments to repair the acknowledged crime.

If, therefore, the means on which I shall dwell in my present lectures be in truth inadequate to perform what they appear to promise, it must be remembered that their efficiency is necessarily cramped by the contrary tendencies of causes over which our policy has scarcely any control. But because they are but too imperfect, it does not follow that they must be altogether ineffective; and true political wisdom, on subjects such as these, consists in making the best of the instruments at our disposal, and assuming those results as within our reach towards which we feel that it is possible, at all events, to approximate.

And thus far, perhaps, we may be satisfied with the improved prospect of our relations with these much abused members of the human family, that there is now little fear of their being treated with injustice and oppression by the founders of colonies, armed with the

be not
outcasts
tion are
nce and
er—and
ely any
ible but
countries
uffering.
s, though
energy
ndered it
y of the
Australia,
—a wide
e uncon-
nial au-
part of

ll in my
rm what
ered that
contrary
scarcely
mperfect,
r ineffec-
as these,
ts at our
our reach
events, to

with the
se much
there is
stice and
with the

authority of governments. We have at all events outlived the days in which they were considered a lawful prey for the ferocity of the zealot, or the cupidity of the adventurer. We are removed alike from the age of the exterminating conquests of South America, and the plundering practices of Dutch and English settlers in a more recent time. Colonial officers no longer make, in their despatches, the simple avowal of rapacity in which the first Dutch governor of the Cape indulged, when he describes himself as looking from the mud walls of his fortress on the cattle of the natives, and wondering at the ways of Providence, which had bestowed such very fine gifts on the heathen. "If we had been allowed," he adds, in a subsequent paper, "we had opportunity too, "to deprive them of 10,000 head; which, however, if "we obtain orders to that effect, can be done at any "time; and even more conveniently, because they will "have greater confidence in us." Nor do we now hear such sentiments as those expressed by the colonists of Virginia, in a kind of manifesto published in the year 1622, in which they rejoice in some late warlike incursions of the Indians as a pretext for robbing and subjugating them. "Now their cleared grounds in all their "villages, which are situate in the fruitfulest places of "the land, shall be inhabited by us, whereas heretofore "the grubbing of woods was the greatest labour. The "way of conquering them is much more easy than that "of civilizing them by fair means; for they are a rude, "barbarous, and naked people, scattered in small com- "panies, which are helps to victory, but hindrances to "civility." *

Compare such language as this with that now commonly used by colonial authorities, and I think we shall not be guilty of presumption in congratulating ourselves

* Tracts relating to Virginia in the British Museum, quoted by Bannister, *British Colonization and Coloured Tribes*, p. 49.

on the change which a century or two have wrought in public opinion ; for though our practice may yet be far short of our principles, it is impossible but that the conduct of officers (I do not speak here of that of individuals) must be in a great measure regulated by their responsibility to it.

In preliminary dealings with savages, whose independence is recognized, common justice and Christian humanity will readily point out the leading rules to be observed ; the rest is far more matter of tact, prudence, and firmness in each separate emergency, than for previous deliberation. On this part of the subject therefore I will not touch, but take it up at what may be termed an advanced stage. When the colony is founded, and already extending itself over a considerable tract of territory, the period has arrived at which a more systematic course of proceeding becomes absolutely necessary.

The duties of the colonial government towards the natives comprised within the limits of the colony, then seem to arrange themselves under two heads—protection and civilization.

It is of course true, and must be stated in the outset, that any rules which can be laid down must vary in their application according to the different character, degree of civilization, and numerical force of the tribes with whom we have to deal in the wide circuit of our colonial enterprise. Of the races with which we have been brought in contact in our colonies, properly so called (those in which the soil is occupied by our settlers), perhaps the South Africans are, upon the whole, the most advanced in condition, as well as the most formidable in number and warlike character. “Although as yet uncivilized,” says Governor Wade of the Caffres, by no means a friendly witness, “they could not with truth be called a nation of savages.”* They are a pastoral people, rich in flocks

* Bannister, *British Colonization and Coloured Tribes*, p. 244.

and herds ; to whom the notion of property appears to be familiar ; subject to chiefs maintaining a greater state, and ruling larger bodies of men than the natives of our other settlements ; warlike and sanguinary, and rendered, unhappily, more so by the constant hostilities between them and our colonists, which appear to have been for many years encouraged by our authorities ; but evidently susceptible of much improvement. The North American Indians are well known to us by description ; the favourite study alike of philosophy and romance for these two centuries, their character is fixed in our minds as almost the type of that of man in a savage condition ; yet they have many peculiar features. They seem possessed of higher moral elevation than any other uncivilized race of mankind, with less natural readiness and ingenuity than some, but greater depth and force of character ; more native generosity of spirit, and manliness of disposition ; more of the religious element ; and yet, on the other hand, if not with less capacity for improvement, certainly less readiness to receive it ; a more thorough wildness of temperament ; less curiosity ; inferior excitability ; greater reluctance to associate with civilized men ; a more ungovernable impatience of control. And their primitive condition of hunters, and aversion from every other, greatly increases the difficulty of including them in the arrangements of a regular community. Of the South American Indian, our neighbour in Guiana, we know less ; but, by the best accounts, he seems to be a feebler likeness of his northern brother. The Polyne- sians, on the whole, appear to be a race of less concentrated energy, perhaps an inferior mental organization to the Americans ; but with greater gaiety, and greater docility of disposition ; even more superstitious, if possible, in exterior observance, yet with less intense consciousness of the reality of the invisible world ; cultivators of the soil, and living associated in more numerous communities, inviting instead of repelling the society of Europeans ;

altogether more promising subjects for experiment. Lastly, the poor Australians have usually been represented as the lowest of the human race in point of acquirement, of capacity, and even of physical organization. They have indeed all the appearance of a race depressed by constant want, or rather a constant struggle with an ungrateful nature for support; placed by Providence in a condition more approaching that of the animal, they exhibit less of sentiment and more of instinct, or rather animal habit, than any other people with whom we are acquainted: but that not only their capacity of improvement, but their actual attainments and mental condition, have been strangely underrated, some recent evidence plainly demonstrates.

1. For the protection of aborigines the first step necessary is, the appointment in every new colony of a department of the civil service for that especial purpose, with one or more officers exclusively devoted to it. The establishment of Protectors, or Commissaries of the Indians, has been long known in the old Spanish colonies. They are spoken of in Mexico by Humboldt as officers of high station and character; in Chili, by Captain Fitzroy, a late observer, as highly serviceable functionaries, to the effect of whose exertions he bears witness.*

It is singular that English colonies have been long without the advantage of a similar institution. I am not aware that it has ever been included in the original plan of a settlement, except in the two most recent foundations of South Australia and New Zealand. In Demerara such officers have been for some time established. In Canada there is a considerable and expensive Indian department, with superintendents, secretaries, and interpreters; but the mismanagement of

* Voyage of the Adventure and Beagle, p. 345.

the affairs of that colony, as regards the natives, seems to have rendered them of little service, except to superintend the mischievous practice of the annual delivery of presents.

That the protection of natives should in all cases be withdrawn altogether from the colonial legislature, and intrusted to the central executive, is a principle in which, I think, even the most jealous friends of colonial freedom must acquiesce. One of the most useful functions of a distant central authority—counterbalancing to a certain extent its disadvantages—is to arbitrate dispassionately between classes having so many mutual subjects of irritation.

I believe that the duties of these officers, as far as the protection of the natives is concerned, are confined in our colonies to those within the pale of the settlements; the conduct of treaties and trade with borderers belongs to another department. Perhaps such division is unnecessary. The good execution of such an office seems better attainable by accumulating, than dividing, responsibility. And any scheme appears too elaborate, which imports the machinery of mutual checks and supervision, necessary for the good conduct of routine administration, into an office which depends for its able execution far more on individual tact, zeal, courage, and humanity, than on the goodness of its systematic arrangement. A single individual, thoroughly qualified for the task, can accomplish more good among savages in a given time than the best code of regulations which ever was put upon paper.

The obvious duties of these officers, in the protection of the natives, are the detection and prosecution of offences against them: the regulation of contracts between them and the whites, particularly that of master and servant, which requires careful supervision: and here it may be observed that some have proposed fixed

laws on the subject, as, for example, that no such contract should in any case exceed half a year; all which appears much better left to the discretion of the protector, if he can be relied upon for the proper execution of his office. He should also, it has been proposed, be the *ex officio* defender of the natives, or appoint defenders for them, in all cases where complaints are preferred against them by whites. It has been suggested, in addition, that he should have the right of controlling the summary power which travellers, and others who employ natives for temporary purposes, seem often apt to assume, of inflicting corrections upon them.

And here the important question opens itself: how far, and in what mode, are natives, resident or found within the limits of an English colony, to be brought within the pale of English law? That all crimes committed against them should be tried by its provisions, and that all the protection which it extends to the life and property of Englishmen should be also extended to theirs, is admitted on all hands, shamefully as the principle has been neglected in former times by colonial governments. But are the savages themselves to be considered amenable to British criminal justice, conducted according to forms of British law, for acts committed by them against the colonists? "Whenever it may be necessary to bring any native to justice," says Lord Glenelg, in a dispatch to Sir J. Stirling, "every form should be observed which would be considered necessary in the case of a white person." It is easy to understand the benevolent feeling which suggested this direction: namely, that such forms should be interposed as a shield between the savage and the summary justice which an injured colonist would be likely to exercise towards him. But how far is the principle to be carried? Are "ignorant savages to be made

such con-
all which
of the pro-
execution
proposed, be
appoint de-
plaints are
been sug-
ne right of
tellers, and
purposes,
ctions upon

itself: how
or found
be brought
crimes com-
provisions,
to the life
extended to
s the prin-
by colonial
lves to be
justice, con-
acts com-
Whenever it
justice," says
ng, "every
considered
It is easy
suggested
ould be in-
the sum-
d be likely
e principle
be made

"amenable to a code of which they are absolutely
"ignorant; and the whole spirit and principles of which
"are foreign to their mode of thought and action?"
Are they to be punished, in short, with all the forms
of justice, for actions to which they cannot themselves
by possibility attach the notion of crime? Whatever
temporary expediency may suggest, the moral feeling
on which all criminal codes must rest for sanction
cannot but receive some shock by the straining of their
enactments to comprehend persons as incapable of in-
curring voluntary guilt against them as the lunatic or
idiot, who are in all societies exempted from their
infliction.*

* (1861.) One of the most unfortunate instances of the misapplication
of notions founded on English law to the case of savages has been,
in my belief, the system adopted in New Zealand as to the so-called
"tribal ownership" of land by the natives. The New Zealand tribes
had as between themselves some recognized rights over the soil. One
tribe respected the boundary of another, unless in cases of disputed
right. Each tribe cultivated patches of land occasionally, moving from
one to the other, within its own district, but regular occupation there
was none. This title the British Government thought fit to erect
into the absolute right of an owner to the soil, according to strict
European usage. By the "Treaty of Waitangi," the crown gua-
ranteed "to the chiefs and tribes of New Zealand, and to the families
"and individuals thereof, the full, exclusive, and undisturbed possession
"of their lands *and estates*." They yielding to the crown "the
"exclusive right of preemption over such lands as the *proprietors*
"thereof may wish to *alienate*." Thus, by a few words of con-
veyancing language, the "tribes" in their collective character were
recognized as the private landowners of the whole of a great island,
into which at the same time European settlers were poured by
thousands. Lord Grey indeed contended, on very strong grounds
of abstract reason, and in conformity with the general understanding
of nations, "that the savage inhabitants of New Zealand have no
"right of *property* in land which they do not occupy, and which
"has remained unsubdued for the purposes of man." But this
assertion of general principle came too late to be of much practical use,
after the treaty of Waitangi. And the friends of the Aborigines
in New Zealand and in England, in what I must deem mistaken

So long as the natives remain in their uninstructed state, the first purpose for which they are to be brought within the pale of criminal justice is that of deterring them from attacks on the persons and property of colonists. Until this is done, other considerations are premature. And perhaps this result would be better attained by placing them, in the first instance, under a species of martial or summary law, to be administered by the chief police functionaries; with opportunity for defence, or for application in mitigation of punishment, in serious cases, by the protector and his agents. Such a scheme, besides avoiding the extreme inconvenience and striking absurdity of formal process in such affairs, would have the additional advantage of removing the white settlers themselves from any share in judicial proceedings against the natives, with whom they have already too many causes of collision; which with a jury system is inevitable. And it would have this further

zeal, insisted on the literal execution of that treaty, not simply as a treaty, but as in itself founded on correct principles. They stood up for native rights, forgetting that when a right is established, without at the same time establishing the corresponding power to maintain it, evil instead of good is done to the protected party. If the doctrine that the natives were absolute owners of the soil, and not compellable to part with it, was to be maintained, British settlers should have been excluded and the Northern island maintained as a native preserve. The doctrine, and the practice, were incompatible. To induce the natives to part with their land has required a constant exercise of diplomacy and cajolery, and sometimes, doubtless, of fraud; while on their part, the caprice of uncultivated minds, or mistaken notions of self-interest, or the evil counsels of others, have constantly interfered to make them retain land urgently wanted; and the disputes of the tribes themselves about a "right," artificially rendered so valuable, have led to bloody feuds, and at last to a disastrous war, which nothing but singularly temperate management could have averted so long. Had the New Zealanders, from the beginning, been treated as clients for whom the British government was authorised to act — no fancied "right" of ownership acknowledged, but fair compensation always made them whenever land, over which a tribe was accustomed to range, was taken for the use of settlers — it is probable enough, not only that these evils might have been averted, but that a noble race, now hastening apparently to decay, might have been preserved to Christianity and civilization.

ucted state,
ught within
them from
Until this
And perhaps
ng them, in
or summary
unctionaries ;
n in mitiga-
rotector and
the extreme
l process in
ntage of re-
ny share in
whom they
which with a
this further

ot simply as a
They stood up
hed, without at
maintain it, evil
pctrine that the
pellable to part
have been ex-
preserve. The
duce the natives
se of diplomacy
e on their part,
of self-interest,
to make them
ibes themselves
led to bloody
but singularly
Had the New
for whom the
ight" of owner-
them whenever
s taken for the
ese evils might
g apparently to
vilization.

advantage,—that it would leave an opportunity for the admission of the native to full civil rights at a future period, when converted and instructed, and able to satisfy some sufficient test of his fitness for full participation in the rights and duties of civil society. Of the nature of the punishments to be inflicted, the colonial government must probably judge. It has been recommended that in no case should death or corporal punishment be inflicted on a native ; but merely confinement in prisons and penitentiaries. I doubt the practicability of this humane suggestion. Although, in most of the regions in which we are brought into contact with savage races, it does appear that the settlers are very rarely exposed to acts of violence from the savages, unless they have themselves given the first provocation, yet it must be remembered that all savages are habitually pilferers ; that the difficulty of securing movable property and stock against their depredations is one of the greatest with which colonists in exposed situations have to contend ; and that a mode of punishment so expensive and inconvenient may not always be found adequate for the exigencies of the moment. But with respect to death, one thing appears plain ; that if it must be inflicted at all, it should be confined, as far as possible, to cases in which it may follow immediately upon the act as a consequence ; as when the murderer is taken in the manner—that it may strike terror as a retribution, not appear as an act of deliberate justice ; a view of capital punishment which no uncivilized mind can possibly entertain.

But a more important question remains :—how far ought the natives to be brought at once within the jurisdiction of English criminal law, in respect of their conduct towards one another ?

Upon this subject I shall take the liberty of transcribing the words of an observer, who has studied with no common diligence and success the characteristics of the

natives of the regions visited by him. What he says is intended to have application to the case of the Australian aborigines, but it will be seen at once that it bears equally on other instances.

He observes, that the principle which has hitherto regulated us in our dealings with native races has generally been the following :—that, although the natives should, as far as the persons and property of Europeans were concerned, be made amenable to British laws, yet, so long as they only exercised their own customs among themselves, and not too immediately in the presence of Europeans, they should be allowed to do so with impunity.

“This principle,” he goes on to say, “originated in “philanthropic notions, in total ignorance of the peculiar “traditional laws of this people. . . . They are as “apt and intelligent as any other race of men I am acquainted with : they are subject to like affections, passions, and appetites as other men ; yet in many points “of character they are apparently totally dissimilar to “them ; and, from the peculiar code of laws of this people, “it would appear not only impossible that any nation subject to them could ever emerge from the savage state, “but that even no race, however highly endowed, however “civilized, could remain long in a state of civilization, if “submitted to the operation of such barbarous customs.” This is very nearly equally true of the New Zealanders, and, to a great extent, of the American Indians.

“The plea generally set up in defence of this principle “is, that the natives of this country are a conquered “people, and that it is an act of generosity to allow them “the full power of exercising their own laws upon themselves. But this plea would appear to be inadmissible : “for, in the first place, savage and traditional customs “should not be confounded with a regular code of “laws ; and, secondly, when Great Britain ensures to a “conquered country the privilege of preserving its own

that he says is
the Australian
bears equally

thereto regu-
as generally
tives should,
Europeans were
yet, so long
among them-
ence of Euro-
impunity.

originated in
the peculiar
They are as
when I am ac-
fections, pas-
many points
dissimilar to
of this people,
y nation sub-
savage state,
ved, however
civilization, if
ous customs."
y Zealanders,
ans.

this principle
a conquered
to allow them
upon them-
inadmissible:
onal customs
ular code of
ensures to a
ving its own

"laws, all persons residing in this territory become
"amenable to those laws, and proper persons are selected
"by the government to watch over their due and equit-
"able administration. Nothing of this kind either exists,
"or can exist, with regard to the customs of the natives.
"Between these two cases, then, no analogy is apparent.

"I would submit, therefore, that it is necessary, from
"the moment the aborigines of this country are declared
"British subjects, that they should, as far as possible, be
"taught that the British laws are to supersede their own ;
"so that any native who is suffering under their own cus-
"toms may have the power of an appeal to the laws of
"Great Britain ; or, to put this in its true light, that all
"authorised persons should, in all instances, be required
"to protect a native from the violence of his fellows, even
"though they be in the execution of their own laws.

"So long as this is not the case, the older natives have
"at their disposal the means of effectually preventing the
"civilization of any individual of their own tribe ; and
"those amongst them who may be inclined to adapt
"themselves to the habits and mode of life of Europeans
"will be deterred from so doing by their fear of the
"consequences that the displeasure of others may draw
"down upon them.

"So much importance am I disposed to attach to this
"point, that I do not hesitate to assert my full convic-
"tion, that whilst those tribes that are in communication
"with Europeans are allowed to execute their barbarous
"laws and customs upon one another, so long will they
"remain hopelessly immured in their present state : and
"however unjust such a proceeding might at first sight
"appear, I believe that the course pointed out by true
"humanity would be to make them, from the commence-
"ment, amenable to the British laws, both as regards
"themselves and Europeans : for I hold it to involve a
"contradiction, to suppose that individuals subject to

“savage and barbarous laws can rise to a state of civilization, which their laws have a manifest tendency to destroy and overturn.” *

This is a passage which opens a wide field for speculation to the inquirer. The reasons which Captain Grey gives for at once suppressing by law injurious customs, instead of waiting for the operation of conversion, or of European example, undoubtedly appear very strong. But it may be easy to apply a rule to so ignorant and defenceless a race as the aborigines of Australia, which would be very partially practicable in the case of more numerous and powerful communities. If however his principle be correct, it will scarcely suffice to extend it to such customs as Lord John Russell designates as “violations of the eternal and universal laws of morality,” such as cannibalism, human sacrifice, and infanticide.† It will be necessary to apply it also, with discretion, to customs less horrible, yet, from the greater frequency of their operation, perhaps still more injurious and incompatible with civilization : such as the violent abuse of the authority of husbands over wives, and barbarous ill-usage of the weaker sex in general ; and some of the features of slavery among the New Zealanders, if not the practice itself. It will be necessary, in short, that the colonial authorities should act upon the assumption that they have the right,

* Captain (now Sir George) Grey's suggestions with reference to the practicability of improving the moral and social condition of the aboriginal inhabitants of Australia. (From the South Australian Record of Nov. 7, 1840. Printed also in the Parliamentary Papers concerning New Zealand, 1841 ; and in the journal of the Captain's travels.)

† Instructions to Governor Hobson, Dec. 9, 1840. His lordship distinguishes three classes of native customs : — 1. those here alluded to, which must be suppressed ; 2. other customs, pernicious in themselves, but of which the abolition is best attainable by example and gradual enlightenment ; 3. such as are rather absurd and impolitic than directly injurious. — *Papers relating to New Zealand*, 1841, No. 17.

of civili-
endency to

for specu-
Captain Grey
s customs,
sion, or of
ry strong.
norant and
alia, which
se of more
however his
to extend
signates as
f morality,"
icide.† It
ion, to cus-
ncy of their
incompatible
e authority
age of the
s of slavery
e itself. It
authorities
e the right,

ference to the
n of the abori-
lian Record of
ers concerning
travels.)

His lordship
e here alluded
cious in them-
e by example
surd and im-
New Zealand,

in virtue of the relative position of civilized and Christian men to savages, to enforce abstinence from immoral and degrading practices, to compel outward conformity to the law of what we regard as better instructed reason. But to particularize instances would lead us far astray from our main purpose.

The duties of the protectors ought, as has been said, to extend also to the regulation of civil contracts between natives and settlers. In none of our colonies has the Spanish system of placing the former in a state of legal minority been regularly adopted. It certainly seems, upon the whole, the best adapted to the necessities of a young settlement, whether it was right or not to continue it in communities so far advanced as those of Mexico and Peru before their revolutions, may be more questionable. The contract of master and servant is one peculiarly requiring this sort of interference. Some have proposed a general law for limiting such contracts in various particulars; for example, as to their duration. But the expediency of such anticipative regulations is very doubtful; practical experience is necessary to ascertain what terms are fair and beneficial in different countries, and different employments. This subject should be left to the discretion of the protector; and, notwithstanding the temporary inconvenience to the parties, all such contracts should be subject to the approval of him or his agents, at least during the first years of the experiment, until the state of society in the colony is mature for general legislation. Otherwise, there is a constant danger, either of the reduction of the native to actual slavery, or of the uncertain, and therefore mischievous interference of the authorities to prevent hardship in particular cases.

I leave undiscussed, from regard to the very narrow limits within which I am forced to compress my observations, some other important duties of the protector's

office; for example, that of regulating the exchanges between settlers and natives, and that of preventing, as far as possible, the supply of the latter with ardent spirits. This is an offence by the laws both of the United States and Canada: and in the former country, some boast is made of the efficacy of the Indian agents established on the frontiers, in enforcing the prohibition. Unfortunately, all that government can do in repressing this and other offences against the unhappy savage is the merest trifle when opposed to the enormous power for evil of the lawless aliens from all communities who roam the American deserts and the Pacific Ocean, the successors of the Paulistas and Buccaneers of past centuries. With respect to the latter class of adventurers, it has been proposed of late that certain powers should be given to her Majesty's cruisers in the Pacific, so as to constitute a sort of locomotive tribunal, to take cognizance of offences committed by British subjects against natives on the high seas and in the islands. Whatever may be the practicability of this scheme, the atrocities of these brigands have had at least one good effect, namely, by forcing on the colonization of New Zealand; an enterprise in which this university—removed as her homely avocations usually are from these distant adventures—may be said to have had her peculiar share, one of its most distinguished patrons being a high officer of our own, and some of its most zealous promoters among the most eminent sons of Oxford.

I pass from this subject, very imperfectly treated, to one of greater interest, and more permanent importance; the duty and office of colonial governments in regard to the civilization of aborigines.

And first, it is necessary to consider in what physical circumstances these are placed by the progress of new settlements. Unfortunately, the early colonists of North America were not compelled, by the force of events, to

e exchanges
reventing, as
rdent spirits.
United States
me boast is
tablished on
nfortunately,
s and other
merest trifle
evil of the
m the Ame-
ssors of the
With respect
proposed of
er Majesty's
ort of loco-
s committed
gh seas and
eticability of
have had at
the coloni-
which this
ions usually
said to have
istinguished
some of its
ent sons of
eated, to one
importance;
n regard to
hat physical
s of new set-
ts of North
f events, to

take this subject into their consideration. And hence, we have no course of precedent to direct us: no plan has been matured, no principles aimed at, in the long course of our colonial experience: our measures, when at last we have been obliged to act, have been irregular and arbitrary, and merely adapted to the wants of the moment. Those early colonists only occupied, little by little, the fringe of a vast region, inhabited by savages. Those whom they encountered defended, for a time, their hunting-grounds and their villages; but, when expelled by superior force, they merely retreated farther into the wilderness. It was not until centuries had passed that it was discovered that, wide as the habitable part of that region was, and reduced as its population had been, almost equally, by war and peace with the invaders, its space was yearly becoming too narrow even for those diminished numbers. At last it failed to contain them. The vast surface of the Prairies was unable to receive the retreating myriads who had been expelled from the Forest. Then the reflux took place. Thinned, dispirited, degraded, the remnants of powerful tribes returned eastwards towards their former seats; and either threw themselves on the mercy of governments, or attracted attention to their wants by becoming dangerous neighbours on the skirts of the settled country. Then, and rarely till then, reserves of lands were allotted them, in various parts, both of the States and of Canada; and endeavours were made to Christianize and civilize them. Up to that time, the notion of assigning to them a property in a part of the soil they once occupied seems to have been hardly entertained. Even Penn did not fully admit it into his scheme: he gave the natives free leave to settle in certain parts of his territory; but he did not set aside any definite tract of the soil as their property, which should rise in value along with other tracts, and thus afford a stimulus to their gradual

improvement which is the common definition of a "native reserve." (I may observe in passing, that it was the want of systematic views in this and other respects which rendered the benevolent intentions of Penn towards the natives of little ultimate avail; so that, after all, the chief good which he effected was by setting an example of benevolence and justice in the principle of his dealings with them.)

In this manner, the Cherokees, Choctaws, and Creeks were settled by the United States on lands within the states of Georgia and Alabama; the remnant of the Delawares, of the Six Nations, and other tribes famous in early colonial history, in New York, Ohio, and elsewhere: and a similar policy has been adopted by ourselves in the case of another part of the Six Nations, the Mohawks, and Chippeways, in Upper Canada; the Algonquins and Nipissings, placed in the same country in 1763*; the natives of Cape Breton; and in many other instances. This course (namely that of forming "reserves" at a late period) has the evident disadvantage of fixing a body of people, generally harassed by defeats and wanderings, and in a condition most unfavourable to speedy improvement, in the midst of a country in process of rapid settlement. The establishments of the white soon press on the limits of the Indian ground; generally long before the Indians, kept, by the policy hitherto observed by American governments, in a state of insulation from the whites, have learnt

* The treaty by which this was effected is a remarkable instance of the mischievous manner in which even the best intentions towards the Indians have been carried into execution. After declaring in the most solemn language the perpetuity of the cession of the lands, it ends with the saving clause, "unless the Indians shall be inclined to part with them." By virtue of this proviso, every art has been introduced to obtain their consent to the usurpations made upon them: bit by bit they have been deprived of their magnificent hunting-grounds, which are now altogether possessed by whites. — *Returns from Canada*, 1839, p. 66.

to improve it. Tracts of half desert territory are thus interposed in the middle of cultivation.

This is a real inconvenience to the district; and it is always much exaggerated by the cupidity of the whites. Then disputes and animosities are engendered; these are stimulated by the land-jobbing class of the community, eager to seize on any pretext for encroachment; until, at last, the government is half driven by the influence of a rapacious party, half induced by the hope of protecting the unfortunate natives from insult and outrage, to remove them once more into some distant territory. In other cases this becomes a matter of necessity. The game in the Indian reserves is destroyed by the progress of cultivation around them; and, where they have made no advance at all in agriculture, they must be removed to save them from starvation.* Instances of both kinds will be found in the too notorious history of the recent proceedings of the United States government. All the tribes above enumerated, and many which I have not mentioned, have within these few years been removed afresh to the vast prairies which constitute the western border of the present states: some of them merely consisting of a few wretched families, whose miserable existence might possibly be prolonged by the change; others numerous and powerful, and which, as I shall by and by have occasion to show, had made a progress in improvement, which some philosophical sceptics, and numbers of those logicians whose axioms are founded on a desire to justify injustice, had chosen to pronounce beyond the capacities of their race.

The original error here mentioned, that of leaving the natives wholly unprovided for, is one not likely to occur in modern colonization. We have been so far taught by the experience of our predecessors, and, I may add, sentiments of humanity and justice have so far gained ground

* Quart. Review, vol. lxxv.

among us, that in recent settlements reserves of land have been invariably made *at once*, and appropriated to the natives. But it is plain that the evil day is only postponed by such measures as these, unless they are combined with a fore-seeing and far-reaching policy hitherto altogether unknown. For whether or not the natives, residing on these reserves attain in their insulated condition to a certain degree of civilization, the same result will inevitably follow. After a time, the colonists will cast an eye of cupidity on the native lands; they will complain, and with perfect truth, of the economical disadvantages which attend the interposition of large uncultivated or half cultivated tracts between populous districts; of their own sufferings by the proximity of the natives; of the political mischiefs produced by these little inert republics, stagnant in the very centre of a rapidly-moving society. And government will find itself, as it always has been, unable to resist these importunities, and cajoled by the thousand plausibilities advanced in favour of removing these unfortunates a farther stage into the wilderness*; it will comply with the exigencies of the times, and the natives will be transported to some other region, to be followed there again with sure and rapid steps by the encroaching mass of European population.

Removal is therefore, inevitably, only a temporary re-

* Such, for instance, as the representation always industriously put forward on these occasions, that the natives themselves are anxious for the change — as if the assent of the poor harassed victims justified the act of the oppressors — the assent of a minor the act of his guardian. Sir F. Head seems to attribute any desire expressed by the Canadian Indians to retain their reserves rather to the persuasion of interested Europeans than to any feelings of their own. He considers the statement of some Wesleyan missionaries, that the Indians in their neighbourhood were anxious to get title deeds, as a palpable trick, to get a control over the lands for themselves; and ridicules the notion in his own peculiar vein. “The Methodist ministers might as well declare, “that when wild beasts roar at each other, it is to complain of the want “among them of marriage licenses.”—*Returns from Canada*, 1839, p. 150.

of land have
ated to the
y postponed
bined with
altogether
residing on
on to a cer-
l inevitably
an eye of
n, and with
which attend
f cultivated
n sufferings
al mischiefs
t in the very
ernment will
resist these
plausibilities
nates a far-
ly with the
transported
in with sure
of European

emporary re-
dustriously put
re anxious for
ns justified the
his guardian.
y the Canadian
n of interested
ders the state-
in their neigh-
trick, to get a
e notion in his
as well declare,
ain of the want
z, 1839, p. 150.

medy for permanent evils, and must be continually repeated; but, besides this, nothing is more destructive of those first elements of civilization, which may have been implanted at the expense of time and toil. The proofs of this truth are almost too obvious to need any statement. In the first place, the loss of capital and of comfort entailed on the removed is very great. Next, a tribe, become agricultural, is thus placed in a country far more abounding in game than its former seats, and exposed to the strongest temptation to relapse into the hunting condition. Again, the price of those articles which have become necessary or convenient to them, especially those which are useful in their acquired habits of industry, is higher the farther they are removed from the civilized frontier; so that here, again, a temptation is held out to be content with inferior substitutes, and to unlearn one by one the habits and the arts which they had acquired. It is precisely as if a savage had been nurtured in European habits and costume until his own were forgotten, and then turned naked into the wilderness, and told to thrive as he did before. And, as the last and greatest of all these causes of degeneracy, we must not fail to estimate the insecurity, the despair of permanence, the conviction of approaching annihilation, which are inevitably engendered in their minds, and drive back into sullen apathy spirits in which the Promethean spark of enterprise had been for a moment elicited.

One only way suggests itself by which this fatal consummation can be avoided; and, in order to consider it, we must look steadfastly at the broad outlines of the question, What is the ultimate destiny of the races whose interests we are now discovering?

There are only three alternatives which imagination itself can suggest:—

The extermination of native races.

Their civilization, complete or partial, by retaining them

as insulated bodies of men, carefully removed, during the civilizing process, from the injury of European contact.

Their amalgamation with the colonists.

Those who hold the opinion that the first is inevitable, are happily relieved from the trouble of all these considerations. Their only object must be to insure that the inevitable end be not precipitated by cruelty or injustice.

The second alternative I cannot but believe to be impossible. Reason seems to demonstrate this, and experience abundantly confirms her conclusions. If it be possible to civilize the savage at all, in a state of insulation from Europeans, except his own instructors (which, after the ill success of the Spanish and Portuguese experiments, may be regarded as very doubtful), it must, at all events, be a slow, uncertain process, liable to be interrupted at any moment, and only to be carried on under the defence of laws hedging them in from all foreign intercourse with a strictness impracticable in the present state of the world. The savage thus educated may be morally a more innocent creature, but, intellectually, he must be feeble and dependent, and quite unable to resist extrinsic influence, when brought to bear upon him. And (which is of still greater consequence, and is the peculiar cause that renders such projects certain of failure) long before the seeds of civilization have made any effectual shoot, the little nursery is surrounded by the advance of the European population; the demand for the land of the natives becomes urgent and irresistible, and pupils and instructors are driven out into the wilderness to commence their work again.

There remains only the third alternative, that of amalgamation; and this I am most anxious to impress upon your minds, because I firmly believe it to be the very keystone, the leading principle, of all sound theory on the subject—that native races must in every instance either perish, or be amalgamated with the general population of their country.

during the contact.

inevitable, these considerations that the or injustice. o be impossible experience possible to ation from n, after the ments, may vents, be a ted at any defence of urse with a f the world. ore innocent and dependence, when still greater enders such eds of civil e nursery is population ; mes urgent driven out gain.

at of amalgam-press upon he very key-ory on the tance either opulation of

By amalgamation, I mean the union of natives with settlers in the same community, as master and servant*, as fellow-labourers, as fellow-citizens, and, if possible, as connected by intermarriage. And I mean by it, not that eventual and distant process to which some appear to look, by which a native community, when educated and civilized, is to be, at some future period, admitted *en masse* to the full rights of citizenship ; but I mean an immediate and an individual process—immediate, if not in act, at least in contemplation. To answer the view which I am anxious to lay before you, each native must be regarded as potentially a citizen, to become such in all respects as soon as possible. To this end, every step in his instruction and management must conduce. It must be the object in framing every law, in making every provision for his support. Nay, the first steps of the actual operation should rather be accelerated than retarded. I mean that, although prudence must be the guide in all cases, it must be a fixed principle, that less evil is likely to be done by over haste than by over delay

These views must undoubtedly appear somewhat wild and chimerical. Be it so. I will endeavour presently to develop them a little more fully : at present I am chiefly anxious to point out to you, that, however improbable the success of any particular project of amalgamation may seem, amalgamation, by some means or other, is the only possible Euthanasia of savage communities. And

* (1861.) This last kind of connection (of master and servant) has been carried out with more success in South Africa than in any other British possession. In Natal, and on the eastern frontier of the Cape Colony (especially since the strange collapse of the Caffre power, under the influence of scarcity and superstition in 1857-8), great numbers of natives appear to have taken voluntary service under the settlers, and to have performed it with reasonable steadiness. It is true that the experiment was superintended by one of those men who seem to possess the rare faculty of entering into the savage mind and becoming themselves intelligible to it, the governor, Sir George Grey.

one negative lesson even the most cautious may draw from this plain truth, namely, that all endeavours to civilize the savage, in which this end is not kept in view, are useless, or worse than useless, and must end in disappointment, as they ever hitherto have ended. And we have this advantage at least, that we are on untrodden ground. The experiment of amalgamation, or even of taking means tending to this as their ultimate result, cannot be said to have been hitherto tried in earnest by any government.

may draw
efforts to
be kept in view,
and in dis-
cussion. And we
have introduced
or even of
a late result,
earnest by

APPENDIX TO LECTURE XVIII.

(1861.) WHATEVER may be the value of the various maxims and suggestions for the guidance of colonial governments in dealing with natives, which were collected from various quarters in these lectures, they have ceased, for the most part, to have much practical interest for ourselves. The emancipation, for all purposes of domestic government, of our larger colonies, has transferred from us to the colonists the responsibility of dealing with those remnants of savage races which still exist within their borders. No great change in their condition has followed this transfer of power. It cannot be said, so far as I have learnt, that the aborigines of North America or of Australia are dealt with either better or worse by their present managers than by those who were heretofore specially commissioned from home for the purpose. There is the same contrast as of old between good intentions and very ineffective performance. But, on the whole, these feeble survivors of an obsolete world seem to be passing on, with at least a fair protection from injustice and oppression, towards that extinction which we have become accustomed to regard as the melancholy termination of the prospect.

But the general problem of the best means of dealing with what we usually call "inferior" not merely "savage," races, in subjugated dependencies, has lost no part of its importance. On the contrary, the questions which it raises are become far more urgent and engrossing than ever, as European empire, and ours in particular, extends over the older regions of the world. These do not however properly belong to the theory or practice of colonization. In

populous and semi-civilized regions, the European appears as a conqueror and a master, rarely in our times as a colonist: and the relations between him and the native inhabitants form a subject very nearly allied indeed to those considered in these pages, but too extensive to be included within them.

There are, however, still certain portions of our colonial empire in which the Europeans are still placed in circumstances analogous to that of the first settlers of America: in contact with numerous and powerful tribes of uncivilized men,—imperfectly subjugated, or not at all,—sufficiently intelligent to be at once dangerous in warfare, and capable more or less of friendship and of improvement. Such are* South Africa, New Zealand; and (looking into the near future) such will apparently be our new plantations on the north-west coast of America.

To the partizans of extreme views of colonial independence, cases such as these present no difficulty: none, that is, with which the mother country need in any way concern herself. Upon their principles, the management of the relations between themselves and the natives should be left entirely to the colonists. Their own interest, it is contended, will ensure in ordinary times forbearance and good faith towards their neighbours, until at least the increase of the European element render these no longer formidable; after which, the latter will disappear before advancing civilization, as they always have done. When hostilities are inevitable, the same sense of self-interest will induce the settlers to bring them to the speediest, and therefore most merciful termination; while their superior knowledge of the country, and of the method of native warfare, to any which regular troops can possess, will afford them great ad-

* It is an unusual instance of the fitness of the man for the post, that both these dependencies have been governed, in succession, by the man of our times who has displayed the most special talent for the purpose.

can appears
times as a
the native
indeed to
ensive to be

our colonial
ced in cir-
ers of Ame-
ful tribes of
not at all,—
s in warfare,
of improve-
; and (look-
be our new
ea.

colonial inde-
culty : none,
in any way
management
the natives
Their own
linary times
neighbours,
ement render
e latter will
they always
le, the same
o bring them
ful termina-
the country,
any which
m great ad-

or the post, that
ion, by the man
or the purpose.

vantages for doing so. Those who hold these opinions point out with perfect truth that they prevailed without dispute in the old colonizing times, and that the idea of sending soldiers from home to America to protect colonists against Indians, or Indians against colonists, would have been deemed equally preposterous by the English statesman and by the American provincial. And they bid us contrast with this example the wretched instances of Caffre wars and New Zealand wars, with which the present generation has become familiar. They dwell on the exorbitant expense which the system of Imperial defence against natives devolves on this country : it having been shown in a former part of this work that South Africa alone inflicts upon us two-fifths of our whole colonial military expenditure. And they insist that this expenditure is in itself a cause of greater and permanent expenditure ; that it gives the colonists an interest in exciting and maintaining native wars ; inasmuch as the gain to the general community by a large military expenditure far exceeds the sufferings which the war itself may inflict on a few borderers.

Not only are these arguments of great weight, but it is very difficult on solid principle to combat them. They must not, however, be received without duly weighing certain opposite considerations.

In the first place, when we dwell on the success with which our early American settlers subdued and harassed the Indians without any expense to the mother country, we must not forget that this very circumstance of being left wholly to their own exertions cramped their development, and rendered their economical progress extremely slow. The advance of a New England settlement thus left to itself was a snail's pace indeed, compared with that of a modern New Zealand settlement, where the European population are encouraged, and the natives in general controlled, by the presence of a regular force. Nor is the

comparison an unfair one ; for the physical circumstances of the two regions are reasonably similar, while the distance of New Zealand from England now may be supposed equal, practically, to that of New England two centuries ago. It is, indeed, hardly easy in our days to realize the life of terror and watchfulness led by the pioneers of our American enterprise for some generations, while the slowly receding forest around them was the abode of watchful and implacable foes,

“ With dreadful faces thronged, and fiery arms.”

Nor was the evil confined to discouragement. The incessant labour and vigilance imposed on the militiaman interferes most materially with his value as a producer of wealth. “ While so large a proportion of the able-bodied men were in the field,” says Mr. Palfrey in his account* of one of the early Indian wars, “ production “ was stinted on the one hand, and debt incurred on the “ other.” The population of New England increased only to 24,000 souls in the first twenty-three years of settlement.† New Zealand has already 60,000 after fifteen. And the same cause—the unspeakable terror of Indian warfare—continued to hang over the exposed parts of the border, and prevent the expansion of the reclaimed region, even after the American colonies counted their numbers by a million. Governor Pownall, just a hundred years ago, wrote on this subject as follows‡:—“ The perpetual increasing generations of Europeans in America may supply “ numbers that must, in the end, wear out these poor “ Indian inhabitants from their own country: but we shall “ pay dear, both in blood and treasure, in the meantime, “ for our horrid injustice. Our frontiers, from the “ nature of advancing settlements, dispersed along the

* Hist. of New England, vol. i. p. 471.

† Ib. vol. ii. p. 5.

‡ Administration of the Colonies. Third Edition, 1766, p. 163.

circumstances
while the dis-
be supposed
two centuries
to realize the
pioneers of
ns, while the
he abode of

ms."

ent. The in-
the militiaman
s a producer
of the able-
Palfrey in his
"production
curred on the
increased only
ears of settle-
after fifteen.
ror of Indian
ed parts of the
aimed region,
ir numbers by
ed years ago,
perpetual in-
ca may supply
ut these poor
: but we shall
the meantime,
rs, from the
ed along the

p. vol. ii. p. 5.
1766, p. 163.

"branchings of the upper parts of our rivers, and
"scattered in the disunited valleys amidst the mountains,
"must be always unguarded and defenceless against the
"incursions of Indians. And were we able, under an
"Indian war, to advance our settlements yet farther, they
"would be advanced up to the very dens of these savages.
"A settler wholly intent on labouring the soil cannot stand
"to his arms, nor defend himself against nor seek his enemy.
"Environed with woods and swamps, he knows nothing
"of the country beyond his farm. The Indian knows
"every spot, for ambush and defence. The farmer, driven
"from his little cultured cot into the woods, is lost: the
"Indian in the wood is everywhere at home; every bush,
"every thicket, is a camp to the Indian, from whence, at
"the very moment when he is sure of his blow, he can
"rush upon his prey. The farmer's cow, or his horse,
"cannot go into the wood, where alone they must subsist:
"his wife and children, if they shut themselves up in their
"wretched log-house, will be burned in it: and the hus-
"bandman in the field will be shot down while his hand
"holds the plough. An European settler can make but
"momentary efforts of war, in hope to gain some point,
"that he may by it obtain a sense of security, under which
"to work his land in peace; the Indian's whole life is a
"warfare, and his operations never discontinue."

It is well to bear in mind pictures so obviously life-like
as this, of a state of society to which a counterpart may
still be found in some of the distant frontiers of the United
States, Mexico, and the South American Republics, before
the costliness of the modern English system is too un-
hesitatingly condemned. In the British colonies we have
named, the red coat is the great preserver of order; and
it is difficult to overestimate the advantages of that order.
Frontier wars occasionally occur; there is, indeed, as has
been already shown, a somewhat special temptation to them.
But such a horrid state of insecurity as that described by

Governor Pownall does not nor can exist, save with rare exceptions; the border country is as flourishing as the rest of the settlement, or more so from its border trade. Men do not exercise themselves in self-defence, nor attain those military habits which keep savages in awe: but neither do they plough and sow under arms, and pass their available time in drill.

Considered, therefore, in its simplest light, and as a mere question of cost, the issue appears to be this:—Does the wealth of the Empire, or, if you will, of the mother country, gain by the faster development of a colony under military protection, more than it loses by the expense of that military protection? An issue not quite so readily decided as ordinary writers on the subject appear to suppose.

But when we take into consideration other than economical reasonings—whether we regard the mother country as under a subsisting and binding duty towards the natives of a colonized region, or whether, waiving the question of duty, we simply entertain a respect for the tie of common humanity—the policy of having the relations between natives and settlers absolutely uncontrolled is matter for very serious reflection. We must not indeed exaggerate its difficulties. We must not overstate the inherent evils in the relations of the two classes, nor suppose that justice, and humanity, and enlightened self-interest, have no place in the councils of colonists. Nor, on the other hand, must we forget that the statesmen of the mother country, or their trusted deputies, may be very apt with the best intentions to miss their mark, and increase existing mischiefs or create new ones. Still, when all allowances are made, it cannot be doubted that a consistent and regulated system of management of the natives by the home executive would be better, as regards justice towards the natives, than the arbitrary will of the settlers. Unfortunately, no such system has ever been established by us, or seriously attempted.

, save with
ourishing as
order trade.
e, nor attain
awe: but
s, and pass

nd as a mere
— Does the
another coun-
colony under
e expense of
e so readily
appear to sup-

than econo-
ther country
s the natives
e question of
e of common
ons between
s matter for
d exaggerate
herent evils
that justice,
ave no place
r hand, must
country, or
the best in-
ing mischiefs
es are made,
ulated system
ecutive would
es, than the
no such sys-
ly attempted.

The truth is, that the establishment definitively and on a solid basis of either system, that of home control, or that of abandonment to the settlers, requires a degree of consistent firmness on the part of the executive, which it is difficult to secure under constitutional government. No colonial minister can venture to oppose, with deliberate steadiness, the supporters of any prevalent and popular doctrine. If he recalls troops from distant colonial possessions, and maintains the principle that their inhabitants must provide for their own internal peace and security against natives, he will no doubt find strong assistance from those who believe that the colonists should be taught to rely on themselves, and still stronger from the prevailing desire for economy in national expenditure. But, on the other hand, he has to encounter all the interests connected with the particular colony in question: and he has, in addition, to reckon on opposition from that body so long and justly powerful in British assemblies, who constitute themselves the protectors of inferior races, and regard with apprehension any measure which tends to withdraw them from the exercise of that protection. And, besides all this, there are real or supposed dangers in every such change of moment, which it requires great political courage to confront. An extermination of natives—a massacre of settlers—these are the terrors ever present to the mind of the executive at home, which render it loth to part, until the very last moment, with that security which has hitherto been enjoyed at the easy cost of military expenditure. And besides this, there is always looming in the distance the phantom of colonial disaffection. There is the fear lest the colonists should lose the wish to remain longer connected with a country which refuses to spend money on them. That the fear is unphilosophical all statesmen will admit, and that colonial attachment will not be retained by this kind of tribute, if it were worth retaining at such cost. But though prepared to recognize

colonial independence as the natural ultimate result of modern colonial policy, none of them wish to see the revolution commence in their own day.

The consequence of these opposing political tendencies is a vacillation of purpose greatly to be regretted. The same series of events continually recurs in colonies thus circumstanced. In every period of tranquillity, some preparation is made for weaning colonists from their reliance on Imperial arms. Troops are gradually withdrawn. But the colonists — pretty well assured of what is coming — make very slight effort to create a defensive force. Then comes a rebellion, or a border war. Troops are hurried back from England, and the danger is at length averted at an expense greatly exceeding what would have occurred if they had remained in the colony. Then the old process of withdrawal begins again. The colonists are again threatened with being left to themselves, and again exhorted to military preparation — threats which they have learnt to estimate at their just value, and exhortations which have no power to stir them from their inertness produced both by habit and by calculation. For there is a principle in their resistance. The same community which will cheerfully contribute, with a generosity far outstripping its apparent means, to any object of public munificence in which Old England is interested, will hold out as long as it can against any invitation to take on itself its own charges, hitherto defrayed by the mother country. And thus the course of affairs goes on, period after period, in the same vicious circle. The principle of military protection from home, openly avowed and consistently acted on, would have cost far less money than the opposite principle maintained in theory, and perpetually departed from in practice.

Similar inconsistency has attended our dealings with the civil government of colonies thus circumstanced.

e result of
to see the

tendencies
ettled. The
colonies thus
illity, some
from their
ually with-
red of what
a defensive
ar. Troops
anger is at
eding what
the colony.

again. The
left to them-
eparation—
t their just
wer to stir
abit and by
r resistance.
y contribute,
nt means, to
Old England
against any
hitherto de-
e course of
same vicious
from home,
would have
nciple main-
ed from in

dealings with
cumstanced.

Nothing can be more reasonable than that, where the mother country protects, at her own expense, the settlers from the natives, she should retain in her own hand, to a very considerable extent, their domestic administration. Unless she does so, she is liable to be dragged on all occasions into conflicts which the measures of the colonists themselves have provoked, and then to find the employment of her warlike resources impeded by want of harmony between the civil and military authorities. But these very obvious maxims have been disregarded. We have given the class of colonies of which I speak free institutions as a kind of bribe to take care of themselves. The colonists have taken the bribe, but shown no disposition whatever to take on their necks the yoke of the supposed condition.*

The subject, in short, is one which has been dealt with by perpetual compromises between principle and immediate exigency. Such compromises are incidental to constitutional government. We are accustomed to them: there is something in them congenial to our national character, as well as accommodated to our institutions; and, on the whole, we may reasonably doubt whether the world is not better managed by means of them than through the severe application of principles. But, unfortunately, in the special subject before us, the uncertainty created by such compromises is a greater evil than even errors of principle. Whether it be the right policy for the mother country to defray, or not to defray, the expenses of Kaffre and New Zealand wars, to save money by refusing to prepare for them, and then

* I must add that I cannot but regard the suggestion of establishing in the same colony "responsible" government for the settlers, and a separate administration of native affairs under the Home authorities, as unpractical. There cannot be two governments in the same community; certainly not unless some mode can be devised of having two public purses.

to spend it by engaging in them, is the most expensive course of all. And while the local authorities are left in continued uncertainty, whether the military protection hitherto accorded to them will or will not be prolonged, it is impossible for them to introduce any methodical system into their dealings with the aborigines themselves : people absolutely requiring a vigorous uniformity of government, and as acute in detecting inconsistency or opposition in the councils of their rulers, as wild animals are said to be sagacious in discerning any hesitation of purpose in the features of their human subduer.

And, lastly, there should be no hesitation in acting on the broad principle that the natives must, for their own protection, be placed in a situation of acknowledged inferiority, and consequently of tutelage. This is the old Spanish system of which much has been already said in the course of these lectures, and the only one which has success to appeal to in its favour. It has been in later years too much the fashion to rely on phrases ; to imagine that by proclaiming that all fellow-subjects of whatever race are equal in the eye of the law, we really make them so. There cannot be a greater error, nor one more calculated to inflict evil on those classes whom it is intended to benefit. The Caffre or the Maori may be rendered equal in legal rights with the settler, but he is not really equal in the power of enjoying or enforcing those rights, nor can he become so until civilization has rendered him equal in knowledge and in mental power. But a state of fictitious equality is far worse for him than one of acknowledged inferiority, with its correlative protection. If we intend to deal with the aborigines of countries of which we have taken possession as equals, then we must exclude settlers from contact with them. We must adopt what in these lectures has been called the policy of insulation—that of the United States—and leave them, in their allotted reserves, subject to their own laws and usages, so far as

st expensive
ities are left
y protection
e prolonged,
methodical
themselves :
uniformity of
nsistency or
wild animals
hesitation of
er.

in acting on
or their own
vledged infe-
s is the old
ready said in
e which has
een in later
; to imagine
of whatever
y make them
ne more cal-
it is intended
ndered equal
t really equal
ghts, nor can
him equal in
e of fictitious
cknowledged
if we intend
hich we have
clude settlers
that in these
ion—that of
r allotted re-
ges, so far as

our established morality may allow of these prevailing. There we may entrust them to the good offices of the missionary, and the "protector," so far as these can reach. But, if we adopt the opposite policy, that of "amalgamation," then we shall assuredly find that they can only meet with the whites in the same field of hopeful industry on the footing of inferiors, and that, if such subordinate position is not recognized by law, and compensated by legal protection, it will be enforced, at a heavy disadvantage to them, by the prevailing sentiment of the conquering race.

LECTURE XIX.

THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED. — MISSIONARY INSTRUCTION. — AMOUNT OF CIVILIZATION HITHERTO ATTAINED BY SAVAGE TRIBES IN MODERN EUROPEAN COLONIES.

HAVING reviewed the preliminary steps which are necessary to place native tribes, in colonized countries, within reach of civilization, the next point to be considered is, the duty of government in promoting that most desirable work itself.

And here I must begin by reminding you of an opinion already expressed in a former part of these lectures, namely, that the only experiments in civilizing savage tribes, which offer the remotest prospect of success, are those which commence with their religious instruction. This opinion, I am aware, has been much controverted: there are many who hold the reverse; namely, that Christianity is the religion of civilized man, and the savage must therefore be prepared by partial civilization before he can receive its truths with profit. But if this were so, the difficulty of commencing the operation would surely be insuperable. That difficulty is, to find a fulcrum for the engines which we are to put in action. In what mode are we to excite the mind of the savage to desire civilization? Its wants and tendencies are unknown to him. Its restraints are intolerable. The greater number have little curiosity respecting it, but acquiesce resignedly in the superiority of their white invaders. Of the few who are sufficiently advanced in intellect to be excited even to a feel-

ing of emulation, there are still fewer—if any—in whom that feeling would be sufficiently powerful to overcome, to the extent of a brief and occasional impulse only, the indolence and the spirit of independence natural to their race. The only way in which even temporary success could be looked for in a scheme of civilization not founded on religious instruction, would be to abandon the existing generation to its fate, and attempt only to educate the young. But it is difficult to conceive how even thus much could be effected, unless families were separated by violent measures, such as the Spanish missionaries are accused of having made use of in founding their settlements. So long as the native households dwell together, the children cannot be rescued from the fortunes of their parents.

But this necessary motive, this $\pi\omicron\upsilon\ \sigma\tau\acute{\omega}$ of the philanthropist, is furnished by religion, and by religion only. It is impossible to mistake the accumulated testimony of all experience and observation, which assures us, that in the savage races of mankind, from the most advanced to the most degraded, the sense of religion not only exists, but exists accompanied by that which may be termed its necessary condition in the human mind—a feeling of pressing want, a longing for support, a craving after instruction. Even the most apathetic savage, when his heart is gained by kindness, or opened by the address of one conversant in his ways, rarely fails to exhibit this impulse of his nature. It may be repressed by mismanagement; it may be rendered inactive by unconquerable indolence; it affords no certain stimulus to action, but it affords the only one. And the strong impression of the superiority of the whites as a different race, which leads the savage to despair of raising himself out of his abject condition in respect of material or intellectual advancement, seems, if his sentiments be properly studied and directed, rather to have the effect of disposing him to welcome instruction in those doctrines which point out that the diversity of gifts in this

world is consistent with the equality of all under one common Father.

The North American Indian, as I have said, is of a disposition peculiarly religious; and it is remarkable, considering the great amount of observation and of theory which has been expended on this singular race, how imperfectly and unjustly its qualifications in this particular have been appreciated. For it is not by the positive tenets of its belief, if such they may be termed, that the religious tendencies of the savage mind are to be estimated. In the first place, it is seldom that travellers attain to any trustworthy knowledge of what these tenets actually are; particularly in the case of a nation so reverentially reserved on these subjects as the Americans. In the next place, it is necessary to disentangle the mass of mere traditional notions and observances, which rest, as it were, on prescription only, and rather influence the habits and the fancy of the savage than his reason (to use that word in its highest sense), from those doctrines in which his faith properly consists; few, probably, and obscure to himself, but partaking of the unchangeable characteristics of the religion of nature. With respect to these, it is clear that the creed of the Indian is no mere superstition received on trust. He can combine, reflect, and discuss their principles. "We have conversed," says Mr. Flint, "with Indians who were atheists, "and treated as fabulous all notions of the immortality "of the soul; and defended their opinions with as much "ingenuity as abandoned people of the lower orders "among ourselves, who profess to hold the same "opinions."* To be capable of such reasoning, however the ingenuity may have been misapplied, indicates a condition of mind far advanced beyond that which submits to mere Fetichism; or, if we prefer so to express our-

* Geography of the Mississippi Valley, p. 119.

selves, in which the great truths of earlier tradition have not yet disappeared in the progressive degeneracy of the race, leaving mere superstitious impressions behind them.

But a far truer insight into the religious state of the American Indian will be obtained, by observing how peculiarly and emphatically he is, in the words of the apostle, "a law unto himself." I mean, how distinctly he evinces, in the whole moral conduct of his life, that he lives under a strong and awful sense of positive obligation. It is of little matter with what doctrines that sense of obligation connects itself. It often appears to connect itself with none. The Indian cannot tell why a burden is laid upon him to act in this or that manner. He obeys a law undefined, unwritten, but mysteriously binding upon his spirit. All the compulsive force which what we call the law of honour has upon the conscience of a man of the world—I had almost said, which religious sanctions have upon the man of principle—is scarcely to be paralleled with that kind of moral necessity which seems in some cases to actuate his proceedings. If religion be what its name implies, *id quod rellegat*, that which binds the will and enforces self-denial and self-devotion, be the object or motive held out what it may, then no people, taken in the mass, is to be compared, in this respect, to the savages of America.

There is a curious passage on this subject in the work of Mr. Flint already cited; the more curious, because the author, as it appears to me, is so far from aiming at fine writing, or romantic exaggeration, that he has a real difficulty in expressing his full meaning.* "After all," says he, "that which has struck us, in contemplating the "Indians, with the most astonishment and admiration, is "the invisible, but universal, energy of the operation and "influence of an inexplicable law, which has, where it

* Flint, Geography of the Mississippi Valley, p. 125.

“operates, a more certain and controlling power than all
“the municipal and written laws of the whites united.
“There is despotic rule without any hereditary or elected
“chief. There are chiefs with great power, who cannot
“tell when, where, or how they became such. There is
“perfect unanimity on a question involving the existence
“of a tribe, when every member belonged to the wild and
“fierce democracy of nature, and could dissent without
“giving a reason. A case occurs where it is prescribed
“by custom that an individual should be punished with
“death. Escaped from the control of his tribe, and as
“free as the winds, this invisible tie is about him, and he
“returns, and surrenders himself to justice. His accounts
“are not settled, and he is in debt. He requests delay till
“he shall have finished his summer’s hunt. He finishes
“it, pays his debt, and dies with a constancy which has
“always been, in all views of Indian character, the theme
“of admiration.”

Now, when we consider that the same creature, whose moral organization is thus wonderfully developed, is one who has frequently not the slightest taste or appreciation for the advantages of material improvement, and who ranks so low, in point of intellectual acquirement, that he is perhaps unable to count beyond ten*—can any one entertain a doubt at which end the process of culture ought to begin? Surely the comparison of their moral state with their condition in other respects is, as it were, the crucial test, pointing out infallibly the direction in which alone, if in any, success is to be reasonably expected. In the ex-

* Which the learned De Pauw considered as a sure sign of barbarism. (*Recherches sur les Américains*.) Captain Hall observed a reluctance to count beyond ten among the Creeks, rather an advanced tribe, who have lived long among the whites. In a grand game at ball, in which the points were scored with sticks, the umpires, as soon as the scores exceeded ten, always pulled out the sticks and began again.

pressive words of Penn, "What good might not a good
"people graft, where there is so distinct a knowledge both
"of good and evil?"*

The Indians of North America are, as I have said
peculiarly a religious race, in the sense which I have been
endeavouring to affix to this word. But the same remarks
will apply, with nearly equal force, to other barbarous and
semi-civilized tribes. And I may add here, that to judge,
as some have done, of the religious capacities of native
races by their religious state, in countries where they have
been christianized in the mass, and admitted into a church
which too often substitutes reliance on the efficacy of its
own ordinances for the development of their faculties, is
to employ a test which would be deemed extremely un-

* Report on Aborigines, 1837, p. 116. I would not insert the fol-
lowing high-coloured expressions, in a work edited by Washington
Irving, were it not for the remarkable agreement between all capable
observers of the uncontaminated races of Indians on this subject.
"Simply to call these people (some tribes of the Rocky Mountains) re-
"ligious, would convey but a faint idea of the deep hue of piety and
"devotion which pervades the whole of their conduct. They are more
"like a nation of saints than a horde of savages."—*Adventures of Captain*
Bonneville; and see the deliberate judgment of Mr. Catline, vol. ii. p.
243.

"Que n'est tombée sous Alexandre, ou sous ces anciens Grecs et
"Romaines, une si noble conquête, et une si grande mutation et
"alteration de tant d'empires et de peuples, sous des mains qui eussent
"doucement defriché et poli ce qu'il y avait de sauvage, et eussent
"conforté et promu les bonnes semences que nature y avait produit;
"inculquant non seulement à la culture des terres et ornement des villes
"les arts de deçà, en tant qu'ils y eussent été nécessaires, mais aussi
"mêlant les vertus Grecques et Romaines aux originelles du pays?
"Quelle réparation eut ce été, et quel amendement à toute cette
"machine, que les premiers exemples et déportemens notres qui se sont
"présentés par delà eussent appelé ces peuples à l'admiration et imita-
"tion de la vertu, et eussent dressé entre eux et nous une fraternelle
"société et intelligence! Combien il eut été aisé de faire son profit
"d'âmes si neuves, si affamées d'apprentissage, ayant pour la plus part
"de si bons commencemens naturels!" — *Montaigne, Essais*, l. iii.
"ch. 6.

just, if applied to civilized men in a similar condition. Humboldt, admirable observer as he is, is not free, I think, from this imputation. "It is not," he says, speaking of the Christian Indians of Mexico, "a doctrine which has succeeded a doctrine, but one ceremonial which has made room for another. The natives know nothing of religion except its external forms. Fond of everything relating to a prescribed order of ceremonies, they find particular enjoyments in the observance of the Christian ritual. The festivals of the church, the fireworks which accompany them, the processions mingled with dances and grotesque masquerades, are a fertile source of diversion for the Indian commonalty. It is in these festivals that the *national character* displays itself in all its individuality. In all countries the observances of the Christian religion have taken a colouring from the region into which it has been transplanted: in the Philippine and Marianne Islands, nations of the Malay race have mingled with it their own peculiar ceremonies; in the province of Pasto, on the ridge of the Cordillera, I have seen masqued Indians, armed with rattles, performing savage dances round the altar, while a Fransican monk elevated the host."* If by "national character" this distinguished writer means not the outward character of the Mexican or Peruvian, as formed by circumstances, but the general disposition of the Indian people, he is surely as hasty as a traveller who should judge of the genius of the Teutonic race by the scenes which he might occasionally observe in a procession at Cologne, or a pilgrimage to Maria Zell.

Nor are there instances wanting, both of bad and good success—rare, unfortunately, as the last have been—which seem powerfully to confirm, to any unprejudiced inquirer, the opinions here expressed. The Report of 1837, already referred to, contains some remarkable in-

* *Nouv. Espagne*, i. 411. 8vo. edition.

condition.
not free, I
ys, speaking
e which has
h has made
g of religion
ing relating
d particular
stian ritual.
hich accom-
dances and
of diversion
festivals that
ndividuality.
stian religion
which it has
anne Islands,
it their own
asto, on the
ued Indians,
es round the
host."* If
riter means
Peruvian, as
isposition of
raveller who
race by the
a procession
ad and good
ave been—
unprejudiced
e Report of
markable in-

stances in the history of the Canadian Indians, particularly the Mohawks and Chippeways, of the utter inefficacy of steady and long-continued efforts at civilization, until a new impulse was given to them by conversion, and the change which then ensued. It is true these rest on the testimony of missionaries, who may be prejudiced in favour of their own peculiar system; but they must be considered in conjunction with the rest of the evidence. Missionaries themselves have not unfrequently attempted the opposite course. The American Society of Friends, for nearly a century and a half, "laboured for the civilization of the Indians, under an idea that civilization would "make way for the introduction of the peculiar doctrines of "the Christian religion." "We have now come to the conclusion," says one of their most distinguished members, "that we erred, sorrowfully erred, in the plan which we originally adopted in making civilization our object." Similar language was held to the committee by a clergyman of the Church Missionary Society in New Zealand. "Fifteen years we attempted to civilize without effect; and the very moment that Christianity established itself in only "one instance, from that moment civilization commenced; "and has been going on, hand in hand with Christianity, "but never preceded it."

I will not now detain you by dwelling on instances of missionary success; when all fair deductions are made for the exaggeration which is too perceptible in many reports, enough will remain to which credit cannot reasonably be denied. I have already described the singular republic of the Jesuits in South America, and have endeavoured to point out the inherent vices, as well as excellencies, of the system which they pursued. The labours of the missionaries in the South Sea Islands have extended of late over a field nearly as wide; and if the results which they have obtained are not quite so romantic in their character, we may, perhaps, hope that they will

prove more durable, and more progressive; for they have the character of progress, however imperfect; which the other wanted altogether. But South Africa, and the continent of North America, abound with other instances, although of a less striking character, in which patience and quiet confidence have been crowned with a well-merited reward; and it is cheering to discover, on minute examination, how many little insulated spots of light appear to present themselves in the gloomy map of aboriginal ethnography,—how many little communities exist, almost overlooked by travellers who perceive only the general face of things, in which Christianity is professed, and the arts of life cultivated, and orderly and moral habits prevail, at one and the same time, because the development of religion and civilization has proceeded together. How far the comparatively slight amount of good which has resulted, after all, from so much zeal and self-devotion, is owing to its misdirection; whether a different mode of teaching Christianity might not, in many cases, have led to a more satisfactory result; whether the instructors of savage tribes have not dwelt too much on their deficiencies, and too little on their advantages, regarding them rather as creatures out of whom the old life was to be utterly extirpated, than as possessed of an exquisite moral sense, and high religious capabilities;—these are deeply interesting questions, but far beyond the province of my inquiries.

And I can only venture to suggest, in passing, another consideration,—whether the process which is here recommended for savage nations, namely, that of making religious instruction precede, or at least closely accompany, all other teaching, does not rather require to be reversed when we were dealing with people possessing an established religion, a literature, and an ancient though imperfect civilization: such as the Hindoos. In them, the craving after religious knowledge is stilled: they have their sys-

tem ; monstrous, perhaps, and strange to the perceptions of the natural man ; but still complete, and to which their moral sense has for ages accommodated itself. To persuade them to change doctrine for doctrine, mystery for mystery, without other preparation, seems nearly a hopeless task. Preaching and arguing are in vain. The Roman Catholic system of adaptation and compromise, practised so largely in the East, may have had more seeming success ; but even this was apparently quite temporary and factitious. But, on the other hand, these very people, when brought habitually in contact with Europeans, appear to become deeply sensible of their own inferiority in mental and social attainments. The intellect of the Hindoo is the faculty to which excitement can be applied ; and that especially when his mind has been prepared by education.

But although the missionary is not merely useful, but indispensable, as the pioneer of civilization, it does not appear that he is sufficiently adapted to complete the work. Hitherto, this most important view of the subject has received very little consideration. So little advance has really been made in the improvement of native races — the operation, so often begun, of imparting a little knowledge and a little material comfort to small fractions of them, has been so constantly checked or destroyed, and again recommenced, without ever in any one instance proceeding beyond the same limited distance — that philanthropists in general have contented themselves with discussing the elementary part of the question as the only practical one. Nor has it been seriously inquired into, whether that discouraging blight or check has not frequently been occasioned by the mere absence of all means to carry on the necessary cultivation beyond the point to which missionary exertions had brought it : for *non progredi est regredi* ; and civilization, except in some rare and singular instances, has always either advanced or fallen back. This topic was already partially dis-

cussed when we considered the reasons for the decay of the missionary settlements in Spanish and Portuguese America. It was then suggested, in the first place, how difficult it is to keep up the zeal, and consequent efficiency, of missionaries who succeed the first fathers of a native flock in established settlements; and how necessarily unfitted, even were this difficulty got over, religious teachers must be to combine with their proper office that of training the intellect and the material energies.

Where the offices of the religious instructor partially fail, those of government, through its agent the protector, ought to begin. Education should not be wholly left to the missionary; it should, at least in the higher grades, be under the superintendence of some central authority. This is necessary, not merely on account of the better quality which may be anticipated from the instruction thus communicated, but also in order to elevate the subject of it in his own estimation. It is most important that he should not feel himself, longer than is absolutely necessary, a mere passive creature in the hands of his religious superintendent. When his passions are tamed, self-respect is the next essential towards his improvement.

Whether, for this purpose, the young natives (in the case of a tribe already settled on land as agriculturists, and converted to Christianity) should be educated apart, or should be admitted into the neighbouring schools of the whites (I mean, more particularly, those who have reached the stage of adolescence), is a question of difficulty, and one on which I have not been able to meet with authorities or reasonings entitled to much consideration. Certainly the reasons against such a mixture are not to be sought for in the inferior capacity of the savage. All those who have expressed an opinion on the subject seem to agree, that *children* of most native races are fully or more than a match for those of Europeans in aptitude

the decay of
Portuguese
place, how
equent effi-
athers of a
how neces-
er, religious
r office that
gies.

or partially
e protector,
holly left to
her grades,
al authority.
f the better
e instruction
elevate the
st important
is absolutely
ands of his
s are tamed,
his improve-

tives (in the
griculturists,
icated apart,
g schools of
e who have
tion of diffi-
ble to meet
ach consider-
mixture are
f the savage.
the subject
aces are fully
s in aptitude

for intellectual acquirement. Indeed it appears to be a singular law of nature, that there is less precocity in the European race than any other. In those races in which we seem to have reason for believing that the intellectual organization is lower, perception is quicker, and maturity earlier. And it is easy to perceive the very great benefits which would result from the association of Europeans and natives in early life.

The character of the education best adapted for the converted native offers a wide field for inquiry, into which it is impossible for me to enter. It is, of course, easily understood, that what may be termed a material training, in the arts and industry of civilized life, must be a very important element in it: that much, which we leave to be acquired by the children of ordinary citizens in the course of service, of apprenticeship, and the business of life, must with them be made matter of special and independent instruction. By awakening their interest and ingenuity in these matters, some security is obtained against the danger of their relapse into barbarism, which for some generations must always be imminent. Even for adults, houses of industry, with lands annexed, appear to be the training schools encouraged at the present day in Australia. But for them, being still at the lowest point of savage life, there seems to be little prospect of permanent good from such institutions, at least until some degree of religious instruction has been communicated. Experience must determine, in each particular case, what branches of industry it may be most desirable to teach. Philanthropists are unsafe guides in matters of such a merely practical character.*

* A governor of Western Australia, Sir James Stirling, was much praised for the establishment of native "normal schools, to teach them" (among other things) hunting and fishing." It is not for us to judge of the wisdom of a course of study adopted at the Antipodes; but these are subjects on which it might have been thought, *à priori*, that any

But the great problem of all in the civilization of savage tribes, the step which has never yet been passed and never seriously attempted, is that of amalgamation. We have seen that, sooner or later, the period for this step must arrive ; and it is equally evident, that here the missionary training must fail. That system is based on the insulation of the natives from the rest of the community. As soon as this is interrupted, the influence of the missionary must diminish, and his efforts must be carried on at an increasing disadvantage. This is the reason why the most successful missionary experiments have generally taken place in uncolonized regions, such as the islands of the Pacific ; or in frontier districts of thinly-peopled colonies, as in South America : for where the experiment of insulation has been persisted in, in the middle of rapidly increasing settlements, disappointment has inevitably followed ; and this is said to have been the cause of the eventual failure of the schemes of Eliot and the early Puritan missionaries in New England. And on this account it will be found that missionaries are apt to entertain a certain repugnance to schemes of new colonization : the stronger, perhaps, the more zealous they are in their calling ; and are apt, also, to view with jealousy any project for bringing the natives and settlers in contact in older colonies. But, without entering again into the question, whether the permanence of this theocratic regimen is desirable, it is enough to say that it is impossible ; since it has been shown that the natives must eventually either mix with the colonists, or remove, and that to remove is to relapse into barbarism. If they remain, then, one way or the other, the commixture will take place. If the natives be not elevated into the rank of the sound and healthy part of the population, they

native might have imparted some useful lessons to Sir James Stirling and all his council.

ivilization of
been passed
algalamation.
od for this
at here the
is based on
of the com-
influence of
rts must be
This is the
experiments
regions, such
r districts of
: for where
ed in, in the
appointment
o have been
mes of Eliot
ew England.
missionaries
schemes of
more zealous
to view with
and settlers
ntering again
of this theo-
ay that it is
the natives
s, or remove,
sm. If they
mixture will
into the rank
ulation, they

will inevitably fall victims to the contact of the more degraded.

It seems generally admitted that, for this purpose, the relation of master and servant, between colonist and native, should, after the first stage of reclaiming is past, be encouraged as far as this can reasonably be done. The exaggerated dread of slavery which prevails in many quarters, the source of innumerable mistakes in colonial policy, has perhaps interfered to prevent this relation from being formed so extensively as in some colonies it might have been. As I have endeavoured to show already, the relation of hiring and service, such as we find it at the present day in the western countries of Europe, is one peculiar to high civilization. Service without dependence, dependence without control, are ideas foreign to the conception of the savage or the half reclaimed. If he is to be a servant, he must needs be subject to many of the incidents of slavery. The mistake is, to regard these incidents as constituting the substance. Many a well-meaning friend of aborigines, in his jealousy of any restraints wearing a servile appearance, has forgotten that without some restraint they cannot be rendered useful to the settlers; that unless useful to the settlers, they cannot long live in peace with them; and that a state of warfare between settlers and natives ends at last in the extermination of the latter. There are employments, such as the management of cattle, for which the aborigines of many countries seem particularly well suited. The native South Africans are among the best herdsmen in the world; and the natives of Swan River, it is said, have shown a great aptitude for the same occupation. The New Zealanders are, to a certain extent, an industrious race, whenever a sufficient motive is afforded them, and ready in learning the trades of civilized life. But more is to be hoped, in this respect, from the young than the adult.

There is one mode of amalgamation of the races which it would probably be impossible to prevent, were it desirable: I mean by the mixture of blood. Some observers seem to consider that the multiplication of "half castes" is proceeding at such a rate, wherever unrestricted intercourse exists between natives and whites, as to threaten the extinction of the pure blood of the former. Certainly, in many Canadian and North-western tribes, a very large proportion of the present generation is supposed to partake of European blood. Now, this result—except so far as it proceeds from corruption of morals, an enormous evil in new settlements, and one of the great causes of the degradation of aborigines—does not seem, in itself, undesirable. Certainly, the custom of intermarriage between the two races—perhaps even that of forming durable connexions—affords a considerable check to that mutual repulsion which arises merely out of prejudices of colour, and for which there can be no substantial reason where slavery does not exist. And there is strong testimony to the superior energy and high organisation of many of these half-blood races.*

We have now conducted together a few very hasty and imperfect inquiries into a subject deserving a much more copious and more laborious consideration. And when we have done thus much,—when we turn round to review the track over which we have passed,—it is impossible, I fear, to deny that a sense of unreality is apt to mingle with our reflections, and to cloud our anticipations. Is there any substance, any truth, in the speculations in which we have indulged, respecting measures to be taken, and results to be expected? or have we been dealing only with the creatures of our own theories—constructing Utopian commonwealths—and shutting our eyes to the broad and sad picture which experience presents; wilfully forgetting the radical unfitness of the savage for civiliz-

* See Appendix.

ation, the inadequacy of our means for making the experiment, the visionary nature of our hopes and our arguments? Let us hear what an objector might urge against the views which we have been hitherto considering.

You speak, he might say, of the measures to be taken for the civilization of native races, as if that were a work which must needs be commenced anew from the foundation : and are you ignorant that in so doing you are passing the severest commentary on the futility of your entire suggestion? This is no new direction for the exercise of zeal and self-devotion. For two centuries it has been the favourite dream of the speculative, the favourite employment of the active philanthropist. It has been a task always beginning, and never advancing. Numberless institutions have been formed, numberless communities have been half reclaimed, under the superintendence of governments and missionaries ; but they have never been able to maintain themselves ; nay, the utmost exertions have never sufficed to preserve them. Either the savage has, of his own accord, returned to barbarism, or European invasion has rooted him out, or his households have perished by new diseases and premature decay. Every government, every sect, has tried its hand in turn ; Protestants and Romanists have rivalled each other in their boasts of the blessing which has attended their endeavours ; but all their works have perished, and the forest has spread again, or the white colonist has encamped, alike over the labour-fields of Eliot and Brainerd, of Baraza and Vieyra. All experience shows that the savage is irreclaimable : not that he may not shake off the outward habits of barbarous life, acquire elementary notions of religion, and superficial habits of industry ; but all this is the mere result of careful inspection and constraint : he has no principle of improvement in himself ; the moment he is neglected, he relapses. Certain races of mankind only are adapted to civilization ; their organiza-

tion shows it ; they admit of gradual progress. No individual, of the races we call savage, has ever, in these three hundred years, distinguished himself in the career of civilized life ; nay, none of those who have been thus partially reclaimed have ever exhibited the same degree of intellectual development which has been shown by some in their wild and natural state ; such as a few of the warrior chieftains of America and Polynesia, whose names have passed into history ; the sachem Philip, the leader Tecumseh, and Feenow, the royal savage of the Society Islands.

And even were this otherwise, they will add, there is another and more fatal obstacle : the feebler race must yield to the stronger ; the white is destined to extirpate the savage. All the civilizing efforts of governments must lag far behind the destructive consequences of European invasion. It is not only by appreciable causes, by warfare, or the destruction of game, or the introduction of spirits, or of new epidemics, that the savage perishes from before the face of the colonist ; there are deeper and more mysterious causes at work : the mere contact of Europeans is fatal to him in some unknown manner.

This theory of necessary depopulation has been advanced of late in so many quarters, and presents so formidable an aspect to the inquirer, that I may perhaps be excused for dwelling a little upon it, as well as the other objections I have been stating, before we draw to a conclusion.

With Sir Francis Head's opinions on the subject we are already acquainted.

Sir Richard Bourke writes to Lord Glenelg respecting New Zealand (1837) :—" Disease and death prevail, even " amongst natives who by their adherence to the mission- " aries have received only benefit from English connexion ; " and even the very children who are reared under the " care of the missionaries are swept off in a ratio which

No indi-
r, in these
the career
e been thus
e degree of
n by some
of the war-
nose names
the leader
the Society

ld, there is
r race must
extirpate the
nts must lag
ropean inva-
warfare, or
of spirits, or
m before the
e mysterious
ans is fatal

as been ad-
sents so for-
perhaps be
as the other
aw to a con-

subject we are

g respecting
prevail, even
the mission-
h connexion;
ed under the
ratio which

"promises, at no very distant period, to leave the country
"destitute of a single aboriginal inhabitant. The natives
"are perfectly sensible of this decrease; and when they
"contrast their own condition with that of the English
"families amongst whom the marriages have been pro-
"lific to an extraordinary degree of a most healthy
"progeny, they conceive that the God of the English
"is removing the aboriginal inhabitants to make room
"for them; and it appears to me that this impression has
"produced among them a very general unhappiness
"and indifference to life."*

Thus writes the philosophical traveller, Mr. Darwin, on
the occasion of his visit to the same region:

"Besides these several evident causes of destruction,
"there appears to be some more mysterious agency gene-
"rally at work. Wherever the European has trod, death
"seems to pursue the aboriginal. We may look to the
"wide extent of the Americas, Polynesia, the Cape of
"Good Hope, and Australia, and we shall find the same
"result. Nor is it the white man alone that thus acts the
"destroyer. The Polynesian of Malay extraction has
"in parts of the East Indian archipelago, thus driven
"before him the dark-coloured native. The varieties of
"man seem to act upon each other in the same way as
"different species of animals; the stronger always extir-
"pating the weaker."

Finally, to quote the language of Mr. Poeppig, a
German naturalist, who has resided for some years in
South America: — "It is an unquestionable fact that the
"copper-coloured man cannot endure the spread of Euro-
"pean civilization in his neighbourhood; but perishes in

* Lords' Report on New Zealand, 1833. In the Returns from
Lower Canada, 1839, it is stated, "that the average number of
"children living from an Indian marriage, in Lower Canada, is not
"above four to five married couple." At this rate, *their* extinction is
very near at hand.

"its atmosphere, without suffering from ardent spirits, "epidemics, or wars, as if touched by a poisonous breath." And he proceeds to compare the substitution of the one race for the other, with the destruction of the first growth of low vegetation, in the recently formed islands of the Pacific, by the vigorous crop of forest trees which succeeds it."*

Whether there be or be not truth of fact in the opinions thus expressed, there is surely something startling to the imagination in the language in which they are conveyed. Perhaps I may venture to attribute some of the colouring to that taste for fanciful analogies, and speculations partaking of the mysterious, in which natural philosophers are apt to indulge when they apply their knowledge to subjects not immediately within their province. When we find one race of animals, or one class of vegetation, extirpating another, there is nothing inexplicable in the succession of cause and effect. The stronger destroys the weaker by natural agencies: indigenous kinds of animals become the prey of imported ones; or their food is destroyed by the multiplication of the latter: the seeds of one class of vegetables cannot spring up where a stronger growth has established itself: and so forth. What is there, in these or similar processes, analogous to the supposed mysterious influence of the mere contact of one family of the human race upon another?† If it be true, that the mere presence of a white population is sufficient to cause the red Indians, or

* Art. "Indier," Encyclopedia of Erz and Gruber.

† I may here refer to the very singular law of nature which Count Strzelecki hints at (Physical Description of N. S. Wales, p. 345), but without offering his observations "as evidences for the deduction of an "ultimate conclusion." His opinion is, that native women, after forming connections with whites, become unfruitful in their subsequent connections with men of their own race. This theory seems not to have been adopted by subsequent observers. See *Thompson's Story of New Zealand*, vol. ii. p. 288.

ent spirits,
us breath."
of the one
first growth
nds of the
which suc-

n the opi-
g startling
h they are
te some of
ologies, and
ich natural
apply their
a their pro-
or one class
thing inex-
fect. The
cies: indi-
f imported
plication of
bles cannot
shed itself:
imilar pro-
influence of
a race upon
sence of a
Indians, or

e which Count
, p. 345), but
eduction of an
women, after
ir subsequent
ns not to have
Story of New

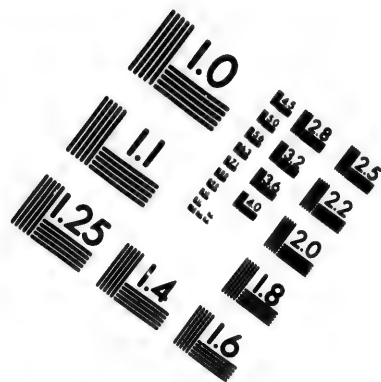
the Polynesians, to dwindle and decay, without any assignable agency of the one or the other, it must be confessed that this is an anomaly in the laws of Providence utterly unexplained by all our previous knowledge, wholly at variance with all the other laws by which animal life, and human society, are governed.

But on what proof does the supposed fact itself rest? We might take reasonable exceptions to many of the ordinary instances which are adduced to support it. No reliance can really be placed on rough conjectures of the numbers of native tribes, or on the first visitors of savage countries. As some of the witnesses on the New Zealand committee very truly remarked with regard to the South Sea islands, the discoverers seem to have magnified the native population, by judging of it from the concourse of people attracted by their own appearance. For example: Cook estimated the population of Otaheite (the instance given by Mr. Darwin) at 200,000. When the missionaries first reached the island (about thirty years ago) they found it 16,000.* Now this is a difference far too great to be at all accounted for on any reasonable theory of depopulation; we must therefore take the course of rejecting the first calculation as altogether unworthy of credit. But again: in other instances, it will be found that the population of regions long visited by Europeans has not diminished, even in comparison with the first estimate. No country has been so often referred to, as affording an instance of depopulation by white intercourse, as New Zealand: yet Forster, the companion of Cook, conjectured that the northern island

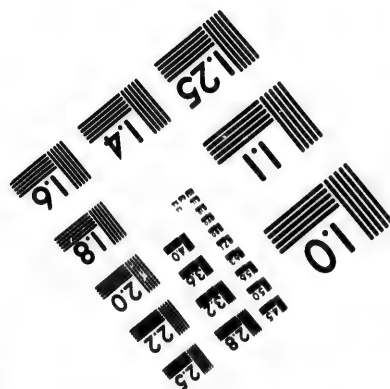
* Estimated about 1850 at 8000 or 10,000 only; but on doubtful grounds. *Quarterly Review*, vol. xciv., p. 93.

The Sandwich groupe show a similar process of decay. In 1841, the annual deaths were estimated at nearly 7000; births little more than 3000. In 1849, deaths 4320, births 1422 (*ib.*). These numbers cannot be relied on; but the general fact is undoubted.





6"



Photographic Sciences Corporation

**23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503**

18 20 22 25
28 32 36 40

10 01
11 02

contained 100,000 inhabitants. Mr. Williams, in his evidence, now gives it 106,000. I mention these numbers because others have assumed them as data in reasoning; but without believing that either of the calculations is really to be relied upon.

But the true subject for investigation is this: Is there a single instance of depopulation among aboriginal races since their intercourse with the whites, in which that depopulation cannot be traced to appreciable causes? That the waste of human life, at the present moment, is frightfully enormous, we too well know. The recent revelations of Mr. Catline, concerning the rapid destruction of the tribes in the interior of the North American continent, have added most painfully to our knowledge of the devastation which our race is occasioning, and of our own utter helplessness to prevent it. But there is not a single example which he adduces, in which the mortality is not accounted for; either by the more sanguinary character which fire-arms have given to their wars, or by the destruction of their food, or by the effects of spirituous liquors, or, more fatal than all, by the introduction of new epidemics, such as the small-pox, which lately, in two seasons, cut off nearly the whole Mandan tribe, 2000 warriors strong. To these we must add, as another appreciable cause, too great a change of habits, and too close restraint, as in the case already described of the Jesuit missions. All this affords no answer to the question: If the native can be reclaimed; if he can be placed in safety from hostile aggression; if a sufficiency of food can be secured to him; if time can be given him to become fortified against the virulence of epidemic diseases, which are always most destructive in their first assaults on a race previously free from them; if all these causes of death are removed, must he still perish? Now if it be found, that in any one instance where aborigines have been thus reclaimed and settled,

ams, in his
these num-
ta in reason-
calculations

is : Is there
original races
which that
ble causes ?
moment, is
The recent
pid destruc-
th American
r knowledge
oning, and of
But there is
n which the
e more san-
ven to their
, or by the
than all, by
e small-pox,
y the whole
ese we must
t a change of
case already
s affords no
e reclaimed ;
gression ; if
if time can
virulence of
destructive in
from them ;
must he still
one instance
and settled,

they have increased, or even remained stationary in numbers, in the midst of a white population, then the supposed law of Mr. Poeppig and Mr. Darwin is imaginary. They claim for it an universal operation ; and it is obvious that they must do so ; if the contact of one race is necessarily fatal to another, the result must follow in all cases alike. Let us then examine the very scanty collection of facts which lies within our reach.

In Mexico, and perhaps in Peru, the labouring Indian population, after suffering great losses in the first ages after the conquest, was steadily on the increase up to the end of the last century, when Humboldt wrote, and has probably continued so, allowance being made for the effects of civil war since that time. Now it is true, that the great body of these people was agricultural before the conquest, and therefore their condition affords no test of what may be practicable with savages ; but it surely affords at once a conclusive answer to the notion of a noxious influence of race upon race.

The instance of the Indians of our North American provinces is one of the most unfavourable which can be selected, owing to the course of mismanagement which has been adopted towards them. Yet, even there, there seems no evidence that the long settled tribes of Indians are now in general decaying in numbers. In Cape Breton, says Mr. Haliburton, " they are much diminished, " but still exist ; and probably will, as long as lands are " reserved for their use." Those of Lower Canada, some observers think, are disappearing ; but they are a very degraded remnant. In Upper Canada, all that the evidence in the Returns, already so often quoted, amounts to is, that they " are not likely to increase rapidly." Mr. Beecham, the missionary, goes farther and says, that " among the tribes that have been the greatest length of " time under the influence of Christian principles, the

"population has begun to increase."* But no enumerations are given, and I should not rely on this evidence farther than as establishing that there cannot be in these instances any sensible process of depopulation going on. In South Africa, the numbers of the native races appear to increase where there is protection against war and famine. The old tribe of the Hottentots, supposed to have been verging on extinction, increased from 17,000 in 1809 to 30,000 in 1823.

The numbers at the British settlement at the Red River, far in the interior, increased from 500 to 5000 in a few years, as a witness before the Aborigines Committee expresses himself, "with the natives coming down to settle, and the half-breeds."†

But, in the United States, the testimony of Mr. Flint is clear and decisive, and of the utmost importance. "The Cherokees and Choctaws increase in the country east of the Mississippi almost in a ratio as great as that of our people." These tribes, as we know, had become agricultural. This was written before the recent removal of part of the Cherokees and the Choctaws from their settlements by the United States government.‡

* Report on Aborigines, 1837, p. 47.

† Ibid. p. 73. They have increased, however, very slowly of late years (1860).

‡ (1860) The case of the New Zealanders has been often referred to, of late years, in proof of the rapid diminution of native races. If we can rely on the estimates, they now fall short of 60,000 souls. Of the fact of diminution there is no doubt, although to what extent is still questionable; for I cannot think the recent enumerations, notwithstanding the care with which they have been made, of any very conclusive authority. But the cause is surely not far to seek. The various conjectural reasons put forward in Mr. Fenton's ingenious "Report on the Maori population of New Zealand" (Statistical Journal, December 1860), seem rather superfluous, although it is no doubt possible that some of them may have more or less contributed to the result. For it appears from the same paper, that in a particular district (which may be taken apparently as a fair criterion of the whole), the Maori population in 1844 and 1858 consisted of the following proportions: —

With these facts before us (and others may be cited), we may perhaps dismiss, with little scruple, the theories of those who tell us that aboriginal races are hastening to an inevitable destruction. But I cannot leave this branch of the subject, without a few words on another and a very different view of it.

It is the opinion of some observers, that the depopulation of America did not commence with its settlement by Europeans, but was even then rapidly proceeding, owing to causes which the arrival of the Europeans might aggravate indeed, but could not produce. They refer to the

	1844	1858		1844	1858
Adult males .	630	575	Male children .	281	178
Adult females .	594	474	Female children .	194	142

These numbers speak for themselves. It is plain that in 1844 there had been a great recent mortality of female children. It is further plain, that this exceptional mortality had not then been of long duration, because the number of adult males did not very materially differ from that of adult females. But such a disproportion as this must needs produce a diminution of population as soon as the children become adults; which diminution will continue until nature restores the balance of the sexes, and no longer. Probably, in 1844, the long preceding series of sanguinary wars between the tribes had produced great privations, and their usual effect among savages—extensive infanticide, chiefly of females. Add to this circumstance the undoubted temporary effect of new diseases introduced by contact with Europeans, and the depopulation certainly seems to be accounted for without reference to those recon- dite causes which physiologists are so ready to dwell on. Dr. Thompson, for instance, imagines “breeding in and in” to be the leading cause of the diminution. Surely, if this were so, the population in lonely and little visited portions of the earth would long ago have died out altogether. But facts are against too exclusive a reliance on this supposed law of nature. There are portions of the Scottish Highlands, the Swiss and Italian Alps, and doubtless many other mountain regions, in which the constant intermarriage of kindred has prevailed for ages from the very necessity of the case. And yet finer races of men are not to be found in the world than those produced by these unions, nor is there any tendency to depopulation. “Breeding in and in” will not deteriorate the human race by itself. There must be some other causes in combination, with which we are not acquainted.

constant wars between the tribes; their sanguinary customs, particularly that of infanticide; the frequency of deaths at an early age: and the inferior productiveness of marriages, caused apparently by the hardships peculiar to their mode of life; as circumstances which are inconsistent with the possibility of a healthy and natural movement of the population. They refer, too, to the habitual complaints of diminution of numbers, which have been heard by white visitors in regions to which they were the first to penetrate; as for example, by Major Pike in his journey to the Rocky Mountains, more than thirty years ago.

But they point also to more striking proofs than these. In the valley of the Ohio, on the shores of the Great Lakes, and far in the interior, exist the monuments of a race which, in numbers and in civilization, must have been far more superior to the Indians with whom Raleigh and the Puritans made acquaintance, than these could be to the most degenerate tribe which now visits the markets of Montreal or Saint John. There are the traces of cities of vast extent; there are mounds, to raise which, says Mr. Flint, would task the labour of a thousand men for a year, aided by all the appliances of modern art. Now there certainly appears much reason for supposing that the Indians of the present day are the descendants of those very people: it is not easy to believe that so mighty a nation was destroyed at once, that new races succeeded it, and that those new races were by degrees augmenting in numbers and in power when the Whites discovered them. The far more probable theory seems to be, that the hunting tribes which first became known to Europeans were the mere fragments of a great family of the human species, losing, in every successive generation, something of the qualities which had distinguished their predecessors, diminishing in numbers and resources, and on their way towards extinction; and there are some who hold

the same opinion respecting all the races commonly called savage.

If so, and if it be true at the same time, as I have endeavoured to show, that these races will multiply when their habits are changed, and their security provided for, then we must view, in the occupation of their country by the Whites, not the necessary cause of their destruction, but the only possible means of rescuing them from it. We are then not their predestined murderers, but called to assume the station of their preservers. If we neglect the call, we do so in defiance of the express and intelligible indications afforded us by Providence.

And I think that a mind once satisfied that there is any approximation to truth in these conclusions, will scarcely attach much force to the other objection which I have stated, namely, that of the incapacity of the savage mind for cultivation. Even if it were granted, that it is not susceptible of improvement beyond a certain point—that the North American, for instance, highly as he is gifted in respect of moral perception, has not intellectual faculties of commensurate strength, all which must be considered as assumed, or resting at best only on negative proofs—there is surely no reason in this why they may not enter by degrees into the sphere of civilization, although remaining always a subordinate race to the Whites; or, considering the smallness of their numbers in most cases, becoming quietly absorbed in the course of a few generations in the mass of the people. Different fates may be in store for them, according to the different powers they may evince, and their different physical circumstances: there are many ways in which the great problem may be solved. But that even the lowest of them are capable of acquiring settled habits, and susceptible of spiritual and intellectual training, I do not think any dispassionate inquirer can possibly doubt.

If my limits would permit, I should gladly close this

lecture by dwelling on the proofs of this truth which are even now exhibited in many quarters.

I would refer particularly to the instances of the South African tribes under the superintendence of missionaries, chiefly Moravians; of the remarkable progress of the Red River settlement, a territory very remote from any fully colonized country, in which the Indians seem, of their own accord, to be adopting agricultural habits; of the Chippeways* of St. Clair in Upper Canada; of the remnant of the Six Nations in the same country, some of whom are said to hold extensive farms of 150, 100, and 80 acres of cleared land.†

The United States present much more remarkable results. No Indian tribe reclaimed from the hunting state has ever made so great a progress as that which had been attained by the Cherokees, prior to their last and unhappy removal.

"In 1824," says Mr. Stuart‡, "when the population of the Cherokees was 15,560 individuals, it included 1277 negroes (slaves); they had 18 schools, 36 grist-mills, 13 saw-mills, 762 looms, 2480 spinning wheels, 172 wag-gons, 2923 ploughs, 7683 horses, 22,531 black cattle, 46,732 swine, 2546 sheep, 430 goats, 62 blacksmith's shops, with several public roads, ferries, and turnpikes. They had also newspapers in their own language." This flourishing republic is now transplanted to new seats, where its continued maintenance is problematical; but the example remains.§

* Report on Aborigines, 1837, p. 49.

† Returns, 1839; or to have held. I do not know whether they were comprehended in Sir. F. Head's intended removal. Sir R. Bonycastle speaks thus of a body of Micmac Indians, settled in Gaspé: — "This branch is entirely separated from the rest of the nation, and fast merging into civilization, the squaws having adopted the dress of the surrounding peasantry, and all speaking both English and French." — *The Canadas in 1841*, vol. ii. p. 204.

‡ Three Years in North America, vol. ii. p. 42.

§ See Appendix, No. IV.

The recent history of Tahiti presents one of the most singular chapters in modern annals; and that of the Sandwich Islands is hardly less remarkable. So great has been the success of the missionaries in the former island, that it might even suggest a doubt as to the soundness of a principle which I just now endeavoured to establish, namely, that those agents are the fittest to introduce civilization, but not to preserve it. But there are reasons for doubting, whether the country is not now ripe for a change of system, over which I cannot detain you. The best way to study this very interesting subject is that which Mr. Darwin suggests, namely, to correct the colouring (I will not say the statements), of Mr. Ellis, the missionary, in his *Polynesian Researches*, by the remarks of the prejudiced Kotzebue and the impartial observer Captain Beechey. It is worthy of remark, that the missionaries for fifteen years obtained no results at all; yet they persevered.

I will mention, last, a communication in the parliamentary Papers on Australian Aborigines (1839) from Mr. Robinson, commandant of Flinders' Island, respecting the remnant of Van Diemen's Land natives, who were lately removed there. "There never," he says, "existed a race of their character so degraded as were the primeval occupants of Van Diemen's Land; and yet, by the philanthropic interference of the local administration, their wretched condition has been ameliorated, and exceeds by far the majority of the humbler grade of European inhabitants; and in their general conduct, I venture to affirm, they are much superior." And he proceeds to give details of their present state in point of material comfort, their industry, and their moral and religious improvement, which are perfectly astonishing, when it is remembered that these people, only six years ago, were prowling savages, plundering the settlers for subsistence, and exposed to be shot like wild beasts. Their occupations are

chiefly tillage, and making roads, and other government employment. The women have learnt knitting, and other branches of female industry. The means which Mr. Robinson represents himself to use for their civilization seems to prove, in the first place, how far that civilization already extends. They are what he calls "an aboriginal fund,"—a circulating medium for the payment of wages—an aboriginal police—a weekly market—and a weekly periodical. Unfortunately their numbers seem to be diminishing; probably from the sudden change of habits, and the comparatively narrow limits to which these wandering people are now confined.*

If, then, it be insisted that these indications are fallacious—that such experiments have been often made, and never permanently successful—our safest answer is, that they have never been persevered in. Never has anything like the combination of means, which I have ventured to suggest in these pages, and most of which have been separately pressed on public attention by men practically acquainted with the subject, been put into operation. It is not enough to protect the native from wrong; there must also be religious instruction, to give a stimulus to his indolent faculties: it is not enough to effect his conversion; there must be the education of knowledge and industry, and admission into the pale of civilized life. Until the whole experiment be tried, the language of despair is unreasonable and unjust. For myself, notwithstanding all the discouraging appearances which the present aspect of affairs may exhibit, I am inclined to think hopefully of the great cause of aboriginal civilization, and to apply to it the noble language of Herder, true, as I verily believe it to be, in his own wider sense:—"All the doubts and complaints of "mankind over the dark confusion of events, and the im-

* (1860.) I have suffered this passage to stand as a testimony to the futility of sanguine expectations. The number of these aborigines was 111 in 1835; 45 in 1845; in 1855 they were reduced to 16.

“perceptible progress of good in human history, proceed
 “from this, that the eye of the melancholy traveller can
 “comprehend at once only too small a portion of his road.
 “Could he but extend the sphere of his vision, and impar-
 “tially compare with each other those ages with which
 “history makes us most familiar; could he but penetrate at
 “the same time into the nature of man, and weigh what
 “reason and truth really are, he would doubt as little of
 “his own progress as of the most certain facts in natural
 “philosophy.”*

* Ideen, book xv. c. 4.

APPENDIX TO LECTURE XIX.

No. I.

IN Dr. Prichard's researches into the Physical History of Mankind (vol. i. p. 147, ed. 1831), a variety of facts are collected respecting mixed races. He considers the prolificness and the energetic character which distinguish many of these races, in the light of evidence that mankind are of one species ; otherwise, such races would follow the general law of hybrid productions.

" The Griquas, or bastard Hottentots, the mixed race between the Dutch colonists and the aborigines of South Africa, form, on the borders of the colonial settlements, a numerous and rapidly increasing race.

" Another mixed tribe in Africa has become one of the more powerful nations in that continent. The Fellatahs are, according to the most recent and accurate accounts, a mixed progeny from the intermixture of the Red Poules, the old inhabitants of Fouta Dhiallo and Fouta Torro, with the Jollofs, Jallouka, and Torodos, as well as with other black nations with whom they have coalesced. The intermediate race resulting from this intermixture has become so much more numerous and powerful, as to have superseded the original Poules in their native lands, and to have spread themselves moreover by conquest over a great part of the interior of Soudan."

In Paraguay the mixed breed constitutes, according to Don Felix de Azara, a great majority of the people termed Spaniards, or White Men ; and they are said to be a people superior, in physical qualities, to either of the races from which they have sprung, and much more prolific than the

aborigines. The following is the description given of them by Azara :—

“ Ces métis s'unissent en général les uns aux autres, parcequ'il ne passe en Amérique que très-peu de femmes Européennes, et ce sont les descendans de ces métis qui composent aujourd'hui au Paraguay la plus grande partie de ce qu'on appelle Espagnols. Ils me paraissent avoir quelque supériorité sur les Espagnols d'Europe, par leur taille, par l'élégance de leurs formes, et même par la blancheur de leur peau. Ces faits me font soupçonner non-seulement que le mélange des races les améliore, mais encore que l'espèce européenne l'emporte à la longue sur l'américaine, ou du moins le sexe masculin sur le féminin.

Mr. Catline's opinion of the mixed races between the North American Indians and the Whites and Negroes is unfavourable, at least as to their moral development. But his work contains several striking instances, which seem to militate against this view. It is particularly observable that many of the principal chiefs seem to be half-breeds. On the other hand the most remarkable among the many remarkable men whom Hayti has produced have been pure Negroes. The sagacious, far-reaching Toussaint, Dessalines, the bravest of the brave, and the vigorous-minded tyrant Christophe, were of that complexion. Pétion and Boyer, both of them Mulattoes, were men of less marked energy, though of greater flexibility of character than the black chiefs, with the exception of Toussaint.

Henri Christophe, King of Hayti, like his contemporary Murat, King of Naples, began life as a waiter at a tavern. He was possessed to a very remarkable degree of that mixture of qualities consisting of a stubborn will, perseverance, and aptitude for the conception of great ends, joined with very minute powers of observation, strong memory of details, and habit of parsimony, which con-

stitutes that race of men of whom Mr. Carlyle makes his heroes *par excellence*, — men called to construct empires from small beginnings, or barbarous materials— Peter the Great, Frederic the Great, Doctor Francia. He had, too, the same peculiar vein of caustic humour, in which these great personages were wont to season their acts of despotism. The following anecdote gives an idea at once of his style of wit and his method of government. He never remounted his cavalry: every newly enrolled horseman was presented with a horse, and then was expected to appear at all future parades well mounted and equipped. If he did not, he ran a great chance of being shot. The consequence was, that the cavalry generally looked well: no particular inquiry being made from whence the horses came. Henri used to point them out to foreigners with much self-complacency, and say “The king’s horses “change their skins sometimes: but they never die.” Sou-louque (the late Emperor Faustin), a man also of very considerable mental energy, notwithstanding the ludicrous associations which attach to his empire, was also, I believe, a pure Negro.

In New Zealand Dr. Thompson estimates the mixed population (1858) at 2000. “They are singularly free “from scrofula, the diseased taint in the Maori blood. “Physically they are a noble and beautiful race.”

II.

It is remarkable, however, that Mr. Stephens, the last and most accurate observer of the great ruined cities of Central America, ascribes those erections to a date not long preceding the conquest, and gives very good reasons for doing so.

The following passage is curious, as showing the strong hold which the traditions of Eldorado still retain on the Spanish imagination :—

“The rest of the Tierra de Guerra (land of war) never was conquered ; and at this day the north-eastern section, bounded by the range of the Cordilleras and the state of Chiapas, is occupied by Caudones, or unbaptized Indians, who live as their fathers did, acknowledge no submission to the Spaniards, and the government of Central America does not pretend to exercise any control over them. But the thing that roused us was the assertion by the padre, that four days on the road to Mexico, on the other side of the great Sierra, was a living city, large and populous, occupied by Indians, precisely in the same state as before the discovery of America. He had heard of it many years before, at the village of Chajul, and was told by the villagers that, from the topmost ridge of the Sierra, this city was distinctly visible. He was then young, and with much labour climbed to the naked summit of the Sierra, from which, at a height of ten or twelve thousand feet, he looked over an immense plain, extending to Yucatan and the Gulf of Mexico, and saw at a distance a large city spread over a great space, and with turrets white and glittering in the sun. The traditionary account of the Indians of Chajul is, that no white man has ever reached this city ; that the inhabitants speak the Maya language ; are aware that a race of strangers have conquered the whole country round ; and murder any white man who attempts to enter their territory. They have no coin, or other circulating medium ; no horses, cattle, mules, or other domestic animals, except fowls, and the cocks they keep underground to prevent their crowing being heard.”—*Stephens, Incidents of Travel in Central America, Chiapas, and Yucatan*, vol. ii. c. 11 ; and see his *Incidents of Travels in Yucatan*, vol. ii. p. 408. But I

fear that later travellers have pretty nearly dispelled the haze of Mr. Stephens's charming romance.

III.

The history of the three semi-civilized tribes (Creeks, Choctaws, Cherokees), is altogether so curious that I may be pardoned for inserting the following extracts from two travellers, one who describes them in their former seats, and one in their present. It will be seen that they have not retrograded, as yet, by any means, to the extent which might have been feared.

"The three first named tribes (Creeks, Cherokees, Choctaws) certainly hold out a promise of the gradual attainment of civilization, many not only cultivating large tracts, but holding in their own persons many slaves, and living altogether by agriculture. They may become permanent possessors of the soil they now cultivate. The recent invention of written characters, by a full-blood Cherokee, consisting of 84 signs, expressing all the dominant sounds of that language, and *the great number of half-breeds* among them, are both favourable to this change of life. The best proof that they are advancing from their savage state to a higher grade is, that their numbers increase, while almost all other Indian tribes spread over the American continent far and near are known to diminish in number so rapidly, that common observation alone enables any one to predict their utter extinction before the lapse of many years."—*Latrobe, Rambler in America*, vol. i. p. 163 (1832).

"The Cherokees, living in the vicinity of Fort Gibson on the Arkansas, and 700 miles west of the Mississippi, are a third part or more of the once very numerous and

dispelled the

bes (Creeks,
as that I may
ts from two
former seats,
at they have
extent which

Cherokees,
the gradual
cultivating
persons many

They may
they now cul-
racters, by a
s, expressing
nd the great
h favourable
they are ad-
her grade is,
st all other
ontinent far
so rapidly,
one to pre-
ose of many
l. i. p. 163

Fort Gibson
e Mississippi,
umerous and

“powerful tribe who inhabited, and still inhabit, a considerable part of the State of Georgia, and under a treaty made with the United States government have been removed to those regions, where they are settled on a fine tract of country; and having advanced somewhat in the arts and agriculture before they started, are now found to be mostly living well, cultivating their fields of corn, and other crops, which they raise with great success.”

“The Creeks (or Muskogees), of 20,000 in number, have exchanged their possessions in Mississippi and Alabama for a country adjoining to the Cherokees, on the south side of the Arkansas, to which they have already all removed, and on which, like the Cherokees, they are laying out fine farms, and building good houses, in which they live, in many instances surrounded by immense fields of (Indian) corn and wheat. There is scarcely a finer country on earth than that now owned by the Creeks; and, in North America, certainly no Indian tribe more advanced in the arts and agriculture than they are. It is no uncommon thing to see a Creek with 20 or 30 slaves at work on his plantation, having brought them from a slaveholding country, from which, in their long journey, and exposure to white men’s ingenuity, I venture to say that most of them get rid of one half of them during their long and disastrous crusade.”

The Choctaws, of 15,000, removed from the northern parts of Alabama and Mississippi within the few years past, now occupy a large and rich tract of country south of the Arkansas and the Canadian river, adjoining to the country of the Creeks and Cherokees, equally civilized, and living much in the same manner. (*Catline, Letters and Notes*, vol. ii. p. 119. 1857.)

It appears that most of the ancient tribes which resisted the English in their gradual settlement of the

eastern sea-board still exist, though in extremely diminished numbers, having been moved, for the most part, step by step into locations far west of their original seats. Some of them, *who have been the least exposed to this process*, seemed to have attained some degree of civilization, *e.g.* the Tuscaroras, lately seated near Buffalo in New York, and the Senecas, in the same vicinity. But these also have been removed within the last year or two. Some others, like the Delawares, retain, in their decline, the same warlike and indomitable character which distinguished them in the early times of American colonization.—See the sketch of these tribes in the same work, letter 47.

IV.

(1861.) The history of missionary enterprise among barbarous nations, since the first publication of these lectures, presents very little on which the mind can dwell with satisfaction. Much good has been done in insulated cases. But it is impossible to say with truth that any general or substantial progress has been attained. And, as usual in such cases, honest zeal, disappointed in the results of the past, finds its compensation in exaggerating the prospects of every new undertaking. In missionary matters, it is “he that putteth on his armour” who boasts himself, rather than he who is taking it off. A great project is heralded with precisely the same exultation as if it had been a great success. Among ourselves, the Melanesian mission, the Niger expedition, the recent South African scheme,—a’l have been introduced to the world with such prefaces of self-congratulation, that even far greater triumphs than has been allotted or seem likely to be allotted to either of them would appear inadequate to

extremely di-
r the most
eir original
t exposed to
e degree of
near Buffalo
cinity. But
ast year or
ain, in their
e character
of American
in the same

prise among
ion of these
nd can dwell
e in insulated
uth that any
ained. And,
ted in the re-
exaggerating
n missionary
" who boasts
A great pro-
ulation as if
lves, the Me-
recent South
to the world
hat even far
eem likely to
nadequate to

anticipation thus excited. And, among these ebullitions of very honest, but not very far-seeing exultation, there is but little evidence of an adequate perception of the fatal truth that it is our own evil deeds — our profligacy, our fraud, our extortion, our invasions, the terror and the hatred which Europeans excite at almost every point of the earth where they are brought into contact with unsubdued races of inferior civilization — which render our Christianity a by-word, and the efforts of the missionary fruitless. The project of national civilization, which at once multiplies the numbers of Europeans in the distant parts of the earth, and arms them with even greater superiority of force than heretofore, tends also to diminish the caution and considerateness which formerly to some extent controlled them in their intercourse with its feebler inhabitants; more easily able to awe them, to subjugate them, to exterminate them; less fit to excite their love or their respect, to evangelize or to civilize them.

These may be deemed by many too discouraging views; and it is well at least to qualify them by some attention to what has been actually effected of late years. In Polynesia there is no doubt that a tolerably numerous and intelligent race, scattered over a vast archipelago, have been brought mainly within the limits of Christendom. And though a period of discouragement and relaxation seems for the present to have succeeded the over-strained energy of the first generation of missionary converts, this is in all probability no more than a natural fluctuation in human affairs. The work, externally at least, is done; there seems little danger of relapse into heathenism, or (visited as they now are by numbers of Europeans) into barbarism, in the old sense of the word. There seems literally to be more fear of the physical decay, than the moral decline, of the Polynesian Christians, including the New Zealanders: for the complaints of diminishing population seem to continue without abate-

ment.* Of the success of Roman Catholic proselytism in the same regions (chiefly the western, or Melanesian, section of the Pacific) we know little authentic, except from the published missionary relations, which must be taken with the usual allowance. In South Africa, under the British government, and in the frontier regions, our missionaries have acquired great power among the chiefs, and guide in great measure — and for good — the policy which governs numerous tribes, among whom, individually, religion has hardly penetrated at all. For though there are a few thriving missions, there is little evidence of any extensive progress made in the conversion of the South African races. In India, while the effect produced by missionary exertion on the established religions of the country has as yet been next to nothing, there has been of late years a marked and singular tendency, among outlying tribes of low caste or no caste, to embrace Christianity; and that, to all appearances, not superficially alone, but with real change of morals and conduct, and much self-denying exertion.

But, undoubtedly, by far the most remarkable phenomenon in the recent religious history of the heathen world is the great Chinese rebellion, and the attitude assumed by its leaders towards Christianity. I say their attitude; because their own religious profession is undoubtedly entitled to no regard at all. It was only a very natural delusion which disposed our missionaries to recognize a tendency towards gospel truth in that heterogeneous mass of tenets, the compound of policy and superstition, which these innovators formed, after the organizing fashion of their race, into regular articles of belief. But the remarkable feature of the movement is, that the outward, though most unreal, approximation towards the

* See, in particular, Admiral Erskine's very interesting volume on the "Islands of the Pacific."

roselytism in
Melanesian,
entic, except
hich must be
Africa, under
regions, our
ng the chiefs,
— the policy
whom, indivi-
For though
little evidence
version of the
ffect produced
d religions of
ning, there has
endency, among
e, to embrace
ot superficially
d conduct, and

arkable pheno-
f the heathen
d the attitude
ty. I say their
ofession is un-
It was only a
missionaries to
in that hetero-
policy and super-
the organizing
of belief. But
is, that the out-
on towards the

eresting volume on

foreign and once despised religion of Christ, which that creed presents, should have been regarded as politic by the chiefs, and accepted as attractive by the multitude. This proves at once that the foundations of old belief are utterly shaken, and that the superior civilization and higher qualities of that European race, which they had held for ages in contempt, are beginning to tell on the imagination of the masses, even in that remote but populous interior where scarcely an European face has as yet been seen. As the Fetichism of Africa is just now breaking to pieces before Mahometanism, so, apparently, are the philosophical superstitions of the extreme East before the faith of the West. And although, in both instances, a mere caricature of the conquering religion alone has as yet been produced, who can estimate, even by conjecture, the vastness, or the nearness, of those changes in the fortunes of the human race which these obscure movements at once herald and prepare!

LECTURE XX.

PROGRESS OF WEALTH IN COLONIES. — RATE OF WAGES. — RATE OF PROFITS. — TAXATION.

LET us proceed to investigate very briefly the causes and character of the economical progress of colonies in what may be called their second or adolescent stage, when they are already established as communities, and before they have attained that density of population which characterizes old states.

I need not repeat what has been so often urged in these lectures, that the cause which impels adventurers to the foundation of new colonies, and the reward of the exertions of the emigrant, is the increased productiveness of labour when applied to a new soil.* The labour of every man in the colonies, said Sir Josiah Child in the early days of our American plantations, is four times as valuable as if he had remained at home. The industry of those who go into a foreign plantation, says

* "The question (of colonization) is, in general, treated too exclusively as one of distribution, of relieving one labour-market and supplying another. It is this: but it is also a question of production, and of the most efficient employment of the productive resources of the world. Much has been said of the good economy of importing commodities from the place where they can be bought cheapest; while the good economy of producing them where they can be produced cheapest, is comparatively little thought of. . . . The exportation of labourers and capital from old to new countries, from a place where their productive power is less, to a place where it is greater, increases by so much the aggregate produce of the labour and capital of the world." — *Mill, Political Economy*, Book. v. chap. 11.

William Penn, is worth more than if they remained here, "the product of their labour being in commodities of a "superior nature to those of this country;" that is, greater either in amount or value. According to a calculation of Humboldt, the return of wheat in Prussia in his time might be estimated at 4 or 5 to 1; in France, on the average, at 5 or 6 to 1; in the best soils, 13 to 1; in La Plata, 12 to 1; the North of Mexico, 17 to 1; Peru, 18 to 1; equinoxial Mexico, 24 to 1. These, no doubt, are remarkable instances of fertility; but if the comparison were made between the amount of exchangeable value which may be produced by an European labourer raising wheat on a soil of average fertility, and a negro on a sugar estate in Cuba or Demerara, the difference would probably appear still more remarkable.*

But it is a general law that "the possession by any "country of superior advantages in producing commodities extensively demanded in foreign markets, confers "upon that country a greater command than her neighbours of all the productions of foreign industry; and "enables her to maintain a higher scale of prices for all "the products of domestic industry."† This law has been very ably demonstrated by Mr. Senior, in his Lectures on the Cost of obtaining Money. The average rate of profit in England is supposed to be about one tenth, or 11 per cent. In Hindostan, Mr. Senior estimates it, conjecturally, at one sixth, or 20 per cent. But the average annual wages of labour in England are calculated by him at from nine to fifteen pounds troy of silver. In Hindostan they are from one to two pounds troy of silver. In other words, those countries which give the silver in exchange for the produce of the labour of England and Hindostan (for neither of these produce silver), are willing to give more than

* See a computation made by Don Ramon de la Sagra, in his statistical work on Cuba.

† Torrens, Colonization of South Australia, pp. 163, 164.

eight times as much for the commodities which an Englishman can produce in a year, as for those which a Hindoo can produce in a year. Or, which is merely to vary the expression once more, labour in England is eight times as productive of exportable commodities as in Hindostan: after allowance has been made for the different rate of profit in England and Hindostan, the labourer's wages for a year having been, by the supposition, advanced to him by the capitalist.

"In the mining countries," proceeds Mr. Senior, "all prices ultimately depend on the cost of producing the precious metals. Although the remuneration paid to the miner is not identical with that received by other producers, yet it affords the scale by which the remuneration of all other producers is calculated. When once experience has ascertained the comparative advantages and disadvantages of different occupations, they will continue to bear, as to wages, the same proportion to one another. A fall in the cost of producing silver must raise the wages of the miner. If those of the agriculturist were not to rise in proportion, the miner's wages would be more than in proportion to his sacrifices, and they would be reduced by the consequent competition. And, on the other hand, mining would be abandoned, if, when the cost of producing silver were increased, the wages in other employments could be stationary. The mine worked by England is the general market of the world. The miners are those who produce those commodities by the exportation of which the precious metals are obtained; and the amount of the precious metals, which, by a given exertion of labour and advance of capital, they can obtain, must afford the scale by which the remuneration of all other producers is calculated."*

Mr. Senior proceeds to show in what manner money

* Lectures on the Cost of obtaining Money, p. 15.

which an Eng-
nose which a
is merely to
a England is
ommodities as
made for the
Indostan, the
by the suppo-

r. Senior, "all
producing the
ation paid to
ved by other
ich the remu-
lated. When
arative advan-
upations, they
ne proportion
roducing silver
those of the
h, the miner's
to his sacri-
he consequent
mining would
ing silver were
ents could be
nd is the ge-
are those who
ation of which
he amount of
rtion of labour
ust afford the
her producers

manner money
p. 15.

prices, as well as money wages, are raised by the increased command of the precious metals which results from increased productiveness of labour. He assumes that the average wages of the manufacturing labourer are 15*s.* a week, and those of the agricultural labourer 10*s.* a week. These are, of course, the sums which are necessary at the existing rate of prices to afford each of them that amount of remuneration which the habits of the country have established. He supposes, therefore, that on an estate of one hundred acres, 200 quarters go annually to the landlord in the shape of rent, and 200 are retained by the farmer to divide between himself and his labourers. The value of those 200 quarters must be equal to the wages of the labourers, after deducting the farmer's profit for having paid those wages in advance. "We will suppose that the farmer in question employs ten labourers, whose wages are advanced for a year before the produce is sold, and that the average rate of profit is one tenth, or about 11 per cent. per annum. When wages are 10*s.* a week, or 26*l.* a year, per labourer, the wages of ten labourers amount to 260*l.* a year, making with the addition of one tenth for profits, 286*l.*, which must be the average price of the 200 quarters annually retained by the farmer to pay his profit and his labourers' wages. And as the landlord's 200 quarters sell for the same prices, his rent must also be 286*l.* a year."

But if any improvement in English manufacturing skill should raise the value of English manufactures in the foreign market, and consequently the wages of English manufacturing labourers (say from 15*s.* to 30*s.* a week), the wages of *all* English labour, says Mr. Senior, would rise in the same proportion; and consequently the prices of those commodities, such as corn, in the production of which no such improvement of skill had taken place, must also double.

I presume that, in this calculation, Mr. Senior is exclu-

ding the effect of foreign competition. If foreign corn were admitted, it is clear that the price of British corn could not double under the circumstances which he supposes; it could only rise to that height at which the produce raised by the foreign grower would compete with it: either, therefore, the wages of the agricultural labourer would be kept down (but this they could not permanently be, the resource of manufacturing industry being open), or less corn would be raised, and the less fertile soils thrown out of corn cultivation; more goods would be produced to exchange for corn from abroad, and a certain number of hands employed in agriculture gradually absorbed in manufactures. The prices of all domestic articles consumed by the labourers would rise; but they would evidently not rise to the extent of the rise in wages, unless in those instances in which competition from abroad was impossible: the command of the English labourer over foreign articles would be doubled, if the increased demand thus produced did not raise their price; but this it would inevitably do to some extent.

The skill of English manufacturing labourers is, therefore, the great advantage by which English high wages and high prices are maintained. And precisely a similar advantage must be enjoyed by any country which has exclusive facilities for raising produce bearing a value in the general market of the world. Such facilities are enjoyed in a peculiar degree by the countries producing the precious metals: and in these, accordingly, the money wages of labour, and the money prices of most commodities, are excessively high. Such facilities are likewise enjoyed by all new countries possessing much land, applicable to raising exportable produce; the cotton-growing States of America; the flourishing parts of the West Indies; the new wool-growing colonies of the southern hemisphere. To all these the fertility or the other advantages of their soil are what skill and machinery are

to England: they command high money wages, and consequently the money prices of many commodities are proportionally high.*

This is a permanent cause of high money wages and prices; permanent, so long as the advantages mentioned continue to exist. But there is another temporary cause, less important in an economical point of view, but very striking in its effects. This is the great importation of money by emigrants into colonies to which the stream of emigration is directed: particularly those which are the resort of capitalists. Government expenditure has of course the like effects. High money wages and prices in very young colonies, where production has as yet hardly commenced, are mainly owing to this circumstance. The money wages of bricklayers, masons, and carpenters, in Van Dieman's Land, amounted, in 1824, to 12s. a day; in 1830 they had fallen to 10s.; in 1838 to 6s. or 6s. 6d. Yet between 1830 and 1838 the exports of the colony were trebled, while the population of the colony did not nearly double. The fall in money wages must have been mainly owing to the cessation of the influx of free emigrants, and consequently of money from Great Britain, the course of colonial enterprise having taken in the interval another direction. And in this way we are enabled to account for the paradoxical phenomenon which appears to have surprised many visitors to flourishing infant colonies, where wages have appeared to rise instead of falling with every fresh arrival of immigrants, although as yet production had scarcely commenced and the labours of preparation were not concluded.

To return, however, to the investigation of more general principles. Although money prices and the

* It is necessary to distinguish between "money" and the precious metals. The reason why these are almost uniformly scarce in young countries is examined by M. Chevalier in his *Cours d'Econ. Politique*, vol. iii. sec. x. ch. 2.

money wages of labour are necessarily high in countries possessing exclusive advantages for raising exportable produce, it by no means follows that the real wages of labour, that is, the amount of necessities and comforts obtainable by the labourer, are necessarily high also. Real wages depend altogether upon the proportion between the number of the labouring classes and the amount of the fund for the maintenance of labour: and that proportion mainly depends on the habits and tastes of the labourers themselves; or rather, in countries where the rate of wages is low, the cause and the effect, inferior self-respect and superfluous numbers, are continually reacting upon each other. Therefore, money may be cheap, and labour cheap also. It does not appear that the condition of the Mexican miner was a very prosperous one, and that of the Mexican peasant was very indifferent, at a period when Mexico produced nearly half the precious metals which entered into the commerce of the world, and when money wages and prices were inordinately high.

But where labour is scarce, and the influx of capital great, in consequence of exclusive facilities for production, there not only money but real wages are necessarily high. And this is the ordinary case with new settlements raising exportable produce. If we analyse the enormous rate of money wages realized by a labourer in New South Wales, at the present day, we shall find that *four* different causes concur in producing it. Money is cheap, because New South Wales possesses great facilities for the production of wool, in consequence of which a day's labour in Australia raises a greater value in exportable produce than a day's labour in most other countries, according to Mr. Senior's principle which we have just been investigating. Money is also cheap, secondly, because a quantity of silver, or its equivalent, is annually brought into the colony without return by immigrants. Thirdly, the

in countries
g exportable
real wages of
and comforts
ly high also.
proportion be-
ses and the
labour: and
its and tastes
untries where
effect, inferior
e continually
oney may be
ot appear that
ry prosperous
ry indifferent,
rly half the
mmerce of the
es were inor-

lux of capital
or production,
ecessarily high.
ements raising
rmous rate of
South Wales,
ifferent causes
because New
he production
y's labour in
table produce
according to
been investi-
cause a quan-
brought into
Thirdly, the

necessary rate of wages is high, because the exchangeable value of foreign commodities, articles of necessity or comfort, consumed by the labourer, is enhanced by the length of the transit. And, lastly, real wages are high, *i. e.* the quantity of commodities which the labourer can command is great, because the demand for labour is great in proportion to the supply, in a country where labourers are few, and land cheap and abundant. And the effect of real wages being high is this, that the capitalist cannot profitably apply his capital to inferior soils, or in less valuable situations; and, consequently, that the productiveness of labour continues at its maximum.

It might not be difficult, with the aid of a little labour and tolerable statistical materials, to assign its relative proportion to each of these causes; but I do not find that this has been done by any of the authorities whom I have been able to consult. After all deductions made for the high prices of things consumed by the labourer, his real wages must reach from twice to three times the amount he could have commanded at home,

So, again, in British America: although the application of Mr. Senior's principle does not, at first sight, appear equally plain in the case of countries producing in comparatively small proportion valuable articles for the foreign market, yet we shall find that it is so in reality. In Upper Canada and the United States, Mr. Senior estimates wages at from fifteen to twenty pounds of silver per annum, a rate which has probably rather fallen since the publication of his lectures: while "the quantity of labour requisite to obtain the necessaries of life is not much more than half as great" as in England. A day's labour in Canada is consequently far more productive of exchangeable value than a day's labour in England. Not because the actual quantity of produce obtained from the soil is great, relatively to the extent of land cultivated: eighteen bushels of wheat per acre, in Canada, is thought

a fair average return. But it must be remembered, that the comparison is between labour unassisted by capital in Canada and in England. The question proposed is, How much exchangeable value is produced by the labour of an individual, without any reference to the machinery, the stock, the expensive appliances by which labour may be assisted? If, in addition to the necessary profit on all these advances in the two countries respectively, the labourer in Canada obtains the equivalent of twenty pounds of silver, and the labourer in England fifteen, the value of the produce of the Canadian's labour, in the market of the world, is to that of the Englishman as four to three. And although the return to labour in the former country would appear moderate enough if it were estimated by the produce per acre, it is in reality considerable in proportion to the expenditure of labour and capital. The worst land cultivated in England—that which pays no rent—may, for any thing I know, produce more per acre than land in Canada which returns not more than the average rate of profit. But in the former case the expenditure of capital is much greater, the remuneration of labour much smaller.

It is plain, therefore, that the improvement which takes place in the condition of the labourer by removal to a colony depends on two distinct causes: increase of the remuneration of labour, by reason of its application to the raising of articles of greater exchangeable value, and by reason of its application to more fertile soils. In countries where both these causes exist together, the remuneration of labour may be, for a time, even extravagantly high. But the latter cause alone is sufficient to produce a numerous, happy, flourishing peasantry, the produce of whose industry is of no great value in the general market, but who subsist, amid their own rude plenty, in a condition perhaps as prosperous as any which can exist in this world of imperfect results. “It is when the market price of

“labour exceeds the natural price, that the condition of the labourer is flourishing and happy, that he has it in his power to command a greater proportion of the necessities of life, and therefore to rear a healthy and numerous family.”*

“In all countries and at all times,” says the same writer, “profits depend on the quantity of labour requisite to provide necessities for the labourers, on that land or with that capital which yields no rent.” That is, the relative amount of profits to wages depends on this circumstance. By “necessaries” Mr. Ricardo here means, in effect, that quantity of commodities which the labourer himself determines to accept as his share of the produce of his labour. It is therefore a fluctuating quantity; depending chiefly, or almost entirely, on the relative abundance of labour to capital. In new colonies, where labour is so scarce that the salaried engineer, who is employed by government to survey waste land, scarcely receives so much as the day-labourer who carries his chain for him, the quantity of commodities which the labourer consumes is great, and his condition flourishing. Nevertheless, if the whole amount raised by his labour is very large, it may well be that wages are low in Mr. Ricardo’s sense of the word, because the quantity of labour required to raise that large quantity of commodities may be very small. Profits, therefore, may be high. Suppose that, in a country where the best soil only was cultivated, the labourer, with the advance of capital to the value of 23*l.*, could raise produce to the value of 150*l.* in a year; wages might be 40*s.* a week, and profits 20 per cent. Suppose that in another country the labourer, on the worst soil cultivated, with the like advance of capital, could only raise produce to the value of 50*l.*, profits might be 10 per cent. only, and yet wages would not exceed 10*s.* 5*d.* a week. In the latter country wages would be higher

* Ricardo, Principles, chap. 5.

than in the former, in the sense in which Mr. Ricardo uses the word ; they would absorb a larger proportion of the total produce, although the condition of the labourer would be very far inferior to that which he would enjoy in the other ; because " a greater quantity of labour would be requisite to obtain necessaries for him."

It is very evident, therefore, that in new colonies, in which fertile soil only is cultivated, both profits and wages may be for a considerable time absolutely high ; the condition of the labourer may be enviable, and yet the capitalist may accumulate with great rapidity. But what is to induce the labourer to be content with such an amount of wages as I have supposed, great as it is in proportion to what he could have earned in his own country ? *He* is evidently the party who stands on advantageous ground in the contract ; he dictates terms to his employer. When labour is abundant, as in old countries, although the amount of natural wages is fixed by distinct and independent causes, the market price of labour often is for a short time, and always appears to be, chiefly at the discretion of the capitalist. In new countries this state of things is reversed. The owner of property, who has transferred it to the colonies in hopes of obtaining a better return from it, will be content with any amount of profit greater than he could have realized at home, or could realize in other accessible markets for labour : that is, he will not remove his capital as long as he can obtain thus much. The labourer can raise his demands to any point short of that which would actually drive the capital from the colony. And if high profits are realized in such situations, where labour is free, and there are no slaves or convicts to work on compulsory terms, it is in reality owing only to this : that the wants and habits of the labourer are not calculated on so high a scale as the remuneration which he might command ; that he is not himself aware of the superiority of his

Ricardo uses
ortion of the
the labourer
would enjoy
ty of labour
him."

y colonies, in
profits and
olutely high ;
able, and yet
apidity. But
ent with such
great as it is
ed in his own
no stands on
dictates terms
nt, as in old
wages is fixed
arket price of
ys appears to
list. In new
The owner of
onies in hopes
e content with
have realized
e markets for
apital as long
can raise his
would actually
f high profits
ur is free, and
on compulsory
that the wants
ted on so high
ht command ;
eriority of his

position ; and therefore, when men speak of the exorbitancy of the demands of labourers in new colonies, the word is only to be understood by comparison with the modest scale of remuneration which contented them in the mother country. It may be questioned whether they are at all in the habit of asking for as much as they *might* obtain.

So long as cultivation continues to extend itself over land of the first quality, the rate of profits is more likely to fall than rise, unless large supplies of labour be introduced, larger than the ordinary course of emigration may be expected to bring. "In new settlements," to adopt again the words of Mr. Ricardo, "where the arts and knowledge of countries far advanced in refinement are introduced, it is probable that capital has a tendency to increase faster than mankind : and if the deficiency of labourers were not supplied by more populous countries, this tendency would very much raise the price of labour." Some collateral causes which lead to this result are well pointed out by M. Say. He shows that in colonies accumulation is nearly the only object of the capitalist : that the desire to spend, which counteracts it to a certain extent in old countries, scarcely exists. "Capital," he says, "is created more rapidly in such countries than in anciently civilized states. It seems as if the colonists, in leaving their native country, leave behind them also a portion of their vices." I will not detain you here, except for a moment, to remark on the moral character of M. Say's views, which unfortunately display, at times, far too much of those characteristics which prejudice has attributed to the sentiments of political economists in general. He too often confounds the object of his science with the great ends of human life ; and treats man as a creature born to accumulate wealth, and all laws, usages, and sentiments which divert his energies from that legitimate direction as injurious and impertinent. So, in the passage before us,

he appears to regard the habit of spending as simply vicious, and to consider the transition from it to a habit of money-making as a step in moral advancement. "They renounce display : that display which costs so dear in Europe, and which serves so little purpose. In the regions to which they have emigrated, people are found to pay no regard to any but the useful qualities ; and no more is consumed than is required by reasonable wants, always less insatiable than factitious ones. They have few cities, and no great ones" (we have seen that this is not an universal rule). "The agricultural life which they are in general compelled to lead, is the most economical of all : lastly, their industry is proportionally the most productive, and that which requires least capital to carry it on." *

But the result of this rapid accumulation is, as we have seen, an increasing demand for labour, and a powerful tendency towards a rise of wages and a lowering of profits ; and hence, as we have also seen in former lectures, the urgent desire for cheaper and more subservient labourers—for a class to whom the capitalist might dictate terms, instead of being dictated to by them—which produced and maintained slavery and the convict system.

And here, it must once more be repeated, is the critical point in the history of colonies. The course which their development takes at this period—when capital begins to accumulate—determines their career and the character of their society for many generations. If they succeed in procuring and preserving a compulsory supply of labour, they become, virtually or actually, slave countries ; and the sources of their prosperity, and causes of their decline, have been traced in former lectures.

And we have seen that there is, as yet, no instance in history of a colony possessing abundant fertile land,

* *Traité d'Ec. Politique*, liv. i. ch. 19.

which has continued to raise exportable produce in large quantities without the aid of compulsory labour ; whatever may be the success of the experiments now in progress.

We have seen, also, that in colonies possessing an extent of fertile soil, but not raising staple exportable produce in large quantities, the accumulation of capital has been slow and uncertain, while the remuneration of labour has continued high ; that the land has been divided into small estates ; that equality of fortunes has led to equality of social distinctions, and the rising community has necessarily assumed a democratic form.

We will examine more closely in my next lecture the characteristics of a community which is in the course of such development. Let us retrace our steps for a while, and consider the mode in which taxation affects the advance of a new colony.

We have seen that surplus profits, or rent, may be and have been taxed in some colonies. In our own, however, the revenue is chiefly derived from two sources : the land sales, which have only of late years formed a considerable item in our receipts ; and duties on imports.* Of the former, enough has been already said in the course of these lectures. We have seen that they inflict taxation on the colony in no other sense than this,—that they levy beforehand from the purchaser a portion of capital which he would otherwise have carried to it.

The duties on imports in new colonies fall almost entirely on articles of immediate consumption. They import no raw produce for the purpose of converting it into

* Principal sources of revenue in Australia : —

	New South Wales, 1857.	Victoria, 1856.
Customs	£533,000	£1,660,000
Land	382,000	900,000
Total	1,157,000	2,950,000

manufactured articles, but receive these in exchange for their own commodities raised by agriculture and pasturage. The burden of supporting the government of these colonies is therefore principally borne, in the first instance, by the consumers of those ordinary luxuries which are common to all classes wherever the rate of wages is high: in other words, chiefly out of the wages of the labourer. But a tax on the "necessaries" of the labourer (which word for our present purpose includes such ordinary luxuries), says Mr. Ricardo, must, by raising wages, lower profits. It is "partly a tax on profits, partly a tax on rich consumers."* Leaving rich consumers out of the question, then, if wages were at the maximum, leaving only so much profit as would keep capital in the colony, such a tax must fall on wages only. If wages were not at the maximum (as it has been already shown that they are not likely to be), then it must fall on profits. And if it were possible to remit the duties levied on imports in any of our colonies, it is probable that the immediate effect would be a rise of profits only.

We should, indeed, deceive ourselves if we imagined that, in an old country, the effect of a tax on necessities ends here. Indirectly it lowers the rate of wages. Falling, as we have seen, on profits it operates in the same manner as a tax on the employment of capital would do. It lowers the rate of profit, and retards the accumulation of capital, or diminishes it. "Taxes, generally," adds the same writer, "so far as they impair the real capital of the country, diminish the demand for labour; and therefore it is a probable, but not a necessary nor a peculiar, consequence of a tax on wages, that, although wages would rise, they would not rise by a sum precisely equal to the tax." . . . "All the effects which are produced on the profits of stock and on the wages of labour by a rise of

* Principles, ch. 14.

exchange for
re and pastu-
ment of these
first instance,
ies which are
e of wages is
wages of the
of the labourer
udes such or-
raising wages,
ts, partly a tax
sumers out of
imum, leaving
in the colony,
wages were not
nown that they
profits. And if
on imports in
the immediate

f we imagined
on necessities
wages. Falling,
e same manner
ld do. It lowers
ation of capital,
dds the same
capital of the
; and therefore
a peculiar, con-
h wages would
ecisely equal to
roduced on the
our by a rise of

“rent and a rise of necessities, in the natural progress of
“society and increased difficulty of production, will be
“produced by a rise of wages in consequence of taxation,
“and therefore the enjoyments of the labourer, as well as
“those of his employer, will be curtailed by the tax; and
“not by this tax particularly, but by any other which
“should raise an equal amount.”

But the effect of such taxation is by no means the same
in new countries, in which the first stage of diminished
productiveness has not been reached, nor lands of the
second quality resorted to. We have seen that it would
be possible in such countries for the labourer to engross
the whole value of the produce of his labour, except only
so much as would remunerate the capitalist for trans-
ferring his capital from the mother country; that is, a
rate of profit exceeding what he could have obtained at
home, or could obtain in any other accessible situation.
We have seen, also, that the labourer does not in fact do
so; that, high as his wages are, his habits are still such as
to render him content with a less share of the fruits of
his industry than he might obtain; and, consequently,
that profits are very high, and accumulation very rapid,
even when all allowance is made, as it should be, for the
increased remuneration rendered necessary by the risk
and uncertainty of advantageous employment. This being
the case, taxation falls only on profits; and the ease with
which a very heavy load of it is borne in new colonies,
raising exportable produce, is the strongest proof of the
productiveness of capital.* In New South Wales every
individual paid in 1840 between 2*l.* and 3*l.* per annum to
the government, independently of the revenue raised by
sales of land; while the inhabitants of Great Britain and

* (1861.) In Victoria, the annual contribution of each individual to
the provincial revenue amounts to about 4*l.* independent of land
receipts; probably the greatest amount of ordinary taxation ever paid
in any community.

Ireland paid about 1*l.* 15*s.* per head ; and those of France little more than 1*l.* It must, however, be remembered that in New South Wales there was no local or municipal taxation.

It need scarcely be observed, that if taxation were made to fall directly on wages, it could not vary in its effects from taxation on the articles used by labourers. "Taxes on wages will raise wages, and therefore diminish the profits on stock."* And, therefore, such a tax as Mr. Poulett Scrope recommends, on the wages of labourers introduced into a colony, to be paid in the first instance by the employer, would be in reality a tax on the employment of capital.†

There are, however, other modes of raising a revenue in colonies, which have been proposed by political economists, although, as far as I am aware, never yet put into practice to any extent in those of our country. Land is the great source of wealth in such regions, and it is natural, therefore, that schemes for making the land bear a considerable share of the burdens of government should have occurred to the minds of many inquirers.

A tax on land might be imposed either in the form of an annual payment per acre, without reference to quality, or in proportion to the produce ; in which last case it would resemble tithes, rent, and the tax paid in India, as in other oriental countries, by the cultivator to the state. The difference between the incidence of these two modes of taxation is considerable in old countries, where lands of many degrees of fertility, all yielding rent except the worst, are cultivated. A land tax of so much per acre presses, of course, more heavily on the inferior lands, more lightly on those of better quality, than a corn-rent, or tax proportioned to the gross produce. Consequently (supposing the total amount of the sum to be levied in either

* Ricardo, Principles, ch. 14.

† See Lect. XIII.

way the same), if foreign produce *were* admitted to competition, the imposition of the former tax would throw out of cultivation land of a superior quality to that which would be abandoned in consequence of the latter. The price of agricultural produce would be unaltered, being fixed by the foreign competition. But if foreign produce were excluded, then the effect of a land-tax would be to raise the price of produce to a higher amount than a tithe-duty of equal amount would raise it; because a greater amount of taxation would have to be paid by the worst land cultivated. It would, therefore, diminish consumption to a greater degree; from which farther effects would follow, which it is not necessary here to trace.

But in new countries the difference between these two modes of taxation would be less marked. There is in such regions comparatively little difference in quality between the lands occupied. It is true that one farm may yield considerably more per acre than another; but if so, we may be pretty certain that the more fertile of the two has inferior advantages in point of situation: some speculations will of course be more successful than others, but, all things considered, land used for the purpose of cultivation will not yield much more, or less, than the average profits; and rent has not yet begun to be paid, or monopoly profits to be realized by the cultivator on his own land, except in some few peculiarly advantageous localities, such as the immediate neighbourhood of towns, and so forth. Therefore a tax imposed in proportion to the gross produce of the land must more nearly approximate in its effects to a tax per acre.

And it appears to be the opinion of some observers, that this, the most ancient of all modes of taxation, is peculiarly appropriate to the circumstances of new colonies. Tithe, or any burden similarly assessed on the produce of the land, is felt as a grievance in old countries, because the superior productiveness of one piece of land, in

comparison with another, is often produced, not by superior fertility, but by greater expenditure of capital. Every improvement which renders the soil more productive subjects it, under the tithe system, to a higher amount of taxation. If tithe fell in reality only on the consumer, as Mr. Ricardo supposed, this would matter little: but this is not the case; and although I have not space on the present occasion to carry you through the details of proof necessary to refute his proposition, you will find, on studying the subject, that even in countries where foreign produce is excluded from the market, tithe falls partly on the consumer and partly on rent. Now what is called rent, in old countries, is partly profits: profits on capital expended on such improvements. Tithe is therefore, in part, a tax on the employment of such capital, and is injurious accordingly.

But in countries where only the most fertile soil is cultivated, the expenditure of capital in permanent improvements is as yet comparatively small. A proportional tax on gross produce is therefore unattended by the same mischievous effects. Such a tax is, in fact, little more than a duty levied on the free bounty of nature. In so far as it raises the price of corn and other necessities consumed by the labourer, it is, as we have seen, a tax on general profits. In so far as it diminishes the return from the land to the cultivator, it is a tax on profits also. Its effect on the progress of wealth must therefore be nearly the same as that of an equivalent tax imposed indirectly, such as a customs or excise duty on articles consumed by the mass of the population.

But there would be practical difficulties of considerable weight in the way of such a tax; that is, if it were raised to any considerable amount. If it were imposed on all land indiscriminately, as soon as purchased, it must have the effect of checking the progress of settlement, and thereby retarding the progress of wealth in the colony.

ced, not by
re of capital.
il more pro-
, to a higher
y only on the
would matter
gh I have not
a through the
opposition, you
n in countries
e market, tithe
n rent. Now
partly profits:
ements. Tithe
rment of such

tile soil is cul-
nent improve-
proportional tax
by the same
little more than

In so far as
aries consumed
ax on general
turn from the
also. Its effect
be nearly the
indirectly, such
nsumed by the

of considerable
if it were raised
imposed on all
d, it must have
ettlement, and
in the colony.

If, on the other hand, it were only imposed after a certain period of cultivation, it would then tend to promote the abandonment of old land for new: a process which it may not be desirable to counteract; but which, for the general interest of society, ought clearly not to meet with artificial encouragement. In short, if we investigate the question, I think we shall find that even in new countries, the system of tithe or corn-rent is only appropriate and serviceable where the agricultural population is strongly attached to the soil; either by religious observance, as in the case of some ancient nations; or by positive law, as it was in the later Roman and feudal society, and as it is at the present day in all those countries in which corn-rents prevail — as, for instance, in the eastern parts of Europe. It would be impossible to apply it with success in regions where the lightest of all recognized ties are those which bind the cultivator to the land which he occupies.

Lastly, taxation which falls on rent is, of all kinds, the least injurious to the productive industry of a country. It merely substitutes, *pro tanto*, the government for the landlord as owner of the soil. In new colonies rent is comparatively inconsiderable. Yet it arises early, not in the land generally used for agricultural purposes, but in that which possesses certain monopolized advantages of situation; such as suburban tracts of ground, spots commanding falls of water, the immediate vicinity of harbours and navigable waters. A moderate tax on rent, as soon as it begins to be paid, in localities like these, would operate only to the disadvantage of speculation, and would leave unimpaired the real resources of the colony. But it is not easy to devise a practicable method of imposing it.

We have now cast a rapid glance on the main features of the economical condition and progress of colonies before the first point of retardation is reached: that at which the productiveness of capital begins of itself to diminish, independently of any effects of taxation, com-

mercial restrictions, and other political causes, and merely from the limited character of the assistance which Nature lends to human industry: a point which it may be said that none of our colonies, regarded generally, have yet reached, except the older West India islands, and from which many of them are centuries distant, as far as human anticipation can be relied upon. We shall return to this subject, and observe the social condition, as well as the economical, of a community in the earliest stage of its progress. But we will first discuss some particulars relating to the expenditure of colonial revenues, and the mode of providing for public institutions.

NOTE.—The following table very briefly exhibits the rise which has taken place in wages in the colonies employing the greater amount of labour, between 1840 and the present time.

It is compiled from tables of revenue, &c., and colonization circulars.

	Agricultural Labourers (with board).	Carpenter (per day).
Canada, West . . .	1840. £24 to £36 1858. 2s. 6d. per day	1840. 6s. 3d. to 7s. 6d. 1858. 6s.
Nova Scotia . . .	1840. £15 to £25 1856. 3s. 6d. per day without board?	1840. 4s. 1856. 4s. 6d. to 5s.
New South Wales . .	1840. £25 1858. £30 to £40	1840. 6s. 8d. 1858. 11s 6d. to 12s.
Cape of Good Hope, E. div.	1840. £20 to £30. 1858. 1s. 6d. to 3s. 6d. per day.	1840. 3s. 9d. to 6s. 1858. 4s. 6d. to 7s. 6d.

es, and merely
which Nature
may be said
ally, have yet
nds, and from
s far as human
return to this
as well as the
st stage of its
particulars re-
venues, and the

he rise which has
greater amount of

ization circulars.

arpenter (per day).

6s. 3d. to 7s. 6d.
6s.

4s.
4s. 6d. to 5s.

6s. 8d.
11s 6d. to 12s.

3s. 9d. to 6s.
4s. 6d. to 7s. 6d.

LECTURE XXI.

EXPENDITURE OF COLONIAL REVENUES.—MODES OF SUPPORTING PUBLIC INSTITUTIONS.—CHURCH ESTABLISHMENTS IN THE BRITISH COLONIES.

I do not mean to enter in detail into the subject of the expenditure of colonial revenues, or what is sometimes termed the financial question as between the mother country and her colonies. We have seen, in our review of past history, that there have been colonies, although rarely, which have yielded a revenue to the mother country. There have been more which, in time of peace, have cost the sovereign state nothing, their own revenues being amply sufficient to defray the expense of administering and protecting them. And I think that even the warmest friend of foreign dominion must feel that there is some serious defect in the principles of our colonial government, when, so far from realizing either of these conditions, our settlements occasion us a constant and heavy expense, which seems rather to increase than diminish; and appear to lean more and more on our financial support, instead of hastening towards the period of emancipation from it. It is true that exaggerated notions prevail respecting the extent of the assistance which we afford them; but the reality is sufficiently serious. It appears, from a parliamentary paper of 1835, that the annual nett expenditure incurred by Great Britain on account of her foreign possessions was then about 2,350,000*l*. Of this sum about 700,000*l*. were spent in the maintenance of military and maritime stations, with which we have no concern at present. There remains about

1,650,000*l.*; but from this there should be also deducted about 250,000*l.*, which must be set down to the maintenance of the convict establishments in Australia, and was not strictly an item of colonial expenditure. There remains 1,400,000*l.* for the nett expenditure of Great Britain, in time of peace, in the civil and military administration of her "plantations and settlements," to use the official term. This is no very large aliquot part of the vast annual expenditure of this country; and if any portion of it is actually spent in the furtherance of those public works which prepare the soil of colonies for the reception of their future inhabitants; or, which is the same thing, if the colonies themselves, by reason of the assistance thus afforded them, are able to devote a larger proportion of their funds to that great object,—it is probable that such portion is repaid, with abundant interest, by the increase of the colonial commerce, and consequently of the general wealth of the empire. But by far the greater part is in reality expended in a very different manner. At least three fourths is applied to the maintenance of the military establishments esteemed necessary to protect some of our colonies from dangerous neighbours; and necessary, in others, to maintain the frame of society itself.* Most of the remainder goes

* *Military Expenditure on Colonies.*—The above remarks on civil expenditure by the mother country in colonies, are retained as historical only. They are now no longer applicable, as regards British policy, for such expenditure has almost ceased. But the subject of military expenditure, already briefly touched on in an earlier lecture, is one on which it still continues peculiarly necessary to aid the judgment, by the establishment, in the first instance, of definite principles. Assuming that colonial dominion is or may become valuable to the mother country, it is most essential to form some estimate of the relation which that utility may bear to the military expenditure which colonies occasion, and also whether the utility can or cannot be preserved without the expenditure.

The reader will find these questions placed in a very distinct light, and detailed with no common ability, clearness, and conciseness, in the

also deducted
to the mainte-
nances, and was
e. There re-
quire of Great
military admin-
istration," to use the
part of the
and if any por-
tion of those
colonies for the
which is the
reason of the
evote a larger
object,—it is
with abundant
commerce, and
empire. But
led in a very
is applied to
ents esteemed
from danger-
to maintain
remainder goes

remarks on civil
retained as histo-
rical British policy,
subject of military
lecture, is one on
judgment, by the
Assuming that
mother country,
relation which that
colonies occasion,
served without the

very distinct light,
conciseness, in the

in aid of the revenue raised in the colonies for the support of their civil establishments. Now, there are

"Report of a Committee on expense of military defences in the colonies," printed in parliament, 1859. Instead of being merely what its dry name would indicate, this paper contains a thorough political discussion of the general subject, by Mr. Godley of the War Department, and Mr. Elliot of the Colonial Office, whose opinions widely differ, and are powerfully defended. This discussion originated in a proposal by Sir. W. Denison, the Governor of New South Wales, that the military expenses of that colony should thenceforth be halved between the colony and the mother country. Mr. Godley was led to propose the extension of this rule to all the colonies (properly so called, and omitting mere military posts), although as a compromise only, avowing his own belief in the expediency of leaving the colonies to rely mainly on themselves for defence. Mr. Elliot argues that such a course would be to apply an unvarying rule to communities widely differing both in means and in wants, and that the "absence of any fixed principle in determining questions of colonial military expenditure," of which Mr. Godley very justly points out certain attendant evils, is, nevertheless, unavoidable in an empire constructed of such heterogeneous materials.

When we approach the subject closely, we find that military expenditure is incurred in colonies (whether defrayed by the mother country or by the colony) for three distinct purposes.

1. For precaution against foreign war with civilized powers.
2. For the maintenance of internal tranquillity.
3. For precaution against the hostilities of natives, whether within the colony or bordering on it.

The first of these objects it has been usual in British policy to consider as of imperial interest. "As a general rule, it is undoubtedly the duty of this country to protect our colonial possessions from foreign aggression at all hazard and at all expense."—Duke of Newcastle, Feb. 1854 (Hansard). And such protection no doubt includes precaution.

But it is essential to disabuse the mind of the common and superficial notion, that what appears in public returns as colonial military expenditure is really such, except in a very small proportion. This great community, of which we are members, is no longer limited, in these its days of vast but only beginning expansion, by local bounds, whether of mother country or colony. Every sea has its British population, conveying the trade of Britain. Every foreign country, almost every frequented port, has its colony of British residents with their commercial property. And in every region of the world we have our political

many who reject, with contemptuous displeasure, the suggestions of those who consider these establishments as

interests, be they real or imaginary. Now, it is to protect this trade, these fellow-subjects, and these interests — not to protect the people of Malta, Gibraltar, Mauritius, Hong Kong — that these posts, and others, are occupied by expensive British garrisons. Whether such expenditure be wise or foolish, is not the purpose of our present inquiry; it is sufficient that it is not colonial. Thus much Mr. Godley admits: but he does not see (as it appears to me) how far the admission must lead him. Adding, to such places as those just named, a few others where the expenditure is really incurred for convict, not colonial purposes — and others again where it is incurred in the maintenance of factories for mixed trading and anti-slavery purposes — we arrive at a deduction of more than 1,500,000*l.* from the sum of 3,500,000*l.*, at which the report estimates “imperial expenditure for military purposes.”

Of the remaining two millions, one fourth is appropriated to the North American Colonies. In these great provinces, no danger from natives is possible, and it would be contrary to all recognised principle to assume their protection against internal trouble. The whole amount must, therefore, be regarded as an insurance against foreign invasion. And, as such, the colonists urge that it ought to fall on the mother country to contribute largely towards their security. We, they say, have no interest in provoking foreign wars. If ever we are engaged in them, it will be in consequence of imperial quarrels, not of our own. We can at any time relieve ourselves from all danger of this class by a peaceful separation. If you think it worth your while to prevent this, the expense ought surely to fall, to a considerable extent, on you. And, besides this (they argue), your expensive fortresses of Quebec and Halifax are, in reality, rather posts for the protection of your general interests, like Malta or Gibraltar, than for the colonial purposes of Canada or Nova Scotia.

The answers to such reasoning ultimately resolve themselves into the proposition, that the maintenance of the connection is not (in the eyes of those who adopt those answers) worth the expense. Mr. Godley refers, in a very spirited comparison, to the early history of our old North American Colonies. He shows that the system of maintaining regular forces in them only commenced in 1754: that, before that time, they not only had defended themselves, but conquered Nova Scotia and Cape Breton for England. “They were content,” he says, “to know that with the greater advantages of a new country, they must meet greater hardships and dangers. They never thought that they were to take the former, and be protected at other people’s expense from the latter.” All this is true: but, unfor-

sure, the sug-
lishments as

protect this trade,
ect the people of
osts, and others,
r such expendi-
t inquiry; it is
ey admits: but
ission must lead
ew others where
ial purposes—
nce of factories
ive at a deduc-
0,000*l.*, at which
purposes."

ropriated to the
no danger from
gnised principle
e whole amount
oreign invasion.
on the mother
We, they say,
are engaged in
not of our own.
f this class by a
to prevent this,
on you. And,
of Quebec and
of your general
ial purposes of

mselves into the
pt (in the eyes of
r. Godley refers,
our old North
ntaining regular
fore that time,
ed Nova Scotia
tent," he says,
y country, they
never thought
ected at other
e: but, unfor-

burdensome, and the general scale of colonial expenditure as extravagant. It appears to be a favourite opinion, and

fortunately, it is one of those truths which are very effective when clad in general language, and lose most of their force when we change the ground from generals to particulars. The old English colonies had no foreign enemy to fear, except France. Against France, all their instincts of self-defence were roused into immediate activity. Had England absolutely deserted them, nothing but downright force would ever have driven them into subjection to a country of absolute government, of foreign language and religion. All that was needed to ward off danger was, that England should be practically as near to them as France, and ready to help as soon as occasion required. Their own courage, and hearty good will, were sufficient for the rest, at least until the changes produced by the seven years' war. At the present day, the menace against which the British troops are thought to guard proceeds, not from France, but from the United States: the country of a powerful and warlike people, conterminous with our provinces for thousands of miles, ready, from geographical position, to throw at any time a strong force against any weak point, and secure of considerable sympathies among large classes of our colonists. Against such enemies as these, the maintenance of a few fortified posts, by imperial expenditure, to serve as rallying points in the event of sudden invasion until assistance can arrive from the mother country, may, or may not, be a sufficient and a wise precaution, may, or may not be imperially expedient. These are open questions, of a mixed political and military character: but to refer for guidance on them to a precedent so utterly dissimilar as that of our ancient colonial dominion—or to imagine them capable of solution on any general principles of colonial administration at all—is, I cannot but think, a waste of ingenuity.

2. To keep troops, at imperial cost, in colonies, for the purpose of maintaining their internal tranquillity, is undoubtedly contrary to sound policy. Colonies which cannot or will not do this for themselves, can scarcely be worth retaining. And it is in pursuance of this principle, that a kind of rough compromise has been established in some colonies—the Australian, for instance; under which the mother country is regarded as charged with external, and the colony with internal defence, and each contributes a portion accordingly, very much in accordance with Mr. Godley's proposal for colonies in general. Still, serious difficulties do occur in the application of a rule so just as that which would cast the expense of internal self-defence on the community. Take the case of the West Indian colonies. They cost this country annually about 400,000*l.* for military purposes. It is a considerable expenditure; and it is useless with a view to foreign dangers;

I do not mean hastily or rashly to controvert it, that we owe this species of tribute to our colonies: that, by a high scale of remuneration, we secure them the services of able officers, both of their own growth and from the mother country; and that we encourage a feeling of loyalty in them, and remove the danger of separation, by maintaining at our own expense a munificent scale of public services, promoting the expenditure of well-salaried officers, and giving them an interest in supporting a government which so amply repays fidelity and

for the defence of the West Indies, in the event of foreign war, would be the concern of the navy. But, at this price, about 4000 British soldiery (themselves mostly coloured) have maintained for many years the most perfect tranquillity, in a population still thought to be formidably influenced by the ancient animosities of colour. And it is scarcely supposed that in their present impoverished condition they could themselves maintain the force.

3. There remain those colonies, in which the expenditure of this class is wholly, or almost wholly, incurred by way of insurance against danger from natives. It will surprise those not familiar with the subject, to know, that out of the sum of two millions, for which the imperial expenditure of 1858 for colonial military purposes was fairly reducible, one million was expended in two colonies only, the Cape of Good Hope and New Zealand — both, at that time, in profound peace with their savage inmates or neighbours. I have already touched on this subject (Appendix to Lect. XVIII.), and will only here observe, in passing, that, of all items of colonial expenditure, this is the least easily justifiable, but that to “halve it” with the colonists would be a very inappropriate proceeding.

According to the best estimate I can frame, the “expenditure incurred for the defence of the colonies by the imperial government” in 1858, the year of the Report, and one of remarkable quiet throughout our colonial empire, was thus roughly divisible: —

Defence of posts for military, convict, commercial, and other special purposes	}	£1,600,000.
Of colonies against foreign powers simply		
Against foreign powers, and internal disturbance, but chiefly the latter	}	400,000.
Against warlike natives		
		600,000.
		1,000,000.
		<hr/>
		£3,600,000.

t it, that we
: that, by a
the services
and from the
a feeling of
f separation,
nificant scale
ure of well-
t in support-
fidelity and

reign war, would
out 4000 British
l for many years
ght to be formid-
And it is scarcely
they could them-

penditure of this
insurance against
war with the sub-
for which the im-
poses was fairly
only, the Cape of
a profound peace
ready touched on
y here observe, in
is the least easily
would be a very

expenditure in-
government." in
quiet throughout

£1,600,000.

400,000.

600,000.

1,000,000.

£3,600,000.

ability. But it were well to consider whether this species of policy does not, in fact, operate in two directions at once, and which of these two directions is the prevailing one. We may send them able officers from the mother country : there is no class of men fitter for their duties than the greater part of the colonial servants of the British crown ; but the preference shown to British candidates for office over their own natives, whose education for such purposes has generally been inferior, and who have not the advantage of parliamentary and government interest, must be a constant provocation to the disaffected, and try the loyalty even of the loyal. And a high scale of government remuneration, especially to officers appointed by government, and over whom the people have little practical control is certainly a powerful stimulus to discontent. If it offers prizes to the loyal, it holds them out also, although at a greater distance and at the expense of a different kind of exertion, to the active and able partisan of opposition. It renders far more intense the zeal of reform, with all its consequences of grievance-mongering and agitation. It tends to widen the inevitable disunion which exists in all communities where the popular voice has an influence, whether with or without representation, between the party in and the party out. The greater the rewards a government has to offer, the more numerous its places and minute its subdivisions of office,—the more a country is governed, to use a common phrase, the more intense is the zeal both of the impugners and defenders of its administration.

I cannot help thinking that we have had some striking illustrations, of late years, of the reasonableness of these views, unpopular as they have been with all administrations, and with the generality of English statesmen in modern times. But I must not dwell on a subject so exclusively political.

It falls more within my province to draw your attention

to one or two questions regarding public expenditure in colonies, considered as affecting the wealth of the community. The first of these is,—in what manner it is best to provide for certain permanent branches of the public service, which form, in most countries, a fixed and previously ascertained burden on the resources of the community : such, for instance, as the religious establishment, and public education. I assume, at the outset, that these objects are to be provided for out of the public means. The question between Establishments and the Voluntary System, whether in respect to religion or education, is not one to be discussed incidentally in a series of lectures on Political Economy. It being granted that establishments of this description are to be maintained, the subject for our inquiry is—in what manner this is best done in colonies ; both at their outset, and in their more advanced political stage.

There appears to me to be four distinct methods of making such provision, which the first view of the subject suggests to our consideration.

The first is, by setting apart a fixed proportion of the gross annual income of the land. This is the ancient system of tithes ; once the universal mode in which national and individual piety provided for the service of religion, now so rapidly becoming obsolete in European communities.

The second is, by appropriating land to the assumed purpose, with *absolute* restrictions on its alienation, with the view that it may rise in value, along with the neighbouring occupied lands, until it becomes worth the while of individuals to pay rent for it. This was the plan originally adopted in Canada for the maintenance of the Protestant Church Establishment. We have seen that it appears to be also the mode in which reserves are made for public education in the United States.

The third is, the appropriation of land with *qualified*

restrictions on its alienation : that is, empowering some constituted authority to sell it in portions from time to time, and invest the funds so realized, applying the interest to the proposed object. This modification of the former scheme was also partly adopted in our North American colonies ; although I am not aware that it was ever carried into effect, except by the clumsy machinery of acts of parliament enabling commissioners to sell portions *pro singulâ vice* only.

The fourth is, to provide for these objects in the same manner as other public exigencies ; by grants out of the common revenues of the colony, with or without the assistance of the mother country. And this has been, of late years, the method commonly pursued.

Of the first of these modes I shall say little here. Abstractedly considered, we have seen that a tax on the gross produce of agriculture appears to be among the least objectionable ways in which a revenue can be raised, in a country possessing a great extent of fertile soil. It is merely the appropriation to public purposes of a part of that share of the produce which, if the good land were practically limited in extent, would go to the owner in the form of rent. In eastern countries this is the mode in which the great bulk of the revenue is raised ; the government being itself the landowner, and receiving, by way of rent, a fixed proportion of the produce. We have already seen that such a land-tax, in countries so circumstanced, is only burdensome when it is exorbitant. But when the land begins to yield less and less return to the capital applied to it, and its fertility requires to be stimulated by expensive and laborious processes, then it is that tithe or land-tax begins to be felt as an onerous imposition ; because a considerable proportion of the gross produce—a proportion always increasing as cultivation becomes more expensive—belongs to the category of profits, and not rent, and goes to remunerate the landowner or the farmer

for the improvements which he has introduced. A tax on gross produce is therefore a tax on improvements.

And it may be thought that if a young community, newly planted in unoccupied land, were, after the fashion of former ages, to devote, in this manner, a portion of its annual substance to the support of national establishments, it would provide for those objects in the most permanent, the most natural, the least injurious method—a method from which no great inconvenience could be felt until ages had elapsed, and society had grown into a new shape and character. But, in my last lecture, I endeavoured to show some reasons why a tax proportioned to the gross amount of the produce of land could not be beneficially imposed, for purposes of ordinary revenue, in a new country in which the cultivator is free to abandon old land for fresh. And, as a question of practical policy, it is useless to consider the policy of imposing such burdens for the purpose of maintaining establishments; because our British system of government does not give us the power, if we had the disposition, to compel colonists under a system of free representation to contribute, in such a manner, to the support of institutions which we may think useful or salutary. And fortunate it is that we have not such power; lest, under the impulse of inconsiderate zeal, we might be tempted to abuse it. Such sacrifices must, in the first instance, be voluntary; they must come from the free gift of the people, or they do but engender hostility to those very establishments and those very principles which they are intended to support. A community may well bind itself by a solemn act, and dedicate a portion of its annual substance: offered by the national will, the gift may be revoked by the national will again, although woe be to the nation which rashly and profanely revokes it! But it is not by imposing taxation on an unwilling people that true religion has ever been propagated, or salutary education disseminated.

The second method, or that of inalienable land-reserves, has been already several times under our consideration; and it has been seen that although some of the evils attending it have been exaggerated, still its inconveniences are so great as to render it extremely objectionable. Such land will not, in general, be brought into cultivation until the purchasable land in the vicinity is all occupied; for in new countries men will not pay rent if they can possibly escape it; and in the mean time it remains an unsightly impediment in the way of advancing colonization.

But no such objection can be urged to the third plan above mentioned. The only reason against giving a power to sell public land, and investing the proceeds for the furtherance of the object for which the grant of land was originally made, seems to be the danger of disadvantageous or dishonest alienation: a reason in which there may be some weight, when we are striking the balance between the comparative advantages of different methods of providing permanently for establishments; but the question in our colonies appears to be between this method and none. And even if the two which we have already discussed were practicable, that which we are now considering has one great advantage over them. It secures assistance in the form in which it is by far the most useful and acceptable, namely, in money. An establishment amply endowed with land, or with the annual produce of land in the form of tithe or rent, might pass for wealthy in societies such as those of feudal Europe, where the means of exchange were scarce, and the proudest baron, no less than the richest ecclesiastic, was often at a loss for means of disposing of his surplus agricultural produce, after feeding and clothing his clients and retainers. But in a country and age where the conveniences and luxuries of life are highly valued, where they are easily procurable with money, and the only

difficulty is to obtain regular supplies of money in exchange for raw produce, the owner of a fixed money income has frequently the advantage over a landowner whose nominal revenue is far higher in amount. On the whole, therefore, the most convenient disposal of the national resources for these purposes appears to be to permit of the gradual disposal of trust lands, reserving from sale only so much as may be immediately useful for the convenience of each local establishment: glebe lands for clergymen, farms, &c. for educational institutions.

For the modern system of providing for these things by grants, made as occasion serves, at the caprice of a government or a legislature (a system into which we appear to have been driven in some of our North American colonies by the political difficulties which arose respecting the appropriation of public lands, but which, in other parts, seems to have been spontaneously adopted), is surely not only inadequate to its object, but most mischievous in its effects. Looking at the subject only from the point of view of ordinary and daily expediency, we cannot fail to perceive the precarious and unsatisfactory state in which it leaves the public service — the discords which it is certain to engender among the parties who have the control over the gift, or whose interests are in any way affected by it. It turns those who should be wholly independent of the passions or interests of the day, those, namely, who administer the funds granted for national and permanent purposes, into mere bidders for popularity or the favour of the executive. It makes it impossible to undertake plans of comprehensive utility, in which the outlay is large and the results future, and renders the task of the ministers of the grant one of mere expedients — making the most of what their masters have accorded them for this year, and trusting to chance or intrigue for the necessary

money in ex-
fixed money
a landowner
amount. On
t disposal of
appears to be
nds, reserving
mediately useful
hment : glebe
educational insti-

these things
caprice of a
to which we
r North Ame-
which arose
de, but which,
ously adopted),
ect, but most
e subject only
ly expediency,
s and unsatis-
service — the
er among the
gift, or whose
It turns those
he passions or
administer the
purposes, into
ur of the ex-
rtake plans of
y is large and
f the ministers
aking the most
n for this year,
the necessary

supplies of the next. And, lastly, where the grant is made by a representative assembly, whether at home or in the colony, it imposes on the executive the disagreeable task of requiring contributions for objects which are certain to be unpopular with many, and the necessity for which is at best imperfectly understood by the majority ; and raising each time the often repeated debate respecting their expediency. The first principles of government are not things to be annually discussed in voting on the estimates.

But there are far higher considerations behind. Surely, few things are more important to the welfare of an infant nation than to be impressed with a sense of its own permanent existence — its own nationality, so to speak — by the evidence of institutions rooted as it were in the soil, and protected by the same safeguard with which the constitution fences the property of individuals and the sovereignty of the monarch. The situation of a modern colonist is very different from that which imagination rather than history suggests, when we carry our minds back to the foundation of states and empires. He comes from an old country, his habits regulated by its usages, his mind full of its institutions. Perhaps he is strongly attached to those institutions : perhaps he is discontented with them. But, in either case, his strongest impressions, his most vehement emotions, are connected with them. He lives mentally in the past and future rather than the present, in the society which he has left, and that of which he dreams as a distant possibility, rather than that which he contributes to create. He regards the immediate social prospects of the new community, as such, at first with comparative indifference ; it is the home of his industry, not of his thoughts : he cares little about its development from within ; but all his old party feelings are excited in furthering or in opposing the transplantation of laws and establishments from the mother country. And

these feelings are inherited by his descendants for many generations; their strength diminishes very gradually. There is something almost grotesque in the institution of Orange Lodges in Upper Canada*, and Pitt Club dinners in Australia. But a more remarkable instance will be found in the political literature of the United States, for a long period after the achievement of their independence, and before the consolidation of their present system. It is strange to observe how far more the principles maintained, the illustrations used, the very feelings expressed, both by federalists and democrats, seem European than American; how little progress had been made in two centuries of colonization, and seven years' war of independence, towards the creation of a national heart and character.

The consequence of this is, a tendency in new colonial communities to allow those institutions which are of domestic origin to grow up carelessly and at random; to frame laws merely for actual emergencies; to fill up the foundations with rubbish, and let future generations care for the finished building. There are some who believe such improvised and practical institutions to be the best of all, or rather the only useful ones. But those who contemplate national establishments not merely with a view to their immediate adaptation for use, but as contributing most essentially, among other causes, to form the mind and temper of the people itself, cannot but think that it is well to commence the building with some reference to a preconceived idea, not inflexible indeed, but still independent, and to give pledges, as it were, to the future, binding the people to revere and guard the durable elements of moral greatness. Nothing could tend more decidedly towards imparting the requisite fixity and self-existence to colonial societies, than to place on a permanent footing

* (1860.) These, however, have, in later years, acquired a local meaning, being connected with party demonstrations against the French and Roman Catholic body of the community.

endowments for education, both for popular schools and colleges. And, the same would be true in a still higher degree of a national church establishment, if that establishment could really comprehend the mass of the community.

Happy in that case the people among whom that most important of civil institutions should be planted and rooted from the beginning of its career, to grow with its growth, and overshadow successive generations with its expanding branches! Even in a political sense alone, such a people would possess a principle of union and stability, the like of which no other invention of social wisdom can afford. But here we are rather giving vent to the language of theory than experience: for we are dreaming of a church supported from the beginning by the free adhesion of the people, while history gives us none but instances of churches founded under the injurious protection of penal laws, guarded by the sword, sowing oppressions and reaping hatred, and encumbered in all their after history by the recollections of the past. And even to those who recognize in the fullest manner the value of an established or endowed national church, it is quite another question, whether or not the government of the mother-country should fix and endow, in every colony which it founds, a provincial branch of its own church establishment. The policy of such a course of proceeding requires much consideration, and must not be discussed in this incidental manner.

I speak of course of colonization by countries such as ours, in which the utmost latitude is given to freedom of opinion, and in which numerous denominations of Christians contribute each their quota to the annual overflow of the population. With unity of religious belief at home, such questions need not be debated; but in the present condition of the British community they become of most pressing and practical interest.

No situation, say those who support the negative view, can be conceived more disadvantageous, I might almost say more hopeless, for the Church,—not only more adverse to the prospect of extending her influence, but more injurious to her character and working,—than to stand by the support of the State, and in connection with it, with a small minority of the population attached to her. The greater the privileges which the civil authority under such circumstances accords to the members of the Church, the worse for the Church herself. If the monopoly of court favour and civil employments be secured to them, the Church will be encumbered and dishonoured by the profession of careless or dishonest adventurers ; the national spirit, instead of being merely indifferent, becomes fiercely hostile to her ; and every honest sentiment of pride and patriotism combines with the irritating feelings engendered by exclusion to make war upon her. If no religious disabilities exist, but the Church only enjoys an establishment founded or supported by government, her position is less unfavourable, but it is still inauspicious. She must be still unpopular. But this, it may be said, is owing only to the self-conceit and self-will of mankind ; and the Church is sent expressly to combat such enemies, and is not out of her vocation when placed in collision with them. Those who estimate human nature and its motives with more considerate judgment will scarcely think so. It is not unnatural—it is hardly blameable—that men should cling to their own altars with rather the greater tenacity from seeing that the State has thought fit to build and endow those of another faith. It is not a dishonourable pride which leads men to devote more of their substance to the maintenance of their religion, and the religion of their immediate fathers,—to watch more closely over its dignity and independence—as if in rivalry of the gratuitous endowments afforded to another. Nor is it possible, under such circumstances, that the excluded can feel themselves

negative view,
might almost
only more ad-
vance, but more
than to stand
with it, with
to her. The
y under such
e Church, the
poly of court
to them, the
l by the pro-
the national
comes fiercely
of pride and
s engendered
religious dis-
establishment
position is less
She must be
s owing only
nd; and the
emies, and is
on with them.
motives with
nk so. It is
t men should
reater tenacity
to build and
dishonourable
eir substance
e religion of
osely over its
he gratuitous
ossible, under
el themselves

as nearly attached to the government of the mother-country, that they can be as loyal, as the favoured. However well disposed in other respects, in one point they must be hostile. This, then, is all that is needed to give a bond of union to innumerable sects, which have no natural motive for seeking each other's alliance, to combine civil with ecclesiastical opposition,—to place the common grievance-monger, the pretended patriot, in connexion with the steady but zealous dissenter,—to unite all the scattered force of the majority against the governing body.

There is unhappily too much truth in this statement of the case, even as to old communities. But every part of it applies with tenfold force to the circumstances of new ones. In the first place, we must remember what has already been said, and will be again insisted on: that the tendency of society in such communities is republican; that social equality is almost universal, except in colonies possessing servile or quasi-servile labour; and that, however desirable it might be to correct such tendencies by the force of institutions, institutions themselves are still less able to stand in new countries than elsewhere without the aid of public opinion. In the next place, viewing the subject in relation to our own colonies, it must be considered that while the Established Church is generally feeble in numbers, it is not peculiarly strong in property or in intelligence: what is commonly called the "best society" undoubtedly belongs to it; but, on the whole, it has no such marked superiority, in respect of the wealth and education of its members, as it possesses at home. Lastly (and this is a point which I have not seen much considered in the discussions on this subject), dissent itself is materially changed in its character by transplantation. Sects acquire in a more marked degree the external character of churches. A dissenter at home knows that the body to which he belongs quitted the Establishment at no very distant era, and has probably undergone

several changes in character and doctrine since that period : consequently he has but the principle of freedom of opinion to rely upon ; the sentiment of reverence for antiquity and things established is all against him. Abroad, he feels himself the member of a church which has planted itself in the wilderness, and is, as it were, aboriginal in that soil which he inhabits ; and no greater antiquity is needed to satisfy the imagination of the multitude.

It would be extremely difficult, and of very doubtful policy, to establish and endow a branch of the national Church, under such circumstances, even in colonies not possessing a free government ; but in colonies possessing one (and all British colonies expect the privilege sooner or later) it seems well nigh impossible for the mother-country to maintain such an institution for any length of time. An endowed church, and a legislature of which the majority is, or is likely at any election to become, composed of dissenters, could not exist together, unless the church were removed from the control of the legislature. This could only be accomplished by withholding from the provincial assemblies one of the most important functions of domestic legislation ; giving the colony political freedom, and yet reserving to the mother-state the control over a great and strictly domestic institution. It has been attempted of late years, for the first time in British policy, to maintain this species of anomalous and exceptive government, but the success of the experiment is such as to afford little encouragement.

And I do not think that those who took a contrary view of the subject, in the recent discussions respecting the destination of the Canada Clergy Reserves, were generally aware how very small a minority the members of the Church of England form in most of our colonies. In Lower Canada the great body are Roman Catholics ; the remainder, or British portion, are split into many sects.

In Upper Canada, a purely British colony, according to the returns of 1839, out of about 400,000 persons whose profession was ascertained, rather less than 80,000 belonged to our Church. In Nova Scotia, in 1827, they formed about the same proportion of the whole, namely, less than a fourth; and were greatly exceeded by those of the Church of Scotland. In Newfoundland, more than one-half are Romanists; the Church of England has about two-thirds of the remainder.

The reasons for this state of things in North America are obvious enough. Our provinces in that quarter have been for many years the resort of Scottish and Irish emigrants, while the bulk of English trans-Atlantic emigration has taken the direction of the United States. This is said to arise from the greater poverty of Scottish and Irish emigrants, which makes them prefer the cheaper passage. It arises also in part, no doubt, from habit, which makes the emigrants of one year follow in the track of their predecessors; and the Scots, especially the Highlanders, seem to have a singular preference for the fogs and rocks of the Lower Colonies, so nearly resembling their own. It is obvious how this cause operates to the disadvantage of the Church of England; and it must be added, that the Dissenters, being, in proportion to their numbers, the most active and enterprising part of the middle and lower classes at home, probably send out more than their numerical share of English emigrants.

In the Australian colonies, which are more English, and also the resort of a larger proportion of wealthy emigrants, the members of the Church of England are more numerous.*

But this weakness of number, it is commonly answered, is merely a consequence of the neglect of government in not providing for the establishment of the Church at the

* See the statements in the Appendix to this Lecture.

time of the foundation of colonies. Numbers are driven into dissent merely because they have no legitimate resources offered them for satisfying their religious wants.

Unquestionably there is a certain amount of truth in this argument. If the Church, in our colonies, had been from the beginning amply provided with the means of ministering to the spiritual wants of the people, it cannot be doubted ~~has~~ the numerical proportion between its members and those of other denominations would have been somewhat different from that which actually exists. And with those who hold that this alone constitutes a sufficient answer to all objections—that it is the absolute and primary duty of the State to supply the people with religious instruction—that it, the State, has neglected its duty if a single member becomes lost to the Church on account of the absence of such instruction:—that no considerations of policy or expediency can for a moment be admitted to outweigh this great original responsibility,—with such reasoners, this is not the time or place, if it were my inclination, to enter into controversy. If, however, we are permitted to weigh conveniences and inconveniences in the balance in such a question as this, and to consider, according to the light of our precarious wisdom, what may on the whole be best for the interests of the people and the Church herself, I think it must still admit of a doubt whether the Church would really gain strength by this addition to her force in new colonies such as we are now considering. More of the ignorant and helpless, as well as of the remiss and worldly part of the community, would undoubtedly be numbered among her nominal adherents. But the opposition of the active, zealous, and educated part of the masses would still be what it has been described, and produce the same effects on which I have already dwelt. Amply endowed, but placed amongst ill-wishers and lukewarm friends,—standing alone, unconnected with any territorial aristo-

cracy, or great educated body of adherents,—the danger is, lest the Church herself should sink into discouragement and decline; lest she should lose altogether that missionary spirit and character which is, more or less, necessary to her usefulness among a scattered and migratory people. Such was her fate in Virginia and Carolina; where she decayed, not from lack of temporal sustenance, for she was liberally endowed; not because established too late, for her establishment was coeval with the colonies themselves: but because, unable to win over the body of the people, she fell into a languid apathy. It is useless to ascribe this failure to want of zeal, and misconduct, in the Church ministers. Similar causes will always produce the like effects: seasons of extraordinary excitement apart, and exposed to the same temptations, the conduct and character of the collective ministry of established churches, as of other men and bodies of men, have been marked by the same features in all ages and countries.

All these considerations bear forcibly on the question which was debated in our legislature in 1840, respecting the application of the Canadian Clergy Reserves, and the fund raised by their sale. It would be altogether out of my province to enter with you on the discussion of this or any measure of public policy not directly connected with economical science. I can only lament that it was decided, as such questions usually are, more with a view to the temporary satisfaction of parties here and in the colony, than on any distinct principle.

But, however we may settle in our own minds these great problems as to the duties of the State, the duty of the Church as a distinct body, and of her members as individuals, is plain and clear. Where the government will not, or cannot, or ought not, to set apart a portion of the funds of a colony for the purpose of maintaining a religious establishment, there a most productive field opens itself for the exertions and sacrifices of its

members. We belong to by far the richest religious community in the world : I am not speaking of the riches of our Church, but of the individuals in her communion. If we had but a tithe of the zeal which ought to distinguish us, and which we are too ready to profess, not a band of emigrants would leave the shores of England without being certain of ample provision for its religious wants, as ample as the inevitable difficulties of new and scattered communities will allow, in whatever corner of our vast dominions they might choose to fix themselves. It is scarcely possible to point out a manner in which the contributions of churchmen might be so usefully employed. Numbers might in this manner be brought within the pale of the Church who have not been led away from it, nor are hostile to it, but are simply left to lead the life of heathens in the utter absence of external aid. We hear much of the spiritual destitution of millions in this country, and no doubt with abundance of truth ; but here, at all events, it cannot be denied that those who seek religious instruction can obtain it ; there are few, very few indeed, from whom the opportunity is withheld : the difficulty is, to inspire them with the knowledge of their own wants, and the will to seek relief ; and church extension, is scarcely the specific remedy for this disease. What is sought for the colonies is not to stimulate the appetite for food, but first and foremost to supply the food itself. To endow a branch of the Church in a new settlement, such as those of Western or Southern Australia or New Zealand, — to endow it sufficiently for immediate wants, and to make some provision for its gradual extension, — would really be a slight effort compared with many which are daily executed by private zeal and combination in undertakings for the public benefit ; and all the difficulties which impede the healthy action of a government establishment, that is, an establishment imposed by the government of the mother-country, would be avoided.

And let me remind those who look back to the earlier ages of the Church for examples, that this is the mode in which the Gospel was anciently propagated from land to land. The Church in every instance, out of the wealth with which the liberality of those ages had endowed her, contributed to defray the expense of those missions which began the work of conversion in new provinces of her dominion; individual zeal among the new convicts or settlers, contributed to its farther extension; and it was not until the first stages had been passed that the government of the now Christianized region interfered, and undertook the maintenance, or rather protection of those institutions which voluntary zeal had founded. I do not say that the parallel between the colonies of a Christian country, and lands rescued from heathenism, is exact; but there is much practical analogy between the cases; and as in those instances, so in the present,—if the infant establishment be but amply maintained by the exertions of her own friends, in the first instance, the fairest prospect is afforded that the young community, when become so far *sui juris* as to provide for her own domestic institutions, may have wisdom and inclination to take charge of this, the most important and most truly national of all.*

* (1860.) I have retained the observations at the conclusion of this lecture, as evidences of a tone of thought and expression very prevalent twenty years ago. What were then anticipations only have since become realities. While State aid has been almost wholly withdrawn from the service of religion in the colonies, the zeal of the several denominations has supplied the deficiency to an extent which it would then have been deemed wild to conjecture. The Church of England, in particular, has now more than thirty colonial bishoprics; of these only one or two in North America derive from Great Britain a small income, limited to the lives of the present incumbents, and a few, in different parts of the world, are partially supported by the colonial revenue. But, speaking generally, they are maintained on the "voluntary system."

Of the practical result of this multiplication of bishoprics it is too

early as yet to speak with confidence. It is a subject on which we are apt rather to indulge in habitual common-places, than to exercise a discriminating judgment. There are many who regard the establishment of a see as in itself a spiritual benefit, and, therefore, not a thing to be measured by ordinary considerations of expediency. Those who regard it only as a means to an end cannot be so easily satisfied. There is no doubt that certain special advantages attend it. So much of the respect and love of educated men clings, in the colonies, to that which was the established church of their forefathers, that a bishop of that church occupies a very conspicuous and very advantageous position in its society, and may do more than any other man in forming and maintaining a tone of religious and moral feeling superior to that low practical materialism which is the common vice of young communities. And, in extensive districts, where there are many clergy to superintend and great distances to traverse, the immediate benefits of the presence of a chief devoted to that especial duty, are of the very highest order. But, when we come to the establishment of bishoprics, according to the modern fashion, wherever there is a separate community, however trifling—in small islands, in places where the bulk of the population is of other creeds, and the English element confined to a few of the upper class—the result is at best a balance of good and evil. A bishop, with nothing to do but to superintend half a dozen clergymen, is, in truth, in a very false position. If, in those circumstances, he undertakes regular parochial work, he places himself necessarily on a level with those he superintends, and to reconcile the two characters is no easy task. And, lastly, with respect to the great missionary work among the heathen, it admits of very serious question, whether more is not effected by the unpretending position and power of free action of ordinary missionaries, than is likely to be gained by systematic measures under episcopal superintendence. I do not point to the Church of Rome as an example in these matters, for her success, in 300 years of admirable efforts, has been far from matter of triumph; but that success, such as it is, has been chiefly achieved by the religious orders, not through any episcopal system.

State aid to religion in Canada finally ceased when the Clergy Reserves Fund, after many years of struggle, was handed over to the Provincial Parliament in 1856. In New South Wales, Victoria, and Tasmania, a system still subsists which originated in the necessity of supplying spiritual aid to the convicts. A sum is annually reserved from the revenue, with permanent laws, and divided among the leading sects in proportion to their numbers. But it falls far short of the increasing wants of the communities, and will probably soon disappear altogether. In the West Indian colonies alone, the Church of England has something like a permanent establishment.

APPENDIX TO LECTURE XXI.

NUMBERS OF MEMBERS OF DIFFERENT RELIGIOUS PERSUASIONS IN SEVERAL
BRITISH COLONIES.*Compiled chiefly from the Colonial "Statistical" Tables published by
the Local Governments.*

LOWER CANADA.

	1831.	1852.
Roman Catholics . . .	403,472	746,866
Church of England . . .	34,620	45,402
Presbyterians, &c., and not classed	15,069	97,993
Total . . .	<u>453,161</u>	<u>890,261</u>

UPPER CANADA.

	1839.	1852.
Church of England . . .	79,754	223,190
Methodists . . .	61,088	207,658
Presbyterians . . .	78,383	194,148
Roman Catholics . . .	43,029	167,695
Baptists . . .	12,968	45,353
Miscellaneous Sects . . .	22,806	63,671
Not classed . . .	34,760	50,289
Returns not received . . .	67,558	
Total . . .	<u>400,346</u>	<u>952,004</u>

NOVA SCOTIA.

	1827.	1851.
Church of England . . .	28,659	36,482
Church of Scotland . . .	37,225	72,914
Dissenters from ditto . . .	4,825	
Roman Catholics . . .	20,401	69,634
Baptists . . .	19,790	42,243
Methodists . . .	9,408	23,596
Lutherans . . .	2,968	11,376
Quakers, &c. . .	355	
Doubtful . . .	317	
Total . . .	<u>123,848</u>	

NEWFOUNDLAND.

	1836.	1845.
Church of England . . .	22,712	34,281
Other Protestants . . .	10,591	—
Roman Catholics . . .	36,899	46,783
Total . . .	<u>70,208</u>	

VAN DIEMAN'S LAND.

(Free Population.)

	1838.	1857.
Church of England . . .	16,094	47,714
Presbyterians . . .	2,551	7,220
Roman Catholics . . .	2,288	16,852
Wesleyans . . .	1,289	4,721
Other Sects . . .	1,022	4,985
Total . . .	<u>23,244</u>	<u>81,492</u>

NEW SOUTH WALES.

	1841.	1856.
Church of England . . .	73,727	132,112
Presbyterians . . .	13,153	27,803
Roman Catholics . . .	35,690	78,869
Methodists, other denominations, and unaccounted . . .	6,156	{ 15,604 11,801

VICTORIA.

1851.		1857.
36,482	Church of England	159,677
72,914	Presbyterians	56,156
69,634	Roman Catholics	77,351
42,243	Methodists	28,305
23,596	Other denominations and unaccounted	79,277

SOUTH AUSTRALIA.

	1855.
Church of England	33,812
Presbyterians	7,520
Roman Catholics	8,935
Wesleyans	11,178
Other Protestants	18,810
Not specified &c.	6,156

1845.
34,281
—
46,783

1857.
47,714
7,220
16,852
4,721
4,985

81,492

1850.
132,112
27,803
78,869
{ 15,604
{ 11,801

LECTURE XXII.

SOCIAL AND POLITICAL CHARACTERISTICS OF COLONIAL COMMUNITIES.—
POLITICAL RELATION OF COLONIES TO THE MOTHER-COUNTRY.—PRIN-
CIPLES OF COLONIAL GOVERNMENT.

THE social characteristics of a community just formed, and engaged in subduing the powers of wild nature for the purposes of civilized man, depend partly on the circumstances in which it is placed, and partly on the condition and character of those classes of the population of the mother-country from whence the supply is derived.

In such a community, the mere wants of life are abundantly supplied, but not supplied without labour. There is none of that depressing poverty which elsewhere weighs down the energies of large masses of mankind; or of that almost equally depressing dread of poverty which perpetually harasses the minds of a class somewhat higher in circumstances, which produces in some an abjectness of disposition, in others an irritable and discontented temperament; and if it sometimes sharpens the intellectual powers, often does so only to the detriment of the moral character. On the other hand, everything which adorns human life, everything which stimulates the more artificial appetites of men, be they sensual or spiritual, is either difficult of acquisition or unattainable. The colonist has little temptation to long for the enjoyment of such superfluities; for the stimulus of envy is wanting: he does not see them heightening the pleasures of others, and therefore thinks little of them. During the first period of his conflict with the genius of the wilderness, his thoughts are necessarily intent on his immediate occupation; afterwards, his daily labour for ordinary comforts, though not

COMMUNITIES.—
COUNTRY.—PRIN-

y just formed,
wild nature for
ly on the cir-
ly on the con-
e population of
y is derived.
f life are abun-
labour. There
sewhere weighs
mankind; or of
poverty which
somewhat higher
an abjectness of
ontented tempe-
the intellectual
nt of the moral
ng which adorns
he more artificial
iritual, is either
The colonist has
t of such super-
ng: he does not
rs, and therefore
eriod of his con-
his thoughts are
cupation; after-
orts, though not

engrossing like the toil of men in full employment in old and industrious societies, is sufficient to occupy the common faculties of body and mind. He is in danger, therefore of sinking into a state of listless and inglorious indolence, —a state in which whole communities may vegetate on an extensive surface, raising little surplus wealth, and each generation contenting itself with the habits and the enjoyments of that which preceded it.

To counteract this tendency, he has only what may almost be termed the abstract desire of accumulation; I mean the desire of amassing wealth, unconnected with the passion for its enjoyment. If there are any to whom the strong influence of this motive, unreasonable as philosophy may hold it, appears strange and unaccountable, they must recollect that the mind, in an ordinary state of vigour, requires an excitement: it must have objects, hopes, occupations, apprehensions. Political institutions may so utterly deaden it as to extinguish them: there have been examples of whole societies thus arrested in the career of material civilization. But when these are good or tolerable, the love of accumulation must, in all communities, be among the most important sources of national activity, —in new communities, it is the only one. Money-making becomes the popular passion. The acquisition of wealth confers the only substantial title to public regard. As all talent seeks one and the same channel to exert itself, he who has best succeeded in this engrossing pursuit enjoys the double honour of being at once the most powerful and the cleverest citizen of the commonwealth.

No social distinction except that of comparative wealth can exercise much positive influence in such a state of things. Where land is abundant and people few, only two forms of society are possible —that of servitude or feudalism, and that of equality. For inequality of ranks must be produced by one or the other of two great causes. The first is, the political subjugation of the in-

ferior class : such as gave birth to the aboriginal distinctions between patricians and plebeians, in very early times ; freemen and slaves in later ages ; the villenage of feudal Europe or modern Russia ; the institution of caste among the Egyptians and Hindoos. The second is, the necessary dependence of poverty on wealth, when profitable land is all occupied, commerce extended, and capital accumulated in few hands. Now it is remarkable that European history shows a gradual passage from the first to the second of the two conditions here described, without any intervention of a third — that of social equality. So long as land was abundant and people few, so long has feudalism almost everywhere maintained itself. The decay of that compact and magnificent edifice did not begin until population was dense, until capital was amassed, and everything prepared for the second stage ; that in which the many are dependent on the few from economical causes. And, if this were the place for such a disquisition, it would be interesting to point out the strange anomalies in European manners and usages, which have been produced by the maintenance of feudal distinctions, and their forced application to a new and totally different state of things, namely, that created by the oligarchy of wealth. Strange anomalies, but certainly not without their use in modifying the coarse and degrading characteristics of plutocracy.

There is only one European community in which feudal inequality has been destroyed before the inequality of fortunes arising from national affluence had yet begun to prevail : cities being still few, commerce and manufactures undeveloped, and population scanty : namely, that of Norway. Accordingly, the social condition of Norway is extremely democratic ; and would be scarcely less so, were it under an absolute monarchy instead of a free constitution ; the mass of the people being in the condition of small yeomanry, and there being no hereditary privileges or powers. Now, the phenomena exhibited by

original distinction
 very early times ;
 management of feudal
 of caste among
 s, the necessary
 profitable land is
 al accumulated
 European his-
 t to the second
 hout any inter-
 y. So long as
 g has feudalism
 e decay of that
 egin until popu-
 sed, and every-
 t in which the
 nomical causes.
 tion, it would be
 ies in European
 roduced by the
 eir forced appli-
 things, namely,
 Strange an-
 se in modifying
 plutocracy.
 unity in which
 e the inequality
 had yet begun
 e and manufac-
 y : namely, that
 ition of Norway
 scarcely less so,
 d of a free con-
 in the condition
 hereditary privi-
 a exhibited by

Norway are displayed in all new colonies, and even in countries of vast extent and population, so long as there is no gradation of ranks secured either by the transmission of great hereditary estates in a small class, and the slavery or quasi-slavery of the multitude, or by the dependence of labourers on capitalists. Such are pre-eminently the phenomena of the condition of British North America and of the United States. In the latter country there are large cities and manufacturing districts, and others in which cultivation is carried on by rich slave-owners ; and consequently, scattered here and there, the elements of oligarchy ; but these are at present altogether kept under by the democratic spirit of the mass of the community. Countries thus circumstanced are essentially republican. The influence of modes of government may pass for something in the formation of the character of the people ; but it is far less powerful than that of economical causes. If the wildest dreams of those who speculate on the transplantation of a complete society into new colonies could be realized, the aristocratic part of it must perish for want of soil to exist in. In colonies where valuable exportable produce can be raised by the application of large capitals, if a supply of labour could be secured by the successful development of Mr Wakefield's principles, aristocracy might barely take root, but its existence would at best be frail and precarious.

Individual wealth, of course, exists in such communities ; and wealth gives influence there, as well as everywhere else ; but it must be available wealth, joined with activity in its possessor : a distinction of too fugitive a nature to form even the basis of a graduated scale of ranks. The mere ownership of a quantity of land gives none whatever, where the lord cannot command the services of labourers to till it. The fertile colony of Prince Edward's Island belongs almost entirely to ten or twelve proprietors by legal title. It is inhabited by 40,000 people, peaceable

industrious, and well disposed in every other respect.* But rent, to absentee proprietors, it is said that they will not pay; the small dues claimed by the landlords cannot be recovered. The mere attempt to do so has on one occasion excited an insurrection in one of the quietest societies in the world; and, if the law had been rigorously enforced, the only consequence would have been emigration. When land becomes scarce in Prince Edward's Island and the neighbouring colonies, rent will be paid. In Canada the great landed proprietors seem to have taken scarcely any part, and exerted scarcely any influence, in recent political events. Their names are al-

* (1860.) Since these lectures were delivered, the population of Prince Edward's Island has nearly doubled, and her wealth has increased with gradual but steady progress. But the contest between landlord and tenant has continued with little abatement of its rancour: and its history is a curious one, as exhibiting, though on a very small scale, the pertinacity with which in English communities a social quarrel is sometimes carried on for generations, without reconciliation or settlement, and yet without resort to violence. Neither side stands clearly in the right. The landowners appeal to all the ordinary arguments against encroachment. But they have this defect in their title, that the original conditions of their grants were never complied with. The acquirers of land in the island were bound to colonise that land in a specified manner, which they wholly neglected to do. The present holders contend that the crown never took advantage of the forfeiture. Their enemies contended that this laches of the crown did not bind the community, and the doctrine of "escheat" was for many years the popular one, always maintained at the hustings, often by the majority of the assembly, but always repudiated by the council, consisting of the crown's nominees.

At last, in 1850 and following years, responsible government was established in this small community, not without great and natural apprehensions on the part of the landowners, that their interests would be sacrificed by the new democracy. But these apprehensions have proved erroneous. Power brings a sense of responsibility. Although some unjust measures of taxation affecting the landowners have been enacted, yet, in the main, the popular party has shown itself more forbearing than in former days, when the assailants of property felt certain that the crown would interfere to check their own excesses. There are now (1860) terms of arrangement pending, which bid more fairly for success than at any former time.

other respect.*
that they will
landlords cannot
so has on one
of the quietest
been rigorously
e been emigra-
ince Edward's
t will be paid.
seem to have
scarcely any in-
names are al-

the population of
alth has increased
between landlord
s rancour : and its
ery small scale, the
a social quarrel is
ciliation or settle-
side stands clearly
arguments against
le, that the original

The acquirers of
a specified manner,
olders contend that
Their enemies con-
e community, and
popular one, always
the assembly, but
crown's nominees.
e government was
great and natural
their interests would
apprehensions have
sibility. Although
downers have been
shown itself more
nts of property felt
their own excesses.
g, which bid more

most unknown to the mass of the community. The most influential members of the richer class seem to be,—first, the few great merchants who are by degrees establishing themselves at Montreal and Quebec ; next, and perhaps exercising a more direct power among their fellow-citizens, the enterprising retail dealers and small traders who purvey for the numerous little markets of a thinly scattered community of settlers.*

The effects of this natural equality of ranks on the genius of a people have been the theme of numberless political writers, and have been ably traced of late years by those who have observed the experiment on a greater scale than any former ages had witnessed. I scarcely need recapitulate them here. There is a general spread of elementary education, with little care or value for the higher branches of knowledge. As there is little gradation of ranks, there can be but little of those amiable qualities which are chiefly valued for their tendency to soften and ameliorate the relations between poor and rich : courtesy among the higher classes ; its correlative qualities of faithfulness, respectfulness, loyalty, among the lower : and not only are they little known, but they are rather contemned, as out of place and keeping, as relics of servitude, fragments of the chain which the colonists broke when they abandoned their mother-country. Self-dependence, self-confidence, pride both intellectual and spiritual, are peculiarly encouraged. But, with little courtesy, there is generally much kindness and helpfulness, and a spirit of fellowship and mutual support replaces that of mutual dependence ; though humility be rare, there is much manliness and simplicity of disposition ; for the mind is freed from many of those oppressive influences which warp and degrade it amidst the extremes of excessive toil and idleness, of bitter want and pampered luxury. Add to these natural tendencies the prevalence of that exclusive eager-

* I must remind the reader that this was written in 1840.

ness for acquisition and accumulation which I have already mentioned, and we have most of the elements of the character of a new society, so far as this is produced by the circumstances of its economical situation.

But the picture would be very incomplete without reference to that other set of causes which I have already mentioned, and which is too often overlooked ; I mean the condition of the society from which the emigrants have proceeded, and the example of neighbouring communities. It is evident that many of the common qualities above specified can scarcely be called, in themselves, good or evil ; they owe their good or evil stamp, or at least their strength and intensity, to the influence of habits and feelings acquired from other sources. Suppose a population chiefly comprised of emigrants of a poor but industrious class ; proceeding from a community in which freedom prevails, but in which, as yet, the usages of old times, and an affectionate reverence for antiquity, have hardly died away ; from a community possessed of commercial activity, but not engrossed by it ; religious in popular sentiments and observance ; and governed by wise and equal laws, cherishing the self-respect of the citizen. And let us suppose that this population, brought into happier physical circumstances by its removal, has no very extensive scope for ambition, or for great commercial speculation : that it knows itself small and powerless, hemmed in by the forest and the savage,—not so as to have its peace or safety endangered, but so as to feel and estimate the virtue of moderation. Perhaps we have now before us the picture of the happiest condition—the most favourable, on the whole, to the moral as well as physical well-being of the mass—which ever has existed in the innumerable revolutions of human affairs. Many drawbacks there would be, and many imperfections ; but, on the whole, no state of society would be so free from them. Such was the

I have already
ements of the
produced by
n.

plete without
I have already
oked ; I mean
the emigrants

bouring com-
the common
alled, in them-
or evil stamp,
the influence

sources. Sup-
migrants of a
n a community
n, as yet, the

reverence for
a community
engrossed by
servance ; and

shing the self-
pose that this
circumstances

e for ambition,
it knows itself
forest and the
ty endangered,

of moderation.
picture of the
on the whole,
of the mass —

revolutions of
would be, and
no state of
Such was the

picture exhibited by a few English colonies, for instance, Pennsylvania, for many years before the war of independence ; the political Arcadia of modern times ; a picture which never can be presented again, amidst all the vicissitudes through which the civilized world may pass : for although the *like* constantly recurs in political history, the *same* never does, and society has outgrown this specific form.

Very different in many respects is the state of such a community when political causes from abroad have exercised an unfavourable influence on its development ; when, for example, the nation or the class from which the emigration proceeds has lost much of that attachment to old usages and opinions which once characterized it : for this quality, though not always without its mischievous working in the body politic at home, exercises a steadying and counteracting influence on the progress of society in new circumstances. So, too, increased animosity between the poor and the rich ; discontent with political institutions ; a commercial spirit, impatient of slow results, and eager for great gains ; — the existence of all these in the mother-country, whatever their aggregate effect may be at home, must act unfavourably on the colony composed of emigrants from it, because they contribute to augment the force of those very tendencies to which colonial society, as we have seen, is naturally prone. The exaggerated spirit of democracy, in a people necessarily of democratic habits, renders all government more difficult, and self-government more dangerous. The feverish activity of mercantile speculation cannot but tend to injure a community in which the absorbing propensity is naturally the pursuit of gain.

Nor must we omit, in considering the circumstances of modern colonies, the effects of example : the effects of the great and rapid supremacy to which one republic has raised itself, on the spirit and character of all the

infant republics of the world : the influence exercised on the mind by the habitual contemplation of the gigantic increase of human power through the progress of mechanical invention. The future and the distant form the domain in which the imagination of the colonist delights to revel. Exempt from pressing want and engrossing toil, with little to occupy his thoughts in the monotonous scene around him, he wanders willingly forth into visionary regions of future opulence and grandeur : his ideas, his expressions, acquire a certain colour of habitual exaggeration. The half-formed streets and rude buildings of his neighbouring market-town are scarcely so familiar to his eyes, as the splendid emporium of a populous republic, in which his children are to dwell, is to his fancy. The solitary steamboat which traverses, at intervals, his remote waters, is to him the symbol of commerce on its most magnificent and world-embracing scale,—connects him, in fancy, with the realms of the farthest east and west, and renders them tributary to his anticipated greatness. We have seen, in our own times the spectacle of whole nations indulging in dreams as gorgeous and fantastic as those in which our old dramatists plunged the lordly epicures of their fancy. All this pampered luxuriance of imagination is not without its real utility : not to mention the powerful manner in which it sometimes contributes to economical progress, it also has a tendency, in its way, to elevate the mind above the mere objects of the hour. But it contributes only too powerfully to lead the colonial commonwealth into its besetting errors of self-will and presumption, and ignorance of its real position.

On the whole, however, let us not exaggerate to ourselves the moral evils peculiar to new societies. It is a common saying, that such a country is no place for a gentleman ; and certainly it cannot be congenial to the habits of the artificial class the joint produce of feudalism

and wealth, so called among ourselves. It does not follow that, all things taken into consideration, it is not the best for the great mass of mankind; the best, I mean, considering man not merely as a creature born to eat and drink, and keep himself warm,—but considering him from as high a point of view as the most exalted philosophy requires. Let us admit all that has been urged, and can be urged, respecting the low moral condition of the mass of such a people as the Canadians, or the Americans of the newer states, more unrestrained and violent in their conduct, but otherwise not very different from the former. But let us remember also, that those regions possess no proletary class, living on mendicity and crime; that, however low we may consider the ordinary standard of rectitude among the people, the petty pilfering dishonesty of the lowest ranks in old states scarcely exists; that there is no overgrown manufacturing population, with its fearful mass of vice; that the life and energy of infancy are not ground down by incessant toil; that domestic morality is in general peculiarly pure and sound; that religion is honoured, whatever the extravagances and errors with which religious zeal is impregnated;—and we shall be disposed, on the whole, to think that the comparison, if pressed with odious minuteness, might possibly turn out not so favourable to ourselves as appears to be the fashionable opinion.

On the other hand, in colonies raising valuable exportable produce, the necessary accumulation of capital in a few hands, which has a tendency, as we have seen, to take place at an early period, is calculated to correct the natural proneness of colonial society towards democracy. It must, at the very least, break the abrupt transition from the old state of society to the new. If a supply of dependent labour could be provided, the gradation of ranks might possibly be maintained. As I have often explained, there is no instance in colonial history of the

combined operation of capital and labour, except through the medium of slavery or quasi-slavery. But if those mischiefs could be avoided—if, by turning political reveries into realities, we could create a class of men, free and their own masters, willing to work for wages, able to obtain an ample remuneration for labour, and unable or unwilling to make the immediate passage from the condition of hired labourers to that of independent land-owners,—either an aristocratic state of society might be maintained, with all its consequences, good or evil; or, at all events, the progress of equalization would be less rapid and more safe. Now, if the so-called South Australian scheme, by which an abundant supply of labour is to be procured, and the price of land at the same time kept up, turns out to be practically efficient, this will certainly be the mode of its operation, in whatever degree it may realize such consequences as I have here anticipated. I have already dwelt, at length, on its economical character, and the prospects which it holds out. These political results, though more distant and uncertain, are deeply interesting, and render it a matter of still more serious importance that the experiment should be fairly tried.

These considerations, as to the peculiar qualities which characterize society in young colonies, are peculiarly important as an introduction to the difficult problem of their political government. Let us now briefly address ourselves to a few of the elementary questions which enter into the composition of that problem.

There are two methods by which a colony may be retained in political connection with the mother-country. The first is that of absolute government; surrounded with more or with fewer controlling institutions, which may delay or divide the action of the governing will; for the chief executive officer may act in conjunction with councillors sent from the mother-country, or with councillors appointed by the sovereign from among the colo-

nists,—as in the ancient colonies of Spain and France, and in the crown colonies of Great Britain, which have no representative assembly. Under this system the colonists may be kept in subjection by force; by that habit of submission which is produced by such a polity; by a sense of interest, nay, by attachment, when substantial prosperity is secured to them, and the administration is wise and temperate. In this case the mother state can introduce such domestic institutions as she may deem advisable for the welfare of the colonists; such, for instance, as an aristocracy, privileged classes, a dominant church, or establishments for public education. She, the mother-country, charges herself in this case with the welfare of the governed, and is bound to mould their young society in such a manner as those in whom her own sovereign authority resides consider the most expedient for it.

The other is that of absolute freedom; in which the executive power in the colony claims no greater rights than it has in a representative government at home. To borrow the description of a community thus governed from Mr. (now Sir G.) Lewis's recent work*:—"In respect of its relations to foreign countries, its practical dependence on the dominant country is complete. It is related amicably to every foreign country with which the dominant country is at peace. It is related hostilely to every foreign country with which the dominant country is at war; although it does not maintain a standing army or navy of its own, and is defended by the arms of the dominant country from foreign aggression or insult. The dominant country, moreover, regulates the commercial intercourse of the dependency with other independent states. In respect, however, of its internal affairs, the condition of the dependency approaches closely to a state of practical independence. The dominant

* On the Government of Dependencies, ch. x. p. 302.

“country determines the form of the government by which the dependency is immediately governed. But, for other purposes, the dominant country interferes as little as possible with the internal economy of the dependency; and especially the dominant country does not require the dependency to contribute to the expenses of the general government of the empire.” In this case the colonists are left to tax themselves, to administer themselves municipally, to superintend their own domestic institutions. Under such a government there should seem much reason to expect that the colony would remain an integral part of the empire just as long as mutual interest appears to recommend: there need be no prejudice or irritation at work to bring about premature separation; nay, perhaps the connexion might be maintained, by mutual good-will, longer than mere considerations of advantage would have upheld it; for there is, undoubtedly, a natural attachment between a colony and its metropolis, wherever the inhabitants of the former do not feel their sentiments or their interests interfered with by the conduct of the latter. And this natural attachment is kept alive to a great degree by the process of immigration. So long, for instance, as every year continues to furnish a great body of British colonists, fresh from the mother-country, and with all her feelings and habits clinging about them, to reinforce the population of our North American provinces, so long we are assured of a powerful influence at work to counteract those tendencies to separation which the neighbourhood of the great Republic, or political causes originating in the colonies themselves, may chance to produce.

This latter system was that adopted by our ancestors in the foundation of colonies. Arbitrary interference on the part of the government at home with what may be called the domestic institutions of the settlers, was so rare an occurrence that it might fairly be considered as the violation of an established rule: whether the constitution

were charter, or royal, or proprietary, the system was, in practice, almost the same. The crown, or the proprietors, ordinarily claimed nothing beyond the rights expressly reserved to them in the charter or deed of incorporation. It was not esteemed any part of the duty of the central authority to superintend the affairs—civil, moral, or religious—of those to whom had been given, by tacit implication, a right to control themselves. We have seen that this connexion, slight as it was, maintained itself until new doctrines began to prevail at home, and rights of sovereignty were insisted upon which had never been practically asserted before : then the separation took place.

It may, however, be contended, with justice, that, in the present circumstances of the world, absolute political freedom is a more dangerous boon than it was in the days of our ancestors ; more dangerous, that is, to the continuance of the connexion between the home government and the dependency,—which is the point we are now considering. Political excitement is stronger than of old, or at least more continuous ; high democratic doctrines more prevalent ; the animosity of classes and ranks more open in its manifestations. And to all this must be added, as we have seen before, the effect of the example of the United States, ever present and fructifying in the imaginations of colonial reformers in every corner of the world. There will always be a government party and a popular party ; a party resting for its existence and influence on the detection of abuses, and inflamed representation of grievances ; a party which must of necessity, be it consciously or unintentionally, incline towards principles of national independence. And it has been observed, with some truth, that a popular party in a colony is invariably more extreme in its views than a popular party (except the very ultra section of it) in an old country ; because the former can entertain comparatively little of those hopes of power which continually

influence the latter, and induce the leaders of opposition to refrain from advocating violent measures, which, if in office, they might be called upon, for the sake of consistency, to propose.

This last consideration would be of less importance, if the prizes held out to political partisans by our system of government were of a less tempting kind; if administration were cheaper than it is. It is one of the many evils attending over-government, that party spirit is created and fostered by the mere hope of partaking in the profits of the great expenditure which accompanies it. Our own times are probably the first in which the governing body, in large states, has sought to acquire strength by multiplying dependants on the public purse; a matter of state-craft now well understood in some great European kingdoms. Under our old colonial system, no temptation whatever was held out to self-interest assuming the mask of patriotism. The expense of the civil establishment in Massachusetts Bay, before the commencement of the American war, was estimated by Adam Smith at about 18,000*l.* a year; that of New Hampshire and Rhode Island, 3500*l.* each; that of Connecticut, 4000*l.*; that of New York and Pennsylvania, 4500*l.* each; that of New Jersey, 1500*l.*; that of Virginia and South Carolina, 8000*l.* each. "An ever-memorable example," as he most truly adds, "at how small an expense 3,000,000 of people "may not only be governed, but well governed."* In 1836, the civil expenditure of Newfoundland, paid out of its revenue, was 36,000*l.*; of Prince Edward's Island, 13,000*l.*; New Brunswick, 52,000*l.*; Lower Canada, at least 100,000*l.*† If this enormous difference were compensated by superior government, I, for one, should be little disposed to cavil at the amount of the sums which

* Wealth of Nations, book iv. ch. 7.

† Montgomery Martin's "Colonies of the British Empire."

of opposition
s, which, if in
e sake of con-

importance, if
our system of
if administra-
the many evils
is created and
the profits of
it. Our own
the governing
re strength by
; a matter of
great European
, no temptation
ming the mask
establishment in
cement of the
Smith at about
ire and Rhode
4000%; that of
; that of New
Carolina, 8000%.
he most truly
000 of people
governed."* In
nd, paid out of
Edward's Island,
ver Canada, at
difference were
for one, should
the sums which

sh Empire."

the people of the colonies are called on to advance for the purchase of so inestimable a blessing. But I might safely ask those who entertain the highest notions of government and its duties, whether any of its functions, moral or material, are better fulfilled in our colonies of the present day than they were in the ancient American provinces.*

But to return from this digression. We have seen, in a former lecture, that since the American revolution there has been a propensity in the minds of British statesmen to construct a system of colonial government answering to neither of these descriptions, but partaking of the characteristics of both. It is perhaps not strictly correct to designate by the name of a system a series of aims and conceptions which were probably connected by no very definite unity of purpose in the minds of those who framed them; but their tendency, on the whole, was, to construct subordinate commonwealths, not merely united to the mother-state for purposes of commerce and external relations, but of which the domestic institutions were to be controlled and modelled by the superior power at home. We have granted them, as formerly, representative governments. But both the right and the policy of interfering with the internal administration of those governments, — of introducing from Britain such institutions as

* (1861.) It is unnecessary for me to do more than advert, in passing, to the corrections which subsequent events have rendered it necessary to make in these speculations. It was a pardonable error, in 1840, to believe that public expenditure was fostered by government interference from home in the internal affairs of colonies, and (relying on precedents of old times) to imagine that self-government implied cheap government. Twenty years of colonial history have taught us a very different lesson. Canada, the Lower Provinces, but above all Australia, have proved that the absence of imperial control, far from diminishing the public expenditure, has enormously increased it, and that domestic independence, whatever its other merits, has brought in its train an extravagant profusion beyond all proportion with the present resources of those communities. See more on this subject in the appendix to this lecture.

we British approve of, — of exercising a sort of paternal jurisdiction in forming and training the political society of the colonists—have been much insisted on among ourselves, and partly put in practice where we have had the power. Every one who has attentively studied the history of our present colonial discontents will see that I have correctly stated this inclination of modern opinion ; and every one who has studied the history of the past will probably agree with me that it is a departure, whether right or wrong, from the policy of our ancestors.

And it is one which certainly involves us in many difficulties ; which opens to the mind altogether new combinations and oppugnancies of political powers ; which seems to require some new system of checks, some contrivances as yet unimagined, in order to work for the benefit either of the governing or dependent community. A representative body, having the power of taxation, is apt to think itself omnipotent in domestic matters, and to act upon that supposition ; and if it then becomes necessary to control it by force, it is impossible to intrust it safely any longer with the power of taxation. An assembly, such as exists in many states and provinces under absolute government, charged with the power of apportioning taxation, may very well subsist without intrenching on the prerogatives of the real legislature ; but an assembly which originates taxation, which grants the supplies, could hardly do so. As Sir G. Lewis expresses it, “If the government of the “dominant country substantially govern the dependency, “the representative body cannot substantially govern it ; “and, conversely, if the dependency be substantially governed by the representative body, it cannot be substantially governed by the dominant body. A self-governing dependency (supposing the dependency not to be “virtually independent) is a contradiction in terms.”* If so, it seems difficult (except by the continued application

* Essay on the Government of Dependencies, p. 296.

port of paternal
tical society of
among ourselves,
and the power.
history of our
have correctly
and every one
probably agree
right or wrong,

s in many diffi-
r new combina-
; which seems
e contrivances
e benefit either

. A represen-
is apt to think
o act upon that
ry to control it
ely any longer

, such as exists
te government,
taxation, may
ne prerogatives
hich originates

hardly do so.
rnment of the
e dependency,
ally govern it;
ubstantially go-

not be substan-
A self-govern-
ncy not to be
n terms." * If
ed application

s, p. 296.

of force, and with repeated disturbance in the motions of the machine of state) to give to a people a representative assembly with the usual powers of such a body, and at the same time to establish among them domestic institutions to which they are not attached; dispose of their land to such purposes as we, and not they, may deem expedient; introduce our jurisprudence into their tribunals (as the criminal law of England was transferred to Canada by act of parliament in 1774*); govern them by officers selected as friends to our state, and not as popular among themselves, exempting these from all responsibility to the colonial legislature. If it is not only expedient, but imperatively right, as many wise and excellent men believe it to be, to give to a subject-people those elements of social well-being which they are not sufficiently advanced to appreciate for themselves, can this be done without the introduction, I will not say of arbitrary government, but at all events of a more stringent system than any which England has hitherto adopted towards her colonies?

And there is one other problem in policy which is suggested by a view of the progress and institutions of our modern colonial empire. Whichever character the state means ultimately to impose on her offspring,—that of subjection, or that which Sir G. Lewis calls virtual independence,—should the choice be made at once or should an experimental, temporary scheme be first adopted? The latter has been the modern plan, among themselves. Many of our existing colonies have only had constitutions granted them at a pretty advanced period in their settlement. And some have been subjected at their foundation to absolute government, with an understanding that they will by and by receive one: one (South Australia) with a promise, guaranteed by act of parliament, that the boon shall be given when the number of its inhabitants amounts

* I cite this as an example of the fact, rather than to establish the reasoning; for Canada had at that period no representative assembly.

to 50,000. Certainly to observers imbued with the notions of these times, such a course is apt, at first sight, to appear the most advisable. We rather shrink from the idea of saddling the first laborious settlers in the wilderness with the duties of self-government: plain, practical institutions we know to be the best adapted for them; and these we are apt to identify with absolute rule. Yet it is worth while to pause, and consider in how different a light our ancestors regarded this matter. They did not dream (that is, in by far the majority of instances) that the colonist was not fully fitted to enjoy at first whatever measure of liberty was to be ultimately his portion. We have seen that the people of Massachusetts Bay made their own constitution almost as soon as they arrived there; it was ratified at home, its provisions were transferred not many years afterwards to a royal charter, and continued to exist during the whole period of its dependence. When the enthusiast Roger Williams settled Rhode Island, with a few people escaped from the persecution of their Puritan brethren in Massachusetts, he framed in the very next year a republican policy for his dozen or two of families. It was confirmed by charter in 1662, and continues at this very day to be the constituent law of that flourishing little commonwealth. According to our present ideas, Rhode Island would not have been "entitled" to a constitution until a century and a half after its first settlement.

It cannot be questioned that this as well as other political problems is much complicated by the prevalence of high political theories at the present day. The settlers of New England were republican in habits, not in sentiment (which only grew up at a later era), and valued their free institutions just at their practical worth. In our times, we must always expect that a community possessed of political powers will be influenced more or less by exaggerated views and feelings in the exercise of them. But the question remains substantially the same, — whether

with the notions
right, to appear
m the idea of
wilderness with
cal institutions
and these we
et it is worth
at a light our
ot dream (that
t the colonist
er measure of
We have seen
their own con-
here; it was
rred not many
inued to exist
e. When the
Island, with a
their Puritan
he very next
o of families,
tinues at this
urishing little
ideas, Rhode
a constitution
ment.

well as other
he prevalence
The settlers
not in senti-
d valued their
rth. In our
nity possessed
or less by ex-
f them. But
e, — whether

500 men of ordinary British habits and notions, and not too much scattered over the soil, cannot administer themselves as well as 50,000; whether the size of a community — supposing it protected from external violence — has anything to do with its capacity for self-government. And it is to be observed, that the more dangerous influences of the democratic spirit do not easily grow to a head in a very small community; every man is known, every man is responsible; and free institutions, formed during this period of comparative simplicity, are perhaps more likely to endure safely the expansion of the commonwealth, than to be received with safety by a people already adolescent. Whatever may be the vantage ground secured by the central government during the period of delay, it is certain that when the expected boon arrives it will find the colony divided into two classes — those who are its masters now, and those who expect to be its masters hereafter; and that it will find the minds of a large number possessed with a prejudiced hatred toward those elements of good society which may have been introduced during the period of minority. I can only refer you, in passing, to the recent history of Newfoundland, as affording perhaps the most striking example of events which have taken place, more or less, in nearly all our present colonies soon after their passage from a state of pupilage to freedom.

Is there, then, no practicable method of drawing the bonds of union closer, and giving each member of a great colonial empire a greater sympathy with the mother country, without impairing its individual strength and freedom? Is it possible (and this is the last political question which I will discuss) to admit into the Imperial Parliament representatives from the colonies?

It is well known with how much favour this project was received in England before the American war; how strongly it is advocated by Adam Smith, among other high authorities; and how powerfully it is controverted by

Burke. But there seems to be one radical objection to it, which the arguments of Burke do not touch. If the union is to be complete, provincial legislatures must be abolished. There can be no more a separate parliament for Canada than a separate parliament for Yorkshire. Canada must then submit to be taxed and governed by a body in which Canadian representatives would form an infinitely unimportant fraction, while the great mass would be utter strangers to Canada and its interests. Canada would have really no voice in the state whatever, and no recognized public organs at home. It would be as mere a dependency as Malta or Gibraltar. This is a mode of government to which it would be very undesirable, if it were practicable, to submit great colonies.

But if colonies were to retain their own legislatures for internal taxation and the smaller details of government, and at the same time send representatives to the central parliament, then the question would necessarily arise, what functions do these colonial representatives actually perform? Where the power of taxation is, there resides in truth the supreme domestic authority. The trans-oceanic members of parliament, destitute of real importance, would become mere hangers-on of parties in the mother country; the provincial assembly would represent public opinion, as it does now, and the quarrels between it and the executive would be altogether unaffected by the influence of the little knot of gentlemen who might be sent to enact the visionary part of legislators in London.

We have now accompanied the colony, in this rapid review of her progress, to that critical stage when the years of her apprenticeship are past, and Nature has pronounced her free. But it does not follow as a necessary consequence that the attainment of domestic freedom is

objection to it,

If the union
t be abolished.
t for Canada
Canada must
body in which
ninitely unim-
ould be utter
la would have
no recognized
a dependency
government to
re practicable,

legislatures for
f government,
to the central
cessarily arise,
atives actually
, there resides
. The trans-
of real impor-
parties in the
ould represent
arrels between
affected by the
might be sent
London.

in this rapid
ge when the
ture has pro-
s a necessary
c freedom is

inconsistent with a continued dependence on the imperial sovereignty. The epoch of separation is not marked and definite, a necessary point in the cycle of human affairs, as some theorists have regarded it. Union might be preserved, for any reason which theory has to show against it, long after the sense of *necessary* dependence is gone. I do not speak of that inglorious and unlovely subjection which may be maintained by force; a possibility to which the last few years have given more colour than ever, from increased facilities of communication, and the terrible strength which has been added to the resources of modern war; but one which every wise man must deprecate as a far worse result than that which it prevents. But the mere political link of sovereignty may remain, by amicable consent, long after the colony has acquired sufficient strength to stand alone. Existing relations may be preserved, by very slight sacrifices, on terms of mutual goodwill. But this can only be by the gradual relaxation of the ties of dependence. The union must more and more lose the protective, and approximate to the federative, character. And the crown may remain, at last, in solitary supremacy, the only common authority recognised by many different legislatures, by many nations politically and socially distinct.

Such, at least, are the reveries of speculative politicians. Whether such a future is to be expected, as within the range of reasonable probability, for our own magnificent and daily expanding empire, is a question on which I forbear to dwell. If the anticipation of it be only a dream, it is one which elevates and inspires the imagination. Rome, for five centuries, controlled under one sceptre the

“ thousand tribes nourished on strange religions
And lawless slaveries ” —

which occupied half the surface of the ancient world.
And the character of her supremacy altered precisely as I

have supposed that of my imaginary colonial empire to alter. In the first ages of her dominion, there was a ruling people, controlling the rest of mankind with equal laws and firm policy, but retaining to itself all the benefits of power, and nearly all the privileges of municipal freedom. Gradually, by steps more or less marked, this form of polity was succeeded by a very different one. There was no longer any political distinction of nations. The name of province was retained : but the province, from a subject district, became a mere territorial division of the empire. Its people were still called provincials : but the provincial was substantially on the same footing with the Italian, the Italian with the Roman. Rome herself was looked up to with reverence, not with jealousy ; as the fountain of laws, order, and civilization, but no longer as imposing them on a conquered world. And the Roman Empire subsisted inviolate to the last,—torn asunder by foreign violence, but never divided from within.

On such conditions as these—and assuredly, if not on these, then on none—may we not conceive England as retaining the seat of the chief executive authority, the prescriptive reverence of her station, the superiority belonging to her vast accumulated wealth, and as the commercial metropolis of the world ; and united, by these ties only, with a hundred nations,—not unconnected, like those which yielded to the spear of the Roman, but her own children, owning one faith and one language ? May we not figure to ourselves, scattered thick as stars over the surface of this earth, communities of citizens owning the name of Britons, bound by allegiance to a British sovereign, and uniting heart and hand in maintaining the supremacy of Britain on every shore which her unconquered flag can reach ? These may be extravagant views ; but, if rightly understood, they have this advantage,—that the pursuit of them cannot lead the mind to wander in an unprofitable track. They are altogether

ial empire to
re was a ruling
th equal laws
the benefits of
cipal freedom.
this form of
e. There was
s. The name
, from a sub-
division of the
cials: but the
oting with the
e herself was
lousy; as the
t no longer as
nd the Roman
n asunder by
hin.

edly, if not on
e England as
authority, the
e superiority
h, and as the
ited, by these
onected, like
oman, but her
guage? May
as stars over
izens owning
to a British
aintaining the
ich her un-
e extravagant
e this advan-
the mind to
re altogether

inconsistent with the notions which have at different times led this country so fatally astray, in the defence of valueless rights or imaginary advantages; they are altogether inconsistent with the idea of a subjection enforced by bayonets—of a subjection bought through the means of a constant and galling expenditure, or by the still more injurious method of conceding commercial monopolies. Every step which could be taken towards the construction or maintenance of a union thus cemented would be a step favourable to the individual well-being and prosperity of every member. Every experiment in this direction would be serviceable alike to the colony affected by it, whether the ultimate destiny of that colony were an equitable connexion, or a bloodless separation.

APPENDIX TO LECTURE XXII.

(1861.)

WHEN these lectures were published, the experiment of what is now called "responsible government" for colonies had not as yet been tried. That is to say, although the majority of British colonies possessed in 1842 a free legislature, comprising an elective assembly with power of taxation, the executive administration was, in all alike, in the hands of the Crown. It was conducted by a Governor appointed from home, with the assistance of an Executive Council. This was a small body of functionaries, also appointed by the Crown, but virtually to a great extent on the nomination of the Governor: in name "during pleasure," but practically for life. Most public acts were (as they still are) legally performed by the Governor "in Council:" and although he always possessed the power of overruling the decisions of that body, yet it may easily be conceived that in local matters its influence usually predominated.

The change to "responsible government" was one which required no legislative process to effect it, and scarcely rendered necessary the change even of a few words in the Governor's "Commission and Instructions," the organic instruments of colonial government. It consisted merely in this: that the Executive Council, or a certain number of them, were appointed with the understanding that they would have to resign office in case of an adverse vote of the legislature. But all appointment to places of power and profit in the colony virtually passed, by reason of this change, so slight in form, from the hands of the Governor and the home authorities into those of the Executive Council, or "responsible" ministry.

XXII.

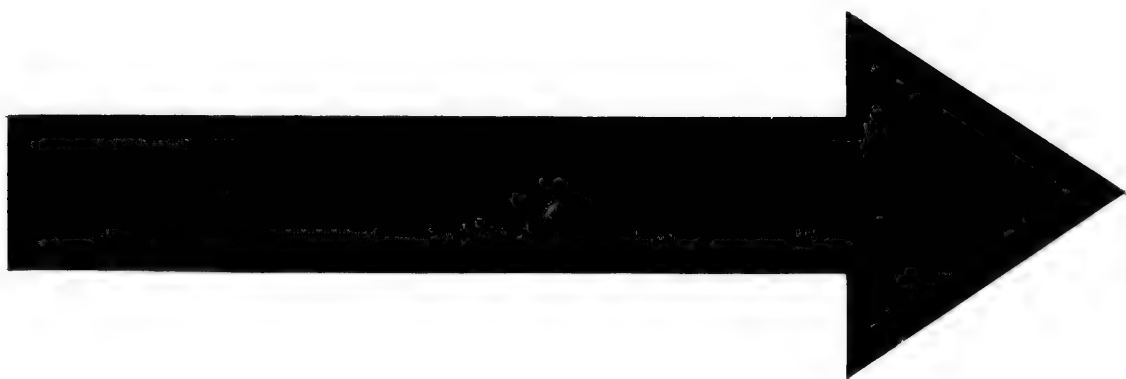
experiment of
at" for colonies
y, although the
42 a free legis-
with power of
in all alike, in
by a Governor
of an Executive
ctionaries, also
a great extent
name "during
ublic acts were
Governor "in
sed the power
t it may easily
ce usually pre-

was one which
, and scarcely
y words in the
" the organic
nsisted merely
ertain number
ding that they
lverse vote of
aces of power
reason of this
the Governor
the Executive

Many regarded this change, at first, as effecting little more than a transfer of local patronage from the old executives—commonly a local and unpopular "clique"—to the popular side. The real importance and magnitude of the revolution, though fully foreseen by the statesmen who planned it, were scarcely understood by the colonial or by the British public until some time later. Responsible government was first conceded to Canada in 1846; that great province had been formed in 1841 by the union of Upper and Lower Canada, and the old system of government was soon felt to be incompatible with its new position: but some years of struggle were required in order to wrest power from its established holders, and to teach its new possessors the limits of their acquirement. The same concession was gradually made to the other North American colonies, under the administration of Lord Grey, between 1847 and 1852; and a little subsequently to the Australian. A system approximating to it has been established in Jamaica and one or two other West India Islands. The Cape of Good Hope presents now the only instance of a large colony, with a free legislature, but as yet without a "responsible" executive: nor does its community appear at all impatient for the acquisition.

Before entering at greater length into the political condition and prospects of our principal colonies under the democratic polity to which they have recently attained, it may be advisable to take a brief review of the general principles and practice of colonial government as now established.

The historical portion of this great subject will be best understood by keeping in mind that leading distinction, established in men's minds, though but confusedly, ever since the earliest days of British colonization and conquest, elevated to the rank of a legal principle by Lord Mansfield, and ever since the time of that great judge scrupulously observed.



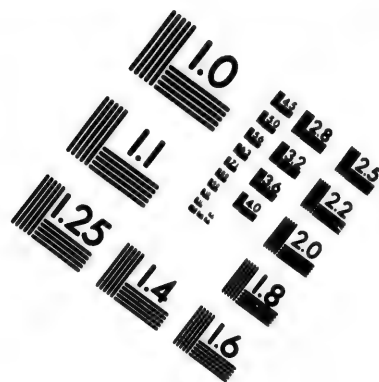
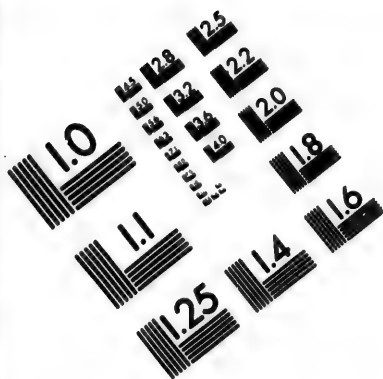
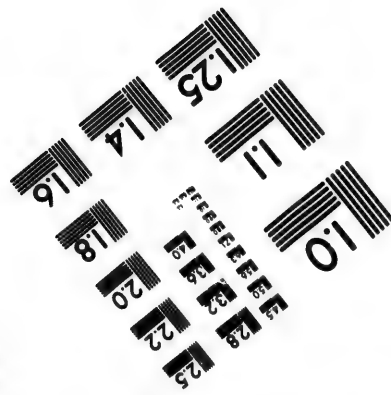
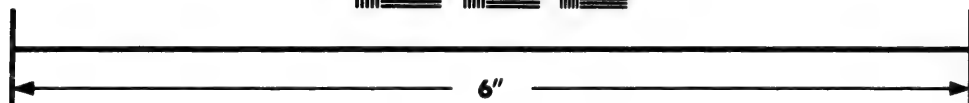
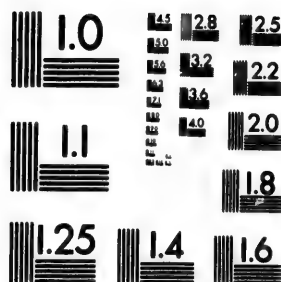


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

Every Englishman carries with him English liberties into any unoccupied country in which he may settle, so far as these are compatible with his position. It follows that no legislature except representative (or, to speak more strictly, in which one house is elective and originates taxation) can be established by the Crown in any such new settlement, however minute; nor can the Crown legislate for it, by orders in council or otherwise.

But, on the other hand, the Crown has absolute power of legislation (commonly exercised by Order in Council) in every "conquered or ceded" colony. And the Crown has usually constituted in such colonies legislative councils, consisting of members wholly nominated by itself, some of them official persons, some distinguished private colonists. But such councils are rather to be regarded as auxiliary to the Crown's power of legislation than as superseding it.

But if the Crown thinks proper to call together a representative assembly in a conquered colony, the franchise so given is irrevocable, and the Crown's power of legislation is gone. This was decided by Lord Mansfield in the celebrated case of *Campbell v. Hall*, considered as the leading one in this branch of jurisprudence: the subject being the constitution of the conquered island of Dominica.

The powers of Parliament are of course limited by no such restrictions. We shall see presently in what sense it is legally omnipotent in colonies as well as at home. The aid of Parliament has been therefore many times invoked, and that for two different purposes: sometimes, to give free institutions to colonies which lacked them, and could not for special reasons receive them from the Crown alone; sometimes, to enable the Crown to legislate for very small communities, founded by Englishmen, but in which the exercise of the full franchise of Englishmen was deemed inexpedient.

English liberties
may settle, so
ion. It follows
(or, to speak
and originates
own in any such
can the Crown
otherwise.

absolute power
der in Council)
And the Crown
legislative coun-
nated by itself,
guished private
to be regarded
legislation than

d together a re-
ny, the franchise
power of legis-
rd Mansfield in
considered as
prudence: the
quered island of

e limited by no
y in what sense
ll as at home.
re many times
es: sometimes,
h lacked them,
them from the
Crown to legis-
by Englishmen,
ise of English-

There are, therefore, four classes of colonies, as regards their constitution.

Those on the old English model, resembling in general outline those of the Thirteen Provinces, now forming the old United States. In these the legislature is a miniature parliament, with an elective assembly, an upper house or legislative council nominated by the Crown, and a governor whose assent is necessary to give validity to enactments. This class still subsists in the old West India Islands and some of the Lower Provinces of North America.

Crown colonies: in which the Crown has never parted with the power of legislation, and the legislative councils (where any exist) consist of nominated members. These are now but a few, of which Ceylon and the Mauritius are the most important.

Colonies to which the Crown has by an exercise of prerogative given complete, or partial, representative institutions. The Cape is the most remarkable instance, in which the experiment was first tried, and by Crown authority alone, of constituting *two* elective chambers.

Lastly: colonies of which the constitution is framed by Acts of Parliament; comprising almost every variety of institutions, from the double elective chamber and democratic suffrage of the golden colony Victoria, to the close and peculiarly constituted body which makes laws for the vast empire of India.

But, so strangely various are the circumstances of colonial societies, and, it must be added, so powerful is that taste for piecemeal legislation, so instinctive that dislike to systems and uniformity, which have ever characterized the political mind of England, that of the fifty dependencies termed colonies, perhaps no two (unless the exception is to be found in a few old-fashioned West India islands) possess an identical constitution of the legislature.

Two only fundamental principles are common to all. In all, the Governor has the right of the "veto." And in all, the Crown has the power of disallowing acts of the legislature: although the modes in which this power is reserved to the Crown are various.

For executive purposes, the Governor has in almost all colonies the aid of a special council, termed, as we have seen, Executive, and composed of certain official persons named by the Crown. This, however, is a modern institution. According to the oldest West Indian pattern, the "Council" was at once the Upper House in the legislature, and the body of constitutional advisers of the Governor in executive matters.

The old colonial form of constitution worked as old institutions will work—quietly in the main, but subject on the one hand to a constant internal antagonism, on the other to much corruption. The antagonism lay in a perpetual conflict between the legislative and executive powers, of which neither was responsible to the other, and neither could control the other. The Crown could not compel the imposition of a tax, or the payment of a single public officer. The assembly could not compel the Crown to nominate or to dismiss a functionary. As a general rule, all held their offices practically for life. The political existence of a community so formed necessarily consists of a series of quarrels and reconciliations between the two opposing authorities. Compromises were constantly being effected, and sometimes at the cost of the community. The abuses and corruption, of which standing complaints were made, were of two kinds: the appointment of unfit men, or creation of sinecure places, by irresponsible authority in England or the colony; and the uncontrolled voting of public money by the assemblies. For these bodies, jealous of the executive to which they were constantly opposed, never would part with a most mischievous branch of their power, by

common to all.
"veto." And
ing acts of the
this power is

as in almost all
ed, as we have
official persons
a modern in-
Indian pattern,
House in the
advisers of the

worked as old
in, but subject
antagonism, on
agonism lay in
and executive
e to the other,
e Crown could
payment of a
not compel
functionary.
practically for
nity so formed
and reconcilia-
ties. Compro-
sometimes at
and corruption,
were of two
creation of sine-
ngland or the
blic money by
f the executive
never would
their power, by

surrendering the initiative of money votes to the local governments. To this day, in most West Indian colonies, any member of assembly can propose a money vote.

This form of constitution may still be studied in action in those small communities, politically, as well as economically, stationary for many years past. We have seen that in the North American and Australian colonies it has now given place to that which is popularly termed responsible government.

The general meaning of "responsible government" has been already explained: and it has been shown that, technically, its introduction requires no legal change at all. The executive council is constituted by the Crown, as before: only it is an understood thing that its members cease to hold office when outvoted in the legislature; and a new council, or, as the popular phrase now is, a new ministry, is constituted. The greatest of all political changes hitherto effected in colonies is accomplished with scarcely the alteration of a single word in the venerable documents which constitute their charters — the "Governor's Commission and Instructions."

The magnitude of that change — the extraordinary rapidity of its beneficial effects — it is scarcely possible to exaggerate. None, but those who have traced it, can realise the sudden spring made by a young community under its first release from the old tie of subjection, moderate as that tie really was. The cessation, as if by magic, of the old irritant sores between colony and mother country is the first result. Not only are they at an end, but they seem to leave hardly any traces in the public mind behind them. Confidence and affection towards the "home," still fondly so termed by the colonist as well as the emigrant, seem to supersede at once distrust and hostility. Loyalty, which was before the badge of a class suspected by the rest of the community, becomes the common watchword of all: and,

with some extravagance in the sentiment, there arises no small share of its nobleness and devotion. Communities, which but a few years ago would have wrangled over the smallest item of public expenditure to which they were invited by the executive to contribute, have vied with each other in their subscriptions to purposes of British interest; in response to calls on humanity or munificence, for objects but indistinctly heard of at the distance of half the world. Nor is the advance in social progress, contemporaneous with this change, less remarkable than the improvement in public feeling. Progress of this description depends so far more on economical than political causes, that it is necessary to pronounce with caution respecting its origin: nevertheless, the fact itself is undeniable.

But time has not yet been afforded to test the real merits of the system, or to ascertain whether it furnishes in truth a practical and durable form of government or no.

It is to be observed that it has worked very differently in the North American and in the Australian colonies. In the former, owing mainly to peculiarities already adverted to in these lectures, there is no aristocracy of wealthy landed owners. Raising no exportable produce of much value and requiring much labour, they have afforded no field for the application of masses of capital to the soil. Such fortunes as are made in those regions are acquired in trade, and do not give to their possessor political influence, or place him in a false position if he has none. The general tendency to democracy, already commented on in these lectures, was therefore not especially promoted by the introduction of "responsible" government. The kind of oligarchy which it overthrew, leaning on mother country interest for support, had no root in the communities themselves. Power was easily transferred from that class to another, which attained it through the ordinary means by which the favour of the multitude

there arises no Communities, wrangled over to which they bute, have vied to purposes of on humanity or heard of at the the advance in this change, less public feeling. far more on econecessary to progin : nevertheless,

to test the real whether it furnishes government or no. ed very differently Australian colonies. arities already ad- no aristocracy of xportable produce labour, they have f masses of capital e in those regions to their possessor false position if he democracy, already therefore not espe- of "responsible" which it overthrew, support, had no root er was easily trans- attained it through our of the multitude

is purchased. There was no other change. Faulty, no doubt, in many respects, particularly in their extreme instability, their reckless mode of dealing with the public money, their subjection to the control of partisanship in its least dignified forms, their governments do nevertheless on the whole fully and fairly represent the general spirit of the communities, and move in accordance with it.

In Australia the circumstances of the colonies, when domestic independence was thus attained by them, were very different. The community, new and unfixed as it was, nevertheless represented more truly than in North America the character of the mother country, with its diversities of ranks and fortunes. The convict system had rendered familiar the idea of classes of masters and labourers. The production of wool, requiring capital to a considerable amount, both for the proper management of flocks, and because it is a business of slow returns, created a very wealthy territorial aristocracy. The production of gold added to this a moneyed class. Great towns rapidly arose. Montreal, in Canada, is the only place in British North America which would admit of comparison with Sydney and Melbourne, and it falls far short of them in wealth and population, although a century and a half older than either. And there was antagonism between the wealthier and poorer classes ; greatly as that antagonism was exaggerated by those who sought their own profit in maintaining hostility between them. There was probably some truth in the assertion, that the large proprietors or lessees in Australia conceived themselves to have an interest in impeding the general acquisition of land, and in keeping down the wages of labour.

Under these circumstances, the revolution which snapped the slight tie of dependence, on the mother country left the colonial aristocracy desirous, but unable, to make head against numerical majority. And yet this revolution was mainly brought about by that aristocracy

itself. Such is the usual course of events. The able and wealthy leaders of the old Australian legislatures wanted to transfer power from Downing Street to themselves : they succeeded in transferring it to their inferiors. The home government gained a release from the unpopular and useless office of interference : relief from wearisome struggles, and kindness instead of hatred. Australia gained what all communities appear to gain by emancipation, however unfavourable some of the features of that emancipation may have been. Still, the aspect of its political condition is such as to give rise to very serious apprehensions in the minds of those whose confidence in the ultimate success of free institutions is not unbounded. We see the higher and more educated class, as a class, politically ostracised there as in the United States. We see them, consequently, looking to England as their home ; anxious only to accumulate wealth in the colonies as fast as they may ; and using such indirect political power as they may still possess almost wholly for the purpose of maintaining their own pecuniary interests against apprehended encroachments of the multitude. We see them at once disliking and fearing democracy, and yet adopting its commonplaces in their political diction, and ready to make any submission rather than encounter the unpopularity of opposing it.* On the other hand, the attempt by the classes in possession of power to form anything like a stable government has been hitherto quite

* "D'autres membres de l'opposition, plus préoccupés de leur situation populaire que de leur mission parlementaire, se conduisaient en toute occasion envers les meneurs les plus agressifs, avec les plus pusillanimes ménagemens. J'en témoignais un jour quelque surprise à l'un d'entre eux, banquier considérable dont je connaissais les opinions très monarchiques. 'Que voulez-vous ?' me dit-il ; 'vous autres, vous ne me ferez pas de mal ; mais ces gens-là seront quelque jour les maîtres, et ils ont des amis qui pourraient bien avoir la fantaisie de me prendre mon bien et de me couper la tête : je ne veux pas me brouiller avec eux.'" — *Guizot, Mémoires*, vol. iii. p. 208.

nts. The able
lian legislatures
Street to them-
to their inferiors.
e from the un-
ce: relief from
ead of hatred.
appear to gain by
e of the features
ill, the aspect of
e to very serious
se confidence in
not unbounded.
class, as a class,
ted States. We
ngland as their
h in the colonies
ndirect political
wholly for the
uniary interests
e multitude. We
democracy, and
political diction,
r than encounter
e other hand, the
power to form
en hitherto quite

occupés de leur situa-
e, se conduisaient en
s, avec les plus pusil-
quelque surprise à l'un
sais les opinions très
vous autres, vous ne
nt quelque jour les
avoir la fantaisie de
: je ne veux pas me
p. 208.

unsuccessful. The legislative chambers of provinces containing now more than a million of people, and a vast amount of property, seem to present little more than stages on which factions, without substantial party distinctions, are for ever trying to supplant each other in the enjoyment of insignificant places and paltry patronage, while the local energy of the community is concentrated on economical progress, and directed by a very different class of leaders from those who swim or sink in the turbid waters of local politics. And, to speak last of that which is one of the worst inherent embarrassments in working a free constitution in thinly peopled communities, especially where universal suffrage prevails, the power of the few great towns is exorbitant. Their representatives are at once strong in numbers, and (what is more important) always on the spot. Distant sections of the province are virtually disfranchised: and finish by succumbing quietly to the loss of political influence, contented enough if they are treated with moderate justice, and their interests not wholly sacrificed to metropolitan jobs.

The worst practical result of the Australian political systems has hitherto been the extreme profusion with which the pecuniary resources of the colonies have been squandered: a profusion only to be paralleled by the rapidity with which those resources have grown under the influence of the same institutions: but which must assuredly have taught the colonists, by this time, that the budgets of an irresponsible are economy itself compared with those of a "responsible" government. But of the other social mischiefs commonly apprehended from the spread of democracy, no serious proof has as yet been exhibited. We must distinguish, in this investigation, between evils latent and patent, to use a legal distinction. The educated classes necessarily chafe under a polity which places them in habitual subordination to the multitude. And they insist, naturally and forcibly, on what

they deem the low tone which that polity introduces: but this is not a measurable, not a "patent" evil. Patent evils would be — insecurity of life and property, want of confidence in the tribunals of justice, tangible restraints on liberty of thought, life, industry; and with these no community under the British crown can be justly charged: In Victoria, indeed, under the scarcely controlled sway of the working classes, there are said to have been various attempts to interfere with the freedom of capital, and fix the minimum of wages. Such attempts can of course lead to no result except to drive capital from the province, and apprehensions are expressed that this is already the case. But serious invasion of rights of property could scarcely proceed far, in communities where the intense appreciation of property, and eagerness for its possession, render all socialist theories even more impracticable than they are in older commonwealths.

Let us next cast a rapid glance at the various schemes which have suggested themselves to political observers, both in and out of the colonies, for the correction of the excesses and errors, such as they are, of responsible government.

We may dismiss, as of little practical interest, those which have for the base the creation of some oligarchical element by way of balance. But a few years ago, about the period of the colonisation of New Zealand, the project of establishing an English constitution in new settlements — of removing thither a whole section of English society with its various classes — found favour in a good many minds. The utterly impracticable nature of so seductive an idea had not become fully manifest. English liberty is too old and free to bear such transplantation. The young slips which may be cut from it grow up in their natural wildness, and derive from the parent stock only a generally cognate form and nature. To speak without metaphor, all such schemes are inconsistent with

polity introduces:
 "patent" evil.
 fe and property,
 justice, tangible
 ustry; and with
 crown can be
 der the scarcely
 there are said to
 with the freedom

Such attempts
 to drive capital
 e expressed that
 asion of rights of
 in communities
 ty, and eagerness
 eories even more
 monwealths.

various schemes
 olitical observers,
 orrection of the
 , of responsible

l interest, those
 ome oligarchical
 years ago, about
 ealand, the pro-
 on in new settle-
 ction of English
 avour in a good
 e nature of so
 nifest. English
 transplantation.
 it grow up in
 the parent stock
 ure. To speak
 inconsistent with

colonial freedom. Left alone, the usages of a colony necessarily shape themselves into democracy. And democracy never lets go an advantage which it has gained. Its course is always onward. A democratic community may refine itself in many ways; may become less inconsiderate, more steadfast, more virtuous: but never less democratic. Aristocracies widen, and admit the popular element by degrees: tyrannies grow feeble, and give place reluctantly to slowly won liberties: democracy, so far as history teaches us, "ne'er knows retiring ebb," and has its advance only repelled by violence. The upper house, or council, in a colonial legislature is a very feeble check indeed, when composed of members for life nominated by the Crown; antagonism between the two houses soon arises, in which the council must give way and must lose its force and credit accordingly. Nor are nominee councillors good legislators. They have this great defect—they are responsible to no one. They have no constituencies. The Crown, which has appointed, has no hold on them after their appointment. They have no "order," no *esprit de corps*. And, lastly, councils thus established have this drawback in small communities, that they absorb many of the men whom it would be very desirable to have elected by constituencies. The present tendency, however, in British colonies is to substitute an elective for a nominated upper house, or senate. Such a body, it need hardly be said, fulfils no political end whatever, except the single one of insuring some delay and some consideration in legislative proceedings.

Many perhaps will find more interest in considering whether, in so wide a field for experiment as that presented by our colonies, room might be found for trying some of those expedients which ingenuity has suggested for securing the representation of minorities, uniting a widely extended suffrage with the preservation of a certain share of influence to the less numerous classes. Such

are, the graduated suffrage according to property, or "Timocracy," as the Greeks called it: devices for cumulating votes in favour of one candidate, and the like; such as Mr. Mill, in his last work on "Representation," has just urged once more on the political world with all the cogency of his reasoning. But the same objection applies unfortunately to all of them. They cannot be initiated, unless democracy can be voluntarily induced to part with a portion of its power. If democracy were so self-denying, there would hardly be any need of such expedients at all. Institutions of this class may have a living existence for ages, but only where they rest on some principle more strongly actuating the human mind than naked reason. Such was the curious machinery of the Roman Comitia; but this was based on superstition. Such, in truth, were the "rotten boroughs" of England, founded on what had once been real principles of representation, but had long ceased to have any application to modern society; they subsisted as a mere "sham" or device for controlling the democratic tendencies of the constitution. Such is the Senate of the United States, a body in which Delaware, with 100,000 inhabitants, has the same voice as New York with three or four millions; a fortunate anomaly, grounded on a theory—that of the independence of the several States; but maintained in reality for its practical usefulness, forming a check on mere numerical power, rude and imperfect, yet felt to be invaluable. But the power of such institutions is great, precisely because it is fortuitous: they are unlikely to be created on purpose; if created, most likely to fail.

We may turn, therefore, to the more practical question, whether, without any change in the legislative institutions of these young commonwealths, means may not be devised for improving and rendering more efficient the executive, without intrenching on popular power.

As "responsible" government is understood in British North America and Australia, the functions of the Governor of a colony are very critical and peculiar. He constitutes the only political link connecting the colony with the mother country. So far as regards the internal administration of his government, he is merely a constitutional sovereign acting through his advisers; interfering with their policy or their patronage, if at all, only as a friend and impartial councillor. But whenever any question is agitated touching the interests of the mother country—such, for instance, as the imposition of customs duties, or the public defence—his functions as an independent officer are called at once into play. He must see that the mother country receives no detriment. In this duty he cannot count on aid from his advisers: they will consult the interests either of the colony or of their own popularity: he may often have to act in opposition to them, either by interposing his veto on enactments, or by referring those enactments for the decision of the home government. But for these purposes, the constitution furnishes him with no public officers to assist him in counsel or execution, or to share his responsibility. The home government looks to him alone.

The object desired is to constitute for his assistance an executive which shall possess a certain degree of stability and permanence, without at the same time being emancipated from that control by the legislature which constitutes the essence of parliamentary government.

For this purpose, the system which has grown up in the United States presents some obvious advantages over the English. The cabinet consists of servants of the president, appointed by him, responsible in the first instance to him and not to the legislature, and holding office by the same tenure as the president himself. The temporary and terminable character of their offices secures the state from the possibility of a serious permanent difference between them and the legislature, and

preserves to the latter, ultimately, a sufficient amount of control to prevent all tendency to degenerate into oligarchy. Possibly no American institution has contributed more than this to the stability and energy of the administration of foreign affairs, and of one or two federal departments of the state : ordinary domestic matters being in truth placed out of the cognizance of the federal government.

But, not to speak of other objections to this system, it is clearly incompatible with colonial institutions under a governor appointed by the Crown. His ministers would be ministers of the Crown, and antagonistic, or so considered, to the community and legislature. It might work if governors were elected by the people, as is the American president.

Endeavours have been made in one or two of the colonies, to constitute a permanent council of respectable officials—analogous in theory, not in reality, to the Privy Council in England—as a counterpoise to the fluctuating ministry ; but without success. Democracy is too jealous a power to admit of such curtailment of its province. And, if this were otherwise, such a system would be too complicated and cumbrous for the simple requirements of a colony.

There remains an experiment which appears to me to offer better chances of success. It is that of separating administrative office from political place. In this country, we find by daily experience (and more, I think, as parliamentary institutions grow older) the practical difficulty of combining the party duties of a member of cabinet with the departmental functions of a minister. But no separation could be effected here without an entire change in the nature of those institutions. In colonies, the departmental functions of most of the public offices might be very safely intrusted to subordinate, but permanent, officers. The “cabinet,” as colonists are fond of terming

efficient amount
degenerate into
ion has contri-
and energy of
of one or two
domestic mat-
nizance of the

this system, it
utions under a
ministers would
ic, or so consi-
It might work if
s the American

or two of the
of respectable
ty, to the Privy
o the fluctuat-
mocracy is too
ent of its pro-
a system would
simple require-

appears to me to
t of separating
In this country,
I think, as par-
actical difficulty
ber of cabinet
nister. But no
entire change
colonies, the de-
c offices might
out permanent,
ond of terming

it, might consist of one or two of the holders of departmental office only (such as the colonial secretary), and one or two ministers "without portfolio," as the French phrase it; charged with the general conduct of the political affairs of the colony in the legislature. This very simple expedient is under trial in Jamaica and one or two small West India Islands: the "executive councillors" who form the responsible "ministry" exercising no departmental functions at all. And it is remarkable that the experiment has been devised and conducted by an able politician trained under the Canadian system, Governor Hincks of Barbadoes. It might be farther improved, if the permanent occupiers of important offices, excluded from the "cabinet," had seats without votes in the legislature. The present essay is far too recent, and the communities themselves of too little importance, to allow of its being regarded as a precedent. It may however be justly thought that some modification of it is required to correct the minor, but pressing and practical, evils of responsible government. For the correction of its greater and more fundamental evils, we can but look to a troubled, but by no means discouraging, prospect of the future.

The next improvement in our colonial polity, long, but as hitherto vainly, called for, is the establishment of municipal institutions. It was long ago pointed out—and never so well as by De Tocqueville,—that the peculiar political advantage, which above all others enabled the founders of the American Union to establish and consolidate that commonwealth, was the antecedent existence of local self-government. Local self-government, with the North Americans, was no voluntary creation: it arose from necessity. Without administration from home, they were forced to administer their own affairs. This they did with success, and had constructed an excellent machinery for the purpose, long before they had begun to dream

of independence. When, therefore, independence arrived, it did but complete an existing order of things.* To advance from the township to the county, the county to the state, the state to the Union, was a process of expansion only, not of change.

It seems singular at first that the remaining settlements of the English race should be (with one exception only) almost entirely destitute of that system of local self-government which is so widely spread in the Union: but such is the fact. The reason lies in their history. In the West Indies, slavery checked its development. In our modern North American (and subsequently Australian) colonies, the old system, or rather no system, of leaving things alone, had been superseded by the modern plan of governing from home. Municipal institutions had therefore no room to grow up. The province, and provincial government, were formed before the township and the county had been raised into independent existence. When the need of municipal institutions became felt, it was necessary that, if created at all, they should be engrafted on an existing system. A most difficult and unpromising undertaking. In colonies absolutely governed, it is pretty uniformly found that the inhabitants, whatever fault they may find with their governors, prefer to have the trouble and self-restraint which the details of local government impose taken off their hands. New created municipalities fall into the management of an inferior class of citizens: and, step by step, power falls back into the accustomed channels again. In colonies possessing free legislatures, the creation of municipalities requires that the legislature should part with a portion of its power—a sacrifice which democratic habits render extremely difficult.

* “With something of the same propriety with which the nation may be said to be a confederacy of republics called states, each New England state may be described as a confederacy of minor republics, called towns.”—*Palfrey, History of New England*, vol. ii. p. 12.

ndence arrived,
f things.* To
the county to
process of ex-

ing settlements
exception only)
of local self-
he Union: but
ir history. In
velopment. In
ntly Australian)
tem, of leaving
modern plan of
ions had there-
and provincial
rnsnip and the
ent existence.
became felt, it
should be en-
fficult and un-
tely governed,
ants, whatever
prefer to have
ils of local go-
New created
n inferior class
back into the
possessing free
quires that the
power—a sa-
remely difficult.

which the nation
states, each New
minor republics,
vol. ii. p. 12.

“Chez les peuples démocratiques,” says De Tocqueville, with perfect truth, “le gouvernement ne se présente naturellement à l’esprit humain que sous la forme d’un pouvoir unique et central, et la notion des pouvoirs intermédiaires ne lui est pas familière.” Neither within nor without the Assembly will public opinion, in new and free societies, be found generally favourable to the creation of municipalities; they thrive only where they existed before the central power.

Upper Canada presents an exception to this general rule, and the only one with which I am acquainted. In that great province, American example, and the practical good sense of the community, produced the creation of a municipal system at a very late period of its history. The district Councils have now been in operation little more than ten years; but their action is recognised as extremely beneficial. The same organisation is spreading in Lower Canada, but has far greater difficulties to contend with.

Elsewhere, in British North America, municipal organisation seems to remain in a most imperfect state; and instead of local rates, public works and improvements are effected by grants from the central legislature; a system leading both to improvidence and to corruption.

But the great Australian colonies present a far more remarkable instance of the truth of De Tocqueville’s propositions. New South Wales being at first administered as a convict settlement, administration by local elective bodies was of course impracticable. But when a free legislature was granted to the settlers, the necessity for their establishment was strongly felt by statesmen at home, while as yet no desire whatever was manifested for it by the people themselves. “District Councils” for New South Wales were created in 1842 by Act of Parliament. It must be admitted that the experiment was premature: a pastoral country, of wide extent and thinly inhabited,

is ill calculated for the frequent meeting of local boards. The Act remained a dead letter. When the constitution of the colony was amended, under Lord Grey's administration, in 1849, his lordship considered it best to content himself with authorising their creation by the local legislature*: holding out, at the same time, the inducement of intrusting to those bodies a portion of the Crown lands revenue. The suggestion and the bribe remained as ineffectual as the enactment had been. The legislature would not stir an inch in that direction. It became a point of oddly perverted patriotism to oppose it, partly because advice from the Colonial Office was almost as insufferable as dictation to men who conceived that they understood their own affairs; partly because its adoption would have diminished the excessive power of the central legislature, cherished by that body itself for obvious reasons, blindly cherished by its constituents for the reason so ably developed by M. de Tocqueville. And up to this day there is comparatively little sign of municipal organisation in these colonies, where it is needed, perhaps, more urgently than in any other region. "Je pense," says the same profound thinker whom I have already cited, "que dans les siècles démocratiques qui vont s'ouvrir, l'indépendance individuelle et les libertés locales seront toujours un produit de l'art. La centralisation sera le "gouvernement naturel." Victoria, however, has within these three or four years commenced, apparently in earnest, the experiment of a district organisation.

There is one more measure calculated to promote the beneficial action of democratic government, which may appear at sight almost of too minute a character to deserve notice in so general a survey as that in which we are engaged. But great importance has been attributed to it by practical statesmen. The age in which we live has been emphatically called the age of large cities.

* See Lord Grey's *Colonial Policy*, vol. ii. p. 327.

of local boards. The constitution of Grey's administration is best to conform by the local inducement of the Crown lands which remained as the legislature.

It became a proposition, partly because its adoption was almost as received that they cause its adoption by itself for ob- tinentuents for the ville. And upon of municipal needed, perhaps,

"Je pense," have already ni vont s'ouvrir, locales seront lisation sera le ver, has within apparently in sation.

to promote the nt, which may character to de- t in which we been attributed which we live f large cities.

p. 327.

Owing to economical causes, which it would not be difficult to trace if our space admitted, a much larger proportion of the people in most countries are collected in a few great centres of population than heretofore. There was not a town containing 30,000 inhabitants in the Thirteen American Provinces, when they contained three millions. Melbourne now contains 70,000 or 80,000 out of the half a million who inhabit Victoria: the proportion borne by Sydney to New South Wales is still larger. It has been already said that cities such as these exercise an enormous and in many points mischievous power over the colonial legislatures. Their representatives are not only very numerous, but while the delegates of distant districts grudge their attendance, and evade it as far as possible, these are always on the spot. And all the influence of the cities themselves—of their wealthy merchants, their influential tradesmen, their formidable mobs—are brought to bear on a body which has neither moral force, nor strength of caste, nor civil or military power, to rely on for the protection of its independence. The consequence is that the legislatures of many colonies (I have mentioned two as instances only) are looked on by the people of their remoter parts as mere metropolitan clubs, invested with the dangerous power of law-making and spending the public money. Probably Victoria—certainly Queensland—would not have been separated from New South Wales, had a system prevailed under which these distant portions of its territory felt that they were treated with equal justice. A remedy, or at least a valuable palliative, for this tendency of modern democracy, was long ago discovered and acted on by the Americans of the Union. They early learnt to remove the seats of their legislatures from great cities to obscure places, possessing the partial advantage of a central situation, but possessing also the far more substantial advantages which resulted from their obscurity.

The establishment of Congress at Washington, which has never grown into a place of commerce, has proved a most fortunate accident for the nation : one of which one can only estimate the value by imagining what would have occurred had it remained at New York. But the same practice has been consistently followed, and maintained to this day, in the selection of state capitals. That of New York is Albany ; that of Pennsylvania, Harrisburgh. It is only within these few years that the seat of government has been moved from Natchez, in Mississippi, and Mobile, in Alabama, to remote places in the interior of those states. This is a touch of practical wisdom which no British colony has as yet learnt ; for the projected establishment of the Canadian metropolis at Ottawa was a mere political compromise. But nowhere is there greater reason for its application.

Such measures as those above suggested : namely, the admission into the executive of some permanent members, municipal organization, the removal of seats of government from the chief towns : if of any value, are at best of a very limited character. They might aid the temperate working of democracy, and smooth away some pressing difficulties. But they would in no respect affect its real spirit and tendencies. It remains to consider the far more important question, what effect may be produced on these by the advance of time, by the increase of popular power, and the increase along with it of popular intelligence.

And now, in conclusion, let us devote a few words to those great questions which occupy the hearts and thoughts of all earnest politicians more powerfully at this moment than at any former period of history. What are the prospects of the durability of free institutions in the communities sprung from Great Britain, and what the

gton, which has
proved a most
which one can
that would have
But the same
and maintained
itals. That of
ia, Harrisburgh.
seat of govern-
Mississippi, and
the interior of
wisdom which
the projected
at Ottawa was
where is there

d: namely, the
permanent mem-
al of seats of
any value, are
y might aid the
both away some
o respect affect
to consider the
ay be produced
he increase of
n it of popular

few words to
ts and thoughts
at this moment
What are the
tutions in the
and what the

amount and character of that civilization at which they are likely to arrive under their influence?

We can no longer be content with those short and perfunctory answers to such questions as would have satisfied the ordinary British mind not many years ago. Democratic opinions have undergone too rude a shake of late years, have lost ground too extensively, — and more especially in that class of minds which adopted them a generation ago with all the heart and energy of a new religion, — to allow of that general acquiescence with which a few plausible generalities on the subject would heretofore have been received.

How far the prosperity of a commonwealth depends on its institutions is an old problem. But, speaking of civilized communities, I believe it for my own part to depend less on the institutions than on the national character. How far that character is the product of those institutions, is no doubt a very interesting question. But it is scarcely a practical one. The effect of national institutions on national character, at the best, is gradual and slow, to a degree which little suits the impatience of political theorists. To infer that, because what are termed free institutions have produced certain qualities in certain nations, therefore by giving the institutions you secure at once the qualities, is as if a geologist were to expect to make slate or coal by creating those geological conditions which have produced slate and coal in the laboratory of uncounted ages. The establishment of political liberty, where the national character has not the requisites for its reception, cannot succeed.

Courage and energy, promptitude of action, readiness of resources, the habits of self-reliance and self-respect, together with mutual confidence among citizens, — these and similar active qualities make up the national character fitted to employ and enjoy political freedom. Where these qualities do not exist, the gift is useless.

Conceive the grant of liberal institutions to a community of Chinese.

Moderation in success : self-denial in the exercise of power : habitual consideration for the opinions and feelings of others : readiness to compromise differences : love of justice and fair play : reluctance to push principles to extremes : the moral courage which will dare to stand up against a majority : the habit of constantly and, as it were, instinctively postponing self to the public interest, and this whether arising from moral choice or from the constraint imposed by public opinion : these are the balancing qualities which prevent the misuse of political freedom. Where these are unknown, it can but lead to anarchy, as in the familiar case of the Spanish American republics.

The English character, by its combination of the active with the balancing qualities, seems to have shown itself as yet the most highly adapted of all for the enjoyment of such freedom. On the continent of Europe, the institution of self-government has hitherto proved a failure. This I must venture to assume, whatever hopeful appearances some may perceive for the future, without going into details for which these pages would not be appropriate. In a few of the smaller states (omitting Switzerland, Holland, and Norway as obvious exceptions) it has been chiefly maintained since 1815 by the dread of intervention from the great powers. Parties forbear to press each other to the utmost, merely because they apprehend the interposition of some too powerful arbitrator ; they keep the peace at home, from regard to that formidable police which stations outside the door.

In point of fact, the existence of large standing armies alone, now the common lot of Europe, is quite incompatible, in the long run, with political freedom, and incompatible with those social habits which alone can preserve freedom. So our ancestors judged, and rightly, though the truth has been a good deal kept out of sight in these later days. Institutions under which the standing army is

to a community

the exercise of
 nions and feelings
 ferences : love of
 ash principles to
 dare to stand up
 ly and, as it were,
 lic interest, and
 or from the con-
 are the balancing
 political freedom.
 ad to anarchy, as
 rican republics.

tion of the active
 have shown itself
 or the enjoyment
 f Europe, the in-
 proved a failure.
 ever hopeful ap-
 e future, without
 es would not be
 r states (omitting
 obvious excep-
 nce 1815 by the
 powers. Parties
 t, merely because
 me too powerful
 me, from regard
 outside the door.
 e standing armies
 s quite incompa-
 dom, and incom-
 lone can preserve
 rightly, though
 of sight in these
 e standing army is

popularized and placed more on the footing of a militia, such as those of Prussia or Sweden, may soften this incompatibility; but they by no means remove it. For the real danger arises from this; not that the standing army forms an instrument which is always at the disposal of the executive against the legislative (though this be the common case), but that it is always the ready instrument which *some one* may seize—its master for the moment—whether the sovereign or the popular leader—to put down opposition when too troublesome. There is no arguing with the master for the time being of the legions. And the habit of thought and feeling which their formidable presence engenders,—the habit of recognizing the existence of a power in the state *de facto* superior to the popular will, the law, or the state itself, however rarely resorted to,—absolutely precludes that unfettered independence of judgment by which alone free institutions can be administered. Large standing armies have often failed in preventing revolution: but they have always prevented the enjoyment of liberty.

In colonies and states of English origin, the active qualities of which I have spoken, as ensuring the success of free institutions, have been developed with even more intensity than in the mother country. They are sufficiently famous all over the world as the chosen seats of the “go-ahead” elements of modern society. And if the United States remain the first in the career of fierce competition, it must be acknowledged that some of our colonies are but little behind in the race. It has been said, with truth as well as point, that to characterize any invention as a novelty has, at the first blush, the effect of prepossessing an English mind against it, an American in its favour. And the colonial mind in this particular resembles the American. Minds so disposed, and the all but absolute freedom of the institutions under which they live, work admirably well together for progress.

And if any one is disposed to undervalue the importance of that political freedom to new communities,—if he is disposed, by not an uncommon mistake, to attribute too large a share in their progress to natural advantages, and too small a share to moral causes,—let him note one social phenomenon, which is almost a crucial test of truth on this subject. Southern Russia possesses tracts of fertile unoccupied soil, second only to those of the United States, and a climate but little inferior. They are nearer than the Western States of America to Germany, and quite as accessible. For a century past, Russia has invited colonization in that direction. She has offered great advantages to German settlers, and exempted them from many restrictions to which her own people are liable. America offers them nothing, except a fair start with others in the common struggle for advancement. The German is equally a stranger in both. And yet from 150,000 to 200,000 Germans annually cross the Atlantic; while, of agricultural colonists, Russia scarcely receives a few scattered families. What is the cause of the difference? The attraction of freedom, political and commercial; and that, apparently, alone.

But British communities, out of England, have not exhibited an equal share of the balancing or steadying qualities which I have characterised as equally necessary to the permanent success of free institutions. It is unnecessary here to dwell on what we are all too familiar with,—the bad features presented by the ultra-democratic tendency of society in the States. And we have seen that similar tendencies prevail, and at present increasingly prevail, in our colonies, notwithstanding the general connection which binds them to the monarchy. What prospect is there of amelioration?

To check democratic tendencies by force is out of the question. To check them by ingenious devices is a speculative expedient. A few practical improvements in local government, such as those above suggested, would

lvalue the im-
 v communities,—
 non mistake, to
 gress to natural
 ral causes,—let
 is almost a crucial
 Russia possesses
 only to those of
 e inferior. They
 America to Ger-
 a century past,
 t direction. She
 nan settlers, and
 to which her own
 a nothing, except
 mon struggle for
 a stranger in both.
 Germans annually
 l colonists, Russia
 es. What is the
 tion of freedom,
 arently, alone.
 ngland, have not
 cing or steadying
 equally necessary
 utions. It is un-
 re all too familiar
 e ultra-democratic
 we have seen that
 esent increasingly
 ling the general
 monarchy. What
 force is out of the
 ous devices is a
 improvements in
 suggested, would

be slight palliatives only. There is one plain remedial
 cause, and one alone,—the slow effect of education on
 the public mind ; not the education of schools but that of
 circumstances. Many will hold reliance on this merely
 visionary. I cannot share their opinion. Where there
 is a store of sound religious and moral feeling at bottom,
 there is, together with them, a great and struggling
 tendency against the actual tide of mere democratic im-
 pulse, a struggle for refinement of thought, forbearance,
 generosity, self-restraint,—those qualities of which society,
 in short, is felt the most to stand in need.

But the first great difficulty with which these at-
 tempts at improvement have to contend arises from the
 essentially fluctuating nature of colonial society during
 the period of immigration. So long as an English
 colony, or a Western State, is annually receiving and
 parting with a large share of its population, so long
 its institutions are provisional and temporary in their
 working : and democracy—while even more a ne-
 cessity than elsewhere—presents at the same time
 an exaggerated picture of itself. The very same insti-
 tutions under which Texas and Kansas present all the
 repulsive features of backwood life,—under which the
 ever shifting community of New York city has fallen,
 if we may believe its writers, into the very worst abyss
 of local misgovernment and corruption,—are those under
 which the long established states of New England enjoy
 their profound peace and their enlightened practical
 freedom, and exhibit on the whole the most successful
 polity on which the eye of the statesman can rest. It is
 to this latter standard that we may hope to see Upper
 Canada, New South Wales, and Victoria approximate.
 If this hope be fallacious, there remains no alternative
 but that of anarchy and its consequent tyranny.

It remains, in order to complete this very general sketch of the modern constitution of the British colonial empire, that we should ascertain what are the legal and administrative ties which maintain the dependence of the free colonies on the mother country, and the unity of the whole fabric.

In various parts of these lectures, the gradual relaxation and ultimate severance of most of the links of the old chains of subjection, commercial and political, has been fully discussed. Those which remain (in colonies having responsible government) may be reduced to four:—

1. The legal omnipotence of parliament.
2. The power of the Crown to allow and disallow laws made by colonial legislatures.
3. Military protection.
4. The administrative authority vested in the governor, who is appointed by the Crown.

1. As to the legal omnipotence of parliament, very few words will suffice. It is scarcely likely that any one will be found to contest it in theory now. That conflict—and it was not a slight one—was fought out in an earlier period of our constitutional history. The vagueness of the idea of “right”—the confused but deeply rooted feeling, that what an authority ought not to do it cannot do, “*Ne liceat facere id, quod quis vitiaabit agendo,*” produced at one time many fantastic crotchets in the mind of statesmen. Something unreasonable and mysterious—some ideal of abstract political power, greater than and controlling king, lords, and commons, like that “dreaded name of Demogorgon” which ancient mythology shadowed out as something mightier than the gods and the fates, continually recurred to minds not as yet thoroughly practised in the hard realities of political life. Those argumentative contests which preceded the conflict of arms with America exhausted the subject, and demonstrated how entirely unstable was the founda-

tion which theorists of this class endeavoured to lay* — a foundation so fancifully described by Burke, as

“ That Serbonian bog
Betwixt Damietta and Mount Casius old,
Where armies whole have sunk.”

A written constitution may no doubt create a supreme legislature with limited authority, notwithstanding the apparent contradiction in terms. When the enactments of such a legislature exceed its written powers, the courts of justice may pronounce them void, and the citizen is not required to obey them. But, in countries having no written constitution, but one founded, like that of England, on immemorial usage only, the supremacy of the legislature has no legal limit. No court of law can question its enactments. If the force of law could be denied to an act of parliament, the reign of law would cease and that of arbitrary will begin. If its decrees are unjust, tyrannical, anarchical, refusal to obey them may be unavoidable, but cannot be legal; for (to borrow the phrase of Blackstone) “no human laws will suppose a case which at once must destroy all law, and compel men to build afresh upon a new foundation.”

These simple maxims are as true in the colonies as

* It cannot, however, be said that these notions are absolutely extinct among colonial lawyers. Mr. Haliburton, in his account of Nova Scotia, says, “To what extent the British Parliament has a right to interpose its authority, or how far the power of the colonial assembly extends, it is impossible to ascertain with accuracy.” (See Lewis on the Government of Dependencies, p. 302.) And Mr. Sydney Bell, a Judge of the Supreme Court at the Cape, expresses himself thus, in his work on Colonial Administration, published in 1859: “The Parliament of Britain is omnipotent for good; for everything that shall tend to promote the welfare and the safety of the empire and its inhabitants; but powerless for evil, or for the doing of anything which shall have for its avowed object injury to the welfare or safety of the empire, or of any of its inhabitants.” See the correct doctrine laid down in Macaulay’s History of England, chap. xxiii.

at home. All dependencies of the empire are subject to imperial legislation. How far an act of parliament which does not name the colonies has force in the colonies: how far (if at all) principles of the common law prevail in the colonies of their own force and independent of enactment: these are curious legal questions, but in no way affect the general position.

It follows, that it is an error to speak (as is sometimes done hastily) of the province of a colonial legislature as distinct from that of parliament. Both exercise sway over the same subject matter; but the former is inferior to the latter. In the strict sense of words, it has a municipal authority only. Where the function of a colonial legislature is defined by the ordinary words of a governor's commission, "to make laws for the good government of a colony" its power within its local jurisdiction is without limit, except that its enactments cannot alter existing imperial laws and are subject to future imperial laws. When it is created by act of parliament, its powers are of course circumscribed by the words of the act, but these are usually of the most comprehensive character.

2. The next tie of dependence is constituted by the power of the Crown to render null the acts of colonial legislatures. This power extends to every British dependency, although it is by no means uniform in its technical mode of operation. In the old common-law colonies, the crown "allows" or "disallows" every law, though with some varieties of technical language. In colonies of which the organic law is an act of parliament, the power reserved to the crown is commonly that of disallowing only, leaving enactments not disallowed to operate tacitly. The practical effect is, of course, the same. As far as the purely domestic affairs of free colonies are concerned, this power approximates more and more, as the tie of subjection becomes looser, to that possessed, but never exercised, by the crown at home over bills passed by

empire are subject
 act of parliament
 as force in the
 of the common
 n force and in-
 rious legal ques-
 position.

(as is sometimes
 ial legislature as
 h exercise sway
 ormer is inferior
 words, it has a
 function of a co-
 nary words of a
 s for the good
 within its local
 t its enactments
 l are subject to
 eated by act of
 mscribed by the
 of the most com-

nstituted by the
 acts of colonial
 very British de-
 s uniform in its
 old common-law
 ows" every law,
 l language. In
 ct of parliament,
 mmonly that of
 ot disallowed to
 of course, the
 s of free colonies
 ore and more, as
 at possessed, but
 r bills passed by

the two houses. But it cannot be said that it has fallen into disuse, or is ever likely to do so, as long as that tie remains, and while colonial legislatures have the power to make laws which may interfere with the general interests of the empire. Such for instance, are laws imposing duties on imported goods: and it is one of the most difficult problems of recent colonial government to decide where the authority of the crown should be interposed to check this kind of legislation; as, for instance, in the case of differential duties, to which these legislatures are constantly tempted to recur, while they are steadily condemned by the advisers of the crown, and by parliament.

It must be admitted that this occasionally exercised prerogative of disallowance is not free from inconvenience both to the mother country and the colony. It has the evils incident to arbitrary power, however cautiously exercised. That the crown disallows some few colonial acts is received as holding out some promise that it may disallow any act, and the home government is consequently liable to continual siege on the part of dissatisfied minorities in the colonies. On the other hand, it is with reluctance, and some sense of humiliation, that a British minister authorises an enactment which it is in his power to disallow, and which shocks his sense of justice, or some cherished views of policy, though strictly within the domestic functions of the colonial legislature, and, therefore, not to be disallowed without violation of recognised principle. And, in the colonies, there is always some slight sense of insecurity from the possibility of the disallowance of a measure already passed into law. But these inconveniences, which have often been the subject of party exaggeration, are but trifling in practice; and we shall presently have to examine whether the exchange of a dependence on mutual forbearance for a dependence on strict organic laws might not introduce evils far more substantial.

3. Of military protection enough has been already said.

4. The executive powers of the governor of a colony. This high officer is popularly said to represent the crown (but rather loosely, since, in fact, the power of the crown and the governor in a colony are different, and not unfrequently antagonistic; for the assent of the governor is necessary to an act of the colonial legislature; the crown, by disallowance, can overrule the governor's assent). He possesses an authority technically the same in all colonies, though virtually very different. In crown colonies he is without check in executive affairs, and in the distribution of patronage, except such as may be administered from home. In the old representative colonies, his acts are subject to the indirect check which may be given by the disapproval of the legislature, and the refusal of supplies, but to no direct interference. But under responsible government he becomes the image, in little, of a constitutional king—introducing measures to the legislature, conducting the executive, distributing patronage, in name only, while all these functions are in reality performed by his councillors. And it is a common supposition, that his office is consequently become one of parade and sentiment only. There cannot be a greater error. The functions of a colonial governor under responsible government are (occasionally) arduous and difficult in the extreme. Even in the domestic politics of the colony, his influence as a mediator between extreme parties, and controller of extreme resolutions, as an independent and dispassionate adviser, is far from inconsiderable, however cautiously it may be exercised. But the really onerous part of his duty consists in watching that portion of colonial politics which touches on the connection with the mother country. Here he has to reconcile, as well as he can, his double function as governor responsible to the crown, and as a constitutional head of an executive controlled by his advisers. He has to watch and control, as best he may, those attempted infringements of the recognized principles of the connection which carelessness or igno-

nor of a colony. represent the crown. prerogative of the crown. different, and not of the governor's legislature; the governor's assent). the same in all

In crown colonies, and in such as may be called representative of the legislature, and interference. But the image, in taking measures to distributing parastatal functions are in it is a common to become one not be a greater governor under arduous and difficult politics of the extreme parties, an independent considerable, however really onerous portion of colonial with the mother as well as he can, his to the crown, be controlled by control, as best he the recognized nessness or igno-

rance, or deliberate intention, or mere love of popularity, may, from time to time, originate. And this duty, of peculiar nicety, he must perform alone; as we have already seen in considering the subject of executive councils. He can have no assistance. His responsible ministers may (and probably will) entertain views quite different from his own. And the temptation to surround himself with a *camarilla* of special advisers, distinct from these ministers, is one which a governor must carefully resist. It may therefore be readily inferred, that to execute the office well requires no common abilities; and I must add that the occasion has called forth these abilities. I do not believe that England has been better served in any province of her administration than she has been of late years, by her higher class of colonial governors.

Such is the political connexion, slight enough in practice though still considerable in theory, which at the present day connects Great Britain with her more important colonies. But the question has been continually asked and debated, To what purpose are forms of subjection kept up, which no longer correspond to the reality? Why not amend the theoretical shape of our institutions, without altering their substance, by substituting for the existing anomalous polity a system of federal union, under which the colony should be, for certain recognised purposes, the constitutional equal of the mother country?

Two different modes have been suggested of effecting this object. The first is that of admitting to Parliament representatives from the colonies. I have nothing to add on this subject to what has been already said in these Lectures. It is plainly out of the question to admit colonial representatives to a share in imposing taxes on the mother country, while Parliament abstains itself from taxing the colonies; and, frequently as the suggestion has been made, none of its advocates have ever, in the slightest degree, removed or confronted this obvious difficulty.

The other plan had much vogue among the special class of statesmen who assumed the title of colonial reformers a few years ago. It was based on the constitution of the United States. They proposed that the distinction between imperial and domestic subjects of legislation, in colonies, should be laid down by a fundamental law. As to the former, the right of the Crown to disallow colonial enactments was to be retained : as to the latter, it was to be abolished. But in the event of a question arising whether the subject of a particular colonial act was imperial or domestic, and consequently whether it was valid or not without the royal assent, they proposed that the Judicial Committee of the privy council (which they represented as analogous to the Supreme Court of the United States) should have power to decide, either immediately or on appeal.

This proposal appears to me to involve a serious misconception of the difference between the respective relations to each other of portions of the British empire and portions of the American federation.

The constitution of the United States is written. It establishes a distinction between subjects of general and local legislation. Consequently, whether an act, whether of Congress or of a State, be valid or no, becomes at once a legal question. It is a mistaken notion to suppose that the Supreme Court has any special prerogative for the decision of such a question. It may arise at any time, and in any court throughout the Union. The judge of any district may have to pronounce on the validity, according to the constitution, of an Act alleged before him on a question of private right. The Supreme Court (except in a few special cases) has no more to do with the question than this, that it may be brought like other questions before that court in virtue of its general appellate powers.

Now, supposing this system transferred to our colonial empire, we should have this momentous question legally

ing the special
of colonial re-
the constitution
the distinction
f legislation, in
ental law. As
sallow colonial
atter, it was to
uestion arising
act was impe-
r it was valid
posed that the
ich they repre-
of the United
er immediately

a serious mis-
respective rela-
ish empire and

s written. It
of general and
n act, whether
comes at once
o suppose that
gative for the
any time, and
judge of any
lity, according
ore him on a
ourt (except in
n the question
her questions
pellate powers.
to our colonial
uestion legally

raised in every colony, and generally decided (according to the unavoidable bias of human action) in favour of the local authority. It would then be removed by appeal to the Judicial Committee. A court essentially British would have to pronounce, in the last resort, on a question between Great Britain and the colony; and the question must be decided by this tribunal, regarded in the colony as foreign, on grounds of law alone. Here is no room for compromise or conciliation. If a Secretary of State considers it impossible to advise the Crown to assent to a colonial act, he prepares the way beforehand for this exercise of authority. He remonstrates or suggests amendments; and in some form or other an arrangement between the conflicting interests is very often arrived at. A tribunal could only affirm or deny the validity of the law. If legally obnoxious to condemnation, it must be condemned, though really free from political objection, though masses of property may have been settled under it, or though its annulment must necessarily throw some great branch of public administration into confusion. The colonists would soon feel the difference between the arbitrary, but timid and manageable, control of the executive, and the regular inflexible discipline of the law, administered too in the last resort by strangers; and it can scarcely be believed they would long endure the new system.

And now that our investigation of the relations between a parent state and her colonies is brought to a conclusion, we can scarcely dismiss the subject without one glance at that practical question which has been present, doubtless, to the minds of many of my readers throughout the whole of this inquiry. What is the benefit which a country derives, from colonization in the first place, and from the maintenance of political connexion with her colonies in the second place? What, in particular, is the advantage to Britain of her enormous colonial dominions?

With regard to the first branch of this question, the

advantages, namely, of colonization, the various suggestions with which these Lectures have dealt may help to enable the reader to systematize his views, and to form conclusions which shall be permanent, because free from exaggeration as well as from fundamental misconceptions. The benefit of colonization, as such, is wholly economical. It costs much to the mother country to rear the product Man to his full stature, and to make him an able agent for the creation of wealth. It is a loss to part with him by emigration. It is a loss to part with the capital which he must carry away with him, in order that his industry may be applied with advantage to the creation of that wealth in a new country. But if his industry in that country is sufficiently remunerative to counterbalance the cost of his rearing and of his exportation, and to produce a surplus of useful articles; and if the country from which he is sent has also such a command of foreign trade as to be able to purchase these articles more cheaply than another country could purchase them, either with her own goods or with gold the produce of those goods; then colonization is advantageous. But both these conditions must concur to make it so. Exportation of capital and people to an unremunerating field is mere loss, as many an unsuccessful adventure in British colonization testifies, although the freedom with which individual enterprise can change its area has prevented these experiments from involving great national loss. Exportation of them to a remunerating field, but one of which the produce does not return directly or indirectly to the mother country, is also a mere loss, excepting to that very limited extent which was once popularly regarded as the rule instead of the exception, namely, when there is for the time a pressure of over-population at home. The vast northern hives of nations, whence issued the swarms that occupied at different times the south of Europe and Asia, were but the poorer for their

ous suggestions
help to enable
to form conclu-
sions free from exag-
gerations. The
economical. It
is the product
of an able agent
to part with him
with the capital
in order that his
to the creation
of his industry
ive to counter-
is exportation,
es; and if the
such a com-
purchase these
could purchase
ld the produce
ntageous. But
it so. Expor-
erating field is
ture in British
m with which
has prevented
national loss.
eld, but one of
y or indirectly
loss, excepting
once popularly
ption, namely,
ver-population
tions, whence
rent times the
poorer for their

conquests. No portion of the wealth which their children acquired or created returned to them. It may be reasonably doubted whether Germany at the present day has not been a loser, instead of a gainer, by the emigration of more than a million of her people in the last ten years. The emigrants have gained incalculably. The world at large has benefited by the transfer of their industry from a poorer to a more productive area. But their mother country may not have repaid herself the real cost of their shipment. The question is, however, one which it would require a very wide induction to solve with accuracy.

That the endeavour, on the part of the colonizing country, to control the general course of trade, and secure to herself the benefit of the productiveness of her colonies by fiscal laws, is fundamentally erroneous, it was the object of part of these Lectures to establish; but the contrary doctrine was fast losing ground when they appeared, and is now all but extinct.

Nor can I, for my own part, ascribe much more of reality to a notion still commonly entertained, that national habits and tastes may secure to the colonizing country a larger share of the trade of her colony than would result to her from merely economical causes. This subject has been already discussed in the seventh of these Lectures.

To return therefore to our former point: the benefit of colonization to the mother country consists solely in the surplus of advantage which it derives from the trade of the colony, over the loss which has been suffered in establishing and defending the colony. Yet, even thus limited, that benefit has been enormous, calculated in figures alone, such as our commercial statistics furnish. The imports from our colonies alone amount to 26,000,000*l*. Those from the United States (equally the result of British colonization) to 34,000,000*l*. Those from all the rest of the world, (including our own Indian posses-

sions) to 114,000,000*l.* (average of 1856-58). And it must be remembered that these last include imports from various regions (such as Brazil, Cuba, Java) which are in truth the result of colonization, though not of British colonization.

But then, it might be objected, and is indeed frequently objected, a very large portion at least of this trade would equally exist if the regions in question were not British colonies at all. Take, for instance, our North American provinces. Had they been abandoned by us when the United States became independent, they would have been settled, when it became profitable to settle them, as other portions of America are settled; they would have been as populous and commercial as now, and England would have received just as large a share of their valuable commerce, barring, of course, that which was created by prohibitions under the colonial system, and therefore to be regarded as mere loss. The only difference is political, not economical; they would have been foreign customers, and are colonial customers.

But it is forgotten by those who reason thus, that the original cost to this country—the expenditure, namely, on North American colonization, by Great Britain—would have been just the same had Canada since 1783 been a portion of the United States. For the United States are themselves colonized from this country. Not only were they so originally, but they are in constant process of colonization. The annual increase of settlement in the United States is defrayed out of two sources; expenditure of American accumulated capital; and expenditure of British capital, which annually overflows into America. The impulse which conquers state after state from the wilderness, and adds them to the body of the mighty Federation, is directed by American energy, but it is mainly fed by British wealth and labour. The only possible difference which the retention of British

3-58). And it
e imports from
va) which are
not of British

leed frequently
his trade would
ere not British
orth American
y us when the
ould have been
them, as other
ould have been
England would
their valuable
h was created
, and therefore
y difference is
e been foreign

h thus, that the
diture, namely,
Britain—would
nce 1783 been
United States
try. Not only
onstant process
f settlement in
o sources; ex-
pital; and ex-
ually overflows
ers state after
n to the body
merican energy,
l labour. The
ion of British

sovereignty over so large a portion of North America has made in the economical course of even. is the following; that it may have diverted artificially to the British provinces a somewhat larger share of emigration and capital than they would have received from hence had no political connection subsisted. Assuming, therefore, that the whole expenditure by Great Britain on American colonization had been the same in the one case as the other, the Western States might have absorbed a little more, Canada a little less. If so, the result has been a gain to Canada, but a loss to this country; for by the supposition, the capital thus artificially diverted to Canada would have earned higher profits elsewhere.

But leaving this trifling, and perhaps imaginary, result out of the question, it is plain that the clear pecuniary loss to Great Britain from the retention of her North American empire is confined wholly to the sums which may have been spent by the British treasury in its government and defence. These, I have already had occasion to show, are much overrated in public estimation; and are partially, though of course not wholly, compensated by the increase of local wealth and trade produced by government expenditure.

When we turn to our other great modern group of colonies, the Australian, we find the problem of gain and loss by their settlement one of much simpler solution. Australia has been created, economically speaking, by British colonization. Had anti-colonizing maxims prevailed with our governments, there would have been (so to speak) no Australia at all; for no considerable communities would have established themselves there, in these days, intending to exist without British protection, and to become exposed, as an abandoned property, to the incursions of the first maritime nation which might think it worth while to annex or annihilate them. And calculations founded on the supposition that the coloniza-

tion might have been effected by other nations, without cost to ourselves, are theoretical only, there being no other nation possessed of the means or inclination to have effected it. The clear gain of Australia to England is, therefore, the profit of the Australian trade, minus the considerable cost of colonization, and the small cost of defence (extremely trifling except in New Zealand). But when we reflect, in addition, on the probable future expansion of that trade, it must surely become manifest by how slight a sacrifice, comparatively speaking, a vast increase of national wealth has been secured to us and our posterity.

Thus far the problem is one which admits of an approximative answer. We can calculate from existing returns the value of our colonial trade, and the cost of our colonies, for many years past. We can arrive at some rough approach to an estimate of the cost of colonization. But when we address ourselves to the farther branch of the inquiry,—What is the value of a colonial empire when formed, and, as it were, full grown, to the mother country,—we find ourselves at once within the range of a host of considerations admitting of no such reduction to simple elements. The strict economical answer to the question would doubtless be this:—The maintenance of the dominion of the mother country over a colony is useful, so long as it tends to develop the internal resources of that colony, so as to produce a net profit by commerce, beyond the cost of governing it. Politically, it may be said, in addition, to be useful when the colony contributes to the defensive strength of the nation, or protection of trade: when its abandonment would throw it into the hands of a country whose aggrandisement is dangerous to us: and so forth. And, to mention last of all a consideration which is perhaps the most powerful of all, it is socially useful so long as the colony affords an outlet for the younger and more adventurous spirits of every

nations, without there being no inclination to alia to England in trade, minus the small cost (New Zealand). probable future become manifest speaking, a vast cured to us and

h admits of an ate from existing and the cost of an arrive at some t of colonization. farther branch of colonial empire n, to the mother within the range no such reduction cal answer to the maintenance of the colony is useful, ernal resources of ofit by commerce, tically, it may be colony contributes e, or protection of throw it into the ment is dangerous last of all a con- powerful of all, it affords an outlet s spirits of every

class in the mother country—not of that which performs manual labour alone.

But to retain or to abandon a dominion is not an issue which will ever be determined on the mere balance of profit and loss; or on the more refined but even less powerful motives supplied by abstract political philosophy. The sense of national honour, pride of blood, the tenacious spirit of self-defence, the sympathies of kindred communities, the instincts of a dominant race, the vague but generous desire to spread our civilization and our religion over the world: these are impulses which the student in his closet may disregard, but the statesman dares not, for they will assuredly prevail, as they so often have prevailed before, and silence mere utilitarian argument whenever a crisis calls them forth.

In the mean time, we must regard the political connection now subsisting between Great Britain and the various portions of her vast colonial empire, as created far more by what we may term accident, that is, through the operation of unforeseen causes, than as the result of pre-meditated policy. Nay, it subsists, in some particulars, rather as a consequence of ancient political theories, now abandoned and almost forgotten, but which have left results behind them of which it is not easy to get rid, were it certainly desirable. Many of the possessions denominated colonies are in reality mere posts, taken and held in obedience to maxims once eagerly advocated, as important for purposes of foreign policy. Some (the West Indian in particular) were created and fostered for the sake of a commercial system, of which the last relics are now abandoned: it can scarcely be said with justice that they add to our strength or our wealth, and yet there are probably few who would not agree that their peculiar social circumstances, and their ancient connection with ourselves, render them the deserving objects of a jealous protection, and that the expense of securing

them from foreign violence and internal commotion is incurred in fulfilment of a national debt of honour. Others, our West African settlements for instance, were also founded in pursuance of bygone ideas, generous, but not very practical at any time; but such has been their utility in the development of commerce, that they will probably in the end well repay the exertions made for their establishment and defence. While there are some, such as those of Southern Africa, for the maintenance of which politicians are really hard pushed to find any substantial justification at all, and must appeal to the general law of self-assertion. But these are not the instances we commonly have in view, when we speak of the connection between Great Britain and her colonies. We think of the two great dominions of the British Crown in North America and Australia. Politically speaking, these are united to us, doubtless, by the very slightest link which ever held together distant communities. But, in a national sense, its very slightness seems to admit of greater durability. Any forcible accident may sever it with little resistance; but it is not easy to foresee from what quarter such an accident should arise. The spirit of commercial jealousy, the belief that one nation gains by the loss of another, and the doctrine of restriction and protection thence derived, are going out of date everywhere, and yielding the ground, step by step, to more liberal sentiments. And, even if this were otherwise, there could scarcely be serious divergence in commercial policy between communities raising raw produce and a community of manufacturers. On questions of merely internal policy the present system scarcely admits of mutual disputes. Questions of foreign policy (unless in the instance of Canada) seem very slightly to touch, at any of its points, our colonial empire. And common danger does but tend to cement our union: not so much through calculations of advantage; for there

will always be those in the mother country who will esteem colonies a burden in war, and those in the colonies who will esteem the inconvenience of being dragged into the wars of the mother country greater than the profit of its protection; but through the impulse which it gives to the common spirit of brotherhood, to generous sympathies, and to the proud feelings of self-sacrifice and self-devotion. And with these happy auguries let us now be content. Rash, indeed, would he be who should presage more than a temporary duration for that calm of prosperity and contentment which our colonial empire now enjoys. We can count but little on the permanence of common interests: on the permanence of friendly tempers and considerate feelings, hardly at all. As the wealth of earth and the flower of human strength fade, so, says the tragic poet, decay leagues and alliances.

καὶ ταῖσι Θήβαις εἰ τανῦν ἐνήμερῇ
καλῶς τὰ πρὸς σέ, μυρίας ὁ μυρίος
χρόνος τεκνύται νύκτας ἡμέρας τ' ἰὼν,
ἐν αἷς τὰ νῦν ξύμφωνά δεξιώματα
ἐν δορὶ διασκεδῶσιν ἐκ μικροῦ λόγον.

And whenever the disruption may arrive, it will probably be evident that it was a *σμικρὸς λόγος*, some small and unforeseen matter, which precipitated the event. But if we are but true to our principles, and can steer the vessel of our policy undisturbed by those fierce gusts of passion which such a catastrophe excites, we shall experience without a serious convulsion that result which was only attained in former days through blood and tears, and find that the tie of subjection to a common crown, justly as we may value it, is in truth but a slight and temporary thing, while the alliance of blood, and language, and religion bids fair to subsist as long as human society endures.



INDEX.

- Aborigines.* See *Natives.*
- Algeria*, causes of its slow colonization, 68.
- Antigua*, emancipation of slaves there, 314.
- Antilles.* See *West Indies.*
- Apprenticeship* of slaves, preliminary to complete emancipation, 326.
- "*Assignment*" of convicts in Australia, system of, 361.
- Australia*, first discovery and settlement of, 120, &c. Climate and soil, 122—128. Several colonies, population and trade returns of, 132. High rate of taxation, 234. Introduction and treatment of convicts there, 356. Proportion of sexes in the population at different periods, 364, 473. "Licences" for occupation of pastoral land, 427. Statistics, 467. Land Sales Act, its operation, 470—474: see *Wakefield's System.* Natives, 494. Working of responsible government there, 643.
- Bahia*, its early prosperity, 50.
- Barbados*, its great population in the 17th century, 79. Reason why it suffered little by slave emancipation, 314, 341.
- Beet-root* sugar cultivation, 67.
- Bishoprics* of the Church of England in colonies, recent multiplication of, 607 (*n.*).
- Brazil*, history of its colonization, 48—54. Abolition of the slave trade, 50. Population, 70. Jesuit missions, 295.
- California*, Spanish missions there, 296.
- Canada*, first settlement of, 58. Its French population, progress of, 60. Land, expense of clearing, 114. Population and trade, 129. Emigration and immigration between it and the United States, 254. Progress of settlement, 384, 449. Lavish grants of land there, 437. Removals of natives, 506.
- Cape of Good Hope* (or South Africa), Dutch settlement of, 55. General description of, and ancient mode of allotting land, 117, &c. Success of missionaries there, 562.
- Capital*, exportation of, which takes place in the process of colonizing, its effects on the mother country, Lecture VI. Calculations on this subject, 185.

Central America, ancient Indian races there, 556.

Clearing land, comparative expense of, in different colonies, an important point in fixing the price of waste land, 275.

Colonies, progress of wealth and society in, Part III. Divisible into two classes: those possessing, and not possessing, peculiar advantages for the production of articles for the foreign market, 261. Ordinary course of settlement, in the former class, 265, 384; the latter class, 269, 386. Penal: see *Convicts*. Progress of wealth in, Lecture XX. Arises from increased productiveness of labour on a new soil, 564. Political relation of, to the mother country, Lecture XXII. Causes which determine the popular feeling in, 612—622, 657—661. Legislatures of colonies, their province, 664, 668.

Colonization, various schemes for reimbursing the mother country its first expenses, 157, 377. Exportation of capital which takes place in it, 167, 185. Systematic: see *Wakefield*. Preparatory expenses of, out of what fund to be defrayed, Lecture XVII. Economical result of, on balance of profit and loss, 671—674.

Coloured or mixed races, their condition in the old Spanish colonies, 14. Researches of Dr. Prichard respecting their physical history, 554.

Columbia, British, its capabilities, 116.

Commercial policy, of Spain in her old continental colonies, 9, 11, 16, 29. Of Portugal, 53. Of Holland, 55. Of England, 76. General, of European nations toward colonies, Lectures VII. VIII.: see *Trade*.

Competition of capitalists, in what sense it may be said to have an effect in lowering the rate of profit, 175.

Constitution, political, of British colonies, four classes of, 638.

Convicts, first sent to the American colonies of Portugal, 45, 350. Convict labour, employment of, in colonies, 125, Lecture XII. Effect of introduction of convicts on progress of population, 355. Dearest kind of labour, in what sense, 356. Disputes with the Australian colonies respecting their reception, 371. Object of the system not the same to the mother country and the colonies, 372.

Coolies, introduction of, into Mauritius, success of the experiment, 345.

Creeks, and associated tribes in North America, civilization attained by them, 558.

Crown, its power to disallow acts of British colonial legislatures, 664.

Cuba, its history and recent prosperity, 33. Population, 70. Said to yield revenue to the treasury of Spain, 234.

Diamond mining, in Brazil, 52.

Domingo, St., its prosperity before the first French Revolution, 65, 71. See *Hayti*.

Dutch, not an emigrating people, 55. Their East India Company, *ib.*

Emigration, effects of, on the progress of population and wealth in the mother country, Lecture V. Lord Bacon on, 140. Franklin, 141. Its effects, as a remedy for over-population, exaggerated, 144, 160. Has never taken place on a large scale from civilized countries, 145. Except after the Irish famine of 1847, 156. Systematic, as proposed by Mr. Wake-

colonies, an important

I. Divisible into two
 peculiar advantages for
 261. Ordinary course
 latter class, 269, 386.
 Lecture XX. Arises
 soil, 564. Political
 Causes which deter-
 61. Legislatures of

ther country its first
 takes place in it, 167,
 penses of, out of what
 result of, on balance

Spanish colonies, 14.
 al history, 554.

colonies, 9, 11, 16, 29.
 d, 76. General, of
 VIII.: see *Trade*.
 aid to have an effect

; 638.
 1, 45, 350. Convict
 II. Effect of intro-
 5. Dearest kind of
 Australian colonies
 tem not the same to

xperiment, 345.
 lization attained by

islatures, 664.
 , 70. Said to yield

olution, 65, 71. See

Company, *ib*.

wealth in the mother
 in, 141. Its effects,
 4, 160. Has never
 145. Except after
 osed by Mr. Wake-

field, 161. Statistics of, 165. Endeavours to make emigrants repay the
 cost of their conveyance, why unsuccessful, 377—380. Theory of appli-
 cation of entire price of land to that purpose, 398, 405—412. Conduct
 of, to Australia, by the Land and Emigration Commissioners, 470—475.
England, colonies of, Lectures III. IV. Original principles of their govern-
 ment, 103, 624. Effects of emigration on the population of England in
 local instances, 151.

Establishments, religious and educational, modes of supporting, in colonies,
 considered, 592—600.

Exports, balance of, over imports, fallacies respecting, 189. Tables of, to
 foreign countries and colonies, 248, 249.

Foreign trade, theory that it is less profitable than colonial, considered, 226,
 240.

France, colonies of, Lecture II. Their ancient extent in America, 59.
 Character of their industry, *ib*. Administration, 61—64. Senatus-
 consulte of 1854, 63. Population, 71. Emancipation of slaves, and
 its results, 329.

Germany, emigration from, to America, 147, 166, 660.

Gold, general law which seems to regulate its production, 466.

Government of colonies, system of, in early English settlement of North
 America, 103. Change produced by the American Revolution, 106.
 Of older West Indian colonies, 348. Principles of, Lecture XXII., 622.
 Four classes of, in British colonies, 639.

Governor, in British colonies, peculiarity of his functions under responsible
 government, 648, 666.

Guiana, Dutch, its early government, 58. British, effects of abolition of
 slave trade and emancipation there, 317, 344.

Hayti, indolence and decay of cultivation there, 320. Character of mixed
 and negro races there, 555.

Holland, colonies of, Lecture II. See *Cape of Good Hope*; *Java*.

Imports, why apparently higher than exports in ordinary statistical tables,
 189.

Importation into colonies from foreign countries, restrictions on, 194: see
Trade. Into mother country from foreign colonies, 202.

Indented labourers, in early English colonies, 376.

"*Indians*" of America. See *Natives*; *North America*; *Spain*.

Irelana, probable effects of extensive emigration on its economical condition,
 152, 155.

Jamaica, change from small properties to large there, 83. Decline of its
 prosperity after abolition of slave trade and emancipation, 315, 341.

Java, its settlement, 55. Its present prosperity, 57.

Jesuits, their missions in Spanish America, 28, 286. The "Reductions"
 administered by them: see *Natives*. Decay of their settlements, 295.

Labour, scarcity of, in new colonies, its effects on the progress of wealth, 253.

- Free, introduction of, into British tropical colonies, 335, 345. Methods of obtaining, in colonies without slaves or convicts, Lectures XIII. XIV. See *Wakefield*.
- Land*, waste, in colonies, valueless without capital and labour, 256. Abandonment of exhausted for new, the ordinary course of things in colonies, 257, 264, 306. General impolicy of restrictions on occupying new, 263. Abundance of, seems essential to the prosperity of colonies raising staple produce for foreign markets, 271, 275. Sale of, at high prices: see *Wakefield System*. Effects of, compared with sale at low price and free grant, Lecture XV. Free grant of, to what colonies suited and unsuited, 385, 436. Land-fund, its exclusive application to importing emigrants part of the Wakefield system, 405—412. Controverted, *ib*. Division of, between emigration and preliminary expenses of settlement, ultimately adopted for Australia, 414. Sale of land, by auction or fixed price, reasons in favour of, respectively, 414—423. Cession of, to colonial legislatures, 433. How disposed of in United States, 443. Under Australian Land Sales Act, 470—478.
- "*Licences*" for occupation of pastoral land in Australia, 427.
- Manufactures*, prohibition of colonial, one of the branches of the "colonial system" of trade, 219.
- Mauritius*, 119. Effects on its wealth of the introduction of coolie labour, 345—349.
- Mexico*, its climate, 19. Progress in the latter part of the 18th century, 22. Great wealth of its grandees, 25. Condition of natives under later Spanish government, 280, 545.
- Military expenditure* of Great Britain on her colonies, 237, 586—590 (*n*).
- Mines* of Mexico and Peru, state of, in the 18th century, 26—28.
- Missions*, religious, of Spanish and Portuguese America, their peculiar policy and history, 285: see *Jesuits*. English, recent progress of, in Polynesia and South Africa, 560.
- Municipal institutions*, difficulties which have impeded their establishment in British colonies, 651.
- Natives*, treatment of, in the old colonies of Spanish America, 5, 279—285. In Mexico, 27. Remark of De Tocqueville on causes of the want of sympathy between them and Europeans, 68. Employment of native labour in colonies, Lecture X. Natives kept under a kind of tutelage; advantage of this course, 282, 522. In the Jesuit "Reductions," 285, 299. Decay of their numbers under the Jesuit institutions, 297. Policy of colonial governments towards, Lectures XVIII. XIX. Distinct duties of protecting and civilizing, 492. Appointment of "protectors," 494. How far to be brought within the same law with settlers, 496. As to the exercise of their own customs, 500. Regulation of contracts between them and settlers, 503. Their civilization, how to be attempted, 505. Evils of system of removal, 505. Amalgamation with settlers the only chance of preserving them, 509, 526. Distinction between savage and "inferior" races, 514. Policy of leaving their management to the colonists discussed, 515—521. Missionary instruction of, Lecture XIX. Religious instruction must in general precede civilization, 532. Depopulation, rate and causes of, 540—554.

, 335, 345. Methods
of, Lectures XIII.

labour, 256. Aban-
donment of things in colo-
nizations on occupying
the prosperity of colo-
nization, 271, 275. Sale of, at
compared with sale at
of, to what colonies
exclusive application to
of, 405—412. Contro-
versy, preliminary expenses
of, 414—423. Cesa-
tion of in United States,
of, 427.

of the "colonial

tion of coolie labour,

the 18th century, 22.

natives under later

of, 586—590 (n.).

, 26—28.

their peculiar policy

progress of, in Poly-

their establishment

ica, 5, 279—285. In

of the want of sym-

ment of native labour

tutelage; advantage

of, 285, 299. Decay

Policy of colonial

and duties of protect-

ions," 494. How far to

As to the exercise

between them and

of, 505. Evils of

ers the only chance

in savage and "in-

ment to the colonists

ture XIX. Religious

of, 532. Depopulation,

Navigation laws, history and policy of, 75. Their economical effect, 205—215.

Newfoundland, fisheries, 42.

New South Wales: see *Australia*. Its peculiar climate, 124. Convict labour, 125, 351 (n.). Sale of waste land, 402. Statistics, 407.

New Zealand, settlement of, 128. Its colonization under the system of sale at high price, why not successful, 475. Right of natives to land placed on mistaken basis, 497 (n.): see *Natives*. Diminution of their numbers, its causes, 546.

North America, English colonies there, early constitution of, 93, 97. Produce, 110. Attraction chiefly to what class of settlers, 114. Climate, *ib.* Population and trade returns, 129. Smallness of public expenditure in early times, 626. "Indians," their general character, 493. Injury done to them by repeated removals under the United States government, 505. Native wars, great obstacle presented by them to early settlement, 515. Natives eminently religious, 520. Diminution of their numbers supposed to have commenced before European settlement, 547. Working of responsible government there, 642.

Ohio, state of, its rapid advance, 391.

Paraguay. See *Natives*; *Jesuits*.

Parliament, representation of British colonies in, why considered impracticable, 631, 667. "Omnipotence" of, in relation to colonies, 638, 662.

Peru, condition of, in the later part of the 18th century, 27. Of the natives, 281, 546.

Polynesia, natives of, their general character, 493, 561.

Porto Rico, remarkable features of its condition, as a colony in which tropical produce is raised by white labour, 40—44.

Portugal, colonies of, Lecture II. See *Brazil*.

Public works, in colonies, out of what fund to be provided for, 478—484. Colonial loans for this purpose, their effect, 485.

Queensland, new colony of, 123.

"*Reductions*." See *Jesuits*.

Religious persuasions in British colonies, statistics respecting, 609.

"*Repatriamientos*" and "Encomiendas," 5, 279.

Reserves of land, for clergy in Canada, 441. For public purposes, principle of, 595.

Responsible government, in British colonies, meaning of the phrase; how and when introduced, 636. Its effects in the several colonies, 641—646.

Revenues, colonial, expenditure of, 585.

Slavery, in Cuba, character of, 37. In Brazil, 49. Slave labour, employment of, in colonies, Lecture XI. Wealth of Great Britain as well as the colonies which has resulted from it, 302. Its extension in the tropical world mainly depends on the abundance of new soil available to the colonist, 306. Emancipation in British colonies, its immediate

- effects, 91, 313. Various methods of emancipation compared, 324. Compensation for, Table, 334. Serious diminution of the numbers of slaves render it indispensable, 339.
- Slave trade*, abolished by Brazil, 50. By England, economical effects of that measure, 87—90. Attempts at the suppression of, by civilizing Africa, 311.
- Soldiers*, relative mortality of European, in different British colonies, 117.
- South Australia*, climate and produce of, 127. Account of its colonization, Lecture XVI. Statistics, 469. "South Australian system;" see *Wakefield*.
- Spain*, colonies of, in continental America, Lecture I. Policy towards Indians, 5, 279—285. Commercial policy, 9—11, 16, 29. Extension of their smuggling trade, 15. Climate, 18. Revolution, its causes and consequences, 20—32. Progress of their population, before and since independence, 33. Missions, 285. In the West Indies, Lecture II. *Cuba; Porto Rico*.
- "*Sufficient*" price of land, theories of Mr. Wakefield respecting, 399.
- Sugar*, great production of, in Cuba, 37. Reasons why its cultivation has always been most successfully carried on by large proprietors, 81. Statistics of its production, Appendix to Lectures III. XI. Restrictions on importation into Great Britain of foreign, 208. Equalization of duties, its effects on the colonies, 339.
- Swan River*. See *Western Australia*.
- System*, the colonial, of trade, Lectures VII. VIII. See *Trade*.
- Tasmania* (Van Diemen's Land), climate and population, 125. See *Australia*.
- Taxation in colonies*, on what sources levied; on monopoly profits or rent, 232, 583. On articles consumed by the labouring class, 577. On the gross produce of land, 580.
- Timber*, effect of restrictive policy on trade in, 206, 218.
- Torrens* (Col.), his views on foreign and colonial trade, 240 (*n.*). On the "Wakefield system," 258: see *Wakefield*.
- Trade*, colonial, and the "colonial system," Lectures VII. VIII. Five classes of restrictions of which it is composed, 193. Theory that colonial is in itself more profitable than foreign trade considered, 226, 240.
- Transportation*: see *Convicts*. Abolition of, reasons for and ag. inst, 358—370.
- Tribute*, in what manner said to be rendered to mother country by some colonies, 231.
- Trinidad*, introduction of free labour there, 345.
- Ulloa*, his "Secret Notices," 284.
- United States*, system of disposing of public land, 443, 449. Semi-civilized Indians, 558. Executive government, how different in its constitution from that of British colonies, 649.
- Victoria* (Port Phillip), 126, 464. Production of gold apparently diminishing, 466. Statistics of land sales, 468. Successful management of emigration to it by the commissioners, 471.
- Virginia*, difficulties of its first colonization, 256, 270.

Wages, several causes of their high rate in colonies, 565—574.

Waitangi, treaty of, 497. See *New Zealand*.

Wakefield (Mr.), his theory of systematic colonization, 161, &c. Two elementary propositions on which it is based, 259. Applicable in different degrees to two different classes of colonies, 261: see *Colonies*. Considered in detail, Lectures XIII. XIV. 380—431: see *Land; Labour; Emigration*. History of its operation in the Australian colonies through the Land Sales Act, 470—474. In New Zealand, 475.

West Indies, Spanish, Lecture II.: see *Cuba; Porto Rico*. French, *ib.* Their early history, 63. Emancipation of slaves there, 329. English, 78, &c. Causes of diminution of their white population, 82. Decline of production after abolition of slave trade, 89. Tribute to the mother country through remittances to absentee proprietors in prosperous times, 235. Three classes of English, in an economical point of view, 313—324. Different effect of emancipation on these, *ib.* Importation of free labour into, 319. Economical history since emancipation, 337—346. Government, defects of, 348. Old form of constitutions, 640.

Western Australia, settlement of, 127. Failure of first settlers, its cause, 256, 462. Convict system there, 374.

"*Windward*" and "*Leeward*" Islands, meaning of the distinction, 80.

Wool, statistics of its production, 277, 467.

THE END.

LONDON
PRINTED BY SPOTTISWOODE AND CO.
NEW-STREET SQUARE

